

CHINESE NOVELS (ENGLISH)V7

by renny raju

Table of Contents

[Martial Peak](#)

[MP-Glossary](#)

[MP-C01](#)

[MP-C02](#)

[MP-C03](#)

[MP-C04](#)

[MP-C05](#)

[MP-C06](#)

[MP-C07](#)

[MP-C08](#)

[MP-C09](#)

[MP-C010](#)

[MP-C011](#)

[MP-C012](#)

[MP-C013](#)

[MP-C014](#)

[MP-C015](#)

[MP-C016](#)

[MP-C017](#)

[MP-C018](#)

[MP-C019](#)

[MP-C020](#)

[MP-C021](#)

[MP-C022](#)

[MP-C023](#)

[MP-C024](#)

[MP-C025](#)

[MP-C026](#)

[MP-C027](#)

[MP-C028](#)

[MP-C029](#)

[MP-C030](#)

[MP-C031](#)

[MP-C032](#)

[to edit](#)

[MP-C033](#)

[MP-C034](#)

[MP-C035](#)

[MP-C036](#)

[MP-C037](#)

[MP-C038](#)

[MP-C039](#)

[MP-C040](#)

[MP-C041](#)

[MP-C042](#)

[MP-C043](#)

[MP-C044](#)

[MP-C045](#)

[MP-C046](#)

[MP-C047](#)

[MP-C048](#)

[Trivia](#)

[MP-C049](#)

[MP-C050](#)

[MP-C051](#)

[MP-C052](#)

[MP-C053](#)

[MP-C054](#)

[MP-C055](#)

[MP-C056](#)

[MP-C057](#)

[MP-C058](#)

[MP-C059](#)

[MP-C060](#)

[MP-C061](#)

[MP-C062](#)

[MP-C063](#)

[MP-C064](#)

[MP-C065](#)

[MP-C066](#)

[MP-C067](#)

[MP-C068](#)

[MP-C069](#)

[MP-C070](#)

[MP-C071](#)

[MP-C072](#)

[MP-C073](#)

[MP-C074](#)

[MP-C075-76](#)

[MP-C077](#)

[MP-C078](#)

[MP-C079](#)

[MP-C080](#)

[MP-C081](#)

[MP-C082](#)

[MP-C083](#)

[MP-C084](#)

[MP-C085](#)

[MP-C086](#)

[MP-C087](#)

[MP-C088](#)

[MP-C089](#)

[MP-C090](#)

[MP-C091](#)

[MP-C092](#)

[MP-C093](#)

[MP-C094](#)

[MP-C095](#)

[MP-C096](#)

[MP-C097](#)

[MP-C098](#)

[MP-C099](#)

[MP-C0100](#)

[MP-C0101](#)

[MP-C0102](#)

[MP-C0103](#)

[MP-C0104](#)

[MP-C0105](#)

[MP-C0106](#)

[MP-C0107](#)

[MP-C0108](#)

[MP-C0109](#)

[MP-C0110](#)

[MP-C0111](#)

[MP-C0112](#)

[MP-C0113](#)

[MP-C0114](#)

[MP-C0115](#)

[MP-C0116](#)

[MP-C0117](#)

[MP-C0118](#)

[MP-C0119](#)

[MP-C0120](#)

[MP-C0121](#)

[MP-C0122](#)

[MP-C0123](#)

[MP-C0124](#)

[MP-C0125](#)

[MP-C0126](#)

[MP-C0127](#)

[MP-C0128](#)

[MP-C0129](#)

[MP-C0130](#)

[MP-C0131](#)

[MP-C0132](#)

[MP-C0133](#)

[MP-C0134](#)

[MP-C0135](#)

[MP-C0136](#)

[MP-C0137](#)

[MP-C0138](#)

[MP-C0139](#)

[MP-C0140](#)

[MP-C0141](#)

[MP-C0142](#)

[MP-C0143](#)

[MP-C0144](#)

[MP-C0145](#)

[MP-C0146](#)

[MP-C0147](#)

[MP-C0148](#)

[MP-C0149](#)

[MP-C0150](#)

[MP-C0151](#)

[MP-C0152](#)

[MP-C0153](#)

[MP-C0154](#)

[MP-C0155](#)

[MP-C0156](#)

[MP-C0157](#)

[MP-C0158](#)

[MP-C0159](#)

[MP-C0160](#)

[MP-C0161](#)

[wink](#)

Martial Peak

Synopsis :

The journey to the martial peak is a lonely, solitary and long one. In the face of adversity, you must survive and remain unyielding. Only then can you break through and continue on your journey to become the strongest. Sky Tower tests its disciples in the harshest ways to prepare them for this journey. One day the lowly sweeper Kai Yang managed to obtain a black book, setting him on the road to the peak of the martial world. The Author is Momo.

This novel was placed in the top 10 of China's most read phone novels. With around 50 million views it topped the June charts in 2014 and remains one the most read online phone novels. It is still not over and as of July 2015 remained in the top charts.

Info :

<http://www.novelupdates.com/series/martial-peak/>

Raws :

<http://www.ranwen.org/files/article/16/16866/index.html>

Translator :

<http://novelsnao.com/category/mp/>

or

<http://novelsnao.com>



Characters

杨开 – Kai Yang: The MC in this story, he is a trial disciple at the Sky Tower Sect working as a lowly sweeper.

周定军 – Zhou Ding Jun: An Ordinary Disciple at the Tempered Body fifth stage

十数丈 – Shi Shu Zhang:

夏凝裳 – Xia Ning Chang: A Dark Hall Disciple in charge of keeping tabs of activities in her area

梦掌柜 – Treasurer Meng: XNC’s master and a sleazy old geezer

苏木-Su Mu: A Fellow Disciple at the Sky Tower Sect.

十一长老 – Eleventh Elder → Mysterious elder for now

成少峰 – Cheng Shao Feng → Storm House → DEAD

胡媚儿 – Hu Mei Er → Blood Group

胡娇儿 – Hu Jiao Er → Mei Er’s elder sister.

Minor People

李云天 – Li Yun Tian : Su Mu’s follower

苏颜 – Su Yan

怒涛 – Nu Tao DEAD

Place Names

Inside Sky Tower

凌霄阁 – Sky Tower/Pavilion : One of the two major sects in the _____ area, currently attended by the MC.

贡献堂 – Contribution Hall: A place at the Sky Tower Sect where Disciples trade Contribution points they have earned, either through work or by challenging other Disciples, for various necessities in the path of cultivation.

杂事处 – General Affairs Office:

困龙涧 – Destitute Dragon Stream

长老会 – The Council

Various groups:

凌霄阁 – Sky Tower Pavilion

风雨楼 – Storm House

箫若寒 – Xiao Ruo Han → Head

血战帮 – Blood Group

胡蛮 – Hu Man → Head

Other Places:

黑风山 – Black Wind Mountain: A mountain near the Sky Tower Sect that is inhabited by many beasts, it is also a place where rare herbs grow.

黑风林 – Black Wind Forest

困龙涧 – Coiling Dragon Stream

趟凌霄 – Tang Ling Sect

乌梅镇 – Black Plum Village: A village in the _____ area that caters to the needs of the cultivators from the two major sects as well as the smaller sects in the area.

风雨楼 – Windy Rain Sect: The other major sect in the _____ area.

Martial Ranks

Tempered body : This is the beginning stage for cultivators, it is divided into 9 stages

5th stage → 气感 – Atmospheric sense

7th stage → 元气 – World Qi

武技 – Martial Skills → Able to cultivate them now

开元境 – Initial Element Stage

周天 – Zhou Tian?

气动境 – Qi Transforming Stage

离合境 – Separation and Reunion Boundary

真元境 – True Element Boundary

神游境 – Immortal Ascension Boundary

Martial Terms :

神识 – Divine Sense

穴中 – Chestal acupuncture point

淬体 – Tempered Body

经脉 – Meridians

天地之桥 – Heaven and Earth Bridge

真阳诀 – True Yang Tactics

阳源印 – Origin of Yang

阳液 – Yang Liquid

淬体篇 – Tempered Body Record

淬体篇拳脚 – Tempered body fist

Martial Skills "

身法武技 – Bodily Martial Skill

Sky Tower Disciple Ranks

普通弟子 – Ordinary Disciple: Upon entering the sect a disciple has three years to show acceptable progress and be accepted by an elder/teacher within the sect and increase their standing. During this time they are an Ordinary Disciple.

试炼弟子 – Trial Disciple: If a Disciple does not show sufficient progress in three years they are demoted to a Trial/Experimental Disciple. These Disciples have exceedingly low standing within the sect and are not provided for at all. Though, this is of your own choosing.

下弟子 – Lower Base Disciple

精英弟子 – Elite Disciple

核心弟子 – Core Disciple

暗堂弟子 – Dark Hall Disciple: They are each given an area of jurisdiction where they are responsible for the recording of duels and other things.

Demonic Beast Rankings

一级 – First Realm

蜘蛛妖兽 – Demon Spider Beast

Weapon Ranks :

凡级 – Ordinary Grade

Medicine/Herb Ranks

灵果 – Spirit Fruit

灵草 – Spirit Grass

灵树 – Spirit Tree

凡级 – Ordinary Grade

三叶残魂花 – Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower (Lower)

绝地枯木草 – Dead Jedi Tree Grass (Lower)

地级 – Earth Grade

血灵芝 – Blood Mushroom (Lower)

天元果 – Tianyuan Fruit (Lower)

三阳果 – Three Sun’s Fruit (Lower)

天级 – Heaven Grade

玄级 – Mystery Grade

灵级 – Spirit Grade

圣级 – Saint Grade

Divided into lower, middle and peak levels.

Miscellaneous

枚丹药 – Red pellet

凝血祛瘀膏 – Blood Clotting Cream

小回元丹 – Small returning pellet

阳炎石 – Bright Yang Stone

洗髓丹 – Essence Developer Pill

List of Volumes

Volume 1 Sky Tower – Chapters 1-116

Volume 2 Showing off one's ability – Chapters 117-217

Volume 3 Rising Fame – Chapters 218 – 365

Volume 4 Tables are turned, Yang won the entropy war – 366-614

Volume 5 Exotic Foreign Land – Chapters 615-982

Volume 6 Star – Chapters 983-1926

Volume 7 Astral – 1927-?

Chapter 1 – The servant who sweeps

As new day began, Kai Yang woke up and started to tidy his bed. Taking the broom lying in the corner of the small room, he walked out while at the front door stretching a little. He looked up to see the touch of grey in highlighting dawn sky and closed his eyes, breathing in deeply. He was enjoying this moment of peace, before he had to start his assigned work of sweeping the ground free of the dirt and leaves.

Dressed in black clothes that were simple and clean, the worn black colour seemed to highlighted the youth's loneliness and years of isolation there. His spine was as straight as a javelin with a meticulous expression on his face. Even though he was completing the lowest ranked job, Kai Yang's actions were very well executed. Exerting little force on the broom and with only the rotation of his wrist, the broom moved effortlessly. When his body moved, the dust and trash on the ground seemed to magically accumulate in one place around him, just like they had grown a pair legs.

Kai Yang was the Sky Tower's trial disciple as he had trained for three years, yet only reached the tempered body third stage. Other disciples who had entered at the same time as him, long surpassed this and reached higher stages. Thus, they were all able to enter into the main building, pay their respects and make steps towards their futures. He could only lament about his inadequacy in the outer grounds.

Reaching the tempered body third stage in three years could not be called bad or good, but really, really mediocre.

Helplessly, Kai Yang could only continue to sweep in the outer grounds, working hard to support himself and also in training.

Sky Tower school was a very unique school, as this uniqueness was through the ruthless competition between disciples. In the school, the strong are like kings, while the weak were eliminated. The strong eat the weak; the law of the jungle was actively followed by all.

In other schools you may be able to see friendly rivalries, brotherly bonds and people who worked together to achieve the same goal. But in the here, the only “bonds” were false, so they could use each other and rise in power; stepping over each other’s bodies was the only method.

Sky Tower’s strict system was well-known throughout the entire Han Dynasty. Although school itself was not that large, the brutal nature of their disciples, made their might second to none! That is because each disciple’s skill was like a ferocious tiger and when they walked out, no one in all the rivers and lakes dared to provoke them.

(TLN: All the rivers and lakes is a martial term similar to the heavens and the earth, to convey how their might resounded through the land.)

Though, Sky Tower School had one rule; that was to accept disciples at fourteen year old and for the first three years of their acceptance, it was considered their testing period. In those three years, all of the disciples food, clothing, shelter were provided by the outer grounds, so the disciples only needed to focus on cultivating. But if, in these three years they could breakthrough the tempered body, they would be able to enter the inner court to pay respects to their elders and become their students. Of course you don’t necessarily needed a teacher and could you improve on your own, but the difference in learning by yourself and having a teacher was very large. In a way, the Sky Tower rules did have some room for flexibility and freedom.

In those three years if you don't break through, then you are given two choices: leave the school or be demoted to a trial disciple.

Trial disciple is Kai Yang's current status! He is also Sky Tower's shame!

Compared to normal disciples, their treatment was very different. Trial disciples must provide for their food, shelter, clothing, as the outer grounds would no longer waste cultivating resources on these trashes. Once demoted to a trial disciples, you basically could never advance. Unless of course, you manage to increase your cultivation level quickly in a small amount of time. Only then would the school consider promoting you to true disciple.

The entire Sky Tower consists of three thousand disciples, while the experimental disciples? You can count them on your ten fingers! Kai Yang has faith that he can become a true disciple!

For trial disciples who wanted to survive in Sky Tower, this was like dreaming of reaching the heavens. Take Kai Yang for example, his current residence was a hut that he had built himself, one log at a time. He didn't even have the time to fix the holes on his small roof. When it rained, the water also couldn't exit properly and built up in the room. He also buys his own clothes and food; basically he is responsible for all his own needs.

Kai Yang's small hut was in the school's most remote and most uninhabited location.

Generally speaking, when subjected to such horrendous treatment, it was difficult to endure. That was the reason why the school only had a very small number of trial disciples. Most who couldn't meet the requirements chose to leave the school, but Kai Yang stayed.

This was equivalent to been kicked out, how was this is okay?

A few months prior, when he was made a trial disciple, Kai Yang also accepted a sweeping job to provide for himself.

Right now Kai Yang was both an trial disciple and a little sweeping servant; but just by sweeping, it was hard to maintain a living. There were many times when he was cold or hungry, but he had chosen this path. So he didn't play the drums of retreat, because in this this life he had sworn an oath to continue down it. That was what men did.

In Kai Yang there was toughness, it was a even if you slam into the brick wall, don't look back type of toughness!

(TLN: Chinese idiom, to continue on with your own decision/idea/plan)

Cleaning the trails, sweeping dust from the space the sky gradually began to light up from the rising sun.

Even though sweeping itself didn't use a lot of energy, but without any food or drink since the morning and constant motion, Kai Yang was covered in sweat. This had nothing to do with strength, it was just his physique was very poor. Two out of three meals he went hungry, Anybody who lived like him, how could their physique be good?

As time went, more and more Sky Tower disciples had started to surround him. These disciples had woke up early, not to cultivate but to gwak at him. They had great interest in Kai Yang, gazing at him with avid gazes, like they were staring at a naked beauty or a sweet fragrance like juicy meat bins wafted out.

Among those Tower disciples gathered around Kai Yang, there was also a tense atmosphere in the air. Looking at each other warily, all held an unfriendly look.

Someone in the crowd softly said: "So many people, it's a bit excessive ah."

It was that moment someone else said: "Do you think anybody can walk this path huh? Nobody wants you to stay."

That statement made the person who spoke embarrassed. Everybody knew why they were gathered here, why they were all looking at Kai Yang, and they all wait for the next moment to come. The deadline was about to arrive, so wasn't leaving now not a pity? If you could grab the rewards, then today would be a harvest.

Kai Yang naturally knew the reason for the commotion next to him, though his expression never changed. They would parade themselves every five days, six times a month. He had already gotten used to it, and it was nothing to make a fuss out of. He also noticed the amount of people in front of him had increased, they probably had not all arrived yet.

(TL: Wow, these guys are really bothered to come there six times a month. Don't they have better things to do?)

Although he was being discredited, Kai Yang turned a blind eye to the people next to him and began to sweep.

Following the passage of time, the people around Kai Yang gradually increased, by now there was roughly thirty-forty people present.

Kai Yang suddenly stopped and sat down in the middle of the road and slowly he breathed in the early morning air to restore his own physical stamina.

At that movement, the people gathered around him all went to surround him. A tense atmosphere filled the air, as if the air no longer flowed.

No one looked at each other, but all looked intensely at Kai Yang.

If people were to see this crowd, they would hold the misunderstanding that some expert was in the middle. Or else, how could so many people surround one person like that? In reality, Kai Yang was only a trial disciple with a cultivation at the tempered body third stage. Any of the people present, were stronger than him.

“Kai Yang, no need to bother. Why don’t you just obediently lie down on the ground so I can beat you and save some time?” Seeing him like that, they held much disdain.

How much energy can a tempered body third stage restore? You are going to lose anyway, so why linger?

“Hear, Hear. Kai Yang, please think about our fellow disciples feelings too. We’re not like you, after this game we need to go practise and cultivate.”

This statement was to make Kai Yang quickly submit and let them beat him. The act of restoring his internal energy was similar to disrespecting to them, but he just turned a deaf ear, like Buddha Lao.

Time continued to pass by, suddenly the melodious Tower bells sounded. It

reached the ears of all the disciples surrounding Kai Yang and himself, startling the disciples. The bells tolled nine times, and from the east the sun rose. It was a new day! Everyone calmed down their breathing, helplessly looking at Kai Yang as he slowly got up. He took up his broom and glanced at the people encircling him.

“Choose me Senior Yang!” Shouted a person. “I strike lightly and can guarantee you no pain!”

“Rubbish! Choose me, I will be merciful. I will end it in one fist, and I promise not to waste everyone’s time.”

“Pick me.....”

“Pick me.....”

It was very clamorous, just like a marketplace where vendors were trying to sell their produce, competing on whose produce was fresher.

“Kai Yang, you can choose your own opponent!” Someone reminded.

Kai Yang chuckled, readily he lifted his broom and threw it to the sky. The dozens of pairs of eyes looked up, full of expectation and waited for the broom to fall whilst praying: “Choose me, choose me!” Time seemed to slow down, the broom turned a few times in the air and fell on the ground with a loud boom, no longer moving.

The broom head pointed into the crowd to a burly teenager. A regretful sound echoed as the rest of the crowd’s resentment and resignation came out. But

that burly youngster laughed out loud and rushed out: “Fellow disciples, this brother won this battle today, but hope fellow disciples will not blame me.”

“Che, lucky bastard!” One jealously said.

“Why couldn’t it choose me. I had come every five days, for an entire month! Kai Yang you aren’t doing this on purpose are you?”

“Don’t mention it, I have already come for a full three months and not once was I chosen!”

“Brother, you are more miserable than me.”

“Not miserable, not miserable, watching is also a good, good show.” The two brothers looked at each other, smiling secretly in their hearts.

In the courtyard, the others had already dispersed, leaving only Kai Yang and the burly teenager to face each other.

“Trial disciple Kai Yang, tempered body third stage!” Yang Kai introduced to his opponent.

“Ordinary disciple Zhou Ding Jun, tempered body fifth stage!” The burly teenager introduced.

Sky Tower disciples were also ranked. From bottom to top are the trial disciples, ordinary disciples, lower base disciples, elite disciples, and core disciples; the five ranks. Zhou Ding Jun said that he was an ordinary disciple, that

means he has yet to pay his respects and doesn't have a mentor. If the breakthrough of the tempered body disciple had a mentor, then their status would be higher than those ordinary lower base disciples. And those elite disciple were selected from the best lower base disciples.

As for the core disciples, they were treated as the pillars for the next generation of Sky Tower School and thus were cultivated accordingly.

The awe-inspiring disciple hierarchy, though it seemed unreasonable it could stimulate the younger generations into a fierce sense of competition, which was the foundation of the brutal Tower regime. This was the main reason why Kai Yang fought countless people, another rule of Sky Tower, the Challenge Rule.

Chapter 2 – Breaking through the wall and not looking back

In the school there was one rule: All Sky Tower disciples were allowed to be challenged once every five days. Though they could at most be three levels higher, or they were allowed to decline. The winner would gain contribution points, while the loser will lose them.

Contribution Points were also known as Main Gate Contribution Points!

In Sky Tower, contribution points are equivalent to money. If you had enough contribution points, you could exchange them for anything you wanted; cheats, weapons from the Main Gate Logistics Department. Points can also be exchanged for gold and silver, but generally speaking these contributions were hard-won, and the disciples were generally reluctant to exchange it for that.

There were also many different ways to obtain these points. You can exchange them through the treasure hunt, completing tasks, *etc.*

The most common way to earn contribution points was to challenge others! The duels were to test their strength against other disciples, and if they won they earned contribution points.

So early in the morning and many people crowded around Kai Yang, it was like staring a ripe persimmon about to fall.

Kai Yang's name, in the school could be considered famous. I was not only because he carried the identity of a trial disciple, but also because every time someone challenged him, he lost.

Kai Yang naturally knew what the commotion was about; today is the fifth day

from the last challenge. They who didn't challenge him previously, could do so now. Who wasn't looking forward to it? It was basically free contribution points, although the points gained were not large, it was still enticing, thus many people still came.

Positioned, Kai Yang shouted out two words, "Please instruct!"

That being said, anyone knew that Kai Yang was in for another beating!

Kai Yang was always the first to attack. Even with his thin body he would always put out an amazing fight, taking the step to Zhou Ding Jun, he then punched to the chest following through with a simple and direct attack, then a tiger-like fist. With his strong attacks, it felt like all of his energy were in his attacks.

In the school, all disciples had to learn the Shaolin Fist. This fist was well-known, a basic move to keep disciples in shape and start them off.

Zhou Ding Jun didn't panic, because he was stronger than his opponent by two levels. Sadly, this battle didn't hold any suspense because Kai Yang's fist was seen coming and easily dodged by that burly body.

As it grazed past his clothes, Zhou Ding was left unharmed. Punching again, Kai Yang was easily countered and hit in his solar plexus.

Suppressing the pain, Kai Yang quickly retreated and avoided Zhou Ding's third strike.

"Eh?" This surprised Zhou Ding, he hadn't thought that this third stage

brother, would react fast enough., disrupting his future plans.

But this small error didn't affect the overall situation. Thinking quickly, Zhou Ding took to the occasion to catch Kai Yang unaware.

Unexpectedly, Kai Yang suddenly kicked his right foot forward. Seeing the shadow rapidly approaching, Zhou Ding saw his formidable spirit, whilst it executing a Shaolin fist.

Crap! His heart jumped. Although he had higher cultivation, he was still inferior to Kai Yang's battle experience.

But what would it matter? Even if he couldn't dodge, he would take it head on.

Two light chuckles were heard, before Kai Yang fell backwards, while Zhou Ding was left standing. If his opponent was at the same cultivation as him, then he would have been the one to fall down.

Others couldn't see the exchanges, but they clearly felt it. This disciple was too fast; in other words he first hit Zhou Ding before being hit himself.

But, it was only his fist that was powerful, with the rest of his body and health being all too frail; skinny arms, legs and body. Malnutrition was very obvious, resulting in this ending.

"Senior, you let me win!" This battle left quite a bitter result in Zhou Ding Jun's heart. Although he won, he didn't feel as if he had won.

To the side, many whispers could be heard: “This person thought he won?”

“Ha ha. Doesn’t that mean he didn’t know of Kai Yang’s reputation and challenged him? ”

“This is really too hilarious.”

Zhou Ding furrowed his brow, because he really didn’t know of Kai Yang’s reputation. He had heard people talking about him so today when he saw many people crowding around, he had decided to participate too and was super lucky to be chosen.

Could you not win? His own fist made him go flying, making him at a supreme disadvantage. According to the school rules, he had already lost.

“Again!” After this thought, Kai Yang stood up again and without the slightest hesitation. This time, with even more spirit.

Without waiting for answer, Kai Yang charged over. Three feet away, he swept his foot towards Zhou Ding’s legs in an attempt to topple him.

A leg whip! The school had disciples cultivate various martial arts. Yet Kai Yang’s application of them far surpassed his peers, even though he knew less techniques.

So you could use a leg whip here.

Without notice, Kai Yang went flying away again.

With two realms apart, including the gap between physical fitness, Kai Yang was once again defeated. His attack to Zhou Ding's leg had clearly wounded his own bones, causing him falter slightly.

“Again!” He said while clenching his teeth and eyes full of determination.

“Peng……” Kai Yang flew away again.

“Again!”

“Peng……” Kai Yang flew away again.

Those who couldn't watch any longer had left, while the ones who stayed marvelled at the scene: “This guy Kai Yang, has real tenacity. No matter how many times he's beaten down, he just gets back up. He won't let it go!”

Hearing these words, Zhou Ding felt real bitter. He hadn't imagined that his opponent was such a crazy person.

In the end, Kai Yang was sent flying another seven or eight times. Although his face was swollen, eyes were black, he was staggering around and breathing quite heavily, he still continued to persist and continue fighting.

Finally Zhou Ding exclaimed: “Are you crazy? Throw down the towel or you'll die!”

Chapter 3 – 147 Losses

Within the Tower disciples' internal struggles, every year there are many who die. Zhou Ding Jun seeing this unflinching and courageous brother, couldn't help but feel a bit alarmed.

When he thought that, Zhou Ding Jun knew he couldn't reach such a degree and was afraid that he would have to surrender.

Keep your cool, will then you will not be afraid to be burned. This is the way of life, to stubbornly follow your decision. This is perseverance!

Despite Kai Yang's sorry figure, his eyes were becoming more and more powerful. Zhou Ding Jun knew that if he didn't settle things now, then there will be no end.

Thinking of this, Zhou Ding Jun rushed forward to execute a palm knife to Kai Yang's neck bone. Kai Yang with an imposing manner swiftly escaped. Then his eyes clouded and he fell limply to the ground.

Seeing this scene, tens of feet higher, a disciple who was sitting on a tree branch took out a small book. Flipping the page she wrote: Trial Disciple Kai Yang vs. Ordinary Disciple Zhou Ding Jun, Zhou Ding Jun wins.

(TLN: Experimental disciple will now become trial disciple)

The person who was on the tree branch had a graceful figure, it obviously was a woman. It was just that black mask on her face, didn't allow people to see her

face. But those delicate eyebrows, proved that this person was not old. The armband on her arm also indicated her identity, a Sky Tower Dark Hall Disciple!

Sky Tower's Dark Hall is a special sector; the school's three main elders were responsible for governing and the hall disciples were responsible for recording down all affairs of the school, no matter how big or small, all matters are recorded. This also included the results of duels between disciples.

So for all battles within the school, you do not have to worry about not being able to prove your wins and earning contribution points. For in the shadows, dark hall disciples will record them down for you, and summarise your monthly records.

This woman, after recording the outcome for this duel, took out another smaller book from her waist and opened up at May 7th century, 14 years Kai Yang's 147th defeat.

Even if you remove this, above are numerous records of Kai Yang's battles. From the first battle to the most recent, all had one word: Defeat!

One hundred and forty seven battles in a row, he had lost every single one of them. This simply can be said that since the school's history, it was a unique record and was enough to be awe-inspiring. Though the owner of this record was lying on the ground, not knowing if they were dead or alive.

Kai Yang had never challenged others, so these 147 losses were from others challenging him. So to say, from being challenged once every five day, this had last for two years.

Looking at Kai Yang on the ground, she wrinkled her eyebrows. She didn't understand how Yang Kai could endure to this state. He had already become the Tower's trial disciple, even his very survival was endangered, so why did he still linger? If he had left, then his life will certainly be better. This thin boy, what kind of dedication did he have? Even with 147 straight losses, he remains undaunted.

Perhaps this is a man's folly? Taking notice of Kai Yang was also a moment's coincidence. When Xia Ning Chang became a dark hall disciple, she was placed in charge of monitoring this area. Yang Kai was challenged every time, not once, not twice, and every single time she saw him being beaten to near death. Xia Ning Chang, began to pay attention to this tempered body third stage youth.

She was really curious, with his strength, how long could he endure before finally leaving Sky Tower. This type of talent, this type of training speed, he really was not fit to remain here. The ordinary world is his place.

The people below had already long scattered, only Kai Yang was still there on the ground. Coming and going, time passed by.

Xia Ning Chang, disappeared from the branch in a flash.

When Kai Yang woke up, it was already three o'clock. There was nowhere on his body that didn't hurt. Staggering, he stood up and looked up, only to be surprised. For the place in which he woke up from was under the shade of a tree and not where he fainted.

This was really surprising, was there a fellow disciple that was kind enough to carry him over? This had never happened before, causing Kai Yang to furrow his brows. He could vaguely remember there was a shadowy figure darting in front of him. But memory was too vague, thinking harder just made it more unclear.

But between his current position and the place he fainted, there was very distinct drag marks, clearly showing that he had been dragged over.

Once again he felt his back, immediately flaring hot pain spread out.

Kai Yang froze for a moment, becoming furious! The trace of goodwill he felt towards his benefactor had quickly disappeared. That person directly dragged him over, otherwise how could his back bleed like this.

He might as just have left him there on the ground! Kai Yang thought to himself.

Being depressed, Kai Yang realised that in his right hand he was clutching something. Looking down in doubt, he was surprised to find a small, fine work of porcelain in his hand.

What is this? This was definitely not his, for the only things that Kai Yang owned were the clothes on his back and his broom. How could he have this?

The small porcelain bottle had a label. Yang Kau read it out: "Blood Clotting Cream".

Blood clotting cream, Kai Yang knew of this.

This was the school's cream to help heal wounds, although it was ordinary, its effects were very good. Generally, disciples will carry one bottle around for emergency uses. This one bottle of cream in Sky Tower Logistics, was very

expensive.

Ten points of contribution was the bottle's cost!

How much contribution points can Kai Yang earn for sweeping for a month? He can only earn ten points, in other words, this one bottle's worth was equal to one month of work for him.

Who was it? At this moment, the resentment Kai Yang had towards this person was reduced greatly, but as he moved, the pain flared up again. He had already come to this Tower for three years, three years. Within this time, Yang Kai had already gotten used to the lack of compassion between disciples. But today, for this person to leave behind a bottle of blood clotting cream for him, greatly touched Yang Kai's hearts.

Originally, he had thought all the disciples were cold-blooded people.

Perhaps this bottle of cream was not worth much to them, but to Kai Yang currently, he desperately needed it.

There was a saying, dripping water is grace, is hard to forget even when one's teeth fall out!

(TLN: Meaning one small kindness must be remembered eternally and returned)

Kai Yang was both grateful and tried to remember who it was. It was becoming harder to remember. He could only recall the thin strand of fragrance lingering around.

“Was this medicine this fragrant?” Kai Yang pondered.

Calming down and straightening his clothes, he carefully put the bottle away. Kai Yang re-picked up his broom and commenced his work.

Inside and outside all were swept, then at midnight, his work was considered completed. Kai Yang dragged his tired and hungry body back to his hut.

The morning’s battle wounds had yet to be treated. Even when Kai Yang was starving, he could only endure. First treat the injuries then deal with the hunger.

Taking off his clothes, he then carried over a tub of water to wash his body. If someone were to be by his side and look at Kai Yang’s body, they would cry out in shock.

Kai Yang’s bones, along with his ribs were all clearly visible. It was clear that his body didn’t have much flesh on it and lacked nutrition. There were also bruises and scars littering his body everywhere. There was practically no place that wasn’t scarred.

Every five days he was challenged, every time he lost, every time he was knocked unconscious. When old injuries had yet to fade, new ones were added. Switching to any other person, they would be unable to tolerate this pain, but Kai Yang did. Not only did he bear with it, but he continued his daily sweeping, not letting those injuries affect him.

Chapter 4 – The Black Book

Once his body was clean, Kai Yang picked up the bottle of blood clotting cream and sniffed it a little. He found that the medicine was quite refreshing and lost himself in it and then he shook his to clear it.

Kai Yang opened that bottle, and tried to smear the cream directly onto his injuries but stopped. He hastily went to fetch a new tub of water and then put some of the medicine into the water to dilute it. Stirring carefully, he began his treatment using the diluted formula.

(TLN: Ah, the life of a poor person. Too relatable...T_T)

Enough the effects of the blood clotting cream were good, after diluting it, the effects were also reduced. But Kai Yang only had this one bottle, so naturally he would have to use it sparingly.

After the tub of diluted was used up, Kai Yang had also finished treating his injuries. However, it also left him some doubts. For the paste's smell was not the same as it was previously and also slightly spicy.

Putting his clothes back on, he went to get the dark coloured sweet potato and wolfed it down. Kai Yang then plonked down on his bed, and soon fell asleep.

The holes in the small roof, allowed some light to seep in, lighting up the hut. The hut was extremely sparse, there was no table or chairs. Only one small bed with a deerskin blanket and square shaped pillow. This was all of Kai Yang's possessions.

The deerskin, was from a deer Kai Yang hunted previously. Although it was not thick, it was still warm. While his pillow was from his time outside the school when he was hunting, he happened to pick up.

Pillow was a square, a foot long and three fingers thick. It looked like stone, felt like one but didn't bear the weight a stone should. Kai Yang didn't know what it was, but used it as a pillow, and didn't investigate further.

This blackstone pillow had already been with Kai Yang for a year already, yet he still didn't know what it was. Nonetheless, it was a great pillow.

Fast asleep, Kai Yang dreamt of today's battle. Time and time again he was hit flying away by Zhou Ding Jun. And time and time again he would stand back up, persevering and continuing with a blood crest on his chest.

As the dream continues the blood crest became more and more powerful. Kai Yang's sleeping face was clench up in pain, but you could see it was resolute. He only had one goal in his heart; to succeed. Even if he was ordered to cut off his foot or fry his body in flames, he would not cower in fear.

The unconscious Kai Yang didn't take notice that the pillow below his had started to exclude a clouded light that corresponded with his moods. This light became more and more luminous.

In the dream, Kai Yang continued with his early morning encounter with Zhou Ding Jun; repeatedly getting knocked to the ground. At his thousandth time of getting knocked and getting back up, with his unwavering will suddenly broke through. He rushed mercilessly towards Zhou Ding Jun, who immediately fell to the ground. Zhou Ding Jun's figure then became hazy and morphed into his own figure.

At this moment Kai Yang's mind calmed down, though it wasn't due to him beating his opponent, but he winning against himself. Winning against his inner fear and yielding heart.

A faint feeling gradually rose up, there is no longer anything under the sky that can make him submit to them.

In reality, the black pillow under Kai Yang's head suddenly burst forth a black ray. This black ray emerged from the black stone and hovered in the air for a bit before drilling into Yang Kai's head. Instantly disappearing from sight.

At the same time, in an ancient and desolate place a strange presence descended. Like tidal waves, the collapse of snow, any person in front of him was insignificant that strange presence thought.

Kai Yang suddenly opened his eyes, his whole body sweating and bursting with fear.

He was awoken by that strange presence.

Calming himself, he forced a smile. When was dreaming, he could actually scare himself like that, it's ridiculous. Rubbing his face, he looked up into the night sky to determine the time, and was annoyed. He had only slept for two hours, seeing it was quite dark outside.

Hurriedly he got up, folded up the deerskin blanket and re-positioned the blackstone pillow. As he got up, he frowned and turned to look back at the pillow.

This feeling.....his gut told him that it was not the same.

Under doubts, Kai Yang reached out towards the pillow and picked it up. He was correct, its weight had decreased a lot.

Strange, how can this block stone, suddenly become so light? Questioning this, more questions started to appear.

It was like a thick book was being thrown into the air, with the pages spread out as it landed. Kai Yang was flabbergasted, momentarily forgetting to catch it.

Pa, the blackstone pillow fell to the ground and opened up like a book. He couldn't believe it, even though it was spread out in front of him.

Wasn't this a stone? How could it suddenly turn into a book?

The Blackstone pillow had been with Kai Yang for over a year already, he was very clear. Did he not previously find a blackstone and not a book? Did an old turtle take off his shell and become a snake?

A while ago when he stooped down to pick up the book, and he immediately felt a connection with it.

Looking at it again, he really had to admit it was the pillow he was using. This thick book, left him speechless, though there were no words. It was empty. But the books pages couldn't let him see through it. He gently tried to tear a page, but he couldn't tear it at all.

It really makes him rethink. He had owned it for an entire year, and only just discovered its true colours.

But such an empty black book, what is its use? He inspected the book all over, and still nothing.

Mysterious. Kai Yang turned to the first page, and nothing. Staring at the blank book page.

With little effort, he still found little change to the page. Then he discovered there was a little change to the page. The strange presence that appeared in the desolate place of his dreamed had appeared again. A line of golden coloured characters had started to appear.

“Blood is cited, the golden body descends, not a miracle, but a golden immortal!”

This penetrated deep into the soul, which caused Kai Yang to slam the book shut, with his limbs shaking uncontrollably. Breathing deeply, he managed to calm his heart down a bit.

What secrets did this black book hide? He didn't know at all, but he knew that this object he obtained from Black Wind Mountains contains great history.

After a long period of silence, he once again opened the black book. This time, he read the first line on the page.

Turns out.....it wasn't a dream.

Gradually, other lines slowly appeared.

“Proud golden body, rules the fence, indomitable spirit, will it descend!”

Eight lines and thirty-two words occupied an entire page. Giving one a dominating heavenly and earthly feeling, as if those words were imbued with domineering spirit.

Chapter 5 – The Proud Golden Statue

These thirty-two words' meanings were very easy to understand. Naturally Kai Yang understood.

But the black book's history was unclear, thus he was a bit afraid. What if this was a trap of some sort? Thinking of this he laughed at himself, for currently he was only a trials disciple of Sky Tower's. Who would go to the effort of taking care of him?

From just looking at the last couple of lines and their meaning, the reason why the blackstone pillow will turn into a black book was probably because of his dream tonight.

For over one year, the pillow didn't change, then suddenly after that dream it turned into a book. They must be connected.

Is it because of his own change that also changed the blackstone pillow.

Since it was I who led to the book's birth, then this black book was born for me! Thus, I am this black book's owner!

Thinking of this, Kai Yang hesitated no more. The writing clearly on the book clearly states that he must drip blood in order to lead. Thinking of this, he bit onto his finger hardly and dripped a drop of blood on to the page.

Drip, drip. The blood went onto the page, but there was no apparent change. After a fair amount of time passed, from the page, black light started to emerge.

His body immediately felt unwell, for the injuries from earlier today had started to sear in pain. His head had also started to hurt.

Biting down on his teeth, he continued to endure. His blood continued to flow, and the light on the book was becoming brighter and brighter.

After a large amount of time and effort, Kai Yang nearly fainted. But there had been substantial change to the book, and the black light had started to wiggle and contract. And from the center of the page, a tiny vortex had appeared.

Following that, from within the vortex a golden swirl could be seen. Kai Yang put great effort to maintain a clear mind, staring intently to the transformation in front of him.

Within the black vortex, a small, round, shiny, black object gradually came out.

He was shocked, for there really was something in the the book. Even though while he was dripping his blood, he had some expectations, he didn't think that is was actually true.

But right now, right in front of him, the thirty-words from before were not false.

Blood is cited, the golden body descends!

So, what kind of golden body is it? Anticipation covered his pale face.

After a while, after the shiny, round thing had fully appeared in front of him, he

couldn't help but swallow a mouthful of saliva. How matter how rich his imagination was, he wouldn't have thought that the golden body would be like this.

This thing was about 30 cm high golden skeleton, and to think the first thing that came out was this skeleton's skull. The golden skull just floated on top of the book page, sitting crossed legged like it was mediating. Every bone lighting up Kai Yang's tiny hut.

The black vortex on the page slowly began to recede and everything reverted back to its tranquil state.

Kai Yang had watched this strange golden skull appeared, for a time did not know how to react. On page said only how to get the golden body out, but didn't say what to do after it came out.

Looking at it, he thought there wasn't something right. The golden skeleton in front of him had no eyes, but he felt like it looked like his own. It obviously didn't have any mouth but was clearly mocking its weakness.

Thinking of this, Kai Yang was furious and went to pick it up.

This small, insignificant skeleton dares to be arrogant!

He didn't think that when he went to reach out for it, the golden skeleton flew out towards him. Flying past his hand and embedded himself on his chest.

This was a bit of a horror. With a skeleton smashing onto his chest, he cried out and then the skeleton started to emit a fluorescent light, and penetrated

deep into the pores of Kai Yang's limbs.

Suddenly, pain exploded all over his body, but the pain was not an ordinary pain, but the pain from the depths of the bone! He breathed in painfully, fell to the ground, his body bent like shrimp, with waves of cramps.

His whole body's bones shattered in that moment, and he couldn't even lift a finger, for he had no strength. This was not an illusion, if you could see into his body, then you can see his bones being crushed, and next to each crushed bone, there was a layer of gold wrapped around. Continuously repairing the broken bones, but far slower than the damage speed. When the repair was finished, it was crushed again.

Human bones wrap around bone marrow and bone marrow nerve. Any small touch to them can bring great harm. One can only imagine his suffering at that moment.

In his body, not a single bone wasn't shattered.

Even for others, even if their strength of thousands of times higher than his, they would have probably fainted now. But with Kai Yang, he could only feel the pain a thousand fold right now.

Tragic cry came from the hut, not far away a fellow disciple was out for a walk was frightened by the cry and quickly ran away.

Form somewhere, he received a message that came from this golden body: Destroy Kai Yang's consciousness, and seize his body!

Did Kai Yang agree? Even if he was unable to move, but also struggled to maintain the awareness, he will never let golden body take over the magpie nest. The golden body felt fear, so over and over again crushed Yang Kai's bones, tortured his nerves, so that he fainted thereon.

One is a proud golden statue, another with an indomitable spirit, who wins who loses, one cannot see the outcome.

Kai Yang knew that right now it was really important, unlike the previous challenges with his fellow disciples. If this was the past him, then he would have given up but now he will not. Even if it hurts like hell will endure.

His consciousness, the golden body's destructive power, both commenced a hard tug of war. And the battlefield is the Kai Yang's body, you pull, I pull, each not letting an inch go.

Over time, Kai Yang was surprised to find that the intolerable pain was slowly reducing, help lift his spirits and fill him full of energy.

It's no wonder, after Kai Yang and the golden body clashed time and time again, the numerous crushing of his bones had strengthened them. With his bones becoming stronger and stronger, and the golden body's powers becoming weaker and weaker, the pain thus naturally alleviated. The struggle will soon end.

With the scales tipping in his favor, the unbearable pain slowly became bearable. Transforming into light tickles, then becoming like splashes of cold water. This feeling was like applying cream, allowing his millions of pores to open and relax.

Aware of the golden body's desperate struggle, made Kai Yang furious. Cursing loudly, he crushed that presence within him.

Inside his body, it had finally calmed down.

A sigh could be heard, a sigh full of comfort and trace of great relief.

Chapter 6 – BMWs are a good ride and beauties go to heroes

He after quietly lying on the ground for more than an hour, Kai Yang stood up, for he had just used up all his strength.

An hour before, Kai Yang felt it was like a dream. He really could not believe this was true.

Quietly he punched himself and felt the pain.

“In the end what it is, what history does this black book have?” He muttered to himself in helplessness.

Waiting until his heart stopped beating, he suddenly found himself somewhat different from before. For he couldn't eat three, fulfilling meals a day, and every five days he would suffer beatings. Thus his body bones are weak, but now he clearly perceived that his bones were full of vitality. A surge of energy, filled with warmth, slowly circulated inside and outside, his body.

Moving slightly, the bones burst out a crystal-clear sound. Making it seem like a melody being played. And he who was hurt today, couldn't feel the pain anymore.

Aware of this, Kai Yang quickly roll up his sleeves, and opened his clothes. Looking closely, he found that his body no longer had any bruises and injuries. They had actually all disappear, even those old wounds were healed.

Feeling as unblemished as a newborn baby!

Rubbing the places that previously held wounds, dead skin fell. This revealed the new tender skin underneath, like a baby's but far more healthier.

"I cry" He swallowed down a cold lump, thinking of that golden skeleton in his body had such a strong recovery ability!

Then feeling his own strength and found that he was still at the tempered body third stage with no change. This discovery somewhat made him a little disappointed.

Rivers and allusions, with secrets known only to insiders, this type of story Kai Yang heard much during his childhood. He knew in world there are many men eligible to jump past the dragon gate, becoming powerful and famous.

But after all it's just a story. How many people can really be happy and gain such luck and results in this world? Those senior experts with greater strength, the more I could not bear to lower themselves with earth and buried. Always finding inheritor before death. I want to jump off a cliff drill a cave and encounter events, such unlikely things will happen?

But the current problem had happened to him. That black must have great background, and that old golden skeleton must be extraordinary.

This can be said as his good fortune. It could also be said as fate.

The four sentences on the black book's first page: Proud golden body, rules the fence, indomitable spirit, will it descend!

If he didn't pick up the black book, but another picked it up, they too will treat it was garbage. Unable to prise open like Mt. Tai. Precisely because he picked it up, and used it as a pillow for a year, it felt his body's unyielding and tough nature. Unlocking the of the secret black book today.

In other words, this thing really is his first encounter, but it's the first achievement that he obtained through his own hands. Thought of this, Kai Yang sudden burst comfortable, is called the BMW with a good saddle, beauty gifts hero

.....

"That black book." Thinking of it suddenly, this book that was his pillow for over year. He wasn't anxious to find out what it was nor how he found it.

Between being anxious, and somewhat weakened in the body, the black book abruptly appeared in front of Kai Yang, and snapped shut, falling to the ground.

He was stunned. Picking up the book, he furrowed his eyebrows while thinking hard. Struck by with an idea, a move from his hands the book disappeared. And a further move, made it appear again.

This scene was like a magic trick. One could see that Kai Yang's face was very solemn, because he truly felt, that the black book could escape into his body with a single thought.

"This black book possibly.....be made from a soulstone!" After saying it, he nearly gave himself a fright.

A soulstone! This was considered a legendary gem.

Only when hundreds of millions of ghost gather in the abyss and with the help of vast amounts of human vitality, will it start to form.

Rumor has it, that this is how it was formed.

Inside the blackstone, with misery of a hundred million lives, the living cannot enter, and green grass can't think to grow!

Those words were somewhat exaggerated. But for a soulstone about 3.5cm x 3.5 cm to form, how many lives must be taken? The formation of this mythical rock was really cruel and bloody. What every life near it during its creation, will be dead within milliseconds.

Also the formation time is unimaginable, it could take up to a millennium or even ten millennia.

Putting the formation process aside, this soulstone can be considered a supreme treasure. That is because it has a very unique ability, for it can be melded with one's body and also open up a dimension. This space is quite flexible, storing things will be no hassle.

Even though Kai Yang is only a trial disciple, a humble position, his experiences were not lacking. Not to mention, the story of the legendary soulstone has been around for many years, anyone would know the story.

When he just obtained this black book, he didn't think about this. Thinking about how the book went into his body, he thought about how the golden

skeleton came out from the book. How could he not recognise the book's material?

He immediately started sweating.

Soulstones were the things of legends, long extinct in the world. He didn't think that he will be able to encounter one, let alone such a large one!

The legends only talked about 3.5cm x 3.5 cm sized soulstones, for it was only found that large. Even at that size, it was priceless. But the only in front of him, was somehow made into a black book, that was 30 x 7 cm!

It's value.....was immeasurable!

If this news were to spread out, even if it's the entire Han Dynasty, not mention a mere martial school, they will probably be crushed overnight to obtain it.

Kai Yang couldn't help but feel his hands heat up. This heart had not forgotten the terror, but luckily it could be taken into his body. Otherwise he would be in great danger.

His body hiding this treasure, he swiftly escaped back into his hut. He dared not to be carelessly, while his heart beated madly.

He was becoming more and more excited, whilst also becoming more and more uneasy.

His strength was currently too low, so how could he guard this treasure? Even though the black book could be taken into his body, eliminating chances of being discovered. This didn't lessen the worry in his heart.

Only practise, only the strong will be able to protect what is theirs! Thinking about what happened three years ago, Kai Yang's eyes gradually calmed down.

All on his, without any support he came to this school. What is not for practise and strength?

Even though he obtained this book, he took it into his hands. On the first page was the proud Golden Body. Even though he didn't know what use it had, it couldn't be useless. This book also had so many pages, it couldn't only possess this one Golden Body?

Chapter 7 – Breaking through stages, is like being reborn

Although Kai Yang is only fifteen this year, due to his experiences these past three years, he is far more mature than his peers. It is also because of this, that he forged this unyielding character.

So when he calmed down, sitting on his bed he carefully started to read the first page.

After confirming there were no extra things popping out of the first page, he started to read the second page.

With his previous experiences, his actions seemed more natural and knowledgeable. And then Kai Yang's eyes slowly widened as golden words emerged on the dark pages

“Proud Golden Body: Tempered Body Record!”

Previously his mood had dropped but now it soared. Sure enough, as he suspected, every page had something hidden

Almost without thinking, Kai Yang's entire mind was focused on the second page of the book.

Abruptly, the golden characters flew off the pages like a fish and swiftly drilled themselves in Kai Yang's brain. The glow enveloped the darkness around him and then disappeared. After it was gone, he felt as if his brain had gained new information. This had all come from the golden characters.

Calming his heart, Kai Yang closed his eyes and began to digest the information.

In fact, he didn't need to digest and absorb the information. For when the characters imprinted themselves into his brain, he was already able to comprehend their meaning with ease. A full mastery in another sense.

"This is the tempered body record." Yang Kai muttered, for he found that it was a fist technique.

Though it may seem simple, in reality it was not. In order to perform it, there were strict requirements. For it is extremely profound. In order to cultivate it, you must be facing the rising sun, in the east, to learn it.

So at most, you could only practise for half an hour a day.

Currently it was night, so he had to wait at least five-six hours to start. This frustrated Kai Yang, for he had exerted himself all day and only ate one measly sweet potato. Nonetheless, he had obtained a priceless treasure, and was jubilant.

After trying to sleep for half an hour, he decided to analyse the third page of the black book.

But it just let him down, no matter how much he checked and flipped, there were no changes to the page. While doing this, he fell asleep.

When Yang Kai then woke up, it was nearly sunrise. The pre-dawn darkness was clouded and stillness covered the whole area, with the occasional insect and bird noises.

With his heart looking forward to what was going to happen, Kai Yang quickly leapt out of bed, and went to the front of the cabin. Standing there, he took a few deep breaths and let his body slowly relax.

Oriental? A touch of gray dawn appeared, then he opened his eyes. The set of instructions on the fist technique was practised countless, hundreds of times.

His hands shaped into a palm. With a gentle, slow movement, pushing to the left, to the right, pushing forward. Embracing the world in his mind, everything in between the palm, the vast land, even the air covering the moon and stars.

Left foot forward, right next to the horizon, the right foot stepped powerfully like the king of the underworld. Between breaths, the world full was full of vitality, like spring flowers blooming.

The autumn wind blew, like a golden message. Then the cold wind whistled by, signalling the coming of snow, ice, cold snow.

Yang Kai's look gradually deepened, slowly his fists pressed on the hefty rocks. In any case, the rock didn't hint at opening any time soon.

With a burst of sound, Kai Yang with a pale face, suddenly staggered, nearly fell to his knees.

While exercising countless times in his mind, he discovered that this art was an

absolute fist. Kai Yang never expected this record actually contained such mysterious quenching body technique.

For just that short while, Kai Yang felt that the entire world was weighing on his shoulders. But he also felt that he could sense all things in the world, under this pressure.

This quenching body record, was not the practise of fist techniques. It was the practise of worldly transformation and the fate of the world. This practice was full of ups and downs, joys and sorrows. A slow punch and kick in, could affect the power of heaven and earth, but also was full of secret rules.

When he launched a six palms, it took three steps. This result wasn't even one percent of the result recorded in the book. Just that, had been difficult to sustain. Then a crack emitted from his spine, making him believe that he broke his spine.

He Quickly inspected it, but only found that his back was in some pain. It wasn't anything big.

Steeling his mind, Kai Yang once again started to practise according to the tempered body record.

Because he wasn't psychologically prepared, Kai Yang's mind was in a trance. Feeling unclear, he held his breath to regain a clear mind. Accompanied by a slow dance of his fists, Kai Yang once again felt his mind had become clear and regained the atmosphere required to continue.

Then his body emitted several indistinct feelings, Kai Yang was uncertain as to

what they were. Not only that, with the routine deployment, his fist was actually heavier, like being at the bottom of the ocean. With more hardships, there were more improvements.

Kaka sounds could be heard. Kai Yang's every action, made his bones explode like firecrackers. Excruciating pain permeated throughout his body, but he was unmoved. His tenacity at this moment vividly appeared.

In the blink of an eye, Kai Yang felt his hands and feet tremble like they were beaten to pulp. It was like heaven and earth both imposed themselves on his body.

Persisting, he didn't falter.

Suddenly a warmth surged, alleviating the pain within his body in this moment. Spirits lifted, he restarted practise. He knew that this must have been due to the integration of the golden skeleton. After all, both of these things came from the same place.

In front the sun rising, near a cabin in a remote place of the school stood a sweating young man. Diligently practising, slow fists and discovering his future.

Half an hour passed when Kai Yang suddenly felt light. He no longer felt the heavy pressure on his body. Right at this moment, he could no longer continuing cultivating this skill.

The record was very clear, you could only cultivate for half an hour everyday at sunrise.

His effort seemed to have drained him. Thus Kai Yang fell to the ground in a heap and took a deep breath. A surge of purple gas accompanied his breath and disappeared. In an instant, he felt refreshed and energised.

Looking distracted, he couldn't help but be shocked.

Atmosphere sense! He had already developed a sense to the atmosphere. That is to say, he had broken through the tempered body third stage and was entering the fourth stage?

This news made him elated. Since entering Sky Tower, it took three years of practicing to reach the third stage. But after thirty minutes of practising, the mysterious quenching body technique had let him break through and enter the fourth stage.

The tempered body had nine stages. Until the third stage, it really just enhanced one's physical capabilities. But after the fourth stage, it would generate a presence within the meridians.

Only with the birth of atmosphere sense, are you considered a true cultivator.

Although at this time you will have the atmosphere sense, the body will still have no real strength. You could only wait for the seventh stage, where the body will develop its own strength, all the way until the ninth stage. That is when the body breaks through and opens / creates a door to strength to the Kai Yuan Boundary. Only then will you truly have strength.

Kai Yuan Boundary, is a true warrior's start.

Everything in the tempered body territory, was laying the foundations for the future of the Kai Yuan Boundary . This foundation was not finalized, like with a man's strength. For your bones, skin would grow continuously, until you reach the peak.

Kai Yang had just having entered the fourth stage, and obtained atmosphere sense. To outsiders, this may not seem like much, but to him it was great news and progress.

Chapter 8 – A beautiful thin waist

Half an hour after he broke through, the results of quenching body record were evident. Although his own knowledge contributed, if not for that technique, he believed that he needed another three-four months before advancing.

With this, he breathed in deeply and exhaled out the impurities in his body.

From within his mouth, out came a pitch-black smoke. Filthy, as it tumbled to the ground. After expectorating this smoke out, his six senses all became more acute and sharpened.

(TLN: He's been possessed by a demon! [Supernatural style] Senses: Sound, touch, sight, taste, smell and sixth sense [instinct])

Was this his body's impurity? Kai Yang shook on the spot.

With the practise of cultivation you will reduce and drain the body of impurities each time. Kai Yang previously had experienced this, but never at this level.

Numerous ideas and joy lingered in his mind. Although he had successfully entered the fourth layer, he had made no real progress in the tempered body record's fist technique. His daily practise could only produce one percent of the total result, out of the 101 punches.

Hasty men don't eat hot tofu and with a hasty heart, you won't be able to feel

a hot butt.

(TLN: Saying that have patience and results will come, if you rush you will miss things.)

Thinking for awhile, Kai Yang planned a bit of his future. Even though it wasn't thorough, he could no longer be like how he had been, taking each step as it came. For after awhile, you couldn't help but become impatient.

Then after eating something he continued to sweep the area.

Although he was a sweeper, it didn't mean that he needed to sweep the entire school. He was only responsible for one tenth of the school. Even though it was cumbersome, it would only take an hour or so.

Within the trees, Xia Ning Chang had started to monitor the disciples and inadvertently saw Kai Yang sweeping away. To not have some emotions would be weird. Today, there was something different about him, but she wasn't sure. For over half an hour, he hadn't left that spot, sweeping it until it was shiny and spotless. It was so slick that if a mosquito were to go on, it would have a sprained ankle.

(TLN: Trying to express how clean it is. This author has a major issue with mosquitos I say.)

This guy.....Xia Ning Chang didn't know what to do with him.

At that moment, Kai Yang was thinking about other things. Yesterday he had obtained a huge opportunity, so naturally he was considering his future. But no

real options were found. He could only continue to practise at sunrise everyday, for now.

While he was pondering, rapid footsteps approached quickly from behind. He quickly went to dodge, but didn't realise that the other party was making preparations to avoid him too. So they crashed into each other.

Though he didn't sustain any major injuries, when he crashed into that person, it felt as if he had crashed into a steel wall. With a cry, he fell to the ground and the place he bumped felt numb.

Kai Yang quickly recovered and apologetically asked: "This fellow disciple, are you okay?"

The young man was annoyed and when he looked up to see that it was Kai Yang, that explosive anger dissipated. Holding anger for such person held no meaning and it was also his own fault.

Replying immediately while waving his hands: "It's alright, it's alright!"

While saying this and getting up, he then energetically ran away.

Kai Yang asked: "Fellow disciple, where are you going to hurriedly?"

The young man faintly shouted: "The Contribution Hall, where else?"

Listening to his words, Kai Yang realised that today was already the eighth day of the month. It was the day where the main gate distributed last month's

contribution points!

So every month of this day, the Logistics Department would be crowded with disciples flocking to collect their points. With these points they could exchange them for various cultivation pills, treasures and martial arts to improve their strength. So this day made all disciples all excited.

Some were excited, while others disappointed. Kai Yang was of the latter.

Startled, he couldn't help but frown. Each month, the amount of points he received was quite meager.

Sweepers could earn ten points, but in the last month he was challenged six times, and each time he lost! With reductions after each loss, he was only left with four points.

This.....this really made people cry.

Fortunately he was only a trial disciple. His status was the lowest, so if he lost, he would only lose one point. Normal disciples lost two!

Thinking of this, Kai Yang was thankful.

But even a small mosquito has flesh. And with his savings, he will one day earn enough to exchange them for something worthwhile.

(TLN: Again, what does the author have with mosquitos?)

There had been enough delay today he thought as he continued to sweep.

When he had finally finished the job, it was noon. Time to go to the hall to collect his points.

After the morning's bustle, the hall was now deserted and quiet. Thankfully he hadn't come in the morning, or the wait would have been too troublesome.

Waltzing into the hall, you could clearly see an old man dozing away.

This old man was the treasurer of the school. He was about fifty with thin white hair and a kind face. Looking at him, he looked harmless to animals and humans, but Kai Yang knew he was a sly fox!

There was once an elite disciple who dared to act arrogant here and was then pushed out of the hall a few hundred feet. His life was almost taken. Kai Yang was present, so he knew this and also knew that his old man held unfathomable strength.

Stepping into the view of the old man, Kai Yang could clearly see the old man snoring away.

This old thing! Don't know which female Sky Tower disciple he is dreaming about again!

(ED: Doesn't even give the old guy the benefit of the doubt O.o)

Holding a broom, he gently nudged the old man while softly calling: "Treasurer

Meng!”

The old man’s surname was Meng, his first name Kai Yang didn’t know so he couldn’t call him that.

Tapping the counter a few times, the old man was finally awoken. He groggily opened up his eyes and saw that it was Kai Yang. Wrinkling his face as if he saw s**t.

(TLN: For young viewers, just in case.)

“What’s with that face?” Kai Yang asked indignantly.

Rolling his eyes: “Why didn’t you come in the morning?”

Confidently he replied: “There were too many people in the morning, and currently it’s peaceful!”

“Interrupting this old man’s rest. Do you know what respecting the elderly means?”

Leaning in, Kai Yang whispered: “Which young lady did you dream of?”

Suddenly full of energy Treasurer Meng replied to Kai Yang with eyes full of contempt and loudly proclaimed: “Your words just now, tarnished this old man’s reputation! Too outrageous.”

“Good body figure?”

“Great!” Treasurer Meng unconsciously leaked out.

(ED: GG I had high hopes but alas they were shattered.)

“Supple legs, white skin and a beautiful, thin waist?”

“En, en, en.....” Immediately he nodded his head, immediately thinking Kai Yang as a friend.

“He, he.....” Kai Yang sneered.

Treasurer Meng stammered and blushed as bright as a monkey’s ass. Full of shame, he just wanted to dig a hole and crawl inside to hide.

Chapter 9 – Treasurer Meng

Throughout his years at Sky Tower, the only person Kai Yang really knew was Treasurer Meng. After all, he needed to go to him every month.

Treasurer Meng had a nickname which most people referred to him as, Bully Meng. Even though his position is a treasurer, he still liked to extort contribution points from other disciples.

Take blood clotting cream for example, usually it would be sold around ten contribution points. He will sell two bottles for the price of three. Also the amount of cream that should go in two bottles, was put into three. It's very simple he said, buy it or get lost!

Of course Treasurer Meng doesn't always do it, only occasionally. He only targets richer disciples, for poor people like Kai Yang he doesn't even bother.

Contribution points are hard to come by, so how can disciples stand by and be exploited? Every disciple that had been cheated by him would report him to the council. They have warned him numerous times, but he still continued, unmoved. Furthermore, his position is crucial, and there was no one who could replace him.

Due to this, all of the school's disciples hated him to the utmost limit.

That old man was ruthless to everybody, except Kai Yang, to whom he could do nothing. That was because one time, he was peeking at a female disciple, and was caught red-handed by him.

No respect for the elderly! What a scandal! He was caught, so Treasurer Meng could only lower his head in front of Kai Yang.

It was exactly because of this that Kai Yang became very familiar with the old man.

The lecherous old man, with thick skin quickly adjusted his attitude and said: “Same as always?”

(TLN: For those who don't know, thick skin is being very shameless)

“Yeah.” Kai Yang said earnestly while nodding his head.

Not saying a word, Treasurer Meng took out ten silvers from within the counter and recorded it down.

Taking the silvers, he asked: “How many contribution points do I have now?”

Rolling his eyes, the treasurer replied: “You earn four points each month and then use one point to exchange for 10 silvers. That leaves you with only three points to save, making a total of twelve points in your account. What, you want to exchange them for a bottle of blood clotting cream?”

“No, I was just asking.” He replied while muttering: “Twelve eh.”

Such a small amount, even if you just wanted to exchange it for a small medicinal herb, it wouldn't even be enough.

With a serious face, Treasurer Meng whispered to him: “Little Kai Yang, you want to save up and exchange it for a tempered essence pellet. But to save up for it, and then to rank up with your speed, how long will that take?”

“Won’t I eventually reach it?” He replied chuckling.

This left Treasurer Meng speechless. He thought that with his speed, by the time he makes it, this old man will have already been dead for many years.

“But Treasurer Meng, there is one thing I don’t understand.”

“Speak!” The old man said while putting on a ‘I am in a good mood so I will tell you’ attitude.

“The tempered essence pellet is a very precious medicine, how could it appear here?”

“He he…….” Speaking with a proud face: “That is because this pellet is this old man’s treasure, others don’t know about it.”

“Ah, it’s yours?” This left Kai Yang stunned. He had always thought that this pellet belonged to the school. No wonder this old thing set such an astronomical price.

“Now don’t be angry.” He joyfully said, while taking a drink from the teapot. “I won’t bully you, as long as you bring enough contribution points to exchange, Old Meng will give it to you. For my word is not nothing.”

“I will collect it.” He said nodding.

With his face downcast Old Meng asked Kai Yang: “I heard that yesterday you got a beating?”

Immediately Kai Yang turned around and left.

From behind Treasurer Meng shouted: “Let this old man ask, don’t be in such a hurry to walk away.”

He said, but really he was gloating inside.

Seeing that Kai Yang had no intention to stop, he straightened up and yelled: “Little Kai Yang, you should hurry up and leave. Sky Tower is no place for you to be, sooner rather than later you will be killed.”

Pausing but without turning around Kai Yang sighed: “I have no place to return to.”

He was finished if he left.

After holding the teapot for a while, Treasurer Meng said: “Then why did you come?”

Tempered essence pellet.....he he, this expensive treasure, how could this old man possibly own it? He only made up this lie to give you hope, he had never thought you would take it seriously.

Kai Yang then hurriedly went back to his hut and put the broom away, then briskly walked out.

He was going to the small village outside of Tang Lin to buy his food with his ten slivers, like he did every month.

For the first time this trip didn't make him feel tired.

Previously, every time he walked down this path, he would get bad asthma attacks again and again. But this time, not only did this not happen, his body felt strengthened compared to before felt less strained walking down the path. Even if he walked a hundred miles, he felt that he wouldn't tire.

Is it the golden skeleton? This made him think of something that happened this morning. While he was sweeping, another disciple had crashed into him, but on the contrary to what normally occurred he had held his ground very stably, while the disciple had fell to the ground.

Although this wasn't much, in retrospect, it was unusual. With his weak physique, how could he not have fallen but the other party fell. It had always been him who fell.

Growing more and more excited, he thought about the changes the golden skeleton had brought to his body. Although these changes were small, gradually over the course of time they could culminate into great changes.

Thinking of this, Kai Yang recovered and soon walked to town.

Looking around, he went to the left hand side of the street. He was going to a

rice shop. The shop wasn't big and the owner is surnamed He, and was a local resident. He treated all customers the same this was one of the reasons why Kai Yang bought from him.

Such a small store could be found everywhere. The reason why Black Plum Village was very busy, was because in the surrounding area, apart from there was not only Sky Tower School but also the Windy Rain Sect. The relationship between the two could not be considered bad. The various other small schools couldn't compare to these two main sects for they didn't even own their own land.

It was precisely because of these two main sects that the village was able to sell many different weapons and maintain such a bustling environment full of many different wares.

Creating an environment just like the Han Dynasty's Capital!

After walking around for awhile, Kai Yang inadvertently walked past an alley where some people were gathered. He didn't know what they were doing, but they were pretty suspicious and gave Kai Yang an extremely vicious glare.

Chuckling lightly, he just followed the principle 'if they don't harm me I won't harm them' he just ignored them. But among those three there was one who dressed in a similar fashion to Kai Yang.

Chapter 10 – Money & Bankruptcy

Kai Yang didn't think much of this though, because they were in Black Plum Village, located close to Sky Tower, other disciples coming down to the Village was quite common.

A little while ago, Kai Yang arrived at the line for rice. The line was quite long, the length of two stalls. The business was very prosperous, but only has one waiter running around serving. The boss was calculating about money on an abacus at the counter, while the wife greeted the guests.

As more people finished ordering, the line gradually became shorter and Kai Yang joined the line.

"Madame" Kai Yang cried out, a 40 year old looking lady looked up to see who it was. When she saw it was Kai Yang she suddenly smiled and said, "Ah, young man, you came to buy rice again."

"Yes." He walked to the front of the counter, and pointed a bag behind the counter and said "Give me one bag please."

While the lady was tying up the bag with a string she said "Young man, you buy just one bag a month, is this enough for you?"

Kai Yang replied, "It's enough."

"You're lying!" The lady retorted while looking at Kai Yang, "Look at you; such thin arms and legs. If you're eating properly then what's with the skinny arms

and legs?”

Yang Kai smiled sheepishly, “I also go to the mountains to hunt, so therefore even with just one bag I won’t be hungry.”

While the boss concentrated on calculating the bill, he whispered to her: “Go fetch the old rice from the back and give it to this child.”

“We’ll listen to the boss.” Madame replied with a smile.

“How is this right? You are also trying to make a living here.” Yang Kai said out loudly.

The Lady immediately frowned her face, “What use is old rice? Leaving it there will only provide a place for insects to grow. Anyways, people won’t eat it. But the owner said that this rice still has some nutrients although less. You wait here I will go get some for you take home.”

As she was saying this she had already started walking towards the back room.

Kai Yang’s heart swelled, for he didn’t know what to say. Everytime he came to buy rice, the boss and his wife would always find various excuses to give him more. They say that insects will grow in old rice and the like, but in fact, it was always good rice they gave him not old rice. Their generosity gave Kai Yang hope in this sad world.

“Thank you Uncle He.” Yang Kai’s voice had a slight trembling to it.

The Boss smiled and looked up, “When living alone, don’t you have household problems? In the future, whenever you’re hungry just come to our shop, we may not have much, but we still have enough rice for you to eat.”

“Okay.” Yang Kai nodded his head, this world still had good people around.

Shortly, two enthusiastic people came to the rice store and kicked some people who were ready to order their meals from the line and away from the store front.

“Ahhhh.....” the second Little Brother fell, landed on his butt, and flipped over. It was a big problem because after he fell to the ground he couldn’t get up again.

“Why?” Boss He called towards the people who had kicked the little brother as he ran out from behind the counter and towards the two men. Kai Yang quickly helped second little brother up whilst intently glaring at the two evil faced men. One of the men, looked pale and thin, was clutching his stomach, while the other one was built like a bear, supported the pale one. These two were the ones who kicked the second brother.

“Who’s the boss here?” The man people shouted out.

“I am, I am.” Boss He quickly replied. He was only an ordinary merchant, yet the two men who called him out had such fierce looking faces. The swords at their waist and the fierce faces that showed they were not easily trifled with. Boss He wondered what had happened.

“Well, well. So you are the black-hearted boss. You even dared to sell poisonous rice to my brother. Look at him! Originally he was a strong man, but

after eating your rice he became this sickly. Normally he is as strong as a bear, but he can hardly stand now! You black-hearted person, worrying only about money and going as far as to take lives!”

At this outburst from the man, Boss He worriedly stammered out: “Ah, how could this be? How could it?”

The man then said: “How would I know? This morning my brother bought some rice from you, and made rice porridge, then he became like this after eating the rice he bought from you. I was lucky I didn’t eat any, otherwise I also would’ve become like him.”

Boss He’s forehead began to sweat, he took his sleeves and kept wiping his forehead and said “Respected customer, I fear there might be a misunderstanding.”

“Misunderstanding? Misunderstanding your mother! If it wasn’t your rice, then what caused him to become like this?” The Han man roared.

(TLN: Han people were a type of ethnic inside of China)

Kai Yang sat down and pondered the situation while all eyes were on the commotion. Boss He is such a nice person, Kai Yang couldn’t believe that this person who gave him rice, would put poison in it. Not to mention the fact Boss He couldn’t possibly have a black heart in Kai Yang’s mind, a black-hearted businessman wouldn’t be so stupid as to poison his own rice.

If these information spread how would he do business in the future? Who would dare come and buy his rice?

The two men's poor excuses were really unbearable, and they couldn't even consider a that it was something else.

Therefore, these two are definitely here to ruin others. But this move was a bit too evil, for they implied that the Boss needed someone to die just to earn some money.

Even though Kai Yang's body was weak he was still a practitioner. And through these past years he had seen countless types of people, so he felt he could accurately judge Boss He. The man was also someone who he owed greatly and when Kai Yang witnessed this, it caused his face to fall. He stood up and said: "These two....."

"What?" One of the men threw him a glare, his anger evident.

Kai Yang didn't speak, but Boss He immediately sprang in front of him. He slowly shook his head for Kai Yang to stop.

(TL: *Tear* Boss He, you're too kind.)

"Uncle He....." Kai Yang was stunned.

"Even in bankruptcy, avoid misfortunes!" Boss He whispered.

Kai Yang just helplessly sighed. That fact that the boss said this, signalled that he knew what the two Han men were on about. But in order to do business, one must have a good name. The earlier commotion had already attracted a lot of

attention, if this continued, then the rice stand's reputation would go down the drain.

Even if one knew what they said was false, one could only comply with them and hurriedly hope to end this fiasco before too much damage was done.

In desperation, Boss He faced the man: "Regarding your brother's illness, I can say that it has nothing to do with me....."

After the two men heard this, one cried out in anger: "Even if it's not related, I have already come to this rice stand. If I don't make the truth clear, then my brother's suffering would be in vain. He should be sent to the doctor immediately! But of course, if you are willing to shoulder the medical bills, then we are willing to drop the subject."

After this statement it was clear that you really needed to go bankrupt to avoid misfortunes. If people really wanted to extort money, they would do it over a period of time. The demands that these two men were making were too short sighted, if Boss He agreed to pay them off now his rice stand's reputation would still suffer. For nothing is watertight and news of him selling poisoned rice would spread. This told Kai Yang that the men were either not interested in extorting Boss He for more money or that they had some other goal.

Who would have imagined that these two Han men had not intention of compromising: "You black hearted boss. Who do think we two brothers are, to be exploited by you so freely? We two brothers were really unlucky to have bought poisoned rice from you! Where is your guilty conscience?"

That statement resonated quite deeply with Kai Yang. He curled his lip while sitting, thinking were they virtuous and living life a clear conscience?

Boss He was also stupefied. What? Weren't these two men here to extort money?

While stunned and unsure what to do, more and more people had started to gather. A handsome boy similar to Kai Yang's age had also appeared. From his looks, he was clearly far better off than Kai Yang.

That young man casually walked up to the men, and circled them with interest. Whilst doing so he constantly clicked his tongue.

Others may have not noticed, but with a glance Kai Yang recognised those three as the people he spotted earlier in the alley.

The crowd just stared at the boy, who had just appeared!

Weren't these three men together? Kai Yang sensed an evil plot in the air.

Chapter 11 – Do good and in the end you will be sent to heaven

Suddenly the Sky Tower disciple walked out to the crowd and circled around. His expression slowly turned to one of mockery and arrogance.

But the two Han men were not easily mocked and creased their faces: “You little brat, walking around in circles has made this uncle dizzy. Do you want be the same?”

The youngster just snickered. Standing in front of the two men, watching the ‘poisoned’ man he said: “Your face is very pale. Looks like your poisoning isn’t simple.”

“Of course it’s not.” He viciously responded: “If it were not, why would I be here and with my brother, instead of at the doctor’s. We’re here to reveal this boss’ black’ heart and his true colours. Hoping that no one will buy from his store again and suffer as we have.”

This made Boss He’s face pale, for he didn’t know what the aim of these two men was. If it were extorting money then he would understand, but their motives were very puzzling and unclear.

Just when he was pondering this, Kai Yang softly inquired: “Uncle He, did you offend anybody during this time?”

Thinking hard, Boss He miserably wailed: “No one.”

“Then could it be that your rice shop prevented someone from earning

money?” Even though Kai Yang was young, he had experienced many things. So this thought was not impossible.

“This is just a humble job to survive, how could I prevent others from their income?”

Now this was weird! Staring at the ground, Kai Yang thought hard, but was still confused.

Then, the Sky Tower disciple sneered and asked the two men a question. They shouted out: “Look, trickery!”

While shouting, the man resorted to a trick, to open the black heart of the poisonous apple.

This surprised people around, for the morning had been quite sluggish. The Han man was wildly hopping about, while his fists were clenched. Jumping, he went to expose the poisonous truth.

Moving like this, his once pale face became flushed and rosy.

This caused the crowd to gasp. Clearly they were shocked over this sudden change.

“Poisoned.” Looking at the two Han men, he sarcastically said: “Such skill. I respect them, respect.”

The two men couldn’t help but pale. Not only did the fallen man not turn

white, he also looked like he wasn't poisoned.

The surrounding people also started to boo. They weren't stupid, how could they not be able to understand the situation? They didn't know what motives these men had, but to slander Boss He's Rice Stand was shameful. Luckily, that Sky Tower disciple had uncovered the truth.

More and more people had started to despise the men and started to praise that young man. This young man was naturally easy to like and with this incident, his reputation sky-rocketed.

While Kai Yang secretly confirmed his suspicions that they were all acting. They were acting out the play of a honourable knight uncovering foul play and protecting the weak, in order to gain reputation! If he hadn't seen them together earlier in the alley, he was afraid he would have also believed them.

But why did they go to all that effort?

The two Han men could no longer keep up the accusations. Staring fiercely at the young man they asked: "Brat, who are you to interfere in my brother's issues!"

Gracefully he turned around and arrogantly replied: "I am Sky Tower's Su Mu!"

Hearing those words, one of the men became afraid: "No wonder, you are a Sky Tower disciple. A dragon within here. Today these two brothers have admitted defeat. If fate allows it, I hope we will meet again!"

This sentence felt like it was planned beforehand, making Kai Yang Laugh.

Su Mu just laughed coldly: “Leave safely, for I won’t escort you!”

With the situation like this, and if it were indeed no accident like Kai Yang suspected. Then the two men would leave and ‘Su Mu’ would then seek out the audience’s praise. Especially Boss He’s.

But Kai Yang didn’t want Boss He to be fooled. Before those two men left, he quickly said: “You can’t let them go, they are too despicable. Today’s victim was He’s Rice Stand, but if we don’t teach them a lesson, they may target Liu Shi’s Clothes shop or Jiang Shi’s Grocery.”

Most of people who heard this, couldn’t help but notice that what he said was correct. How could they let these despicable villains leave so easily? If they let them go today then tomorrow they might target another shop and leave them destroyed. If it came to that, then they may not be as lucky as Boss He.

Thinking of this, the people started to block off the path in front of the two Han men.

From his position, Kai Yang could clearly see the panic in Su Mu’s eyes. This in turn, lead Su Mu to source of the voice, to Kai Yang. While the two men exchanged glances and quickly readjusted their expressions.

Chuckling, Kai Yang added: “Fellow disciple, there is a saying that goes; Good people follow through to the end. Just like how Buddha went to the west, why don’t you and I both arrest these two criminals?”

(TLN: Saying that he should finish his job. Also the Buddha reference is to this.

You guys should try it, Chinese folklore.)

Seeing Kai Yang's thin and fragile physique, Su Mu couldn't help but burst out in annoyance: "Who's your fellow disciple?"

Kai Yang Replied: "I am also a Sky Tower disciple. I entered the Main Gate three years ago."

This made Su Mu speechless, for he really was a fellow disciple.

"Now, without further ado." Kai Yang came forward and said: "Throughout the land, it is important to be reasonable. While one must also be chivalrous, so brother you must not let only me take the benefit. Let both of us arrest these two cowardly men and help Boss He claim justice, while also helping Black Plum Village. "

With this statement, the surrounding people began to applaud. This filled Su Mu with anxiety, for he felt as if he was dragged upon a pirate's ship by this unknown brother. Even he wanted to escape, he couldn't.

Those two men were also glancing continuously at Su Mu looking for guidance/help/assistance. Looking at them, Su Mu couldn't do anything for them.

"Brother, let's go!" Pulling on Su Mu's shoulder, Kai Yang rushed over.

What is this! Su Mu was in tears, wondering where did this brother come from. This really ruined my plans! But it had already come to this point, so Su Mu could only charge over. While he was preparing to capture them, he was also signalling

for them to look for a opportunity to escape.

The two men nodded, but Kai Yang saw the exchange and guessed what they were doing.

He was worried that Boss He would be tricked, so he took extra precaution and shouted: “Friends, fellow owners, don’t just watch. Come help us two brothers!”

Hearing this, Boss He also went to help. The rice stand’s youngsters joined in, their hands carrying empty rag bags. Boss He was previously abused by these two men, so naturally they would want revenge.

Seeing that Boss He had acted, the crowd couldn’t just watch and they all flocked towards the two men to capture them.

Previously the two men weren’t worried, but as they saw this scene, their faces paled. So they quickly yelled: “Don’t hit the face!” While protecting their face, they curled up on the ground.

Chapter 12 – The Trick

Bang, bang, bang, bang, the sound of the beating rang out. Even though the businesses on this street were run by ordinary people, they currently displayed a powerful fighting spirit that left others flabbergasted. These merchants, more or less did anything for money and were generally detested by others. And now, when they were given to chance to release their stress, how could they be lenient?

This was especially true for He's Rice Stand's waiter. With rag bags in his hands, he relentlessly beat down on the men.

Furthermore, with so many people hitting these men, they couldn't identify who was hitting them. So these people didn't have to worry about the consequences.

There is strength in numbers. Kai Yang only asked for aid, but before he could lift a finger, he was pushed aside by these merchants.

After a while, the beating gradually stopped and you could see the two men curled on the ground bruised all over. The rag bag had also disappeared. Looking at the men, Su Mu's heart cried out in pain, and his leg started to cramp. For the men were beaten bloody and their faces so swollen, that even their mothers won't be able to recognise them.

(ED: No mercy on their faces, crowd has the same attitude as you, so harsh

TL: Geez, just saying.)

This situation only occurred because the men didn't have enough strength to protect themselves. Although they had swords, one could see that it was only for decoration. If they could use them would they suffer these attacks?

Though on the other hand, how could experts stoop so low as to perform such despicable acts?

Now, even though the beating was finished the merchants remained.

The two Han men with their horrendous faces, and hearts full of fear weakly called: "Su...." Their hands trembling.

Unfortunately, Su Mu's expression changed and he loudly exclaimed: "What su, you want this young master to give you *pasty bones?"

(TLN: *Because his name is Su, a play a words with his name's meaning)

Seeing this, Kai Yang smiled and proclaimed: "You two scumbags! I don't know have many others you have framed, but it's extremely hateful!"

His words words are an exaggeration, but for the merchants present, this seemed like the truth. That waiter who previously held the rag bag spat: "Pei, you trashes. You actually dared to act arrogantly at this rice stand."

The waiter continued to let out his frustrations, but didn't expect Kai Yang to expand on his statement: "Correct. These types of people should really die. Fellow disciple, why don't you and I each kill one. That will teach them to break the law again and also be for the greater good."

Hearing this remark, the two people on the floor started to break out in cold sweat and were terrified. They had never expected this frail boy to be so ruthless.

Su Mu just stared at him, trying to figure out whether or not he was joking. But Kai Yang's face held no sign that it was a joke.

To tell the truth, although what the men did was cowardly, it wasn't serious enough to die for. Undoubtedly Kai Yang's punishment was a little too cruel.

Su Mu could only ask: "Brother, isn't that a bit excessive? Right?"

"Excessive?" Kai Yang just shook his head: "If their little lie were to succeed today, then Boss He's life would have been ruined. How would he maintain a livelihood? This is pushing people to the limits, so how is this excessive? You know, for every person, every action that they do, will have a consequence."

Previously, when those merchant heard Kai Yang's words, they had also thought this. But hearing his reasoning, they understood the sense behind his words and were conflicted. But the final decision wasn't up to them, so they just stood on the sidelines. But when Boss He wanted to say something, he was stopped by a look from Kai Yang.

"This.....this may certainly be the case, but we can't just casually go killing people." Now Su Mu was really worried. He didn't think that this disciple in front of him was so ruthless and merciless. Originally he had planned it out quite well; Firstly, those two men would go slander Boss He and then he would go and stop them, saving Boss He. Then they would escape and he would receive gratitude from the Boss thus accomplishing his goal. But he hadn't thought that such a

vicious disciple would appear, so easily choosing to kill them.

This was far from good.

Su Mu could see that the two men were pleading him to save them. Within those gazes, were signs of threats. How could Su Mu not understand their meaning?

It was like being tied to the body of a grasshopper. If we are to suffer a tragic end, then you would not come out unharmed. That was their meaning..

At that moment, Kai Yang said: “Brother, there is no other method. Through my experiences, killing is a natural thing. Could it be that you haven’t killed before? Or you guys already know each other.....so you are unwilling to kill?”

This statement made Su Mu’s heart jump to his throat. Turning around to look at Kai Yang, he found a mischievous smile.

“Brother what do you mean?” With a cool face he questioned, while thinking whether or not Kai Yang saw through him. He hadn’t revealed any clues, so how could he know?

What he didn’t know, was that Kai Yang knew of his plan purely by coincidence. If not he would have also been fooled.

Boss He was also smart, he understood the hidden meaning in Kai Yang’s words and asked Su Mu: “Little brother, what tune are you singing?”

(TLN: Chinese phrasing of what are you up to/planning.)

Kai Yang had revealed a portion of Su Mu's true colours, how could Boss He not be able to see?

Kai Yang just shook his head, he didn't point out anything in particular but just continued to stare at Su Mu: "Brother, I think that you are a courageous person, but you are hesitating. Don't worry, I am here to accompany you and the villagers too. So what are you afraid of?"

"What am I afraid of?" Su Mu laughed out loud, as if reassuring himself, he said: "What am I afraid of? Isn't it just killing a person? Who hasn't killed before?"

It was like he was unwillingly to admit he hadn't killed before, in front of Kai Yang.

In the end, this person's disposition shocked him. Su Mu hadn't stepped down from the challenge.

Su Mu then directed a cold, ruthless intent towards the men lying on the ground. Looking into that young man's eyes, those two men knew they were finished. This round, they were used too thoroughly.

"Brother, let's do it." Kai Yang continued to pour oil on the flame.

Breathing deeply, Su Mu slowly nodded.

Seeing this happen, the two men immediately knew their end was nigh. So how could they endure without doing anything? Jumping up, they pointed towards Su Mu and proclaimed: “Su Mu, you treacherous bastard. You asked us brothers for a favour, to slander Boss He’s stand so that you could come to the rescue and become a hero. But how do you repay us? Not only are we beaten like pigs, now we have to die for your crimes. You really are trash.”

“You lie!” Hearing his scheme revealed, Su Mu was furious.

“Hmph!” As if their injuries didn’t affect them, the men just sneered and the larger man shouted out loudly, informing all: “Everybody, young or old, today my brother and I came out and caused trouble for you. But this was all at the command of Su Mu. He had taken fancy to Boss He’s daughter, but sadly she rejected him. So he hatched a plan to obtain her.”

Chapter 13 – Just you wait

When this was revealed, something clicked inside the heads of the onlookers. Many people could not help but turn to look at Su Mu with disbelief in their eyes.

So that was it! Kai Yang was satisfied that he had guessed correctly, Su Mu really had an ulterior motive. Though he had thought it was something related to profit or reputation. He hadn't thought it was actually for his own sexual desires.

He had also met the Boss' daughter, even though she wasn't outrageously beautiful, she was still a work of art. Alluring body, delicate features, slim figure and the most beautiful girl in the entire village at only fourteen.

Such a young girl, unfortunately had caught Su Mu's eye, provoking such trouble.

"What utter rubbish!" Su Mu's face was as red as a tomato, trying to deny the truth.

Sneering the man continued to say: "I have said no lies. Even though us two brothers have our faults, and do some criminal acts, slandering Boss He and poisoning his rice this we would never do. Fellow people, you should know that sabotaging others' livelihoods, is equal to sabotaging my own. So how can I survive? Everything was instigated by this little brat."

This statement was very sincere, causing everybody to start laughing.

In a timely manner Kai Yang asked: “After this was over how much did he promise to give?”

“Fifty two silvers!” The man replied.

“Fifty two, that’s a lot.” Kai Yang softly said while nodding.

During this banter, Boss He was listening carefully. This made him understand the situation thoroughly, turning towards Su Mu he angrily said: “You despicable person. You actually dared to use such dirty methods to get my daughter. Thankfully she has eyes and saw your true face. Ah, how could Sky Tower have such a degenerate disciple. You are ruining your school’s good name. You are vain and selfish, with a character completely opposite to brother Yang. I feel ashamed for your mother and father.”

Surrounding merchants also started to feel more contempt towards Su Mu’s outrageous acts.

Su Mu’s face was bright red, for he knew that he could no longer come back to Black Plum Village. For his mask had been taken away and his true face revealed.

And the source of all his misfortunes was in front of him.....this disciple! If not for him, he would have been able to win the boss’ favour and further his reputation. That would have made it easier to curry the daughter’s love for him.

But all that planning had gone to waste. Not only had he failed to gain any reputation, he had also lost reputation he had previously for being a disciple of Sky Tower.

Under that situation, Su Mu put on a calm face and turned towards Kai Yang and asked: “Brother, how may I call you?”

“You guess!” Kai Yang replied with a wink.

Taking a deep breath Su Mu said: “Though you may chose to withhold your identity, I will be able to find out. For you have already entered the school for three years, yet you are not a official disciple. That means you are a Trial Disciple and within the entire school, there are only a few of you. Finding you will be simple.”

When he finished he immediately turned around and left. In the end, he did have some strength. For those who blocked his path, he pushed them to the side. Waltzing away unhindered

When he had left, the people had only just remembered the two Han men. But where were they? There was no trace, for when Kai Yang and Su Mu were arguing, they had sneakily ran away.

The debacle had finally been resolved. Kai Yang was satisfied, for he had exposed the deceit, gained approval from the merchants and Boss He was especially grateful to him.

That waiter also looked at Kai Yang in worship.

After the crowd dispersed, the Boss’ wife also came out. Taking Kai Yang’s hand, the more she looked, the more she came to like him.

On the contrary, Boss He’s he was full of worry: “Virtuous nephew Yang, today

you have offended Su Mu. I'm afraid that in the future, this will cause you ceaseless trouble."

After this incident, Boss He's started to refer to Kai Yang more intimately.

"Afraid?." Kai Yang just smiled. "The Main Gate has its own rules, so even if he hates me to death he can't do anything."

"Even so, you must be careful nephew. If because of your involvement in this matter you were to suffer misfortune then I as your Uncle would worry greatly.

"I will be careful." He consoled.

Kai Yang was immensely grateful to the He couple for extending a helping hand. They even insisted he stay for dinner, originally Kai Yang wanted to, but was scared away by the boss' wife.

"Little Yang, where are you parents? Where do you live? Have you married already?"

Looking at this, clearly the boss' wife wanted to become his mother-in-law. Knowing this, Kai Yang hurriedly left.

When he left, he was carrying a bag of white rice, but it far surpassed the amount 20 silvers could get you. So for an entire month, Kai Yang didn't have to worry amount his meals.

Originally, Kai Yang was worried that Su Mu would ambush him on his way

back. For as innocent as Su Mu looked, he was a sinister and treacherous snake on the inside, this was not impossible. Though, even when Kai Yang returned, Su Mu hadn't appeared.

He thought about it carefully, not attacking was the correct choice. Even though duels between disciples often resulted in death, the Main Gate didn't allow the needless killing of others. In short, if Su Mu had attacked on his way back to the school, then when things leaked out, it would have resulted in his own doom too.

If he wanted to deal with Kai Yang, then he would definitely come to challenge him, while making a fuss too. As for the matter of Kai Yang's identity, there is no doubt that he would be able to find it. In the Sky Tower, as long as Su Mu inquired a bit, then naturally he would find his identity.

Su Mu's true strength, Kai Yang didn't fully see, but he most definitely was at the peak of the tempered body. The only thing was he didn't know what stage exactly.

Seems like he must focus more on his practises. Otherwise, Kai Yang truly couldn't continue staying at Sky Tower.

Knowing this, Kai Yang swiftly returned back to his hut to practise.

At this hour, he was unable to practise the Tempered Body Record, but he could practise the basic skills that the school gave. These basic skills were to establish the foundations for the tempered body, to achieve spiritual consumption beyond his own body. This was the aim.

(TLN: It's talking about things like qi/ki/spiritual energy)

Kai Yang's previous usage of the Shaolin arts and the leg whip were all based around his foundation work. If not for this, then the skills couldn't be considered true martial arts. They would only be considered as the basic of basic skills, essential for all schools and families.

To the left of Kai Yang's hut, there a wooden figure. This was made, from a century old tree, by Kai Yang to practise on. Small dents were littered over it, there were even traces of blood. These were all made through Kai Yang's many days of diligent training.

Assuming his position, Kai Yang started to hit the wooden man. He infused all his might into each strike, beating the wooden man relentlessly. Peng, peng rang out as he struck the wooden man. However, after a few strikes, he felt that something was amiss.

It was his own fists and leg so he clearly felt that they were stronger than before. From the strike and the sound it made, all of them were stronger and more stable, incomparable to before. And over time, his hand and the bones started to feel numb and warm. This clearly indicated that he was stimulating his meridians, increasing his atmospheric affinity.

Reaching the tempered body fourth stage, gives birth to the atmospheric affinity, developing your meridians further and allowing you to sense the energy more clearly. This warm feeling was Kai Yang's meridians developing.

Chapter 14 – Incense

Kai Yang practised until the sun set, only then did he stop. Even after this period of time, not only was he not fatigued, he even felt more alive. Ever since he merged with that golden skeleton his strength seemed to skyrocket. Walking twenty miles today didn't even tire him out, even with the added weight of the sack of rice he hadn't become fatigued.

It was only when he was cultivating his tempered body, that he would truly feel pressured. Thinking about that morning's practise, Kai Yang couldn't help but shudder. That pressure was like the heaven and earth were crushing him, horrifying.

But with strain/pressure come development. Without extreme pressure, how could you possibly advance.

Only then, would a person's true potential show. And only then would your strength grow, step by step, each time breaking past your limits.

Though currently, even after throwing large amounts of punches and kicks out, Kai Yang has yet to feel any fatigue. He doesn't feel strained, how can he force out his potential and improve?

This made things difficult and made him depressed. That skeleton also gave him extreme recovery, making the basic skills of the school useless. Did that mean that he could only practise for half an hour each day at sunrise?

Daylight had around twelve full hours, and yet he could only practise for half an hour. What would he do the rest of the time? Sleep? This was obviously

impossible, Kai Yang immediately rejected the idea.

(TL: wow getting stronger by only practising 30 mins each day while sleeping the rest? lucky.

ED: so glad he's not following in the footsteps of contribution Hall Uncle)

While he absentmindedly cooked, Kai Yang thought about how he should train to exhaustion. If anyone else knew of this, they would have laughed to death.

Other practitioners may have wanted to take it easier, but Kai Yang wanted to push himself to the limit.

In the end, he still couldn't think of any good methods. Though the main reason was Kai Yang needed elixirs to help boost his training. There were also other methods, but in the end, all of these had one thing in common, they required—- money.

In Sky Tower, contribution points were the currency. Alas, Kai Yang was poor and only had a measly twelve points.

After the rice finished cooking, he wolfed down a few bowls. Although there were no sides dishes, and he could only eat plain rice, Kai Yang was very satisfied. That was the only meal in the past few days, which made him full.

After dinner, he couldn't go train, so he went to take a bath. After that he lay down and went to bed. Continuing his practise, there would be no result, so he might as well try to solve that problem. Consider the solutions, to hasten the work speed.

After thinking for awhile, he suddenly remembered; the black book.

One of the pages had something inside, so Kai Yang figured that the other pages would be the same. So if he had enough strength, he could unseal each page.

The first page contained the Golden Skeleton, which was also the cause of his current predicament.

While the second dealt with the methods to cultivate the tempered body with Golden skeleton.

However the third page remained blank. He had already tried to decipher it, but Kai Yang concluded he wasn't strong enough yet.

With the first and second pages unlocked, Kai Yang could start to study them. But after good half day he still couldn't figure them out. Until he accidentally turned to the third page and went into a trance.

Eh? Kai Yang frowned as he started to read the third page.

Almost instantly, countless gold words started to appear on the page and jumped into his mind. Then a small whirlpool started to appear in the center of the page. From it, arose an antique incense burner.

This turn of events left Kai Yang in shock, but quickly he started to rejoice.

Ah right, didn't he break through into the fourth stage this morning? Last night he was still in the third stage, but today he's in the fourth. So that's why he couldn't access the third page before?

Although it was only one level, it had still hindered his ability to comprehend the third page.

After he thought about this, Kai Yang couldn't help but feel regret. If this morning he had discovered this, then he wouldn't need to waste time now thinking about it.

Calming his beating heart, Kai Yang held the incense burner and carefully inspected it.

This burner wasn't large in size, and was a common item used by people. But it was half sealed, with a lid on the mouth and a few holes. It was also antique and of outstanding quality, but it wasn't attention grabbing at all.

Gently he sniffed, but there was no odor and slowly he lowered it.

What is it made of? Even after a while, Kai Yang still didn't know but could only go on the information imprinted in his mind.

After a short pause, Kai Yang opened his eyes with a strange look in them.

According to the information in his mind, this incense burner could aid him during training. The burner itself has no special properties, however if you were to gather herbs and burn them in it, the fragrance released would aid you during training.

Different herbs were needed for different stages.

Unfortunately, Kai Yang had some doubts. The plants needed to aid him at his current level were the Three Leaved Destruction/Chaos Spirit Flower and the Dead Jedi Tree Grass.

According to his understanding, the value of these two herbs were not high but they were very hard to find. They also possessed small amounts of toxins. Inhaled over a short period of time these toxins would do no lasting damage, but over many years the accumulation in your body would really injure you.

Would these two herbs really be effective in helping him?

These herbs were definitely available in the Contribution Hall, but with Old Man Meng's personality, he would definitely charge high prices for them. And with only a few points in his possession, how could he spend them like that?

There was only one option left. He would have to venture into the Black Wind Mountains to look for them himself. Kai Yang had already hunted in there before, so was quite familiar with its geography and perhaps the herbs were there.

Tomorrow into the mountains he shall go! With his problems currently solved, Kai Yang slowly drifted to sleep. But before he fell asleep, he checked the fourth page so as to not repeat this morning's embarrassing action. Unfortunately nothing appeared, it seemed that Tempered Body Fourth Stage was not sufficient for this page.

The next morning, Kai Yang got up early.

Yesterday's practise had already had such a large impact on his cultivation, so naturally he would make full use of the short time he had to cultivate. Not to mention, he was not a lazy person.

While immersing himself in the purple eastern air/gas, that slow but with the might of heaven and earth infused, Tempered Body Record fist's might gradually unfolded.

While he was a stage stronger than yesterday, Kai Yang still didn't make much progress on the fist. You could only perform it twenty times and when he touched his back, torturous pain responded. His back, hip and bones all ached, they felt like smashed beans.

Inhaling a mouthful of purple gas, his bodily senses as energy became clearer. His meridians all opened up and began to expel the impurities in his body.

Chapter 15 – Looking for Medicine inside the Mountain

With his daily training finished, he started his sweeping, which since absorbing the golden skeleton he had been able to complete in only one hour. After he finished sweeping he ran to the Contribution Hall.

Although Kai Yang had decided to go into the mountains to find the herbs, he had no knowledge regarding herbology. He had only heard of the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and the Dead Jedi Tree Grass, and didn't know what they looked like.

Most of his preparatory work for his journey into the Black Wind Mountain was done. To avoid an embarrassing situation, Kai Yang hurried to the Contribution Hall to write down the herbs' appearance.

Originally he had planned to ask Treasurer Meng to teach him, he hadn't expected Treasurer Meng to give him a book on herbs instead.

Looking at the book, Kai Yang found that it had an introduction to herbs and their medical properties, habitats and illustrations. Though it would give create a feeling of disappointment in those who read it. As it merely contained information on ordinary grade herbs and nothing on the herbs of a higher grade, but it was quite suitable for Kai Yang's current needs.

Just as practitioners were classified into different ranks, so to were herbs, weapons and medicinal pellets. They were divided into, Ordinary Grade, Earth Grade, Heaven Grade, Mystery Grade, Spirit Grade and Saint Grade. Each of the Grades were then divided into the lower, middle and peak level.

Luckily the herbs that Kai Yang needed were both Ordinary Grade, Lower class herbs so they were in the book. And since they were such a low grade, their value wasn't high.

After he left the Contribution Hall, Kai Yang went to the General Affairs Office. After all he was still a sweeper of Sky Tower's and this roundabout journey to Black Wind Mountain would take more than a day. So he had to ask to be excused from his work.

The General Affairs Office didn't make things difficult for him. They gave Kai Yang three days of leave, with his obligations taken care of he set off...

Black Wind Mountain was only twenty miles away from Sky Tower by foot. Since it wasn't that far, Kai Yang frequently went there to hunt for his meals, making him quite familiar with the terrain.

In this mountain was a vast and diverse range of herbs. But since it was his first time collecting herbs, Kai Yang made sure to be fully prepared. Carrying his water, food supplies, a shovel and a bag, he hit the road.

Rushing over, Kai Yang came to Black Wind Mountain and surveyed the area. The Mountain was like a prehistoric monster, lying down between the heavens and the earth. Imposing, with no end in sight, the mountain with its lush forests, jagged edges proudly stood against the horizon. Standing there, Kai Yang felt a cool breeze blow through his hair.

Within Black Wind Mountain lived many ferocious beasts. Some high levelled ferocious beasts could even make martial practitioners flee with no chance of victory. So generally when people ventured into the mountain, they wouldn't go too deep. The first thirty or so miles were classified as the safe zone, the next ten

miles were the dangerous zone. And the area beyond that, was the life-threatening zone. Basically the deeper you went, the more dangerous it was.

Since Kai Yang was only looking for ordinary grade lower level herbs he didn't need to venture too far in. So naturally he didn't have to worry about his safety as he would only be searching within the safe zone.

Currently it was still in the early hours of the morning and Kai Yang was trying to recall whether or not he had stumbled upon those herbs in his previous trips to the mountain. But it didn't matter whether he had or not, as he was prepared this time to find them equipped with the knowledge from the book.

Thinking back, Kai Yang remembered that there were many potential places for herbs to grow in. In his current situation he didn't even know the locations of the herbs he wanted to find.

But filled with anticipation, Kai Yang followed the familiar track into Black Wind Mountain.

After half an hour Kai Yang spotted his first harvest hidden within the thicket next to the track he, was a bunch of Li Chi/Sharp Teeth herbs. Harvesting them, Kai Yang put them into his bag and continued his search, thinking to himself this was a good start. Walking down the road, Kai Yang looked at the various vegetation scattered about, and memories of the forest came flooding back, informing him of his location. With his knowledge of the Mountain, gained from hunting, he could accurately create a mental map of where he was in relation to Sky Tower, preventing him from getting lost. By evening Kai Yang had collected four different types of herbs.

When searching for herbs it is naturally very hard, not to mention that many

people like to come here to collect herbs, making it even harder to find them. Although Kai Yang only found four herbs, he was still pretty satisfied.

Unfortunately Kai Yang didn't need these four herbs, to make matters worse their grades were only at Ordinary Grade, lower level too. Nevertheless if he were to take them back, he could exchange them for contribution points, so they were of some value.

At this time the sun had already started to set. Hurrying, Kai Yang finally arrived at an area which was suitable for the growth of many herbs.

This area was very strange, for all its bountiful vegetation it was devoid of any living presence. Especially for an area of thirty feet around around the area of herbs the land was completely dead and nothing grew, not even weeds.

Though in the center of the this wasteland, there were three bunches of grass. They fluttered in the wind, Kai Yang saw that they were brown coloured, and thought that it was just necrosis. But this was just the grass' natural colour.

After looking at it in more detail Kai Yang recognised them as a type of herb and with a sigh of relief, rushed over. Smiling widely, he quickly dug them all up.

A little while later, these three herbs were collected.

As he held these herbs, Kai Yang took out the herbology book that Treasurer Meng gave him earlier and checked it to see where he had seen them before. They were indeed the Dead Jedi Tree Grass. The illustrations, growth and environment all matched up.

Dead Jedi Tree Grass grew from dead trees, which made it quite easy to find. Basically in the mountains, any place that had dead land, you could find it growing nearby.

Carefully, Kai Yang placed the grass in his bag and took out some water and food, then took out his water and food and looked for a place to eat and rest.

This time when he entered the mountains his main goal was to find the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and the Dead Jedi Tree Grass, now that he had found the Dead Jedi Tree Grass he need to switch his focus to the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower. Not only did he need to find the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower but he also needed a large quantity of it.. Kai Yang decided he must double his efforts.

Though right now, it was already evening and the sun had set. This was naturally an inconvenient time to search for herbs so Kai Yang decided to find a spot to rest and continue tomorrow.

Previously when he entered/forayed into the mountains, he had never stayed overnight, however as the saying goes “Even if you hadn’t tasted pork, you have at least seen a pig before”. On that note, he naturally knew the dangers of the mountains at night.

(TLN: I think it’s pretty self-explanatory. But for those who are confused, it means that even if you haven’t experienced some things, you should have some knowledge of them.) Man even got to edit the comments, no rest for the wicked

After he found the nearest tree, Kai Yang climbed up and looked for a suitable place to sleep, after locating a place he immediately laid down and closed his eyes.

(ED: Trees are so hard to locate in a forest on a mountain)

By one-thirty am, Kai Yang had yet to fall asleep, so he took out the black book and turned to page three. With a thought, the incense burner floated out.

This was also a little mystery that Kai Yang had solved about the black book. Anything that was stored inside could be called out and returned at will. It was after all a storage book, and the burner had obviously been placed in there before so this function didn't come as a complete surprise.

(TL: Our MC isn't very bright. It's a storage book, if you could take things out, why couldn't they be put back in? How did the burner end up in it in the first place? A mystery.....ಠ_ಠ)

What Kai Yang didn't understand was that apart from the incense burner, other things could not be stored in the book. This made him wonder, was the black book a soul stone? Do soul stones normally have restrictions on what to accept and reject?

After playing with the black book for a while, Kai Yang fell asleep. He had just spent the entire day walking around the mountain after all.

After a peaceful night, Kai Yang got up early the next morning and practised the tempered body record for half an hour. In order to gather a good harvest, he must work very hard for the next two days. He also felt that he was on the brink of a breakthrough, not only did he feel that his atmospheric sense was at the utmost limit, he also felt his body was as well. Kai Yang just needed a final push in order to breakthrough.

Chapter 16 – Tempered Body 5th Stage

The discovery that he was near a breakthrough left Kai Yang ecstatic. For it took him three years to make it to the tempered body third stage. But on the second day of obtaining this book, he had broken through and now once again he will break through again. This training speed also made Kai Yang somewhat scared.

Practising the tempered body record consumed a large amount of stamina. So Kai Yang rested afterwards and slowly regained his stamina . After he had regained his stamina he ate some of the remain food and continued his search for the herbs.

Yesterday he had travelled to all the places from his memory that could potentially grow his required herbs. Today he would have to rely on luck. Fortunately, the value of these herbs were not high, so the chance of finding them today was still high.

(TL: Trust me Kai Yang, luck is the only thing you don't need to worry about.)

After an entire day of searching, Kai Yang had found a total of seventy eight herbs and two Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flowers. This time he had finally found the herbs he required to activate the incense burner, but the quantity he had was still lacking.

Time passed by, and soon darkness came. Kai Yang was still awake though, it was not because he wasn't tired but rather that he was too hungry to fall asleep.

((* O□O)! & (O.O))

Originally he had planned to hunt some wild game, but had not even seen a single rabbit. Unfortunately he could only find some fingernail-sized berries which were very sour. When he finished eating them it only made him feel even more hungry.

Ah! If I knew that this was going to happen, I would have brought more rice balls! Kai Yang repented. There is no shop in these desolate areas, where is he going to find food?

This hunger was a real embarrassment. Kai Yang then saw in the distance, a hint of a fire. Instantly his energy came back, picking himself up he walked towards it.

They dared to light a fire in a forest; these people were either idiots or they had nothing to fear. This time, these people belonged to the latter.

When he approached, a person near the fire thundered: "Who!"

(TL & ED: T^T, Kai Yang you're finally going to make some friends)

At that moment, Kai Yang felt his muscles tighten and his spine shiver. The two people by the fire were vigilant. One was tall and the other was short.

One had a burly physique and held a bow with an arrow notched he pointed the arrow at Kai Yang. The other was a young boy, aged about eleven and his eyes were bright and held no trace of fear. In this boy's hand was also a bow, and he also had notched an arrow back, but it was much smaller.

(TL: Maybe not.....

ED: How can you doubt our MC, have some faith)

Although Kai Yang was faced with the two arrows, he didn't have the slightest intention to retaliate. Walking around, he acted as if their threats were nothing big.

"Take it easy. I only entered the mountain to collect herbs." Kai Yang quickly said.

After they heard this, the two people looked at each other. The burly (I really want to say buff) slowly lowered his bow and arrow down. He then signalled for the boy to relax and laughed: "I had thought that the fire had attracted a wild beast, but it was just a false alarm."

"Sorry, I'm sorry." Kai said slightly embarrassed and laughed.

Touching his forehead, the burly man waved towards Kai Yang: "Come, the nights are cold and surviving alone here will not be easy."

When he heard this, Kai Yang walked up and sat next to the fire. Beside him, the burly man kept looking at Kai Yang and couldn't but feel pity when he saw Kai Yang's thin, boney body.

Now that they were sitting together it would be natural to talk to each other. From this chat, Kai Yang learnt that this father and son pair lived at the foot of the mountain, and came here to hunt and earn a living. Although they weren't rich, it was enough to maintain adequate food and clothing. The boy, although

he was young, was a veteran at hunting. And along with his father, they had come to Black Wind Mountains many times to hunt. Thus their knowledge of the mountain was far greater than Kai Yang's.

Kai Yang also told them a bit about himself. After he told them that he was a Sky Tower disciple, the burly man was taken aback. While the little boy became more interested in Kai Yang and kept on glancing at him with his glossy, black eyes.

The Han man said: "My son also wanted to train to become a practitioner, but his talent was not enough and he was refused. So he practically worships you people."

This statement made Kai Yang recall the past three years and his experiences. Not only did it move him deeply, it also made him softly rub the boy's head with affection.

When he was about to say something, Kai Yang's stomach grumbled loudly. The little boy stared blankly and suddenly laugh out loud, from his bag he took out some dry rations and gave it Kai Yang.

This once again made him very moved, but he didn't accept. Kai Yang looked at the burly man and he smiled: "Eat it. It seems that you did not eat anything today."

This time Kai Yang didn't reject the offering and quickly wolfed down the rations.

After chatting some more the three then went to sleep around the fire.

Though Kai Yang didn't dare sleep too heavily, if any danger were to approach the father and son, he would be able to react. He also considered this to be returning the favor for giving him the rations previously.

Fortunately the night passed peacefully and nothing happened.

When the morning arrived Kai Yang didn't wait for the father and son to wake before quietly leaving. But before he left, he left two herbs behind as a thank you for last night.

If these two herbs were crumpled they had a healing effect. Since they were constantly in the mountains, these herbs were bound to be useful to the father and son pair.

With the eastern purple gas increasing in volume, Kai Yang trained the tempered body record for half an hour. When he finished his practise, Kai Yang took in a large breath of the purple gas causing his meridians to suddenly shake. A warm feeling then began surging through his body, with the energy in his meridians swirling endlessly

The tempered body fifth stage! His intuition was correct, he indeed broke through today. After practising for half an hour he really broke through to the next stage!

Kai Yang was extremely happy, and felt more and more grateful towards the golden skeleton in his body.

Although it had not been very long since he obtained the proud golden skeleton, he had broken through twice thanks to it and the tempered body

record. This speed was simply unmatched. And this was practising under quite a number of restrictions. If he could practise all the time, what speed would he reach then?

This thought left Kai Yang somewhat speechless. Though after all, the tempered body was only the foundation to becoming a true warrior. Training the early stages were easier, the higher the realms, the greater the difficulty to train in.

After a quick rest Kai Yang continued to search for herbs.

Today he had yet again gained quite a harvest. He had collected more than a dozen herbs and caught a plump rabbit, solving his food problems.

This was already the the third day of his mountain journey and he had reached the end of the ten mile safety zone. Any further and Kai Yang dared not to enter inside, for with his current strength his only option was to become food for the beasts within.

Although he did not go too deep, his harvest was still quite good. He had collected more than twenty different types of herbs, and counting the previous two days he had forty different types making his journey here very fruitful. Unfortunately the two main herbs that he needed were very small in quantity.

To find forty different types of herbs in three days was no small harvest. Even if they were all ordinary grade, lower rank herbs, he was still able to exchange them for a fair amount of contribution points. But this greatly reduced his training time, doing more harm than good.

Chapter 17 – Battling the Demonic Beast

It was now the afternoon and Kai Yang had started to walk towards the track that would lead him back to Sky Tower.

Kai Yang was only given three days of leave, so he had to return before tomorrow morning, otherwise there would be harsh punishment waiting for him.

Kai Yang felt he had plenty of time and was certain that he could return before dark. Afterall, he was only hundred miles away, not a long distance.

In his heart he held great anticipation with regard to the black book's third page. Thinking about the results it would bring for him made him delighted and put a bounce in his steps.

Halfway through his journey back Kai Yang heard an unexpected, piercing cry not to far from his position. There was the sound of a child screaming/crying mixed in.

When he heard this he paused his footsteps and strained his ears. Soon after, his face changed and Kai Yang swiftly ran towards the direction of the sound.

When he was listening to the sound, he recognised it as the sounds of the father and son pair from the night before. And that child's crying sound was from the little boy.

Those two probably had encountered some sort of trouble, or why would they make such a ruckus. Last night they had given Kai Yang some of their rations, and

even if were for their past kindness, how could he just ignore their trouble?

As he ran towards them, the father's roaring became increasingly desperate and the boy's grew softer and softer.

Kai Yang's face gradually hardened and he started to have a bad feeling.

By the time Kai Yang arrived, the father's roar could no longer be heard and he only saw a dark cave in a high hill. To the side of the cave in the midsts of some bushes, tangled between some spiderwebs was a silver bow. This bow the same one the little boy had been holding the previous night.

Without thinking, Kai Yang threw this possessions onto the ground, heightened his senses and plunged straight into that dark and sinister cave.

Although the light inside the cave was not bright, it was still enough to see.

When he looked around, Kai Yang was shocked to discover that the cave was covered in webs. On the walls and the ground, they crisscrossed each other and varied in thicknesses. Layer upon layer, the road ahead was blocked by the multitude of webs.

Not only that, the cave was damp. The water dripped down at a steady pace, and when Kai Yang took a step forward, his foot sank into the ground.

Steeling his nerves, Kai Yang walked to the sound of deep breathing. Only he saw a large human sized cocoon spun from a spider's thread in a chrysalis-like state. At the top, it revealed a human face, that face belonged to the burly man from the night before.

Worriedly, Kai Yang dashed over to the trapped hunter, his worry eased upon discovering that he was only unconscious.

Hearing Kai Yang calling to him, the hunter groggily awoke and called feebly: "Save the child! My son was dragged further inside. I beg of you, please save my child!"

"Got dragged inside?" This shocked Kai Yang, as he struggled to free the hunter from the web. Sadly the web was too strong for his current strength, being unable to break it he could only temporarily give up. Diving into the hole, he chased after the little boy.

From behind the hunter warned: "Be careful! That is a Demonic Spider Beast!"

When he heard the words, Demonic Spider Beast, Kai Yang's heart thumped loudly. These demonic beasts were not like ordinary wild animals; they loved to slaughter. They were true ferocious beasts and Kai Yang was not a match for even the lowest among them with his current strength.

In the Black Wind Mountains, the reason why the first thirty miles were deemed a safe zone, was precisely because there were no ferocious beasts. Unfortunately it seemed, one had appeared. This was seriously outside one's expectations.

Now that he knew it was a ferocious beast, Kai Yang movements became more and more cautious and soft. Slowly, he groped his way through the tunnel and after about ten feet, he spotted the little boy.

The son was in a similar situation to his father, wrapped up in a cocoon which was suspended in mid air by a larger spider web.

At the side of the little boy, there was an enormously, large flower patterned spider sucking on a straw. The straw was inserted in the little boy's arm, and you could clearly see the dark red blood streaming out from the straw and into the spider's mouth.

On the ground of this hillside cave, were various bones of all different types of beasts piled up like mountains. One could only imagine the amount of time the Demonic Spider Beast had spent living here and the number of poor souls, humans and animals alike, that had fallen prey to it.

Kai Yang had no time to spare to think about this spider's capabilities and form an appropriate plan. Every second he delayed, increased the chances of this little boy ascending straight to heaven. After a moments silence, he suddenly charged forward.

The enormously, large, flower patterned spider did not expect to be disturbed at that moment. Shortly after Kai Yang charged forward, a large amount of force was applied to the side of the Demonic Spider, and a large hole was torn in the web. The flower patterned spider fell alongside Kai Yang. The little boy also fell through the hole and onto the ground.

Being attacked so suddenly caused the flower patterned spider to be furious. It's eight long, hairy legs stamped the ground, and all of its eyes focused on Kai Yang.

Before he even had to time to get up, he was pinned down by a single single pounce from the flower patterned spider.

Kai Yang snarled, a steel fist flew out and landed squarely on the throat of the spider. This momentarily stunned it, Kai Yang took the opportunity to kick the spider, sending it flying away.

With a single roll, Kai Yang got to his feet and crouched down, his eyes fully focused on the movements of that flower patterned spider.

After that small confrontation, Kai Yang's furiously beating heart had calmed slightly. For that demonic beast's rank was not that high, otherwise he would even be able to struggle against it. It's most likely that it's only a first realm demonic beast.

However even if it was only a first realm demonic beast, given Kai Yang's current strength it was still a difficult opponent.

As both sides were sizing up their opponents, the flowered patterned spider started to show signs of impatience, and it wasn't just him Kai Yang began to exhibit them as well. It seemed that the little boy had lost too much blood, and was showing signs of poisoning. If the current situation could not be resolved quickly, then there would be no time to save him.

Abruptly, the flower patterned spider opened its mouth to spit out a long, gem-silk thread. It spat the thread towards Kai Yang, signalling the start of its attack.

Previously, Kai Yang had learnt about this thread's durability, so naturally he was wary to not be trapped by it. At once, he rolled to the side and narrowly dodged the attack.

The flower patterned spider didn't show much reaction to his dodge and continued to spit out other thread pieces. By the time Kai Yang noticed the spider wasn't aiming at him it was already too late, the entire cave had been covered by in a web of these threads, sealing off his exits and trapping him inside.

"Is it forcing me to fight to the death?" Kai Yang laughed at that thought, any fear he had previously harboured was quickly expelled by the arrogance seeping out from his bones, pumping adrenaline through his body.

With the current situation, if he didn't kill the spider, he would not be able to leave. Since it had come to that, he could only fight to the bitter end; either you die or I die.

With time ticking, Kai Yang could not afford to delay. Firmly planting both feet on the ground, he sprinted towards the flower patterned spider. Out flew another strand of thread, fortunately Kai Yang was on guard, so how could he not avoid it?

After dodging three of these threads in succession, he had finally closed the distance between them. But before he could throw out a punch, that flower patterned spider raised its front two legs and drove them towards him.

Kai Yang could only lift up his arm to block, the spider's forelimbs pierced through his arm.

Kai Yang roared out in pain, his blood boiled out. Not only was he not in a fearful panic, instead he had an indescribable feeling of excitement and anticipation in his heart. All of his bones clanking together caused a warm feeling

passed through his entire body.

Chapter 18 – Good men will be rewarded

Throwing out a punch, Kai Yang's fist whistled through the air and smashed into the eyes on the left hand side of the flower patterned spider's head. The moment his fist hit, it pulverised two eyes.

The flower patterned spider was horrified. Even with its limited intellectual capacity, it knew to fear that human with blood dripping from their arm. When it went to retract its two legs that were lodged in Kai Yang's arms, the spider found that the arm muscles had tightened around its forelimbs so the spider couldn't pull them out.

Kai Yang's second punch followed shortly after his first, pulverising another two eyes.

The flower patterned spider screeched out in pain, incessantly trying to retreat, but it's hind legs could only scratch at the ground. In desperation, it lashed out at Kai Yang, leaving many shallow wounds on his arms. Although they weren't deep, they still drew blood.

But, the pain only served to increase Kai Yang's excitement, his whole body bubbled with overflowing strength. The corners of his mouth curved into a cold and merciless smile, his fists flew endlessly towards the spider's forehead. Under the unceasing barrage of attacks, the flower patterned spider's forehead cracked open, and its bodily fluids oozed out.

A dismal whimper escaped from its mouth, the flower patterned did not wish to sit and wait for its death. From its mouth, it spat out streams of its web, and at such close proximity, the web wrapped Kai Yang up.

However at that moment, the flower patterned spider was in a horrible state; its head was disfigured so much that it had nearly burst. If it hadn't become a demonic beast, and gained the tenacious vitality that is associated with it, it would have already died many times over.

Since this was the case, even though it had trapped him with its web, under Kai Yang's relentless fists, it soon ceased all signs of struggling.

Kai Yang would have never imagined he could win a fight with a demonic beast. Furthermore, not only had he survived, he had also killed it.

Even though it was a first realm demonic beast, it was still not something a cultivator at the tempered body fifth stage should be able to defeat. Although Kai Yang's wounds weren't considered light, he didn't feel much pain from them; as if they nothing at all.

After certifying that the flower patterned spider was truly dead, Kai Yang went to extract the leg that had pierced into his arm. When he pulled it out, a gush of warm blood followed.

(TL: O.O, you just casually pulled something that was stabbed into your arm? Oh it's stuck, let's pull it out.)

Without even pausing to inspect his injuries, Kai Yang tore apart the spider web that was binding him and rushed to the little boy's side; gently cradling his body he brought him out of the cave.

The little boy's father had managed to finally escape from his web cocoon. And

just as he was preparing to run further into the cave, he saw a blood-drenched Kai Yang carry out his son. He quickly inquired: “What happened to him?”

“He has lost too much blood and has also been poisoned.” Kai Yang replied.

After reaching the cave’s entrance, Kai Yang placed the little boy onto the ground and raced towards his fallen bag. Taking out some of the herbs inside, he began chewing on them. Without hesitation he called over the hunter: “Chew on these herbs to soften them, then feed them to him.”

The hunter was already scared out of his wits, so when he heard Kai Yang’s orders, he didn’t hesitate. Swiftly, he placed the herbs into his mouth and began to chew them diligently.

In that moment, Kai Yang’s mind was all too clear; his understanding of each herb’s medicinal properties began to appear in his mind within his mind. Which herbs could detoxify, which herbs could help with healing, which herbs could help staunch blood flow, the knowledge flowing through his mind was comparable to that of a veteran pharmacist.

After a short period of time, Kai Yang took out the herbs he had been chewing on and smeared them over the little boy’s arm. The hunter followed his actions and began to feed the chewed up herbs to his son.

Under the nervous gazes of the two people, colour gradually returned to the boy’s pale face and his breathing steadied.

The hunter could finally release the tension in his heart and fell on his buttocks. Crying out loudly he said: “Fortunately nothing happened, fortunately

nothing happened.....”

Kai Yang poured cold water on his new found hope: “Not yet, my herbs are only low levelled ones and can only alleviate his symptoms. You have to leave the mountain and find a doctor, otherwise I’m afraid that the poison will become incurable. ”

The hunter could only listen to Kai Yang’s advice. Immediately he said: “Then I shall go take him to find a doctor now.”

“There’s no hurry.” said Kai Yang as he held out his hand to stop him. “Allow your son to stabilise first then move him.”

“Oh, what the saviour says is correct.” With such a great catastrophe befalling on the hunter, he had long since lost his nerve. So whatever Kai Yang said, he would follow.

After replying, he remembered that his saviour was also injured. His injuries were not light, so he worriedly asked: “Saviour, do you not want to also treat your own wounds.”

Kai Yang replied: “Not need.”

“But you have shed such a large amount of blood, how is that alright?” The Hunter looked at him in shock.

“I don’t know.” Standing up, Kai Yang jumped up and down vivaciously. “Even I don’t know, but I feel great.”

He not only felt great, but also excited. Kai Yang suspected all this was somehow related to his golden skeleton, but how could he explain it to a simple hunter? As he thought back to the recent fight, Kai Yang's blood began to boil once again.

That was the very first time he had ever been in a life or death situation. But he had not experienced even the slightest amount of fear, instead he had only felt enjoyment at the feeling of blood splattering all around him. Like it was the most common occurrence.

(TL: The birth of an asura/bloodthirsty demon/demon king???)

"That's right, please wait a bit. I will return soon." As he picked up his bag, Kai Yang once again rushed into the cave.

The hunter thought he had gone to sort out the demonic beast's corpse, but that was not it.

Although the flower patterned spider was a demonic beast, it's corpse didn't hold any value; it was too low levelled.

Kai Yang's goal was to pick herbs growing inside the cave!

Before he had begun his battle with the flower patterned spider, he had discovered a large amount of purple coloured flowers. Previously he didn't have the time to examine them, but now that he thought back to them, his spirits couldn't help but rise.

If he didn't see incorrectly, those purple coloured flowers were actually the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flowers that he desperately needed.

(TL: here comes his xianxia luck!!!!)

Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flowers grew in dark and damp places with a lot of corpses. Making this cave an ideal environment for them to grow in.

With his heart full of anticipation as he entered the cave, Kai Yang nearly laughed, such was his joy.

Helping others will really reward you well. It seemed that this saying was true! If he had not come to rescue the father and son pair, then he would never have found the herbs that he was looking for.

The vast expanse of purple flowers in front of him truly were the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flowers. Plus, there appeared to be a vast quantity of them; a quick count showed there were at least thirty to forty of these flowers. These small purple flowers, all bunched together would make anyone who saw them feel delighted.

Without further ado, Kai Yang hurriedly took out his shovel and started to harvest these herbs.

While he busied himself, Kai Yang's heart was more than content. Just as he was preparing to leave the cave, Kai Yang discovered a red, mushroom like plant in the corner of the cave.

His curiosity piqued, Kai Yang walked towards it to carefully examine it. This

thing was about the size of a bowl, dark red and was like a mushroom or fungus. Kai Yang didn't recognise this thing, for it was not mentioned in the little book that Treasurer Meng had given him.

Could it be a priceless treasure? Rolling up his sleeves, Kai Yang went to pick the mushroom like plant. As for the matter of its identity, he could work it later; it wouldn't take much space up anyway.

By the time Kai Yang exited the cave, his bag was filled to the brim.

"Let's go, I will descend the mountain with you." Kai Yang told the the hunter, treating him like an equal.

"Many thanks to the saviour." The hunter was moved to tears, for he knew that Kai Yang was worried they would encounter more danger on the journey out. That's why he was following them.

"We just happen to be travelling the same path, no need for thanks." Kai Yang replied humbly, and the three of them quickly descended the mountain.

By evening they had arrived back at town, and in the dark, they searched for the doctor's home.

Chapter 19 – Su Mu comes, looking for trouble

Even after settling the little boy, Kai Yang wasn't in a rush to leave. After all, that night, the little boy had given him some of his rations. So he had to stay until the boy opened his eyes; only after that would his heart be at peace.

Inside, the hunter was paced around restlessly, worried about his boy. Before long, the doctor shooed him out — saying he was too noisy.

“Doctor Chu said it is fortunate we did some emergency treatment. Otherwise my son would have truly lost his life. Saviour, your mercy and kindness I will be forever unable to repay. Even if I worked hard my entire life, I will be unable.”

As soon as he finished speaking, the hunter knelt down in front of Kai Yang.

Kai Yang did not help him up but smiled and said: “Big brother Zhang, men only kneel before gold. With you kneeling, you have harmed our good relationship, you do not need to kneel in the future. I also ate some of your child's rations, if you are talking about owing, then I owe you too.”

After finishing his sentence, he went to help hunter Zhang up.

Hunter Zhang was moved to tears: “Saviour, you truly are a good person!”

As they were speaking, the doctor walked outside and said to hunter Zhang: “It is no longer dangerous, so you need not worry. But because he has lost a large amount of blood, he will be asleep for a while longer but once he wakes up, he'll be fine.”

When they heard those words, Kai Yang and hunter Zhang both let out sighs of relief.

Once he relaxed Kai Yang felt a wave of exhaustion flow through his body. Today had been far too exciting, he had also received many wounds and lost a lot of blood. Even with his previous energy, his body had still received damage, so when he relaxed himself, he fell asleep; sleeping until the sun rose.

Early in the morning, Sky Tower.

Many of the disciples woke up early, with high spirits. Together they gathered in a certain region, waiting in anticipation. Thirsty eyes, craned necks, a unruly state of mind; these things were consistent throughout the crowd. Together they surrounded the house like a housewife who had waited many years for her husband to return home. Exemplifying that devotion and expectation.

With the passing of time, the number of people who gathered gradually increased. It was like they were telepathically connected, everybody turned their heads at the same time to look at one place.

That place was the path that lead to the residence of Kai Yang, a small little hut.

Today was the day when they could once again challenge Kai Yang! This was equivalent to a free contribution point box, how could these disciples give up this golden opportunity? Some people pitied Kai Yang's predicament, for every five days he was challenged and beaten to a pulp. This was really a bit too brutal.

However sympathy alone could not help Kai Yang. Even if they did not challenge him, many others would gladly take their place. In the end, he will still be beaten to a pulp, so they might as well do it themselves, at least they could take it easy on him. When they thought about it like that, they all came to try their luck.

En, if he chose me, I will definitely hit lightly, so he will not be injured too badly. Many people were making excuses like this in their hearts.

Typically Kai Yang was already awake and had begun to sweep the area by this time, but it was really strange today. Even after waiting quite a while, they still had not seen Kai Yang. Even when they tiptoed over to look around, they could not find him.

“What’s with Kai Yang? Did he oversleep? How come he has yet to come out?”

“I don’t know, thinking about it, has anyone has seen him in these past few days?”

“Could it be that he has already left Sky Tower?”

“Impossible, it’s not like you don’t know about Kai Yang’s stubbornness. Even if you killed him, he would not leave. If he really wanted to leave, he would have left a couple months ago, when he was made into a trial disciple. Why would he wait such a long time just to leave in the end anyway?”

Surprisingly with all the discussion going on, no one knew that a few days prior, Kai Yang had asked for leave to enter the Black Wind Mountains and had yet to return. Though this was no surprise, for during normal days, Kai Yang did

not interact much with others, and so naturally no one knew of his whereabouts.

While this group were making a ruckus, a person had started to walk towards this crowd. His face was flawless like jade, and his body also like jade, he really was a handsome youth. But no one knew why at that moment, this youth's expression was very gloomy. As he walked, he was gnashing his teeth and cursing someone.

Following behind this youth, were a large number of Sky Tower disciples. Surrounding him, they made him the centre of attention.

While the youth was surrounded he showed a very unpleasant face. He said in doubt: "Why is it? Why are there so many people here?"

In response to his request someone hurriedly came up to him and informed him in a lowered voice: "Master Su, today is the day when we can challenge Kai Yang. So many fellow disciples have gathered here today to collect some contribution points."

The youth that was called Master Su furrowed his eyebrows before laughing heartedly. "Looks like our fellow disciple Kai Yang is in an abyss of suffering."

His words were full delight at Kai Yang's misfortune.

"En. Basically he is challenged every five days. Not only that, he will not admit defeat unless he can no longer stand properly." The person who had spoken earlier further explained.

Master Su laughed again: "En, this young master feels that the resentment in

his heart has decreased greatly. But this is not enough, I must make him leave Sky Tower. For as long as he is not a Sky Tower disciple I can do whatever I please with him and no one can say a word.”

“Master Su is right. That brat dared to tarnish your good name, he really cannot differentiate between a noble and a horse. He doesn’t even bother to inquire as to Master Su’s identity. He is too arrogant!”

This ass-kissing made Master Su feel much better, causing him to repeatedly nod his head.

Master Su, whose reputation Kai Yang had tarnished, was exactly the same Su Mu he had met in Black Plum Village. It was the same Su Mu, along with the two Han men, upon whom Kai Yang had enforced justice. Because of this, Su Mu had flown into a rage, enquiring around Sky tower on the identity of Jai Yang.

In the end, he had found out about the ins and outs about Kai Yang in less than a day. Afterall, he did have his own network of connections and channels. But under the iron rule of the Main Gate, he could not easily move his hand and had waited until this day to bring a bunch of people over to cause trouble for Kai Yang. Unfortunately he didn’t expect that so many other people would also come for Kai Yang.

This made Su Mu somewhat displeased, Waving his hand, he said: “Make them leave. Tell that today, Kai Yang will only be mine today.”

This statement made Kai Yang sound like some sort of young girl, or like an available prostitute, ready to be brought.

The person next to him promptly walked into the crowd, cupped his hands and said: “Fellow disciples, today’s battle with Kai Yang, Master Su has already reserved it. So I ask my fellow disciples to please line up at the door and watch. I am sorry any inconvenience.”

This announcement took many by surprise. They all turned to Su Mu in confusion and asked: “Why should we? Everytime, Kai Yang would use his broom to choose the opponent, so for what reason should we allow you to fight him? Even if he did not choose, shouldn’t it be first come, first served?”

After that was said, someone pulled at the speaker and whispered to them: “That is Su Mu. Do you know who Su Mu is?”

“Who?” This person had just been accepted, so he really didn’t know who Su Mu was.

“Idiot! There is an Elder who is surnamed Su, there is also a core disciple within the top ten surnamed Su. Why don’t you say who he is?” That person spoke.

Although the one listening didn’t nod his head in understanding, he still understood the meaning behind those words. He had been temporarily stunned by the information. When he heard that Su Mu had such powerful people backing him, how could he dare make another sound?

“Winning against Kai Yang will not even earn me many contribution points, so it’s best not to offend him.”

“Yes yes yes.” The person replied while cold sweat dripped down his back.

Chapter 20 – Burn the house

Su Mu was very satisfied with the reaction to his demand, but witnessing this made him snort softly in disdain.

Although today's battle with Kai Yang had been secured by Su Mu, the crowd had yet to disperse. They didn't know what Kai Yang had done to offend Su Mu, so of course they wanted to stay behind and watch the show.

After waiting for some time, Kai Yang still hadn't appeared. Su Mu impatiently asked: "Where is he?"

"I don't know. Usually, he is already out sweeping the grounds by this time, so I don't why he has yet to come out. Master Su, should we check his hut?"

After thinking for a bit, Su Mu nodded and replied: "That's a good idea. He is just a small and insignificant sweeper, yet he dares to make this Master Su painstakingly wait for him. I will make him pay for this later!"

The location of Kai Yang's residence was no secret, so the people around Su Mu swiftly lead the way.

The ones who had stayed behind to watch the show also followed, creating a grand procession of disciples.

A short while later, the procession of people had arrived at Kai Yang's small hut. When they saw the pitiful and wretched state of his hut, with holes littering the hut walls, they were not surprised. For no apparent reason, Su Mu lifted his

hand pointed at the hut: “That brat lives here?”

“In response to Master Su’s question, because Kai Yang is a trial disciple, he must provide for all his own clothing, food, housing and training materials. The Main Gate will definitely not provide them for him. This hut was probably built by his own hands.”

“Good good good.” Su Mu laughed happily. Thinking about how drenched Kai Yang would become on rainy days elevated his spirits.

Sighing, Su Mu controlled his smile and strode confidently, like a dragon or a proud like tiger, forward. With a loud voice, taking care to clearly articulate each word he called out: “You, Kai Yang. Get your arse out for this Master Su and prepare to receive a nice beating!”

That loud shout was powerful, like a storm and yet unlike a storm it was not detached and uncaring it was filled with utter hatred. The hatred and bloodthirsty desire, made everyone present shiver in their shoes. This clearly displayed the level hatred between Kai Yang and Su Mu to the crowd, evidently it was not a small issue.

Su Mu stood there, exuding a majestic presence, in this moment it appeared that not even the eight winds could move him. After he finished shouting, he waited expectantly outside the door for Kai Yang to come running out, while pissing his pants, and crying to beg for mercy. The more he thought about it, the more arrogant he became.

But no matter how long he waited, there was not even a hint of movement within the hut.

Su Mu's face was now full of rage, snarling he called out again: "Kai Yang, be a smart one and get your arse out here. Otherwise we will come inside and drag you out."

Yet, there was still no reply.

Su Mu now felt there was something odd, for if Kai Yang was really inside, there should be at least sounds of him breathing. Could it be that he was not inside?

Su Mu signalled one of the people around him exaggeratedly. That person promptly sprang forward, forcefully kicked down the wooden door and rushed into the small hut.

Not long after they had entered, that person ran out again and reported to Su Mu: "Master Su, there is no one inside. There is also a small accumulation of dust. Looks like this trash knew that a calamity was approaching, so had fled already."

"Fled?" Su Mu nearly vomited blood in anger. He had racked his brains, scheming for many days all in preparation for this day, the day he would get to exact his revenge and make up for the shame he suffered at the hands of Kai Yang. He had even brought many disciples to come and watch the show, yet that Kai Yang had unexpectedly fled?

This was like a powerful punch had been let out, but landed on a piece of cotton. It made Su Mu feel gloomy and depressed.

"Speaking about it, these past fews, we haven't seen even a hair of Kai Yang."

“A wise man will submit to the circumstances. Since Kai Yang had offended this Su Mu, he probably knew that all hell would break loose. Forcing him to leave the Main Gate.”

“No wonder even after waiting such a long time, he had yet to appear.”

“Ah! Now that Kai Yang has left, we will no longer be able to obtain easy contribution points.”

The crowd muttered softly, none of their mutterings escaped Su Mu’s ears.

Although he was pleased by the respect they were showing him, he hadn’t been able to extract his revenge. Thus Su Mu’s heart was still unsatisfied.

After thinking for awhile, with a gloomy face, Su Mu could only accept the fact he would not get to extract his revenge on Kai Yang today. In a fit of rage he said: “That trash really got lucky, however my anger will not dissipate, I will get something. Burn down this pitiful hut.”

This demand alarmed everybody present, even the people Su Mu had brought with him were stunned. One asked: “Master Su, is it a good idea to start a fire inside the school?”

“What are you afraid of?” Su Mu eyed him: “Even if the sky falls down, I will be there to catch it. Furthermore, it isn’t even important to the school. So what if it is destroyed, it wouldn’t be much of a loss. Also, leaving this ragged hut standing will harm this younger master’s eyes.”

Hearing him say that, dispelled the concerns within their hearts. With the Master Su as backing them, burning this hut is nothing.

Before they lit the fire, some went to look for dry grass to use as kindling.

After awhile, everything was prepared. Grinning, Su Mu lit a torch, its flames distorted his face greatly making him appear evil?.

“Kai Yang, I warn you never to let me see your face in the future. Otherwise I will not let you live or die!” Su Mu said while grinding his teeth. Just as he was preparing to throw the torch into the hut, a person to his side tapped his shoulder and whilst releasing a bloodthirsty aura enquired of him: “What is this for?”

Su Mu didn't even need to think before replying: “Burning a house.”

“Why are you burning my house?” That person's voice carried a hint of anger.

“Your house?” Su Mu curled his lip ferociously and turned his head. As soon as he saw the speaker, he immediately jumped to the side like a frightened rabbit seeing a wolf. Then with an exaggerated movement, he assumed a defensive posture. His face was filled with alarm and the hairs on the back of his neck all rose.

It was because the appearance of the person who had spoken was too frightening. Not only were his clothes all tattered, his hair was messed up, with plants sticking out all over the place and dirty beyond compare. His body also displayed numerous bloody marks, his clothes were bloodstained and a bulging bag was tied around his back. God only knew what was in there.

A gentle breeze blew past, causing his tattered pants to flap revealing a strong and sturdy leg covered in leg hair.

The wind carried with it the stench from Kai Yang's several dirty body, Su Mu was unable to stomach that smell. That appearance, coupled with the blood and smell made Su Mu want to vomit up his three meals.

That posture, that manner, was strangely familiar.

If he were to hold a broken bowl in one hand, then he would look exactly like a beggar.

But.....why did he feel that this horrifying person looked familiar?

Su Mu looked more closely, becoming more and more confused. After he thought for a while he cried out: "Kai Yang!"

If it's not Kai Yang, then who could it be? Even though his body shape had changed and his face was covered in filth, how could Su Mu, who hated Kai Yang deep down in his bones, not recognise him? If he could he not recognise him then who could?

Kai Yang also recognised Su Mu. Grinning widely, he revealed a set of ivory white teeth. "If it isn't fellow disciple Su who brazenly tried to frame others in Black Plum Village?"

The voice that said so was full of ridicule, turning Su Mu's white face a deep

red. Stamping his foot Su Mu retorted: “Kai Yang, you did not choose to walk the path to heaven but chose to walk through hell’s gates! You are destined to die today!”

“You want to find issue with me?” His brow creasing, Kai Yang asked.

“Nonsense!” Su Mu cried proudly. “You thought I came to see you?”

“If you have something to settle with me, come and find me. Why do you need to burn down my house?” Kai Yang questioned.

Su Mu promptly threw the torch away and rushed to step on it; like he was stamping on Kai Yang directly. Venting on the torch, after a while, the torch was finally stamped out.

This moment of pause allowed the people present to understand what was happening. They finally realised that Kai Yang had not run away from fear of Su Mu, but rather that he had only left to complete some business.

But what business did he have to complete which had caused his appearance to become so appalling? Such bloodiness, isn’t it a bit too much? Also the tears in his clothes were obviously made by some sort of sharp weapon. Who did he go and fight with? And was it a life and death type of fight?

Chapter 21 – I will give you three moves

Those bloody wounds naturally came from the fight with the flower patterned spider. Back then he didn't have enough time to treat them, because he had to bring the little boy back to the village to see a doctor and then he had collapsed from exhaustion and immediately fallen asleep once he knew the child was safe.

Kai Yang had slept until the next morning without waking. And after he saw that the little boy was awake and well, Kai Yang had hurried back to the Sect. When he drew near, he saw a hoard of people surrounding his home. They all held torches and looked like they were going to burn down his home. But how could he allow this? Naturally he would go and ask why they were doing this, but he didn't expect it would be Su Mu who came to look for trouble.

Just as the owner of the house appeared, Su Mu who had intended to burn it down, did not even feel the tiniest bit guilty. Instead he felt excited and pointed towards Kai Yang: "Kai Yang, don't you dare say that this young master did not give you a chance. So if only you will....."

"Wait a moment." Kai Yang lifted his hand to stop him, and then leisurely entered his hut.

"Hey....." With his words stopped halfway, Su Mu felt like he ate a fly; the ones that liked to appear before dung piles. He felt extremely uncomfortable.

"Master Su, this person doesn't give one face at all." Someone cried out seeking justice for Su Mu.

"Humph!" Sneering Su Mu said: "Later, help me beat him ruthlessly, for I heard

that this brat never surrenders. So no need to be soft with your strikes. Today, I must teach him the consequences for offending this young master.”

“Yes.”

When he entered his hut, Kai Yang took off the bag on his back. Inside this bag were herbs, his precious harvest from the three days he spent on the mountain. If he didn't secure their safety first, his heart wouldn't be at rest.

When he put the bag safely away, Kai Yang exited his hut and said to Su Mu with a serious face: “What was it that you wanted to tell me?”

Su Mu looked at him, his face a picture of abhorrence. His face full of bitterness, like he was going to spit out a mouthful of blood.

Previously, before he could say his perfectly rehearsed lines, he had been interrupted by Kai Yang. But now that Kai Yang had asked him what he wanted to say, he couldn't wait and yelled out: “Kai Yang, don't you dare say that his young master did not give you a chance. So as long you are willing to kneel down and kowtow for me in front of all the fellow disciples present and call me your grandfather, I will spare your life! Or else.....humph, humph, humph.....”

The message was very clear, explicitly implying the threat unsaid.

When he finished, Su Mu's face was filled with his desire for revenge; it really showed how he felt about Kai Yang.

Slowly Kai Yang nodded his head, grievingly he looked at Su Mu.

“What?” Su Mu was unsure, for Kai Yang’s face was calm and composed. This made him somewhat restless, for he had been played around with by him before in Black Plum Village. He was still a bit traumatised from the experience.

“Unfilial!” Kai Yang sighed.

The crowd was stunned, Su Mu was stunned, they were all thinking how was this unfilial?

“What do you mean?” Su Mu viciously asked.

“Isn’t clear? Let me teach you!” With a face of good intent, Kai Yang earnestly said: “Let me ask you, do you have elders in Sky Tower?”

“Looks like you really do have eyes!” This made Su Mu’s tail rise up into the heavens.

Kai Yang smiled. For it was just like he guessed; Su Mu had someone to back him up. Otherwise how would he dare to act so brazenly as to burn his house.

“Your elder must have no small amount of power within the Main Gate right?” Kai Yang asked again.

“He’s an elder!” Su Mu snorted out. “I also have an older sister who is a core disciple! As long as she wishes for it, a single finger will be able to kill you!”

Kai Yang understood, he had a general understanding about the ins and outs

of Su Mu's character. Patting his back he said: "That's right, so unfilial!"

"What is right or wrong?" Su Mu was furious. He was pulled around in circles by Kai Yang and now his mind was a mess. And he still didn't know what he meant.

"Such an easy affair and yet you still don't understand. How has your mind developed?" His brow creasing, Kai Yang looked at Su Mu pitifully and patiently explained: "With your older sister's position, then she would be my senior. If I were to really call you that, then how would your older sister call you? Then what would that elder call you? Unfilial. How unfilial! If I were that elder, I would lock you up in the Destitute Dragon Stream. So that in this life, you can't even dream about leaving it."

Su Mu's entire body shook and his face paled. Destitute Dragon Stream is a region in Sky Tower that was the most frightening place in the entire school. In the hundreds of years since the school's founding, any disciple that was found to have broken rules or committed heinous crimes was thrown into that region and never seen again. As long as you were thrown in Destitute Dragon Stream, you were a dead man.

Destitute Dragon Stream; these three words were well-known in the surrounding thousand of miles. It's infamy was spread far and wide.

Su Mu wasn't afraid of Kai Yang, however those three words struck fear into his very soul.

One of the people that Su Mu brought with him sensed something was off with Su Mu and hurriedly said: "Master Su, this brat's mouth is very sharp, making him this confident. The reason why we came today, was to help you vent your

anger.”

“En.” Regaining his senses, Su Mu shouted indignantly to hide his embarrassment: “Kai Yang, don’t talk about nonsense. If you will not kneel down and beg for forgiveness, then this young master will make you wish that you were never born in this life.”

His eyes glinting coldly, Kai Yang held up his fists: “Disciple Su, why don’t you come and exchange some blows with me?”

Su Mu replied in contempt: “I would like to, unfortunately you don’t live up to expectations. You are not qualified! This master is at the tempered body ninth stage!”

Hearing this, Kai Yang understood. The Main Gate rules state that if you want to challenge other disciples, the level difference must not exceed more than three levels. Su Mu really couldn’t duel Kai Yang, their level difference was far too large.

This was also the reason why Su Mu had brought people over with him, they weren’t just here to watch the show.

With a face full of loathing, a cold smile, Su Mu tilted his head towards Kai Yang: “Everybody, this Yang disciple has reached the tempered body third stage. So which brother here is willingly to fight him?”

“Tempered body third stage, what a high stage!” Everybody roared in laughter, for none of them had entered earlier than Kai Yang. Yet which one of them was not higher than him?

“Allow me to Master Su, for my cultivation is within the limit. Though I am only at the tempered body fifth stage. It should be enough to play satisfy disciple Kai Yang!” A disciple said while walking through the crowd and looking disdainfully at Kai Yang.

Kai Yang looked back at him laughing; their information was already long outdated.

If it were five days earlier, he really would be at the tempered body third stage, but it is now longer the same story.

But of course, these types of things Kai Yang wouldn't publicise. To advance two stages in five days, this speed was far too strange, such a monstrous thing would only attract unwanted attention.

A person who had come with Su Mu said: “Yang disciple, I am called Zhao Hu. You must remember who it was, that beat you today!”

“I have remembered it.” Kai Yang replied seriously.

Looks like that Zhou Hu was intentionally trying to give Su Mu face thought Kai Yang. Walking to face Kai Yang, he exaggeratedly waved his fingers: “Yang disciple, in order to not allow you to say I didn't give you face, I will allow you three moves. As long as you can make me take one step, it will be your victory. If not, please don't think of this disciple's strikes as ruthless.”

This act of provocation contained the red fruit of contempt. To Su Mu, who was watching this, his heartbeat quickened in anticipation. This child Zhao Hu,

he really knew how to thoroughly humiliate others. His choice of words wasn't bad.

Although the difference between the tempered body third stage and the tempered body fifth stage consisted of only two stages, there was a large gap between each stage. Between these two stages, there was a gap as large as a river separating them. And the strength that could be released when comparing the two were on completely different levels, like heaven and earth for these low level practitioners.

Chapter 22 – Utterly defeated

Oh by the way

Atmospheric sense → Atmospheric energy (Didn't make sense anymore so we changed it.)

Besides, currently Kai Yang was in a very sorry state; with one look you could see that he had experienced some sort of tribulation. How much strength did he have remaining to fight? Additionally he was very skinny and malnourished to begin with, easily allowing others to look down upon him.

Practically everybody present believed that Kai Yang would be unable to escape the calamity today. Even Xia Ning Chang who was situated in a nearby tree felt the same way.

Xia Ning Chang, who had become a Dark Hall disciple, had come once again to record the outcome of Kai Yang's battle.

"How is this allowed. I cannot allow my fellow disciple to be disadvantaged." Kai Yang asked, hesitating slightly.

"There is nothing to worry about." Insisted Zhou Hu. "Since I became a disciple, allowing you these three moves is something I should do! Ha ha!"

"Okay then." Kai Yang replied, looking somewhat reluctant: "Since Zhou disciple said so, then this senior will not be impolite."

"Bring it on!" Zhou Hu bellowed loudly, while he steadied himself and planted his two feet firmly onto the ground. His body's muscles bulged and his blue veins

popped out all over his body.

On the other side, Kai Yang walked forward step by step, his thin arms and legs tensed. Zhou Hu sneered internally and thought: 'Just with your weak physique, merely one breath from me and I will be able to blow you away. So what strength could you possibly reveal?'

Leisurely strolling forwards, Kai Yang walked up to Zhou Hu. He balled up his fist, slowly waved it in front of him. Smiling he cautioned: "Zhou disciple, I senior will now really hit you."

"Come then!"

Just as those words came out, Kai Yang's fist had already been released; striking right into Zhou Hu's abdomen.

"Bang!" That sound rang out, however none of the people present saw Kai Yang act; that fist which strangely hit Zhou Hu.

As his face paled, Zhou Hu couldn't help but clutch his stomach and had to take a few steps backwards.

"Bang!" The second fist had already arrived before he could recover. It landed on his abdomen once again. Zhou Hu bent over clutching his stomach, as he felt his stomach acids rising up.

"Pa!" Kai Yang kicked out and hit Zhou Hu's chin. He cried out once before falling to the ground, motionless.

He won!

A great silence ensued, it was so quiet that you could have even heard a pin drop. One by one, everyone looked at Kai Yang, the shock apparent on their faces. Su Mu's eyes were especially wide, so wide that they looked like they were about to fall out of their sockets.

Two punches, one kick was all it took to send Zhou Hu, who was at the tempered body fifth stage, flying away. Fu*k! Is this really the strength of someone who is at the tempered body third stage?

Although from the start of the battle to the end, Zhou Hu did not retaliate, this power was far too much. A person who weighed about one hundred pounds was struck so hard he fly a few feet out. If you didn't exert some serious effort, how could this occur? Not to mention that speed was unparalleled. One moment Zhou Hu was smiling arrogantly, and the next he was unconscious.

They could not believe the battle that had just occurred before their very eyes. Not to mention Xia Ning Chang, who was sitting in the tree and needed to record the battle.

In her small book, it clearly stated that Kai Yang won the battle. In the past two years, he had been in one hundred and forty-seven battles and had lost them all. Unexpectedly he had changed this record today!

He had also won the battle in a swift and efficient manner. Originally, Xia Ning Chang was gracefully standing on a branch, channelling her energy to balance herself. But due to the shock of his victory, she momentarily lost her concentration and fell off the branch, plummeting to the ground.

A Masked female could be seen crashing down from a thirty foot high tree. As she fell butt first down to the ground, you could hear her screaming “Ai~ya!”.

Thankfully she had fast reflexes and an equally fast reaction speed. At the last moment she channeled some energy into her body to cushion the fall. Otherwise she would have come out with far more serious injuries. Though her buttocks still burned in pain causing her, muscles to tense; hot enough to make water steam.

As she stood and enduring the pain, one could see her two beautiful legs shaking. Xia Ning Chang looked around nervously, but realised there was nobody present and released a sigh of relief.

If this scene was seen by others, then she would have lost much face.

Activating her internal energy, she dissipated the pain on her bottom. Her eyes glinted, for Xia Ning Chang could not wrap her head around Kai Yang's strength. He was just gone for a few days, so how did his strength increase this much?

Those people who had witnessed the scene naturally could not be compared to Xia Ning Chang. Their cultivation was far lower than hers, so they couldn't see the truth of the matter.

In that moment when Kai Yang had struck out, Xia Ning Chang clearly felt the atmospheric energy within Kai Yang's channels had been aroused. This clearly demonstrated that he was at least at the tempered body fourth stage, additionally it even looked like his actual strength surpassed this stage.

But wasn't he only at the tempered body third stage a few days ago?

That damn disciple! He unexpectedly hid his true strength, and not only did he give everyone a shock, he also made some fall out of trees. This was hateful to the extreme!

Unconsciously, Xia Ning Chang had placed all the blame upon Kai Yang for her sore bottom.

Kai Yang glanced over to the place where Xia Ning Chang was hidden. When she had fallen, Kai Yang managed to hear her short scream, but because the distance between them was too large he hadn't been able to spot her. Since he didn't find anything abnormal he didn't investigate further. He then wrinkled his eyebrows, as he looked down at his clenched fist, he felt somewhat unsatisfied.

Of course Kai Yang was unsatisfied, for it was his very first battle with another human since he had obtained the golden body. Due to the fact that he hadn't controlled his strength properly, Zhou Hu was sent flying away. Originally he had only planned to send his opponent back a few steps, but it looked like his power was a bit greater than what he had imagined.

At the scene, Su Mu was the first to recover. As he pointed his finger to Kai Yang, he yelled loudly: "You cheated!"

Kai Yang turned around and calmly looked at Su Mu: "Su Disciple, you can eat whatever you want to, but you cannot say words recklessly. When did I cheat?"

Su Mu was at a loss for words. It was true, when did he cheat? Zhou Hu had

intentionally stood there and declared that he would take three strikes. Unexpectedly he was truly defeated in three moves. Under the numerous gazes of the crowd, how could he possibly cheat? How could he cheat?

“Master Su, it seems that our information was not correct. This brat is not at the tempered body third stage! I’m afraid that he has already ranked up, otherwise how could he possibly defeat Zhou Hu?” Someone who had keen eyes and a shrewd mind quickly realised, whispering in Su Mu’s ear.

“So it was like this.” Su Mu nodded, his face darkening. “Zhou Hu was too arrogant. If he had retaliated, how could he lose?”

In Su Mu’s mind, he thought that the reason why Zhou Hu lost was because he had underestimated his opponent. For he believed no matter how much Kai Yang ranked up, he would have only gone up to the tempered body fourth stage. With that large gap in mind, if Zhou Hu had retaliated, then Kai Yang would have been the one to be utterly defeated.

“Brother Kai Yang, you have done well to hide your strength!” Su Mu said coldly and gloomily to Kai Yang. Today he had failed to extract his revenge, so the suffocating feeling within his heart was not gone

Kai Yang shrugged his shoulders.

“Let us settle the score later. Next time, you will not be so lucky!” Su Mu coldly declared to Kai Yang. Then with a wave of his hand, he started to lead the people back, while also motioning for some to carry the unconscious Zhou Hu. But before he left, he directed one final bitter glare at Kai Yang.

This enmity has been sealed for now, though Kai Yang didn't mind. In any case, in the Main Gate, there was only the Main Gate's rules. So if you wanted to cause any trouble, you could only do it in the form of duels.

Moreover, he still needed to spar with others, otherwise he wouldn't know the true extent of his growth. With that in mind, Kai Yang thought that the feud between Su Mu and himself was a blessing disguise.

Today's battle was not exciting enough, ah, Kai Yang was left feeling unsatisfied.

With Su Mu gone, the entertainment gone, the crowd naturally dispersed. Though many of them still replayed the recent miracle in their minds, of that two year trial disciple Kai Yang. He had obtained his first victory. Although it was very fast, he had still won.

Chapter 23 – An incredible thing

News of this battle was soon a hot topic between fellow disciples, with others seeking out those present to hear the details. If not for Su Mu's status, then the news would have long since been spread to the ends of the earth. However since Su Mu was involved, the disciples could only hide it within their stomachs, discreetly talking about it.

In Kai Yang's small hut, it had finally calmed down.

Looking at the sky, Kai Yang became depressed. Because Su Mu had come to cause trouble, he had lost precious time to practise the tempered body record. It was truly regrettable.

Taking out his spare pair of clothes, Kai Yang then went to the small pond beside his hut. Taking off his tattered clothes, he prepared to take a bath. These past few days he had been wondering the mountain and then he had fought the flower patterned spider, these two things combined had really made him smell funny.

Stealthily, Xia Ning Chang tip toed to the side of the hut, for she wanted to learn the true level of this fellow disciple. Yet when she turned the corner, all that met her eyes were a pair of white buttocks. Kai Yang had already become stark naked, not a stitch of clothing remained and he was in the position to dive into the water.

Xia Ning Chang's small face immediately flushed a bright red. Although her cultivation was very high, she was still an innocent female. Not even mentioning buttocks, she hadn't even seen a male's thigh. How could she possibly endure this scene?

Too provoking! Xia Ning Chang's heart had begun to thump erratically and she quickly hid herself.

How.... she today.....why did they have this fate? Tears streamed down that pitiful girl's face, there was no time to find out his secret. Stamping her foot, she disappeared in a flash.

That stinking disciple. Those entrance examinations conducted by the teachers were too lax. Disciples stripping stark naked in broad daylight is too shameless. Far too shameless!

In the pond, Kai Yang was washing his body and inspecting it.

He had discovered that ever since he started to practise the tempered body record, his muscles had become sturdier and more robust. Although he was still thin, he was thin in the right places.

Additionally, the wounds from yesterday's battle with the flower patterned spider had already become scars. Only the arm wound from the flower patterned spider's leg had yet to fully heal; it was still a bit painful.

After all, it had penetrated through his arm, so it couldn't possibly heal that quickly. But it wasn't as severe as he had imagined, give it a few days and should be completely healed.

Thinking over that life and death battle with the spider, caused Kai Yang to be excited. Not knowing why, the more dangerous the situation he was in, the more enthusiastic and excited he became. He unexpectedly had this type of character,

was he unconsciously a masochist and after living a bit more than ten years, he had suddenly awakened?

When he thought of that, he promptly inhaled a large breath and submerged himself in the pond; not resurfacing for awhile.

Although there were many things for him to complete, Kai Yang still went to take a shower. After dressing himself, he began his sweeping.

Afterall, this was his assigned work in Sky Tower. And since he was assigned this job, he must complete it to the best of his ability.

While sweeping, Kai Yang clearly felt that the gazes from his fellow disciples were strange. They were full of doubt, for they were the ones who had witnessed his battler earlier in the morning. They didn't understand why Kai Yang had been able to knock Zhou Hu unconscious.

Kai Yang calmly and honestly continued with his work.

Completing his sweeping, Kai Yang returned to his wooden hut and opened his bag. From within, he took out the herbs he had collected, keeping the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and the Dead Jedi Tree Grass out and placing the other extra herbs back into the bag.

These extra herbs were completely useless to Kai Yang, but he can sell them to the Contribution Hall for some contribution points.

Wrapping up the herbs he started to leave before stopping. Thinking again, he went back and changed his clothes, wearing his tattered, bloodstained ones he

also dirtied his face bit before leaving again.

In the Contribution Hall, Treasurer Meng was sitting behind the counter while holding a teapot. Crossing his legs while sipping the tea he merrily hummed a tuned.

Suddenly a human figure could be seen at the hall entrance. Old man Meng boredly lifted up his head to see, and just as he was about to scold that brat which dared to come here his eyes widened. So early in the morning and someone dared to disturb his peace and quiet. Yet when he saw Kai Yang battered and exhausted walking in. His tattered clothes which could no longer be considered clothes, his two legs were clearly seen, and so were his leg hairs.

(TL: Yea, I'm confused as you are, leg hairs.....O.o)

The two female disciples at the entrance saw this and shrieked out in shock at this vagabond, quickly retreating.

How was Treasurer Meng's self control? After entering the mountain, then descending into the seas, he would remain impassive. Even if there was a massacre of ten cities. Yet at that moment, he sprayed out his mouthful of tea; you could imagine the scene.

"Little Kai Yang, what is with your appearance?" Old man Meng nearly went into a frenzy, quickly standing up. Dumbstruck, he looked at Kai Yang.

Rushing to the counter, Kai Yang then inhaled a large gulp of air before replying: "I have returned!"

“Experienced many hardships right?” Treasurer Meng felt pity for Kai Yang. Just a few days ago when he had come to his place, he was still healthy, yet from a single trip to Black Wind Mountains, he had become like this. He was not like a human or even a ghost, this was too tragic.

“En, I was in danger.” Nodding his head, Kai Yang didn’t waste anymore words. Hurriedly he opened up his bag and pointed to the herbs inside: “But my harvest was not bad, Treasurer Meng, will the Contribution Hall accept these herbs?”

Looking at the herbs, Treasurer Meng’s eyebrows rose.

They were only ordinary grade lower level herbs, and practically had no worth. These herbs were too plentiful in the Contribution hall, even if he accepted, there would be no place to put them.

Just as he was about to reject the herbs, Treasurer Meng saw the expectation in Kai Yang’s eyes and then looked again at his attire. Seeing this his hearten softened: “Oh, we will accept. For every two herbs I will give you one contribution point.”

“Okay, then please count them.” Without bargaining, Kai Yang pushed the bag forward.

Treasurer Meng went to count the number of herbs. There were thirty-two herbs, a total of sixteen contribution points. Immediately he went to record this into his account book.

“You were in Black Wind Mountains for an entire three days, yet you only found this much?” Treasurer Meng causally asked.

“Being able to obtain this is considered good.” Kai Yang said while carefully looking around.

“Keke, it’s not bad.” Treasurer Meng couldn’t bear to pour cold water on Kai Yang, after all he knew of the difficulties he faced. Although this child’s natural aptitude was not good, he was willing to work hard. Nowadays, these types of hardworking youngsters are a rare sight. It’s such a shame, his aptitude was so poor that it was a fatal downside, for it destined him to have no major achievements.

As he was thinking about this, he saw how Kai Yang’s eyes were darting around and couldn’t help but ask he curiously: “What are you looking at?”

Mysteriously, Ki Yang leaned forward and said in a low voice: “Treasurer Meng, in this trip to the mountain I seem to have found some incredible thing.”

Seeing Kai Yang’s cautiousness, Treasurer Meng also felt that this thing was something uncommon. He also became more serious and said in a low voice: “What thing?”

“I don’t know. I have brought it back to let you see it. You are experienced and knowledgeable, so you should definitely be able to recognise it.” As he said this, he went to touch his butt and took out a another bag. Carefully he placed it on the counter.

Chapter 24 – Earth Grade Lower Level Blood Mushroom

Treasurer Meng looked up and saw Kai Yang's face held both anticipation and nervousness. He couldn't help but become cautious too. Softly and gently he opened the bag, squinting his eyes at the contents inside.

It was about the size of a bowl, dark-red coloured, shaped like a mushroom, like a fungus. It really looked unordinary, with a heaven and earthly type aura.

“Ke.....keke.....” Treasurer Meng couldn't help but cough a couple of times.

Nervously Kai Yang looked at him and questioned him: “What thing is this?”

Treasurer Meng looked at him queerly, and instead of replying, he asked: “Where did you find this?”

“Inside a cave in the mountain. There was also a first realm demonic beast guarding it. But instead of me being killed by it, it was killed by me, so I took it with me.”

Treasurer Meng's heart jumped out: “You met with a demonic beast? Didn't I tell you not to go past the safety boundary?”

“I didn't go past the safety boundary. I didn't know why it was in the safe zone area around Black Wind Mountain either.” Kai Yang replied in grievance.

Treasurer Meng sighed, he had thought something like this must have happened. It was just he was afraid that with this child's strength, defeating a

demonic beast, even one at the first realm must have been a very arduous task.

This pitiful one, at such a young age he has already suffered so many untold hardships while in Black Wind Mountains for only three days. And this work had only earned him sixteen contribution points. He even met with a first realm demonic beast, an encounter in which he nearly lost his life. If he was to tell him that his thing was, this things was.....ah this is too wrong, too wrong.

Anyway, this old man rarely does a good deed, just think of it as karma.

When Kai Yang saw Treasurer Meng's face changing, yet Treasurer Meng not replying, it made him somewhat anxious. Just as he was about to ask him again, Treasurer Meng picked up the teapot and drank from it. Afterwards, he squeezed out a smile and said: "You little brat, your luck isn't bad!"

As soon as he heard this, the worry in Kai Yang's heart immediately dissipated. He was worried that when he went to ask, this thing would end up being worthless, that would have been embarrassing.

"Treasurer, what is this exactly? How many contribution points is it worth?" Rubbing his hands together in expectation Kai Yang asked.

"Oh.....this thing is called a blood mushroom! It is a rare medicinal ingredient, it is an ordinary....." Before he finished what he was saying, he looked at Kai Yang's falling face and hurriedly went to correct himself. "No no no, it's an earth grade lower level herb. En, it's really earth grade lower level! That's right!"

Such a firm tone was used that Treasurer Meng nearly fooled himself into

thinking that it was true.

“Earth grade lower level?” Kai Yang was pleasantly surprised: “Treasurer Meng are you sure you didn’t see incorrectly?”

Straightening his face, Treasurer Meng replied: “You must be joking. In this old man’s life, he has inspected many women.....keke, inspected many herbs. This pair of experienced and knowledgeable eyes, how could they possibly be wrong?”

“How many contribution points can it be exchanged for?” Kai Yang was only interested in this.

“Let’s make it twenty.”

“That’s so little.” Kai Yang was somewhat disappointed. Even though its ranks wasn’t that high, he thought it was at least high enough to make it worth at least twenty to forty contribution points.

“It’s not too little child.” Treasurer thought to himself that he had given him too much already. He then found a good reason for this: “Even though this blood mushroom that you found is an earth grade lower level herb, it is too small and its age isn’t that high. So that’s why it’s only worth twenty contribution points.”

“Oh.” Without refuting he accepted: “Then twenty points it is.”

Nodding his head, Treasurer Meng recorded down the transaction down in his account book again.

This trip to the mountains had already satisfied his goal of obtaining the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and the Dead Jedi Tree Grass. Apart from that, it had earned him thirty-six contribution points. If he added his already obtained points, then he has a total of forty-eight contribution points. Kai Yang momentarily felt himself become rich and powerful.

Although this trip into the mountains earned him quite the contribution points from the herbs, it had delayed and wasted precious time to cultivate. He had also needed luck to find the herbs and the whole trip had made him very tired. Kai Yang decided that other than as a last resort, he wouldn't do it again.

(ED: How did it waste time to cultivate... he only needs to do it for 30 mins in the morning and he managed that just fine in the mountains.....)

The reason why he was collecting contribution points, was to aid him in his cultivation. Between these two things, contribution points and cultivation, Kai Yang still knew which was more important; he didn't lose sight due to greed.

Now he has collected a decent amount of Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower. He had collected around thirty-forty of them in the cave, however the amount of Dead Jedi Tree Grass he had managed to collect was very small. He only had around five-six of them. If he really wanted to cultivate with them, then he must exchange some points for them at the Contribution Hall; he was well prepared for this.

With his plan in mind, Kai Yang said: "Treasurer Meng, please give me ten Dead Jedi Tree Grass herbs."

Old man Meng looked at Kai Yang and wondered why he needed these herbs,

however he didn't ask any questions. He only sat and stated: "Ten ordinary grade lower level herbs, ten contribution points. Are you sure you want them?"

Scrunching up his eyebrows in suspicion, Kai Yang asked: "That's not right. Didn't you just say two herbs needed to be exchanged for one contribution point?"

"The buying price is the buying price, while the selling price is the selling price. They are not the same." Treasurer Meng smile was especially wide, the demeanor of a businessman was coming out.

Furious, Kai Yang pointed towards Treasurer Meng's nose: "You are completely trying to buy at a low price and earn a profit. To reap a profit, this is too shameless. Did you let a dog eat your conscience?"

Waving his hand old man Meng replied: "It is not I who wants to reap a profit, but these are the prices assigned by the Main Gate. This is unrelated to me. All the prices within the Contribution Hall are unaffiliated with me, this old man is only in charge of selling and buying. How else do you think the Main Gate is able to provide for all three thousand of you disciples?"

Kai Yang was stunned, for there was some sense in his words. After all this was a business, without any type of profit by Sky Tower, how could all three thousand disciples in the Main Gate survive? Even if there one were suspicious that it was for a profit, at the end of the day, no one was forcing you to buy them. No one was forcing you.

"Then, do you still want the Dead Jedi Tree Grass herbs?" Seeing Kai Yang's face full of pain caused Treasurer Meng's mood to soar.

“I want them.” declared Kai Yang, as he clenched his teeth together. Sooner or later he will need to use these herbs and since he had decided not to go find them in the mountain, he can only buy them.

Turning around, Treasurer Meng went to the back hall and soon returned with the Dead Jedi Tree Grass. Kai Yang counted the number of herbs while Treasurer Meng recorded the transaction down.

“Humph!” After eating such a big loss, Kai Yang turned around and immediately left the hall unhappy.

“Please come again when you have time.” Treasurer Meng called out warmly from behind.

Come often to be killed by you. Kai Yang finally knew where Meng’s nickname came from.

Three steps, two steps, Kai Yang frantically rushed outside. On his way out, a figure rushing outside nearly crashed into him.

These two people’s reactions were fairly fast, Kai Yang stopped immediately and so did the other person. A sweet and pleasant fragrance drifted over to Kai Yang.

Lifting his head, Kai Yang saw a pair of clear moon-like eyes staring at him, but he couldn’t see her face clearly. This was because this person had their face covered with a veil.

This was a female. Although he couldn’t see her face, judging from her skin’s

condition, she wasn't very old. She was probably his senior.

Nodding his head and apologising, Kai Yang then turned his body to the side; clearly signalling for her to enter first.

The opposite party looked distracted and suddenly turned red. Seeing this made his own gaze become evasive.

Seeing her flushed face, Kai Yang thought that this senior was quite shy. Swiftly he averted his gaze, as to avoid offending her.

Xia Ning Chang was embarrassed to death.

She didn't expect to bump into Kai Yang in front of the Contribution Hall. When she saw his face, she immediately thought of her.....

And recalled his.....

Suddenly her face became red and her temperature rose. Hastily she rushed into the hall, she didn't even dare to lift her head up.

Seeing this scene was somewhat laughable, for such shy females were quite rare. Although there are many females disciples in Sky Tower, they were martial practitioners and were therefore more open-minded than normal. For someone like her to become red just from looking at his face, it was no wonder she wore a veil.

This senior was a little bit cute, it was just why was her body's fragrance

vaguely familiar, like he had already smelled it before?

Chapter 25 – The incense burner’s magical effect

After she entered the Contribution Hall, Xia Ning Chang glanced back. When she saw that Kai Yang had already left, she let out a sigh of relief, for she still felt a little bit guilty due to the morning’s incident.

While her feelings were in a mess, she heard Treasurer Meng let out an ai~o sigh from the counter.

“What’s the matter master?” Xia Ning Chang asked.

“You were just pitying that child.” Treasurer Meng sighed out sobbingly. “He’s a good child; willing to endure hardships, he’s hardy, has a good personality, his character’s not bad.....”

When Xia Ning Chang heard the way her master was praising Kai Yang, she immediately grew angry. In her heart she thought that he had yet to learn of Kai Yang’s actions this morning. Not only had he striped naked, he had also sullied this disciple’s eyes and given this disciple of yours the fright of her life.

On and on Treasurer Meng went, causing her to be more and more infuriated. Unable to bear it any longer, she slapped her hand onto the counter.

“Pa!” The sounded resounded like something had been broken.

As he looked at her, his face contorted and he wailed out: “That was my earth grade lower level blood mushroom worth twenty contribution points...”

“This was a blood mushroom?” Looking at the already powdered mushroom on the counter top, Xia Ning Chang asked herself whether or not her master’s eyes were failing. How is this a blood mushroom?

“It’s not, it’s not. How could your master mistake it.” Treasurer Meng replied as he let out a soft breath. The powder on the countertop then floated outside, like an invisible hand had scooped it up and scattered in the wind.

“Oh that’s right. Why did you come to find me today?” Fixing his face, Treasurer Meng showed a rare face of solemnity.

“I broke through.”

His expression changing, he went to inspect Xia Ning Chang’s cultivation. Soon after he nodded: “Good, good. It seems like I didn’t see incorrectly, for only people of your physique are suited to this cultivation method. Come, eat this pellet to help stabilize your cultivation.”

“En.” After she took the pellet, Xia Ning Chang hesitated slightly before asking: “How is your injury?”

Laughing softly Treasurer Meng answered: “You don’t need to worry about your master. After so many years, there is not big hinderance.”

Brimming with anticipation and excitement, Kai Yang returned home to his small hut.

Today the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and the Dead Jedi Tree Grass were all gathered and ready to be used. The amount of each was also not small, so it

should last awhile.

Now he had everything prepared, Kai Yang really wanted to verify, whether or not that incense burner could truly aid him in his cultivation.

The location of the wooden hut was in the most empty and desolate area of Sky Tower, practically no one paid any attention to it. Since this was the case, Kai Yang didn't worry about having his secret exposed. Walking inside, he called out the black book and turned to page three. Then he extracted the incense burner and placed it on the bedside.

He then took out the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and the Dead Jedi Tree Grass. Afterwards he stuffed them into the burner and put the lid back on.

All of a sudden a faint scent, akin to a rare perfume started to disperse in the room. Breathing in deeply, Kai Yang began to analyse the perfume. Although the smell was a bit unique, there was nothing special about it.

However, from the holes of the incense burner, the perfume steadily poured out and entered Kai Yang's nostrils. It was like small, snakes were purposely entering his body via his nose.

Within his body, it was like there was something more. In his flesh and blood, in his meridians and even in his bone marrow a feeling of numbness spread.

Kai Yang didn't dare tarry. Carrying the incense burner, he ran outside to begin his cultivation.

Stepping out of his hut entrance into the light took him by surprise. For his

foot felt like it was made of lead, it was far heavier than normal. In combination with this step, Kai Yang felt his strength rapidly decreasing.

Taking another step, he began to feel dizzy and wanted to collapse; perspiring madly, his muscles tensed. The recently cultivated atmospheric energy in his meridians bubbled about and his bones cracked.

Taking his third step out of his hut, his legs became soft and he fell to the ground. As he fell, Kai Yang's hands let go of the incense burner and it rolled far away.

Hands on the floor supporting his body; immovable like a mountain, he gasped for breath. His chest heaved up and down as he took several deep breaths, his body continued twitched uncontrollably. His tendons, organs and bones expanded and contracted causing the pain to intensify as time past. Although Kai Yang wanted to howl in pain, he kept his mouth tightly shut.

His current condition was one of excessive exhaustion; one he had experienced many times previously. Thus Kai Yang was quite familiar with it.

But, he had only walked three steps out of his hut, so how did he exhaust all his energy? Not only was his physical stamina gone, his mental strength was also exhausted. It was like he had not slept for many nights, even his eyes had started to feel drowsy.

At this point, his three energies were all exhausted to the limit, and he couldn't even move a single finger.

By this time, the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and the Dead Jedi Tree

Grass's side effects had started to take effect in Kai Yang's brain.

The toxicity of these two herbs wasn't very strong. They were weak enough that normal people could resist them easily, but the prerequisite was that they were healthy. Given the hardships Kai Yang suffered daily combined with his current condition, Kai Yang had trouble withstanding them.

He was afraid that inhaling the incense burner's perfume was the reason this type of situation had occurred. Though, regardless of the toxicity of the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and the Dead Jedi Tree Grass, such strong side effects was something they were unable to produce. The mystery originated from the incense burner; it was able to amplify those two herb's toxicity.

Ever since he had obtained the golden body, every time he practised he never became tired or exhausted. And since he was never tired, Kai Yang was unable to reach his limits. Being unable to reach his limits, he was unable to improve.

Though it appeared this was no longer the case anymore. He only took three steps, yet his all his strength had been consumed. But the effect of this incense burner was not as simple as enabling him to reach his limits at this stage, for in the future will there ever be any fear he wouldn't able to train to his limits again?

Kai Yang always believed that a person's potential was unlimited, and the important thing was how one uncovered it. Although natural aptitude could help a person mature, one's own effort was crucial! So after all these years, even he knew his own talent was lacking, he diligently struggled and never gave up his drive to cultivate.

Thinking this, Kai Yang's spirits were greatly lifted!

Gradually and with much effort, he used his hand to push his exhausted body up; his thighs strained so much that his veins popped out. Gritting his teeth, he slowly pulled himself up.

Almost all of his physical strength had been drained, his consciousness had started to become fuzzy once again. Yet his heart refused to give in, giving him a ferocious burst of strength and energy. In his entire life, he had never been this adamant about anything, he was adamant he would beat this!

Stand up! For the place you fall, will also be the place from which you rise! If he stood up he would have broken through his limits, he would have won!

Time had never flowed as slowly as it did now, both his feet had already been planted firmly on the ground. Legs slightly bent, fighting against the trembling, his desire to stand had not diminished in the slightest, he would do it even if it meant taking it as slow as possible.

Finally Kai Yang bellowed/roared out, for he had finally stood up straight. Staggering forward, he steadied himself and anchored his feet to the ground.

Chapter 26 – An insignificant person goes for revenge all day long

Kai Yang smiled at that moment. It seemed odd, after all both his physical and mental strength were exhausted and he could no longer see clearly. His ears were ringing and his head was throbbing very badly, yet he still laughed.

‘I won! The sense of achievement that I feel right now is vastly greater than when I won against another person!’

Just when Kai Yang felt that he was going to faint, a warm feeling burst out from within his body. This warm feeling came from within his bones, like a spring rain that replenishes the fields after a drought, it blew through every part of his body. Through every inch of flesh, bringing with it a burst of vitality.

His exhausted strength was quickly replenished; even his mental energy was revitalized to a certain extent. Although his energy didn’t recover fully, it was enough to keep him from losing consciousness.

Kai Yang didn’t pause to revel in this feeling any further, but hurriedly sat down and analysed his current condition. This led him to discover that the original numbing feeling from within his body had already disappeared without a trace. It left him with a comfortable feeling, it was so comfortable that it nearly made him cry out.

His body pulsed rhythmically, and along with this, it was clear that it had become more robust and contained more explosive power than before. The atmospheric energy within his meridian pulsed incessantly; his bones also seemed to have become a lot sturdier.

Just through this alone, his body had been strengthened by a large margin.

This made him contemplative.

Finally the last bit of warmth from his bones had seeped out; this was most likely from that golden body he had absorbed. After experiencing this several times already, Kai Yang had grasped the key information. Only when he had pushed his body to its limits, could he trigger the golden body's hidden powers.

Though if he surrendered when he was in a predicament, that golden body would not give him any help.

This really was the golden body's personality! Kai Yang chuckled lightly. Right now, he had finally understood how this incense burner could aid him in his training.

The herbs that were put into the burner, their effects were multiplied hundreds of folds in strength. Then when he inhaled this incense, it made his strength rapidly decrease and also made him mentally tired. So much so that he could only take three steps before nearly fainting.

Although these amplified herbal effects were tyrannical, they shouldn't have any long term negative side effects thought Kai Yang. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to use the incense burner to assist in his training.

But only when he overcomes his limits, and arouses the golden's skeleton's regenerative ability, will he be able to really benefit. Only then will he be able to constantly surpass his limit and grow stronger.

The perfume that wafted out from the incense burner, served him well; just like that golden skeleton.

Though these were all just assumptions on Kai Yang's part. But given the previous events, he felt this should be the truth. Next up, Kai Yang needed to closely analyse the incense burner.

The perfume never ceased pouring out of the burner. Even when there was a gust of wind, the perfume would always float in Kai Yang's direction.

He also discovered that if he stayed in the same spot and didn't move, then the perfume didn't have any effect.

After another half an hour or so, Kai Yang felt that most of his strength had recovered. Staggering he stood up, once again he began to take steps forward.

Since he had already been burned once, Kai Yang advanced slowly and cautiously monitored his body for the effects of the incense burner.

As soon as he put one foot down, Kai Yang discovered that his strength gushed out of him like a broken dam. His physical strength disappeared, and with it so did his mental energy; with no sign or reason.

As he took another step, what little strength he had remaining disappeared, causing him to nearly fall down.

Clenching his jaw tightly, Kai Yang's stubborn attitude emerged again. Putting his life on the line, he advanced forward.

This time, he managed to take four steps. And although he was mentally unwilling to give up, his body could no longer take it. His strength wasn't too bad.

The warm feeling once again poured out from within him, but it was not strong enough so he fainted again.

After repeating this process numerous times, all of his assumptions were confirmed.

Although the perfume that came from the incense burner caused people to become more worn out, it didn't leave any negative side effects. While the golden skeleton on the other hand needed his will to fight, in order to be used. The stronger he felt about not yielding, the stronger the warmth it gave was and the more his body benefited.

This type of training method was truly monstrous so much so that it was unthinkable. Putting it simply, you were risking your life to increase your strength. If you were a little bit careless, then there would be drastic consequences. Luckily Kai Yang's self-preservation sense was quite high. Everytime he broke through his limits, he would concede and rest before continuing. So after repeating the cycle many times, the results he reaped were bountiful.

A person's potential, was truly unlimited. But in order to become stronger, you must do things step by step.

After an entire day of training, his improvement was very clear. He could already walk a full ten steps, a large improvement from his first attempt of just

three.

But Kai Yang was still unsatisfied; even under the effects of the perfume, he was still only walking. Until the day he practised with his fists, this could not be considered training.

Quickly, Kai Yang found another disastrous problem.

This type of training used his herbs up far too quickly!

The Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and the Dead Jedi Tree Grass could only be burned for about an hour. After an hour, he must once again put in more herbs for the incense burner to continue to produce the perfume.

Using his hand to calculate the herb consumption, Kai Yang's face immediately became ugly.

There were twelve hours in a day, he trained for about seven to eight hours a day. So that meant that he needed at least fourteen of these herbs, in order to practise under the effects of the incense burner for the a whole day. With his current store, he would use up all his Dead Jedi Tree Grass in two days, while also using about fifty percent of his stockpile of Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower.

What would he do after he used up all his current herb stock? He only had thirty eight contribution points. How many days would that last him?

Originally he had thought he was quite rich, but reality struck him hard and showed him how poor he really was.

That night, he carried his worries to bed, his head full of contribution points and herbs. Even in his dreams, he dreamt of mining large amounts of Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and Dead Jedi Tree Grass.

That night, Kai Yang didn't sleep very well at all.

That night, Su Mu didn't sleep very well either.

Thinking about how, overbearingly he had brought people over to cause trouble for Kai Yang, but had instead lost against him. This made Su Mu toss and turn restlessly in his bed. If it wasn't for Kai Yang, then he would be happily engaged with Boss He's daughter. If it wasn't for Kai Yang, then he wouldn't be here with a stomach full of resentment.

As he recalled the He family's daughter's vivid appearance, Su Mu's heart fell into depression. In the future, he will no longer have the face to go and interact with her. As the saying went: 'You would rather destroy ten temples, than destroy one marriage.' Kai Yang, you dared to destroy a happy couple, you are too daring.

As another saying went: 'For a nobleman to take revenge, ten years is not long at all.' An insignificant person however, can go for revenge all day long.

Su Mu would definitely be classified as the latter, for after a few more days, he could once again challenge Kai Yang. But how could Su Mu wait until then? Su Mu wanted to go to Kai Yang immediately and beat him to a bloody pulp. Only then would it sate his inner hatred and resentment.

Tossing and turning, he couldn't fall asleep such was his fury, so Su Mu got up. Not only did he get up in the middle of the night, he also made his underlings wake up too.

Chapter 27 – Exchanging some pointers will not make you pregnant

Not long after, a group of sleepy eyed Sky Tower disciples had gathered.

“Young master Su, is there anything you need?” Someone asked while rubbing their eyes.

“It’s nothing much, it’s only about the affair this morning.” Su Mu tried his hardest to calm down his heart: “The reason why I have gathered you all here is because I want you to help me come up with some ideas that will help me get revenge and pacify my hatred.”

Someone said: “Young Master Su, why don’t you just wait four days. In four days, you can go challenge Kai Yang, and you will definitely be able to beat him to pieces.”

Annoyed, Su Mu replied: “If I really wanted to wait until then, then why did I call you all over?”

The sleepy people who had been gathered, were suddenly startled into standing up. Evidently, they weren’t very awake, so nobody had paid attention to Su Mu’s words and only yawned widely. When he saw their reactions, Su Mu became vexed. Slapping the table he shouted: “All of you, help me think of some good ideas. If you guys can’t help me think of some good ideas, none of you can think about going back to sleep!”

This startled everyone, and they realised that Su Mu was actually angry. His slap and loud voice had caused them to fully regain consciousness and they hurriedly put their minds to use, thinking up some good strategies.

Not long after a disciple named Li Yun Tian eyes widened from formulating a good plan. Opening his mouth, he told Su Mu: “Young Master, we could do this.....”

As he said this, he crept closer to give a detailed explanation of his plan. How could they, how could they, how could they, able to, able to, able to.

Su Mu’s heart burst with joy, he hit Li Yun Tian’s back in excitement while saying: “Not bad. Not Bad. This is a good plan, so I will leave it to you to complete the task!”

“Leave it to me young master Su!” Li Yun Tian was also smiling widely.

“You can all go back to sleep.” Su Mu waved his hands as he said this and everybody relaxed themselves before promptly leaving to go back to their beds.

Looking out at the pitch black darkness outside his room, Su Mu laughed evilly. “Kai Yang, Brother Kai, let us wait and see at dawn!”

Finally, with his heart content, Su Mu fell asleep.

The next day, Kai Yang woke up to practise the tempered body record before going out to do some sweeping.

Yesterday, when he used the incense burner to help practise, although he was constantly on the brink of death; so much so that even now his whole body ached; the results were really evident. This was most obvious when he was

practising the tempered body fist, because he felt that the pressure he felt was slightly smaller. He had also understood that the pressure given from the incense burner was similar to the pressure he felt when practising the tempered body record. As long as he adapted to one type of pressure, he would naturally be able to adapt to another type.

This incense burner was a good thing! His spirits high, Kai Yang wanted to quickly finish his work and go back to train.

Just as Kai Yang was halfway through his sweeping, someone had suddenly blocked his path. Looking up, he thought that person looked vaguely familiar. When he was thinking this, that person opened their mouth and laughed loudly.

(ED: It's here guys, Ning makes her reappearance. Prepare yourselves for more risque leg action, three quarter length pants incoming. Just kidding.)

Last night Li Yun Tian had suggested a plan to Su Mu. Though he had everything planned, he didn't dare be careless, for he knew it would not be easy. He must not let the opposite party become suspicious and must first trick him; to make him exchange some moves with him.

Yesterday when he had accompanied Su Mu to challenge Kai Yang, he had hidden himself at the rear of the crowd. He also didn't say much, so Kai Yang shouldn't be able to recognise him, making things much easier.

Since earlier he had been waiting for Kai Yang to come past this area during his daily sweep. His waiting had finally paid off, Kai Yang had come here to sweep. Putting on a big and friendly smile :D, and a innocent and harmless demeanor, Li Yun Tian walked over.

His current expression should be friendly enough! Li Yun Tian told himself to boost his confidence.

“Does this fellow disciple have any problems?” However Kai Yang was not courteous, since any disciple here currently should be his junior. It was early into the entry period, so their levels shouldn’t be that high, so many would claim to be fellow disciples.

“Are you not senior disciple Kai Yang?” Li Yun Tian asked as if he knew the answer already.

Kai Yang nodded his head: “Yes.”

Breathing in deeply, Li Yun Tian said: “So it really is you! Senior Kai, I have been looking forward to meeting with you. Now that I have met you today, I can see you really live up to expectations!”

(TL: Arse-kisser)

These words had made even Li Yun Tian himself want to vomit, but he must maintain the facade and act like his words were sincere.

“This is serious, this is serious.” Kai Yang’s name was already loudly proclaimed by this junior.

Li Yun Tian put up quite a performance. Taking Kai Yang’s hand, he said admiringly: “Senior Kai, I heard you had taught Zhou Hu a harsh lesson yesterday. You really a person with a big heart.”

“What, you have enmity with him?” asked Kai Yang while sizing him up.

Li Yun Tian’s face turned cold: “Yes I do. That person is like a beast, despicable; he even humiliated me once.”

“But you didn’t go get revenge.” Kai Yang noted.

“I even dream about getting revenge, but.....” Sighing loudly he replied: “Senior Kai, I’m afraid you also know this, Zhou Hu has somebody supporting him. I wouldn’t pay attention to an insignificant person like Zhou Hu, but the person behind is someone I can’t easily provoke. ”

“That’s true.” Kai Yang nodded his head, after all, Su Mu had some powerful people backing him. So an ordinary disciple obviously wouldn’t dare provoke him.

“That’s why yesterday, when senior Kai gave Zhou Hu a lesson, you helped this junior get his revenge.” Li Yun Tian said gratefully, tears flowing down his face.

Laughing, Kai Yang replied: “We were only exchanging some pointers, it wasn’t anything.”

Li Yun Tian pressed ahead: “Senior Kai, since you were able to win against Zhou Hu, your strength shouldn’t be that weak.”

Waving his hand Kai Yang replied: “It’s not much, it isn’t something so amazing.”

Li Yun Tian was sneering inside, you finally said something true. If you didn't plan something yesterday, then how could Zhou Hu possibly lose to you? But he didn't dare reveal his true thoughts, in case Kai Yang became suspicious. That would be disastrous for his plan.

"Senior you are too modest. Come, come, come, normally I, Li Yun Tian don't have the opportunity to exchange pointers with anybody. Senior Kai, you have done so much for me and since we happened to meet up today we must not miss this chance. Please spar with me." After going around in circles, Li Yun Tian finally found an opportunity to ask the question that was the true reason he had talked to Kai Yang.

Forcing a smile, Kai Yang asked: "You want to compare notes with me?"

Li Yun Tian nodded his head enthusiastically: "Of course. I hope senior will not be stingy, and allow this junior to see how senior defeated Zhou Hu. And to help me also."

This reason was really a bit hard to believe, shaking his head Kai Yang rejected the request: "Forget it. You don't usually fight others anyway."

Li Yun Tian anxiously pressured him: "That won't do, senior you will agree even if you don't want to."

Laughing, Kai Yang looked at him and laughed coldly.

Li Yun Tian's heart jumped out. He was a bit impatient just then and was too rushed and forceful with his words, he immediately started laughing too: "Junior

is really too weak. So if senior were to give some pointers, it would be very helpful.”

“No can do.” Kai Yang refused.

“Why?”

“There is no reason to.....”

Seeing that Kai Yang was intentionally moving away from him now, Li Yun Tian called out: “Exchanging some notes, naturally we could help other greatly. Isn’t that reason enough? If we exchanged pointers, it will benefit both of us.”

“You can put it like that, but.....no. No, no.” Repeatedly Kai Yang waved his hand.

“Don’t be like that senior, exchanging some pointers will not make you pregnant.” Li Yun Tian’s face was full of anxiety, he didn’t even dare reveal his true intentions. Heart thumping, he quickly thought up an idea: “Could it be that senior is afraid that he will lose and his contribution points will be deducted, am I right?”

Chapter 28 – Too petty

Facing Li Yun Tian's inquiry, Kai Yang had no response.

Thinking that he had guessed correctly, Li Yun Tian smiled widely: "Don't worry senior. Our strengths should be about the same, so it's not certain as to who will and who will lose. And if by chance, this junior wins and senior loses, then your losses will be covered by me."

"Are you serious?" enquired Kai Yang, this was a rather unexpected.

"A nobleman's word is his bond!" Li Yun Tian bellowed loudly.

Originally he thought that he had successfully tricked Kai Yang, and had assumed his battle stance. He knew that Su Mu was hidden somewhere in the surrounding area, so if he was able to teach Kai Yang a good lesson, then he would be able to greatly increase his face.

But Kai Yang just wrinkled his brows, nearly causing Li Yun Tian to stamp foot and curse his mother. This senior, is too ** annoying and like a bitch. How could Zhou Hu lose to this type of person?

"Senior, do you have any other questions?" Li Yun Tian was on the verge of exploding in frustration.

"Oh, although I would like to trade notes with you, regrettably I am unable to as I was already challenged by someone yesterday. If you really wanted to exchange pointers, then you must wait a few more days."

Bull! Li Yun Tian almost couldn't breathe, hastily he said: "Senior, you can challenge me since I haven't been challenged these past few days. Don't all Sky Tower disciples have the chance to challenge someone every few days?"

"It was like this!" Just realising this now, Kai Yang laughed out loud: "Junior brother, these past few years, it has always been me who was challenged thus I had completely forgotten this rule."

Slowly breathing out, Li Yun Tian really wanted to spit out all the rage and anger inside of him. After a while he inquired: "Senior, now can we compare some notes?"

Kai Yang still had another question: "Junior, if I really lost, would you really pay me contribution points?"

"I will! I will definitely pay you and not only that, I will pay you ten times the amount!" He said, grinding his teeth together.

Shaking his head, Kai Yang replied: "I don't believe you. Unless you first pay me the contribution points I won't believe you."

"How can I give them to you?" Li Yun Tian replied gloomily, for contribution points were recorded down by a third party in an account book. It wasn't something you could just carry around to give to others. How was he, a senior, so narrow minded. Did he believe that he wouldn't stick to his word?

"I do have an alternative." Smiling cryptically at Li Yun Tian, Kai Yang beckoned him closer and whispered into his ear.

Li Yun Tian's face changed into several shades of different colours and he couldn't help but admit that this Kai Yang's mind was really shrewd. He could actually think of this type of solution.

"Junior, if you feel that this is impossible then it's okay. It's not because this senior cannot trust you, it's just....." Playing hard to get, Kai Yang hesitated to voice his next words.

Li Yun Tian didn't know what he wanted, but in order for his own plan to succeed he must give in. So he asked: "It won't hurt, so senior please wait. Wait until I have retrieved the item. My speed is very fast."

As he was saying this, he was already speeding away.

Looking at his receding back, Kai Yang sighed out in pity; to think there were still people in this world that were willing to offer themselves up to get beaten. With his request refused, he then went to retrieve something, he was really strange. Thankfully it temporarily achieved his needs. It was just that this method could only be used once, next time he would no longer be able to use it.

After thinking for a while, Kai Yang mentally bashed himself. When he remembered the junior's desperateness, no matter what he requested he would have agreed.

Su Mu, along with a bunch of other people were hidden too far from Kai Yang. Originally when he saw that Li Yun Tian and Kai Yang had started to talk, his heart was jumping circles. Just as he was settling down to enjoy a good show, Li Yun Tian hastily ran away, causing Su Mu to be confused.

Yesterday when they were discussing the plan, this wasn't included! What was this Li Yun Tian up to?

His heart full of doubt, Su Mu immediately ordered someone to intercept Li Yun Tian and inquire about the situation.

After fifteen minutes, that person had returned and whispered to him: "Young master Su, Li Yun Tian said that Kai Yang is narrowed minded and had told him to first go to the Contribution Hall to retrieve some herbs to compensate him. Only then would he agree to compare notes."

"Aren't you a bit too petty?" Su Mu said flabbergastedly: "Kai Yang is only a trial disciple, so if he lost, he would only lose one contribution point. So, why would he need to compensate him ten herbs?"

That person answer: "Li Yun Tian caused this, he said that he would compensate him ten times the amount, so....."

"Eh, no wonder." Su Mu's face became slightly ugly, "But forget about it. As long as that Kai Yang can receive this lesson, ten herbs aren't that much."

Ten herbs cost about ten contribution points. Such a small amount of points weren't put into the eyes of Su Mu.

Since everyone now knew the entire situation, they could only patiently await the battle.

Half an hour passed and Kai Yang was nearly finished with his sweeping. Shortly thereafter, Kai Yang saw a red and tired face, it was Li Yun Tian running closer. Li Yun Tian didn't blame the fact that the distance of the Contribution was too large, but rather that Treasurer Meng who was still still asleep for causing him to take so long. After a long time of shouting and banging on the door, had he woken up.

Since old man Meng was disturbed from his sweet dream, his temper was short. Without even allowing old man Meng the time to teach him a lesson, Li Yun Tian quickly purchased ten ordinary grade lower level herbs. This cost him about twenty contribution points.

The anger Li Yun Tian held! He was determined to earn the interest back from Kai Yang's body.

Returning, he saw that Kai Yang hadn't left. He stood there, with his broom in his hand waiting for him.

Three steps, two steps, as Li Yun Tian gasped for breath, he rushed over to Kai Yang. Taking out the herbs, he breathlessly said: "Here, check it senior."

"Hehe, no need." Acting as if he was very big hearted, Kai Yang took the herbs without counting and placed them, along with his broom onto the ground.

"Senior, now can we compare notes?" Li Yun Tian asked.

"We can, we can. Actually, junior didn't have to go to such lengths. IF you had asked, this senior would have readily agreed." Kai Yang smiled cheerfully.

Li Yun Tian was nearly angered to the point of meeting buddha, two buddhas in heaven, three in nirvana and four living together. It was you who wanted the herbs, it was you who didn't trust me, and it was you who made me travel such a distance. Could it be that this whole journey was unnecessary?

But he will forget about it he decided, and chose to take some deep breaths to calm down his mind. For today, once this battle started, he would thoroughly teach Kai Yang a good lesson.

"Junior, shall we start?" Kai Yang queried Li Yun Tian's opinion.

"Okay." His spirited roused, Li Yun Tian replied and cupped his hands. "Please give me some teachings senior!"

"Don't dare, don't dare!" Kai Yang humbly smiled.

Neither dared or wanted to reveal their current cultivation levels. Li Yun Tian was afraid that it would scare Kai Yang away, while Kai Yang wanted to keep it a secret. With each thinking of their own reasons in their respective minds, the battle started.

Seeing Zhou Hu's mistake yesterday and his heart full of hatred, how could Li Yu Tian possibly be merciful? He thought as he prepared to use thunder to knock down this senior.

With the lightning fast exchanges, the air around became charged with tension. Dodging each other's attacks, Kai Yang and Li Yun Tian had already exchanged fists. Since Li Yun Tian's heart was full of hatred, his fists didn't contain any real power. But within his flurry of fists, each was faster than the last

and more profound.

Kai Yang didn't panic but remained calm. The practise that he had been doing these past few days started to show their results. With only the Sky Tower's basic skills and the kicks, he fought.

After a few exchanges, Li Yun Tian became fearful. His opponent exuded a vigourous energy, which left him unstable and pushed him back a few steps. Not only that, each punch that he threw out made him feel like he hit a boulder and left his whole hand numb.

Chapter 29 – A big loss

After suffering a loss, Li Yun Tian didn't dare to be carelessly anymore. Intensely looking at Kai Yang, he flitted about before executing a couple of swift punches towards Kai Yang.

That's for being narrow-minded, that's for making me run to the Contribution Hall so early in the morning, he grumbled inside while attacking. 'Peng, peng' resounded every time Li Yun Tian struck out. Nearby, Su Mu was stunned as each fist landed on Kai Yang, while Li Yun Tian felt pain with each fist.

Both people were tempered body cultivators, but since their levels weren't very high, the amount of blows they exchanged were small. Furthermore, Kai Yang wanted to test out his body's condition, so he allowed Li Yun Tian to land his attacks on his body.

Within the time it took to make some tea, Kai Yang came to understand his current body condition; it was stronger, far stronger than a few days ago. With his goal achieved, Kai Yang no longer wanted to be subjected to his junior's nagging.

Just as victory was at hand for Li Yun Tian, something changed. The Senior Kai, who could only retreat and defend a few moments ago, face lit up in excitement. It was like when an evil spirit met a naked young lady. This sudden change in attitude caused Li Yun Tian to feel uneasy.

more closely, he noticed that Kai Yang's excitement was different to what he had previously thought. It was a colder and bloodthirsty type of excitement.

With a bad feeling in his stomach, Li Yun Tian retreated, but one step from Kai Yang blocked his path, he was like a towering mountain.

Jumping up, Li Yun Tian wanted to escape from Kai Yang's pursuit. Raising his leg, Kai Yang swept it towards Li Yun Tian's waist.

A miserable cry leaked out of his mouth, while he flew a couple of feet. Without pausing, Kai Yang ruthlessly stepped down, stomped on him and a rain of fists followed.

A bloodcurdling scream echoed.

This round of 'note comparing' ended up with Li Yun Tian losing, begging for mercy.

When Li Yun Tian was sent flying earlier, he still had the intention to continue. But under the merciless barrage of Kai Yang's punches, his injuries quickly increased.

After a while, Li Yun Tian could no longer endure it. Afterwards he noticed Kai Yang and his own reactions were completely different.

The more he hit Kai Yang, the more excited Kai Yang became. When he hit him, the more painful and sorrowful it became for Li Yun Tian.

Why would there be anyone who would be happy to get beaten? The more red, blood and flesh that Kai Yang saw, the happier he looked. It made him look slightly mad.

Li Yun Tian thought this person was mad. Yet after the end of the battle, Kai Yang returned to normal, back to his kind and amiable self. In fact, he even helped to pull him back up and smiled saying that he allowed him to win. Then he picked up his broom and left.

When he was in battle compared to when he was not in battle, he was two completely different people!

His body was sore all over, how could he not sustain some injuries from Kai Yang's multiple fists.

This time, it really was a case of trying to steal the chicken but losing the rice to lure it, Li Yun Tian thought in tears.

He had already constantly refused to compare notes with Li Yun Tian, yet he had been adamant. He even spent twenty contribution points in exchange for ten herbs to secure the exchange. And the result.....he had lost. Not only were the herbs taken away from him, he will also be deducted contribution points.

This time, it really was a big loss! Was this not offending because of something petty? Li Yun Tian felt endless regret.

Su Mu and the others, watching from not too far away were also shocked stupid. When they saw Li Yun Tian and Kai Yang start, they were sorely tempted to jump out and started cheering; for he had finally succeed in getting Kai Yang to exchange pointers. Soon, Kai Yang was going to be beaten black and blue.

Su Mu even had it all planned out. When Kai Yang was beaten, he would go

over and give a few extra words of ridicule. That way, he will be able to release some of his heart's anger. But contrary to what they expected, when the battle started, Kai Yang had fought Li Yun Tian to a stand still.

For a while Su Mu thought the things that he saw were a little blurry. Suspiciously, he leaned over and asked: "What stage is Li Yun Tian again?"

"Tempered body seventh stage and has already started to cultivate train his own vitality. It's just that the time he has trained it is too little, so it cannot be used well yet."

"And Kai Yang?" Su Mu asked again.

"I think he is about the tempered body fourth stage?" His voice a bit uncertain.

Everyone was overwhelmed with shock, for despite a difference of three stages, he had managed to fight evenly with Li Yun Tian and that was too monstrous. No wonder yesterday Zhou Hu was defeated with only three moves. Even with such a large difference, Kai Yang had won. So even if Zhou Hu had used all his strength, he wouldn't win.

But, how could that person, of all these speculations, be that powerful? If he really possessed this type of strength, why would he lose all his previous battles? Kai Yang had been a trial disciple for three years already, and year after he was admitted, he was constantly challenged. Every time, until yesterday, he hadn't won a single one of his battles in these past two years.

The greatest shock that Su Mu and co. were to experience had yet to come. They had thought that Kai Yang being able to endure even one of Li Yun Tian's

strikes was nothing short of a miracle; there was no possible way for him to win. Yet, when Kai Yang really defeated Li Yun Tian, everybody was like a crow and peacock, making no sound. They couldn't believe their own eyes.

A tempered body fourth stage practitioner beat a tempered body seventh stage practitioner. In the couple of hundred years of Sky Tower's history, this type of situation had never happened before. Could it be that even a stinky salty fish will have a chance to turn over?

As he was standing there in a trance, Su Mu felt someone tap his shoulder gently. Turning around, he was greeted by Kai Yang smiling at him while carrying his broom. His face full of affection he said: "Junior Su, if there will be another good opportunity like this, please remember to notify me as well."

"You already knew?" The corners of Su Mu's mouth twitched.

Gently, Kai Yang chuckled: "Yesterday, although junior Li was hidden within the crowd, he was with you. The only good point of this senior is his memory."

"How sly!" Su Mu hated him so much that he gnashed his teeth together vigorously. Only now, did he realise everybody had been thoroughly tricked by Kai Yang.

"We're both in the same boat." He laughed: "Oh right, I can still challenge someone tomorrow. Aren't we all allowed to request anyone for a battle once everyday? Enjoy your day everybody and I will come find you tomorrow."

Everyone's face immediately became ice cold. Witnessing Kai Yang's current actions, hadn't he experienced the sweetness from this little action? Then when

they looked at Li Yun Tian and thought how their own strengths were about the same level as Li Yun Tian, a shiver ran down their spines. Frightened they said: “Young master Su, what should we do now?” Su Mu was also at his wits end. After all, duels were a long time tradition of Sky Tower. Which disciple hasn’t been challenged before? Although he had someone backing him, he still didn’t dare to recklessly break the Main Gate rules.

“Relax, he probably said it to scare you. If he really came to challenge you, I will make sure that he won’t be able to walk.”

Hearing Su Mu say this, everyone felt more secure and relaxed.

Kai Yang had thought of this on the spot. All Sky Tower disciples had the opportunity to issue a challenge each day and since he had never used this privilege before, he naturally had forgotten about it. With today’s reminder from Li Yun Tian, he had remembered it.

One battle a day, however defeating an ordinary disciple could only earn him two contribution points, but mosquito meat is still meat. After accumulating them for a month, it would not be a small amount.

Besides, on the road of martial cultivation, you cannot close yourself off completely from the outside world. Battling these fellow disciples and exchanging some pointers, will not do any harm and it doesn’t take very long. Just treat it like a relaxation activity, you can even earn some contribution points while you relax. What harm is there?

Though, the harvest from today’s challenge was quite a good one. Not only did he earn two contribution points, he also gained ten strands of much needed Dead Jedi Tree Grass. This was such a profitable day.

If there was someone to give him ten herbs everyday, how good would that be! Kai Yang daydreamed a bit.

Returning to his wooden hut, Kai Yang immediately took out the incense burner and lit it. Breathing in the perfume, he started his arduous training.

Chapter 30 – The salty fish turns over

The next day, a whole group of disciples were gathered to practise. They talked and laughed together, although the work was very tiring, it was done in a festive manner. Suddenly, someone called out in a certain direction: “Young.....young master Su.....”

“What?” Su Mu asked dubiously.

“He really came.”

“Who came?” Somewhat impatiently, Su Mu gazed over the in the direction the person was pointing towards. There he saw Kai Yang holding his broom and grinning while walking towards them.

Everybody’s faces fell.

“Good morning my fellow brother and sister disciples. You are all such diligent people, practising so early in the morning.” Kai Yang greeted everyone, while purposely looking over at Zhou Hu and Li Yun Tian, who both backed away, their faces red. When they thought about the power of Kai Yang’s fists, their skin crawled.

“Why did you come here?” Su Mu was a bit worried. Although he already knew Kai Yang’s motive, he still asked. After all, he had opened his mouth and assured everyone yesterday that he would deal with Kai Yang.

“To challenge.” His smile incomparably wide, Kai Yang’s gaze swept

throughout the throng of people. Cordially he asked: “Which fellow disciples haven’t been challenged in these past few days? Please allow this senior to test your might.”

The Sky Tower’s Main Gate rules state that you should not avoid challenges and not shy away from them! Disobey, and you will be expelled.

With these rules in place, the people under Su Mu were deathly afraid of Kai Yang. For as long as the opponent issued a challenge, they would have to accept if they had not been challenged in these past five days. That would mean, even if they knew they would receive a beating, they could only brace themselves and accept.

That day, Zhang San was the one who was challenged. Satisfied, Kai Yang walked away, while Su Mu damned him and hurled curses at his back.

The next day, Kai Yang came again, that time it was Li Shi who got challenged. Walking away satisfied after winning once again, Su Mu threatened Kai Yang non-stop but it was to no avail.

On the third day, Kai Yang had come yet again, it was Wang Wu who got unlucky and received a swollen face and bloody nose for his troubles. Once again, his heart satisfied, Kai Yang left, while Su Mu swore weakly.

When Kai Yang had come the fourth time, Su Mu had also learned. Su Mu no longer threatened or cursed Kai Yang, for he knew they were no use because this Senior Kai was not afraid of his threats at all.

Su Mu only fiercely glared at him, harbouring a bone and soul piercing hatred.

Enduring this type of frustrating torment, the people under Su Mu had begun to quit.

This was plain bullying by Kai Yang. For there were many ordinary disciples throughout Sky Tower, yet he purposely came to challenge the disciples under Su Mu. It was very clear that he was here for revenge. Not to mention, the amount of people within this group was not small; so he would always be able to find someone to challenge and obtain favourable results.

Within these past few days, Kai Yang had caused quite a tempest. He was only a lowly trial disciple, yet he really was a salty fish that turned over and he managed to make everyone pay attention to him. Ever since he had defeated Zhou Hu, he had changed into someone that others weren't able to easily beat or manipulate. Everyday he would go and challenge disciples and each time he would win. Rumors even stated that Su Mu had gotten to the point that he no longer retaliated. What type of person was Su Mu ah, he was someone with powerful backing.

Even someone like him couldn't do anything to Kai Yang, so what could ordinary disciples do? Subsequently, no disciples dared to go and challenge Kai Yang. Not one person was unaware that this person who had entered for three years and had been demoted to a trial disciple was not an easily provoked person.

As this news travelled through the many disciples, many were guessing at his cultivation. Some guessed that he was at the tempered body fourth stage, some said tempered body fifth stage and some even guessed tempered body eighth stage. After all he did defeat the tempered body seventh stage practitioner Li Yun Tian.

But no matter who, no one knew Kai Yang's true cultivation.

Only Xia Ning Chang knew! These past few days, every time Kai Yang went to challenge someone, she was always there peeking. With her natural talent and cultivation, she could naturally see Kai Yang's true level.

But since Xia Ning Chang could see his true cultivation, she feared him.

This junior, when he had defeated Li Yun Tian, he was only at that tempered body fifth stage. And with the passing of a mere four days, he had risen to the tempered body sixth stage.

How did he cultivate? Even if it was her, armed with her special physique, when she was cultivating in the tempered body stage, she had used no small amount of medicinal pellets, yet she wasn't as fast as him.

In a state of confusion, Xia Ning Chang had sneakily stalked Kai Yang to investigate how he cultivated. Though, no matter where she looked, or went, she couldn't unravel the mystery or find anything unusual. He only punched a few fists, kicked his feet and made himself all weary and sweaty.

Xia Ning Chang couldn't understand how the basic techniques of Sky Tower could make him so powerful. They weren't even profound techniques.

At the end of her investigation spanning these past few days, Xia Ning Chang was left clueless. Although she had a feeling that Kai Yang still had hidden secrets, she was not bold enough to continue investigating. For a young girl to often peek at someone was not an honorable act, especially a youngster who was often half naked.

Everytime Xia Ning Chang looked, she became beet red and ashamed endlessly. Everytime this person trained, he would take off his shirt, as if his bony ribs were something good to show off.

“However, he seemed to be more robust than before, with more muscles.” Thinking back to the time she first saw his **, Xia Ning Chang unconsciously compared. When she finished comparing, her faced flushed red again.

Meanwhile Kai Yang was oblivious to the fact that he had been watched these past days. Everyday he would sweep his assigned area and then go find Su Mu’s group to challenge them. Afterwards, he would return back home to start his training. This was repetitive and tedious work, but also very fulfilling.

The incense burner’s impact was exceptionally large, and matched with the daily tempered body record training, it had allowed him to break through to the tempered body sixth stage yesterday. This made the atmospheric energy within his body further solidify and stabilize.

With another step, with just another step he would step into the tempered body seventh stage. Once he reached this stage, he would be able to produce his own vitality; even though the amount he would be able to produce wasn’t that much, it was still vitality. Also as long as he could produce his own vitality, he could then start to cultivate martial skills. At that time, his attacks would not longer be restricted to the leg whip and the shaolin fists.

The tempered body seventh to ninth stages were the stage in which one’s vitality developed, and also when the vitality travelled through a practitioner’s meridians and allowed them to reach the mastery stage. Only in this stage when one’s vitality was being born could this be achieved, you must then use it to

break open the heaven and earth bridge so as to break away from the tempered body boundary to the next stage.

It was like playing with your own life, this training of Kai Yang's, each and everyday Kai Yang could feel his growth; it was an extremely vivid feeling. Today, Kai Yang was finally able to practise his fists while under the influence the incense perfume, but the duration he was able to endure wasn't very long. When he practised the tempered body piece in the mornings, it had become easier, and was improving everyday.

If these conditions were maintained, Kai Yang was confident that he could truly mature and become stronger.

But Kai Yang was in an embarrassing situation, his Dead Jedi Tree Grass stock had run out and his Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower, although sparingly used, was almost finished as well.

These past few days, Kai Yang had used the herbs sparingly, but he still ran out. As he used them, they had inevitably run out.

With no alternative, Kai Yang could only go to the Contribution Hall and use up all his remaining contribution points to purchase these herbs.

Chapter 31 – Tonight, raid Kai Yang during the night

This time, out of the goodness in his heart, Treasurer Meng gave Kai Yang a few extra clippings of the herbs, but he still refused to let go of the matters pertaining to his cultivation. He constantly asked how Kai Yang manage to improve his strength so quickly.

It looked like the news of Kai Yang beating Su Mu's underlings had even reached Treasurer Meng's ears.

Towards Treasurer Meng, Kai Yang still had a reasonably good impression. Although the old man was a bit crazy and thick skinned, he was very likable when measured by Kai Yang's standards.

This situation wasn't easily explained, so Kai Yang could only say that when he was in Black Wind Mountains, he ate a special fruit which allowed him to gain enlightenment on how to cultivate.

After contemplating for a while, Treasurer Meng thought back to the time period when Kai Yang entered the mountains and his current behaviour. This explanation was the most reasonable and believable explanation, so Treasurer had no choice but to accept it.

Exiting the Contribution Hall, Kai Yang was deeply worried.

All of his contribution points had been used to purchase these herbs and by his estimation, they would only last him three to four days. Afterwards, what would he use to get these herbs?

Even though he was able to earn two contribution points from his daily challenges, these points could only be accessed on the eighth day of every month. With his calculations, he would need to wait twenty days. How could he possibly wait until then?

Without being able to think of a solutions, Kai Yang became depressed and could only continue training.

A few days passed by in a blur, and Kai Yang's tempered body sixth stage cultivation began to stabilize and he marched towards the seventh stage.

In comparison to Kai Yang's good mood, Su Mu's followers felt like they were thrown into a flaming abyss. These past few days, Kai Yang would come to find them and cause trouble, causing them to feel vexed beyond compare. They couldn't contend against him in strength and couldn't hide from him, it was stifling beyond compare.

While Su Mu personally held some confidence at his chance of victory should he fight Kai Yang, unfortunately for the others the gap between them and Kai Yang was too large. They couldn't challenge him — Su Mu still thought that Kai Yang was at the tempered body fourth or fifth stage.

Su Mu knew that this could continue no longer, if it continued any longer, then all his underlings would leave.

Thinking for awhile, Su Mu prepared to do something heartless and called all the Sky Tower disciples who had been beaten by Kai Yang, frowning he said: "Tonight, raid Kai Yang's hut during the night, wipe away all shame you have suffered!"

Since they couldn't win by following the rules, they won't follow them at all!

Everyone jumped up, startled: "A raid?"

"En." Su Mu nodded his head.

"This isn't good." Li Yun Tian was hesitant: "Although that guy Kai Yang is a bit dishonest, he at least openly challenged and defeated us all. If the news of us mounting a sneak attack got out, we would be unable to escape punishment."

Li Yun Tian's statements got the agreement of all the people present.

Su Mu indignantly replied: "But he is too much! He has completely disregarded us fellow disciples and comes everyday. If we don't give him a proper lesson, who knows how long this ferocious act will continue. Regardless, tonight I will definitely go cause some trouble for him. All those willing to do so, follow me, as for those who are unwilling I won't force you. If anything were to happen, I swear that I, Su Mu will bear all consequences and won't involve you."

Su Mu's words were sincere, and even if they still felt that it wasn't honorable, they couldn't refute his position. After all, Su Mu had promised to carry all the consequences on his shoulders, showing the utmost benevolence.

Thinking for a bit, Li Yun Tian spoke: "This is also good. If this succeeds, then we will be able to teach that bastard that we aren't so easily provoked. Young master Su, this time, this disciple will put his life on the line and play with you!"

"We will also come." The remaining people chorused.

Nodding and smiling, Su Mu cried: “That’s right!”

That night, with everybody’s spirit trembling in excitement they gathered in Su Mu’s room waiting until sunset.

“Is everybody ready?” Su Mu inquired.

They nodded their heads.

“Good. This time we must make this moment unforgettable for that bastard!” Su Mu shouted, while putting a black cloth over his face, leaving only a slim gap from which his evil gaze leaked out. Their emotions roused, the others followed suite.

“Set off!” Calling for action, Su Mu issued the move out order.

Ten or so shadows flashed out of his room, quickly merging into the night’s darkness.

During the night, Sky Tower had disciples posted about patrolling the premises. Unfortunately, Su Mu and his group were Sky Tower disciples too and were all too familiar with the patrol routes, allowing them to easily avoid these patrols.

Otherwise, why would a family thief be hard to ward against. Su Mu’s current actions were a model example of this saying.

Shortly, Su Mu's group gathered in front of Kai Yang's small wooden hut. Standing about ten to twenty feet away, they suppressed the sounds of their breathing, their indignation flared at the memory of the injustice they had suffered.

"There are no lights inside the hut, Kai Yang must be asleep already." Calming his heart, Su Mu turned his head to face Li Yun Tian at his side: "Kai Yang's strength isn't weak. So later you and I will hold him down, while everyone else beats him, remember to use all your strength."

"Okay." Li Yun Tian nodded his head.

"As long as it's not life threatening, you can hit however you want." Su Mu reminded, and they all promised.

"Go!" Waving his hand, Su Mu shot towards the wooden hut. Ten shadows flickered against the night, rushing onwards. Those who cultivated, could run without making the slightest noise, they just needed to suppress the noise of their breathing to hide their presence. Their imaginations running wild, all their spirits rose as they thought about how Kai Yang would look injured and bloody.

This past few days, they were tormented miserably by Kai Yang.

Even though they were still around ten feet away, the cold gleam in Su Mu's eyes became more intense and his lips couldn't help but curve upwards.

As the distance shrunk, the wooden hut's wooden door could be seen, in the blink of an eye Su Mu had already started to reach out to push open the door.

Suddenly, a sweet fragrance entered his nose. Smelling this fragrance, Su Mu felt that this fragrance was very strange. It didn't smell very nice, nor did it smell very bad, it truly was a fragrance that he had never smelt before.

Although he was a bit suspicious, Su Mu didn't give it any more thought and continued to charge forwards.

Stepping forward, Su Mu's body became soft, he narrowly avoided falling. Breaking out in cold sweat, Su Mu recalled just moments ago it felt like all his strength had been sucked out from him. His brain buzzing he became mind became muddled, tiredly he steadied himself.

Taking another step caused Su Mu to directly fall to the ground, nose first. Then two warm streams flowed down from his nose filling his mouth with the metallic taste of blood.

"Pa, pa, pa....." A series of sounds sounded out and converged towards the wooden hut originating from the Sky Tower disciples that had followed Su Mu. One by one, each of them, like Su Mu, fell to the ground. Each of them felt weak and powerless, all had bloody noses and battered looks. Their anguished wailing resounded out in the quiet night, making it all the more livelier.

"What's the matter?" Struggling greatly, Su Mu turned his head towards Li Yun Tian and asked.

Li Yun Tian struggled to drag himself back upright, but he was powerless and could only lay on the ground gasping for breath. This expression was horrendously ugly, hesitatingly he said: "Young master Su, I'm afraid that we have been poisoned."

“Poisoned?” Su Mu turned pale in fright.

“In addition, it’s a very powerful poison.....” Trembling, Li Yun Tian reached out with his hand: “Young.....master Su, I’m afraid that I can’t hold on any longer. You.....you must get revenge for me!”

After he finished passing on his last will and testament, Li Yun Tian’s head fell and he ceased all movement.

Overwhelmed by shock, Su Mu desperately and repeatedly called out his name. But no matter how many times he called out, he couldn’t wake him. When he turned his head around again, he saw that of the brother disciples that he had brought with him, none had escaped. All without exception were laying still, making no sound.

An indescribable sense of panic and mourning filled his heart, unexpectedly, Su Mu’s was able to calm his mind in this situation.

This was the territory of Sky Tower, how could they be poisoned? And this poison’s effect was this potent, not even three breaths had passed before their lives were taken, one by one.

Chapter 32 – True Yang Tactics

Who put the poison in Kai Yang's hut? Why did they poison this hut, was it meant for them?

Just as he was thinking about these matters in a confused state, his ears picked up a sudden and surprised voice. "Huh?"

It's Kai Yang's voice! Su Mu hated Kai Yang down to his bones, naturally he would be able recognise his voice.

It's him. It turned out that it was Kai Yang who had poisoned them! Bastard! We had only intended to come and teach you a lesson, yet you were this murderous! Isn't this too cruel, isn't it?

In his heart Su Mu cursed Kai Yang, however he had rapidly begun to lose consciousness.

Fuck. Could it be that this master will die this muddle headed? This poor young master who was full of ambitions, and before these ambitions could be fulfilled, he will die an early death. The heaven's were jealous, the heaven's were jealous ah!

Stepping lightly, Kai Yang walked over to the the group of fallen disciples. Crouching down, he took off their face masks, only to discover that they were all people he was familiar with.

Thinking for a bit, Kai Yang realised what they had wanted to do. It was

probably because he had tortured them too miserably these past few days, so they had come for revenge during the night.

But they really had some bad luck.

Playing with the incense burner in his hands, Kai Yang didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

This really was an accident, but they were really too unlucky. Usually he would have long since recalled the incense burner back into the black book, but today's training was too exhausting. So by accident, he had fallen asleep. And before the remainder of the herbs had been burned, Su Mu and his group had unfortunately come and ended up inhaling the incense.

The incense that came from within the burner was very powerful, and when Kai Yang had first been subjected to the effects, he could only manage to take three steps before collapsing onto the ground. And this was with the golden skeleton within his body, so how could Su Mu's group hope to withstand it?

They didn't have the support of the golden skeleton for recovery, so he estimated they would need to cultivate for a couple of days before they would regain their strength.

Although, through his negligence, he must bear some responsibility for the current situation, it was also because of their arrogance. If the moment they had smelled the incense and stopped breathing, then they wouldn't be in this pitiful state.

"Hey, why did you come?" Sighing loudly, Kai Yang stored the incense burner

back into the black book, while looking at the pile of bodies strewn about his floor awkwardly.

Pondering for a moment, Kai Yang decided to drag all of them to a random area and leave them there.

When he returned to his wooden hut, he went back to sleep.

Because of that incident, Kai Yang became more vigilant. He must quickly breakthrough into the next tempered body stage. Currently he could only use the incense burner outside of the black book, but if he quickly broke through and neared the Kai Yuan stage, then it would no longer be so inconvenient to use. At that time, even if the incense burner was still inside the black book, he would be able to use it. The only requirement would be that he still had energy to channel into the black book.

The next few days, Kai Yang trained bitterly, despite using the two herbs sparingly, they decreased steadily everyday.

On the third morning, after he had completed his daily tempered body record training, he faced the east to breathe in the rich qi. While doing so the atmospheric energy in his meridians suddenly stirred and rose rapidly. It was like they were little insects scuttling about his meridians.

His face straightening, Kai Yang quickly paused to check his body.

The scuttering of his atmospheric energy also caused his muscles and blood to tingle, numbing his entire body. He didn't know how long this numbing feeling persisted for, but suddenly Kai Yang felt his body lighten, while his abdomen

began to heat up. The mad scuttering of his atmospheric energy immediately dissipated.

The warm feeling in his abdomen seemed to come to life, meanwhile Kai Yang was in ecstasy.

Vitality! He had finally stepped up, he was at tempered body seventh stage now and had started to develop his vitality. Vitality was a clear sign of this.

In your life, the first bit of vitality that you develop comes from within your dantian, but this vitality was very nominal amount. It was unable to support the usage of even one martial skill in a battle. This was because as soon as you used this strand of vitality, it would disappear. In order to regain it, you must expend a large amount of energy.

But because of this little strand of vitality, a practitioner could now be able to start their cultivation of martial skills.

The Sky Tower basic fists and kicks were not comparable to the might of a martial skill. A martial skill called upon one's vitality in order to be executed, and they were the foundation of strength for all martial practitioners.

For a simple punch, the power that came from the tempered body seventh stage was far superior than the sixth stage. If the tempered body sixth stage punch could produce a power of 200 jin, then with the aid of vitality, the punch from the tempered body seventh could produce 500 jin or even 1000 jin of power.

Of course, when you were in the tempered body stage, a practitioner wouldn't

easily use martial skills because it wasn't easy to recover your vitality. Only when you reached the Kai Yuan Stage, could you freely use martial skills as you pleased in battles. When you reached that stage, vitality was quickly recovered.

The main issue was how fast one could recover their vitality.

So once you entered the tempered body seventh stage, a practitioner must use that small stand of vitality to create their foundations and slowly increase their vitality.

A common method was to cultivate martial skills!

Every martial skill required several strands, or even dozens of strands or even the strands from various meridians to execute. With different paths and orders, one can form many different martial skills.

While you were cultivating martial skills to increase your vitality, you would open your body's zhou tian and naturally progress to the Kai Yuan stage. Every practitioner would do this.

Kai Yang was no exception.

Once he knew he had reached the tempered body seventh stage, Kai Yang immediately calmed his beating heart and rushed back into the wooden hut to call out the black book.

He flipped directly to the fourth page and earnestly scanned the page.

During these past days, as soon as he had broken through, he would try to unlock the fourth page. Unfortunately he had never succeeded. Kai Yang guessed that he needed the tempered body seventh stage to unlock it, as soon as he reached the tempered body seventh stage the fourth page began to morph.

His guess was indeed correct!

After floating around for a short while, the wisps of golden light covered the page. Separating from the page, these gold beams of light directly entered Kai Yang's mind.

Within his mind, new information appeared suddenly, True Yang Tactics! This was the reward that the black book had bestowed upon Kai Yang for breaking through. Going over the information, his expression became distorted.

This True Yang Tactics was slightly different from common martial skills. Normal martial skills had set paths of sequences, and although they could change, they were only superficial changes; they didn't change the base of the skill. They didn't stray from their base, if they did, then it would be a completely different skill altogether.

But this True Yang Tactics didn't. It didn't have set activation sequences and changed constantly. It could be described as arbitrary or you could say that it actually didn't have any singular form.

This was the first difference.

The cultivation method for the True Yang Tactics was also quite simple, but

there were conditions to cultivate it.

You must cultivate in an environment with plenty of yang energy to cultivate the True Yang Tactics.

But through this secret method, once the cultivated yang vitality reached a certain point, it could be condensed into a liquid form and stored within the dantian.

This was something no martial skill or secret art could achieve. Because there will always be a moment when one's body would be filled. Once a martial practitioner was filled with vitality, there was no way to increase the amount, unless you broke your limit.

Now Vitality → World Qi

Tempered Body Stage → Tempered Body Stage

Kai Yuan Stage → Initial Element Stage

Qi Dong Stage → Qi Transforming Stage

Li He Boundary → Separation and Reunion Boundary

Zhen Yuan Boundary → True Element Boundary

Shen You Boundary → Immortal Ascension Boundary

Chapter 33 – Origin of Yang

But the True Yang Tactics were different. When you cultivated your Yang World Qi to the limit, your World Qi would condense into a liquid form and merge with your dantian. This would cause your meridians to empty, thereby allowing you to continue to cultivate World Qi. In other words, if you practised this secret art, there would be no limit to the amount you could cultivate, however you needed Yang qi to be able to practise it without any limit.

This was the second difference. With these differences and the origin of the True Yang Tactics, it clearly displayed how this skill was far from ordinary.

When he started to cultivate his Yang qi, he would be able to use his liquified Yang qi to attack.

Contemplating for a while, Kai Yang decided to cultivate the True Yang Tactics.

Firstly, it was because he had no other alternatives and also had no more contribution points, as a result he was unable to obtain any martial skills from the Main Gate. Secondly, it was because he had great confidence in anything that came from the black book. The skills obtained from the Main Gate may not even be comparable to the True Yang Tactics.

As for the training environment, it wasn't anything to be concerned about. The sun also had a Yang attribute, so as long as there was sunlight, he would be able to cultivate the True Yang Tactics. It was just that the efficiency would be quite low.

Afterall, the sun had to shine over an enormous area of land and given it was

providing this in the form of a equally large expanse of light. How much of this could a human possibly absorb?

With his decision finalised, Kai Yang walked out of his hut and found a patch of sunlight. Sitting down, he closed his eyes, and imagined the path for the True Yang Tactics. Concentrating, he began to focus and control the thin strand of World Qi within in his dantian and direct it according to the path from the True Yang Tactics.

For everything, the beginning was the most difficult part; this saying was not wrong at all. Kai Yang could connect himself to that thin strand of World Qi, but to take it and let it travel through his meridians was difficult beyond measure.

Under the blazing sun, he trained for the entire day and only increased the thin strand of World Qi by a tiny bit and the travelling speed of his World Qi was as slow as a turtle. But in the end it was the first time he attempted it, so to have this result already caused Kai Yang to be very pleased.

This was a cumulative type of training and was not something that could be completed overnight. But in regards to this, Kai Yang was in no way lacking of patience.

After three days of hard work, Kai Yang finally managed to guide his World Qi from his dantian to his chest meridian. With a single thought, the small and considerably weak strand of World Qi surged up from within his chest and surged around his chestal acupoint.

Following the black book, he knew he must first establish his Origin of Yang. This was the first step to cultivating the True Yang Tactics.

This Origin of Yang had no other use apart from assisting him in sensing the Yang qi around him. All in all, Kai Yang's strength was far too low and he still had yet to form his own divine sense, thus he was completely unable to probe the area around him to find a dense Yang qi area.

However, with his Origin of Yang established this would no longer be a problem. As long as this was created, then within a certain area, he would be able to pick up even the faintest hints of Yang qi.

With his strand of World Qi moving non-stop within his chest area, Kai Yang's face became tense, he could not allow the slightest carelessness. To form his Origin of Yang was a very complicated and meticulous task, if there was any errors in the forming process, then all his previous work would go down the drain and Kai Yang would need to start over again.

One hour passed, two hours passed and Kai Yang who had been sitting under the sun the entire time was soaked from head to toe in his sweat. Given the length of time he had been sweating for his body naturally began to show signs of dehydration; his lips had even turned pale, but Kai Yang's face remained firm. He continued to spur that strand of World Qi to revolve around his chest acupoint with no signs of irritability or discouragement.

Without knowing how much time had passed, Kai Yang suddenly felt a strange sensation from his chest and a piercing pain followed like a red hot iron had been pressed upon his skin.

Abruptly, Kai Yang opened his eyes and clenched his teeth.

This pain came fast and left just as fast. It only occurred for the time it took you to blink, then his chest returned to normal. In fact, it even felt cool and

refreshed, but his brain was still reeling from the severe pain and wouldn't allow him to forget about it that easily.

Faintly, Kai Yang felt that something extra had appeared in his chest, but when he looked down there was nothing there.

Was the Origin of Yang formed? Creasing his eyebrows, Kai Yang began to contemplate. The Origin should have been successfully formed, it was just formed within his central chest acupoint, so he couldn't see it physically.

Since the Origin of Yang had formed, then it should have some reaction with the Yang qi. Why couldn't he sense it?

Could it be that in this area, there was no dense areas of Yang qi?

Keeping this thought in mind, Kai Yang stood up and walked towards the centre of Sky Tower. As he walked, he paid careful attention to any movement within his chest.

He hadn't been walking for long when a warm feeling spread out from his chest. Kai Yang's expression jolted in surprise!

It seems that this was the case. The Origin of Yang had been successfully formed and the reason why it had displayed no reaction earlier was because there was hardly any Yang qi around. Now there was a reaction, it meant that there was area with dense Yang qi in the vicinity.

Kai Yang's face revealed his excitement, in order to cultivate the True Yang Tactics, there were very harsh requirements. If the density of Yang qi was high,

then the speed you would be able to cultivate would also be faster. Looking back at how Kai Yang had relied on the sun's Yang qi, the speed would inherently be slow due to the low density.

Follow his Origin of Yang's perception, Kai Yang madly ran and soon entered a room.

As soon as he entered, a very familiar voice sounded: "Eh, little Kai Yang, why did you come over here at such a time?"

Lifting up his head, Kai Yang saw that it was Treasurer Meng behind his counter looking at him strangely.

I turned out that this place was the Contribution Hall!

Glancing at Treasure Meng, then glancing over at the back hall, Kai Yang rolled his eyes! The origin of the Yang qi was clear, it was most definitely originating from something Yang attributed in the Contribution Hall's stock.

But.....but this was the Contribution Hall, so if he wanted that object, then he could only obtain it by exchanging contribution points for it. Kai Yang's current balance was zero, for all of his points had been exchanged for the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and the Dead Jedi Tree Grass herbs!

Understanding this point, Kai Yang became very disappointed. He didn't even bother to answer Treasurer Meng's question and only lowered his head dejectedly and trudged out.

"What's your problem?" Old man Meng also became gloomy.

Walking aimlessly around Sky Tower, the Origin of Yang would occasionally have a reaction and lead him to Yang qi dense areas. But these Yang qi dense areas were either domains of powerful people or they were already in someone's bag.

Kai Yang even thought about disguising himself to steal one from them, but when he looked at his small and weak physique, then looked at their strength, Kai Yang could only dispel these thoughts.

Although he was unable to obtain these Yang attributed treasures, Kai Yang was not left without some gain. Through his many experiments and constant use, Kai Yang's Origin of Yang could now sense any Yang qi within five hundred feet of himself.

Once his search range reached the distance of five hundred feet, he could no longer increase it. It was probably related to his own strength. Once he stepped into the next stage, this area would most likely increase again.

After two or three hours of walking hurriedly around Sky Tower, Kai Yang had almost visited all the places, apart from some forbidden areas. Kai Yang had come up with no results, but thinking back, anything that the Origin of Yang could sense was most likely quite valuable. Since they were quite valuable, would they just be lying around on the road for him to find? Kai Yang's childish ideas were really too funny.

Should he make another trip to Black Wind Mountains? The mountain range should have some Yang attributed things right?

Just as he was considering the feasibility of this idea, the Origin of Yang within

his chest heated up. Kai Yang ended up following his Origin of Yang almost by reflex, and he began walking in that direction.

Chapter 34 – Coiling Dragon Stream

After walking for a short while, an enormous; it literally stretched across the heavens and earth, mountain stream appeared. A powerful gale blew towards him as if it was greeting him, nearly knocking him over in the process.

Turning around and lifting up his head Kai Yang stared blankly ahead.

How could it be here? The channel in front of him was a thousand foot wide and appeared almost bottomless it was one of the most mysterious and dangerous places in Sky Tower – Coiling Dragon Stream!

Now that you mentioned it, the very existence of this mountain stream was truly strange. This was because Sky Tower wasn't even located in a mountain range, but rather on a flat piece of land. Although it was called a mountain stream, it would be more suitable to call Coiling Dragon Stream a giant crack in the earth itself. It was just that this crack was a bit too big.

Coiling Dragon Stream, the most forbidden place of all the forbidden places in Sky Tower! This is because once you entered, fierce winds blew. A single moment's carelessness could cause you to slip and fall, plummeting to your death.

This place was also the place where exiled or traitorous disciples were sent. In the past several hundred years, whenever a disciple committed an unforgivable act, they would be given a few rations and exiled to Coiling Dragon Stream.

This made Kai Yang extremely confused. For if a disciple really committed an unforgivable act, wouldn't it better to immediately execute them rather than

exiling them? Giving them a few rations and abandoning them there is equal to death itself.

Of course, apart from being the place where traitorous disciples were exiled, it was also the number one choice for lovers to commit suicide.

There were many such stories floating around Sky Tower. Tear jerking and heart wrenching these stories certainly were, they were about lovers who came to Coiling Dragon Stream to die when their partner had perished.

In the school, each male disciple would tell one or two of these stories when they were chasing after girls. If they could make these beautiful females cry, then they would then use their broad and warm chest to comfort these crying females.

You couldn't know how many hearts were stirred by these heart wrenching stories, but nevertheless they were all kept in the hearts of the male disciples when pursuing love!

In regards to the information Kai Yang held on Coiling Dragon Stream, he reviewed it once more in his mind. Slowly, he took a few steps forward and looked ahead in doubt.

How could there be Yang qi inside? Not to mention that this reaction was different from all the previous reactions. This time it indicated there was a very strong concentration of Yang qi and that it was also slowly drifting upwards. Even though he was standing next to this place, Kai Yang could still sense a small warm feeling from the open air.

This warm feeling was not from the sun, it was several folds more pure than the sun's energy.

Thinking for a while, Kai Yang ended up simply sitting down on the ground and diligently started to absorb the energy, disregarding the reason for the dense concentration of energy. To cultivate the True Yang Tactics, the more concentrated the Yang qi was in the area, the quicker you mastered it.

Since his current amount of World Qi was very small, the transfer speed of his True Yang Tactics was also slow, but with all this Yang qi to aid him, his speed should be greatly increased.

The sun had set and it was now evening, even without the sun's qi, Yang Kai could sense that his efficiency was much higher than it had been the past few days.

With his cultivation, he had unexpectedly cultivated the entire night away. It was only the next morning, that Kai Yang opened his eyes and inspected his progress.

Cultivating with Yang qi and without Yang qi, it was truly different. Although he had previously trained under the sun's light, it took him three entire days to produce that one small bit of World Qi. But with just one night's cultivation, he had already achieved the same result that took three days worth of cultivation without the aid of dense Yang qi. It truly made one speechless.

The amount of World Qi within him had also increased, it was no longer like a flickering flame caught in a storm.

Also, with the increase of his World Qi, his control over it had improved.

Since it was the start of a new day, Kai Yang didn't continue but instead stood up to practise his half an hour of tempered body record training.

Next to Coiling Dragon Stream, Kai Yang sweated profusely. Although he had trained the entire night, he didn't consume much stamina, and his mental health was bursting with vigour.

After he completed his tempered body record training, he quickly went to complete his daily sweeping. Afterwards, he hurried (bounced back happily) back to Coiling Dragon Stream.

Since he had just about consumed his stock of his Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and Dead Jedi Tree Grass, the incense burner was temporarily unusable. That left him with only one option of training.

Originally, Kai Yang had wanted to go and find Su Mu's group and challenge them to a duel, but it was very strange. Ever since that night, Su Mu's group of people had vanished into thin air, never to be seen in Sky Tower again.

Although Kai Yang had some problems with them, it wasn't to the point of utter hatred and revenge seeking. And his finding them to battle was only to find some entertainment whilst also verifying his growth. So he didn't take their night raid very seriously.

If he was bullied, as long as he gained enough strength, he would retaliate and make them suffer so as to never to have the idea to come and bully him again.

Sitting down next to Coiling Dragon Stream and ignoring the blistering wind, strong enough to blow a human away, Kai Yang closed his eyes and concentrated. Slowly, the World Qi within his meridians surged and started to circulate.

The circulation of his World Qi felt like it was pulling out a mysterious inner power. This caused all of the pores in his body to open up and suck in the Yang qi in the air into his body; like a kitten who had just smelt a delicious fishy scent.

His entire body heated up, like he was bathing in hot water, making Kai Yang feel extremely comfortable.

Two days flew past and Kai Yang's work had been very rewarding.

After these two days of cultivation, the World Qi inside of Kai Yang had expanded greatly. And within this World Qi was small ball of flaming Yang energy.

This was a distinct characteristic of cultivating the True Yang Tactics. Since the World Qi within him grew by absorbing Yang energy, it would naturally be Yang attributed.

Chapter 35 – The first drop of Yang liquid

Kai Yang didn't know the average amount of World Qi that someone who was at the tempered body seventh stage would have, they shouldn't have as much as him though. Although the accumulation speed was very slow, the True Yang Tactics allowed him to absorb the Yang Qi around him. How many secret methods allowed one to do such a thing?

After Kai Yang finished his training, he slowly opened his eyes.

Over the past few days, the accumulated Yang qi had gradually become denser and the warm feeling in his meridians had also become more and more distinct. Kai Yang felt that the absorbed Yang qi would soon reach its limit.

Once he had absorbed enough to reach the limit, the Yang qi would condense into a liquid state. This liquid Yang qi would then be stored within his dantian. Such a drop of Yang qi could be then used in battle giving him access to unimaginable power which caused Kai Yang to anticipate such a time greatly.

Opening his eyes, Kai Yang prepared to adjust his posture when, from his peripheral visions, he caught sight of a person standing not too far away from him. His expression changed. Since he had been so immersed in his training, he hadn't sense that person approach leaving Kai Yang to wonder when they had arrived.

The person was standing off to the side and was wearing a cyan robe. His sleeves were elegant and he was tall with a straight stature, white hair, a moustache and a thin wispy goatee hung down from his chin. Looking at him his age should be about the same as the Contribution Hall's old man Meng, but their auras were vastly different.

At first glance, Kai Yang felt that his brain had up and gone with the wind. This person's aura and old man Meng's lecherous hoodlum attitude starkly contrasted each other. When compared together, one was up in the heavens and the other was down in the earth.

Currently, one of the man's hands was behind his back while the other one was stroking his beard while he stood over there gazing down into Coiling Dragon Stream. His gaze was very strange, it was so strange that it was even strangely complex.

This man was clearly a learned sage, while also being an excellent martial elder! With this in mind, Kai Yang quickly stood up and called out the standard disciple greeting: "Disciple Kai Yang has seen this senior."

Surprised by Kai Yang's voice, the elderly man casually turned around and kindly looked over. Nodding his head, he replied: "En."

"How should this disciple address you?" Although he knew that this person was a powerful person in Sky Tower, he had never met him before. Naturally he would ask otherwise he might mix up the seniority rankings and address him incorrectly.

Muttering to himself, the elderly man's eyebrows knitted together as if Kai Yang had asked him an exceedingly difficult question. After a good while he said: "You can just address me as the eleventh elder."

Eleventh elder? This caused Kai Yang to become slightly suspicious. Although there were a few elders in Sky Tower, there couldn't be an eleventh elder. But all in all, this person was his senior so if he wished to be called that, then Kai Yang

could only comply. Immediately he paid his respects. “This disciple greets the eleventh elder.”

The eleventh elder smiled and his expression became kinder, gently he asked: “Are you practising your martial skill?”

“Yes.” Kai Yang nodded his head.

“And it’s a Yang attributed martial skill?”

“Yes.” The opposite party’s strength was definitely not weak, otherwise how could he sense Kai Yang absorbing the Yang qi to cultivate?

“How is your progress?”

“It has only been a few days since I started practising so the progress is not bad.”

Eleventh elder once again asked a few more questions and Kai Yang responded to each one, with his heart slightly moved. This elder was very amiable and gentle, since he treated such a low levelled disciple with such care, easily allowing one to have a good impression of him.

With great care, Kai Yang thought of a question to ask. “Eleventh elder, after practising for a couple of days, there is something this disciple doesn’t understand.”

“Oh, say it so that I may hear it.” The elders spirits were suddenly aroused.

“Why is there Yang qi rising out from below Coiling Dragon Stream?”

Laughing for a bit, Eleventh elder replied: “The answer would be that there is a Yang attributed treasure located down there.”

Kai Yang didn’t know whether to laugh or cry, for this he could naturally guess. He just had no idea as to what that treasure was.

“Do you know how this Coiling Dragon Stream was formed?” Eleventh elder suddenly asked a random question.

Although Kai Yang didn’t know the senior’s intention he could only shake his head.

Gazing towards Coiling Dragon Stream, the eleventh elder calmly said: “This was created by a someone’s sword strike.”

(TL: \OoO/)

Kai Yang’s heart shook like thunder! Coiling Dragon Stream exceeded at least a couple of thousand feet in length, it was unfathomably deep yet it was unexpectedly created by someone’s sword strike? If it had been another person who had told him this, he wouldn’t have believed them. However the person who had told was the eleventh elder, and there wouldn’t be any reason for him to lie to him.

But, what type of person was able to create such a rift with a single sword

strike? And what level of cultivation had this person reached?

“Several hundred year ago, this was not Sky Tower.” The elder’s eyes grew distant and seemed to contain a hidden depth, his voice became lower.

Kai Yang knew that this senior was going to reveal some secret or hidden affair, and held his breath in rapt attention, staring intently at the elder.

“Back then, when the founder passed through this land, he met a profound monster by chance. Here, those two fought a great battle. The details of the battle, no one knows, but towards the end, the intelligence of that monster wasn’t low, he took out a sword.” As he narrated the story, the eleventh elder also was using his hands to gesture around the east and west directions of Coiling Dragon Stream. “With one strike for the sword Coiling Dragon Stream was created! *Dun dun duuuuun!!!!* The monster then escaped inside, with the founder pursuing closely behind. With great effort and suffering equal hardship the founder managed to kill and behead that monster!”

“But that monster’s strength was too profound and when he died, his spirit vanished into thin air. However the founder was not relieved, so he founded Sky Tower here and guarded Coiling Dragon Stream for some years. Once he confirmed that nothing associated with the monsters spirit would arise again, he floated up and left. This is the origin of Sky Tower.

“Coiling Dragon Stream has already existed for a few hundred years, and it’s bottom is pitch black, unreachable even by the sun’s light. After the founder left many disciples who broke the school’s rules were sent there, which resulted in the rare birth of a Yang attributed treasure, from which you have been absorbing Yang qi.”

Nodding his, Kai Yang asked doubtfully: “Eleventh elders purpose of coming here is also to go and see this treasure?”

“Me?” The eleventh elder’s expression became queer, shaking his head slowly he said: “I didn’t come here for the treasure, but instead to meet someone.”

“Meet someone?”

Laughing he replied: “As I’ve grown older, I find I speak more frequently. Let us end our conversation here for now, continue to diligently practise, but do not have any ideas about descending down there. There are many dangers down there, and even I do not dare to go down there casually.”

As he had finished speaking, the eleventh elder left. Kai Yang’s heart and mind were both touched, he was left with a lot of doubts and unanswered questions but he could only keep them to himself.

Calming his mind down, Kai Yang continued the circulation of his True Yang Tactics. Now when he used his True Yang Tactics, the absorption speed of Yang qi was many folds quicker than it had been in the previous few days.

(TL: Don’t always train! Go find Xia Ning to bother! Learn from Linley & Bebe! They train and have a life. Got reprimanded by Ben for recommending Yun Che as a role model. T_T)

A few hours later, Kai Yang felt that that his meridians were bursting, even his dantian was packed to the brim. It was like eating too much during a meal, so much so that you felt like your stomach was bursting.

Was it at the limit? Kai Yang was not surprised, and steeling his resolve he continued.

Half an hour later, his meridians and dantian suddenly became light and that bursting feeling he had earlier disappeared without a trace. All of his World Qi had charged into his dantian and compressed into a scorching hot liquid which slowly formed into a single drop. When that drop entered his dantian, Kai Yang heard the light sound of water dripping.

Liquid Yang! He had finally formed a drop of Yang liquid!

Chapter 36 – The beauty beneath the moon

Although his current training was not enough for him to develop his divine sense, Kai Yang could still distinctly feel that drop of Yang liquid within his dantian. With a single thought, the Yang drop began to move.

This Yang liquid was usable during a battle, but Kai Yang had yet to test it out. In the end, the black book's explanation was not enough, so he needed test it out first hand to gauge its true potential.

Although he had suffered many days of hardships to reach this point, with the creation of this singular drop of Yang liquid, Kai Yang felt content. With a heart full of excitement, he settled down and cultivated most of the night away.

During the latter part of the night, Kai Yang opened his eyes and stopped cultivating.

In these past few days, he had constantly skipped his meals and gone without sleep. Although this had brought about great results in regards to his cultivation, it had placed a great strain on his body. In order to cultivate well, you must do all things in moderation in order to avoid long term dangers.

Standing up, he patted his bottom clean of dirt and walked lightly back to his wooden hut.

When he arrived, the door to his wooden hut was ajar, alerting Kai Yang. When he had left, he distinctly remembered that he had closed the door.

Cautiously he walked over and softly pushed open the door. Peering inside, the scene that awaited him momentarily stunned Kai Yang. It was like it had been taken directly out of a painting, something from a dream or fantasy. It was that otherworldly.

Inside his wooden hut, there was really only his bed. And on his bed slept a person, more specifically a female.

With the moonlight pouring into the room via the hole in the roof it fell onto the female asleep on the bed. With the moonlight illuminating the room, Kai Yang saw that both her hands were folded neatly and were placed on her stomach and her well-rounded chest moved up and down rhythmically in tune with her breaths. Under the moonlight, the neck and skin of the lady was as white as sparkling ice, it was accompanied by silky, onyx black hair that spread out around her head. Her shoulders made her seem delicate and fragile, while her earlobes excluded a kind of temptation.

(TL: This author's tastes are weird. First [hairy] legs, now earlobes. :\\)

Because she was laying down, her slim legs, her slender waist and her beautiful body were displayed to Kai Yang in full. He couldn't see her face due to the cicada thin veil she wore, but on her sleek forehead, there rested a blue gem. This was the only piece of jewellery she wore and although it was not that expensive, he thought it perfectly complimented and highlighted her frosty and pure aura.

The hazy moonlight illuminating the room seemed to enhance her beauty as well.

She looked as if she was an immortal from the Moon Palace, for from head to

toe, there was not a single flaw to be seen and not a single part of her didn't emit a divine aura. She lay there comfortably, as if she would never wake. Unable to make sense of the situation, Kai Yang's heart soared.

Usually Kai Yang wasn't an emotional person, but this picturesque scene moved him greatly. Even if tens of years passed, he would never forget this scene.

Curious, Kai Yang cautiously walked over, forcibly suppressing his breathing and heartrate, afraid that they might wake her.

Drawing closer to the bedside, the distance between them was now very short, Kai Yang hurriedly observed the situation. He discovered that it was the same as his guess; this female was the same female disciple that had nearly bumped into him outside the Contribution Hall the other day.

(TL: YAY! It was Xia Ning Chang! Isn't everybody happy? :D)

It was just that her aura that day was completely different to the one she was exuding here and now, currently she exuded a divine and untouchable aura. That day, she appeared shy and timid, with a fresh and adorable feel. Raising his head, Kai Yang took a look towards the hole in the roof and chuckled softly. These past few days the holes that he had never gotten a chance to fix had unexpectedly become very handy.

This series of small laughs alarmed Xia Ning Chang who was currently laying on the bed. By the time Kai Yang lowered his head, the sleeping senior sister had long since woken and was staring at him with wide eyes.

That pair of bright eyes first held some confusion before becoming flustered and embarrassed. In the blink of an eye, Xia Ning Chang's earlobes had become bright red.

Luckily it was night, and although there was moonlight illuminating the hut, Kai Yang still couldn't see too clearly thus allowing Xia Ning Chang escape embarrassment.

The two people eyed each other, one on the bed and the other beside it.

Kai Yang's belly was full of suspicions, meanwhile Xia Ning Chang wished that she could slap herself unconscious and escape an awkward situation. Her heart was in a mess, she did not think that she would be so careless and fall asleep here.

"Ke, ke....." Kai Yang coughed lightly, and tried very hard to make himself appear somewhat good natured as he asked: "Fellow senior sister, how should I call you?"

It was unclear whether it was due to the current mood or situation, but when Kai Yang asked that question, it didn't seem quite right. Especially when a young male and female were together in a room during the night.

The question asked was like he was asking: "How should I call this prostitute/concubine."

A hundred percent tasteless.

Xia Ning Chang's face was as red as blood, but she calmly got up and sat on the

bed. Reaching out her hand, she went to tidy her hair before saying: “I am surnamed Xia.....”

Xia Ning Chang did not have the nerve to give her full name, for today she felt that she had lost too much face.

“So it’s actually senior sister Xia. What can I do for senior sister Xia?”

If there was nothing she need from him then why would this deity like female come to his hut to look for him?

Under Kai Yang’s questioning, Xia Ning Chang remembered her original purpose and hurriedly took out a package from her side. With her emotions calmed, she said: “This afternoon, there was a hunter from Black Wind Mountains who came to find you. He waited until sundown, but you had yet to appear. I saw that he was in a hurry to return home, so I went to talk to him. That hunter said that he was very grateful to you for saving his life and asked me to pass on this package to you, and he also said that in the future he would come to personally thank you.”

Hearing her say this, Kai Yang was left at a loss for words for he knew who that person was.

The hunter from the mountains! Last time when he had entered Black Wind Mountains, he had saved both the father and son’s lives.

Reaching out, Kai Yang accepted the package. Nodding his head, he said: “Oh so it was like this.”

Secretly, Xia Ning Chang raised her eyes and glanced over at him and asked: “I was entrusted with something of yours, and had waited nearly the whole day for you to come back, yet you.....”

And as she waited she fell asleep.....she didn't have the guts to say that out loud. This was too frustrating for her and she had also unexpectedly fallen asleep in another's bed.

Kai Yang already fully understand today's affair, laughing out loud (lol) he said: “I have troubled senior sister, so next time I will make sure to come back earlier.”

Xia Ning Chang didn't know if it was her own misconception or if the other party had purposely phrased it like that. No matter what, it sounded weird, like a husband promising his wife something.

Nibbling her lip, Xia Ning Chang replied with some dissatisfaction: “It doesn't matter if you come late or early, the package has already been handed over to you. I shall take my leave now.”

Finishing her sentence, with the swaying of her hips and the stamping of her foot, her figure soon disappeared, leaving only a sweet fragrance behind in the room and around a particular person's nose.

This senior sister Xia, was really too shy.

Thinking about that scene, Kai Yang felt a warm feeling. Turning around, Kai Yang went to open the package left behind by the hunter. Opening it, Kai Yang found that it contained two cyan coloured long gowns.

These gowns were made stitch by stitch, thread by thread and the needlework was dense and clustered; the handiwork was very meticulous. Kai Yang concluded that it was the hunter's wife who had made these gowns.

The hunter has such a kind heart! Last time when he was battling the flower patterned spider, his clothes had been shredded to pieces. And it was because of that, the hunter had come today to deliver two sets of clothes for him to wear.

Smiling faintly, Kai Yang put the clothes away and lay onto the bed.

That night, Kai Yang slept soundly.

Chapter 37 – The written challenge

The next day, Kai Yang was awoken by a light knocking on his door.

By the time he had crawled out of bed and opened the door, there was nobody outside. But in the distance, a familiar body figure could be seen rapidly running away.

Li Yun Tian's figure!

(TL: He didn't die. ED: Sadly)

What is this guy up to? Perplexed, Kai Yang didn't know what to think until he noticed a letter had been placed on his doorstep. Opening the letter, he read the contents and was unsure whether to laugh or cry.

There were a few words written on the letter however they were written in blood.

“Dear senior brother, long time no see. I hope that senior brother would be generous enough to comply to this junior brother's wishes and come to Black Wind Forest.”

Bright red these words were, there could be no doubt these words were written in blood. He just didn't know whether it was chicken blood or a person's blood, however Kai Yang was certain it was not Su Mu's.

On the back, there was another row of words and these were far more crude

and vulgar than the first message.

“If you have the guts, then come!”

These couple of words conveyed the great arrogance of the writer, clearly displaying the extreme hatred the writer had while simultaneously acting as provocation.

It was probably because Su Mu was afraid that his invitation would be rejected by Kai Yang, so he added an extra sentence on the back to attempt to provoke him into action. Young people were often hot-blooded and Su Mu had experienced this many times already. He was already long used to this and was very experienced with regards to using it to his advantage.

Scrunching up the bloody letter in his hand, Kai Yang slowly shook his head.

In regards to Su Mu's provocation, Kai Yang didn't take it too seriously. Perhaps Su Mu really had some grudge against him, but Kai Yang was different; his mentality was different, his goal was different. With regards to these type of small scale issues, Kai Yang only treated them as an opportunity to measure his development and aid him in his training.

Although the first few meetings between him and Su Mu were unpleasant affairs, through his constant interactions with him later, Kai Yang had discovered that Su Mu wasn't really that bad. He just had major dandyism issues.

If you were to develop good relations with this type of person, then they would treat you really well. But if you were to become enemies, they would become like maggots on rotting bones, pestering you to no end.

These past few days, he hadn't seen a hint of Su Mu's group, they were probably hiding from him. He didn't know why they suddenly wanted to duel him again and came running over to issue a letter of challenge.

Originally, Kai Yang didn't want to pay too much attention to Su Mu, but when he was doing his daily sweeping he thought about the challenge and decided to go.

Su Mu was undoubtedly a petty person, and had chosen to ignore the Main Gate's rules with regards to issuing a challenge and instead used a letter to issue his challenge. He probably intended to make his fight a group one rather than an individual one as per the Main Gate's rules.

The selected location also raised many questions. Black Wind Forest was located at the base of the Black Wind Mountains, it was a pine forest and as such a great place to dispose of a person.

Although the group of people who hung out with Su Mu didn't number that many, only Su Mu had reached the tempered body ninth stage. Li Yun Tian was at the tempered body seventh stage, while the rest were either at the fifth or sixth stages. Kai Yang didn't know whether or not he could win, but he really needed a proper battle in order to fully understand his current progress. Not the kind that disciples usually held!

Currently, Su Mu was personally waiting on Sky Tower's road towards the Black Wind Forest, not a single person was hidden in ambush. He stood there valiantly, full of vigor he stood there.

When he thought about his failure a few nights ago, his fully unconscious

embarrassing state, Su Mu's face became really ugly. That night, he didn't even know what had happened, all his fellow disciple brothers who had come with him to Kai Yang's small wooden hut had fainted suddenly. It had happened all too suddenly and mysteriously.

It wasn't until the next morning, that they managed to wake up. Although it was summer and sleeping outside wouldn't do them any harm, there were still a lot of mosquitoes. When they woke up, everybody felt like a couple of hundred bumps had formed all over their bodies; an unfathomable amount of mosquitoes had bitten them and drank their blood while they dreamt.

(TLer: Here come da mozzies, ;))

The following couple of days, Su Mu's group had all been bedridden and were in a extremely weakened state.

After they had healed, all the disciple Su Mu had taken under his wing had run away from Sky Tower. If they couldn't afford to offend Kai Yang, then why couldn't they run away instead?

Yesterday when he was informed that Li Yun Tian had learnt his first martial skill, Su Mu's flame of revenge was once again ignited. So he sent Li Yun Tian to give Kai Yang a letter of challenge with the fight to be held in Black Wind forest.

The reason why this duel wasn't held in Sky Tower was because Su Mu didn't have a lot of faith in Li Yun Tian. If Li Yun Tian were to once again lose to Kai Yang miserably, then the remaining people would flock to spectate. What Main Gate rules, to hell with the rules, for he only wanted to beat Kai Yang until he looked like a pig. If he couldn't release this resentment within him, then he would surely lose his head.

Just as he was thinking about this, Li Yun Tian hurriedly rushed over.

“Did you deliver it?” Su Mu asked, a fierce light in his eyes.

“En.”

“Good, then let’s wait for that bastard to come.”

There he waited, but no matter how long he waited, Kai Yang did not appear. Su Mu’s face showed his impatience as he paced about before finally asking: “Could it be that, that bastard didn’t have the courage to come here?”

Just as he swore, Li Yun Tian cried out abruptly. “Young master Su, someone is walking over here.”

“Eh?” His mind shaking, for he thought that Kai Yang had really come over in search of death. When he went to look, the person who was walking over was not Kai Yang.

“Young master Su, it’s people from the Storm House.” Li Yun Tian reported as he continued to observe the approaching group. “And the lead person seems to be Cheng Shao Feng!”

“Cheng Shao Feng?” Su Mu’s expression became cold as he turned his head to look at the incoming group. It really was Storm House’s Cheng Shao Feng who was leading a group of people, they arrogantly approach Su Mu.

“Young master Su, do you want to take a walk and avoid them?” Li Yun Tian asked hesitatingly, for he knew that between Su Mu and that Cheng Shao Feng, there was some history. Both of them were cultivators at the peak of the tempered body stage and had crossed paths many times over these past years, with about the same amount of wins and losses belonging to each. If they were to meet right now, there would certainly be some friction.

“Avoid what?” Su Mu responded coldly: “Does he have the qualifications to make this lord move for him?”

Li Yun Tian didn't reply, for he knew that this matter was related to one's face for these two. Su Mu was a very proud person, how could he possibly move aside for another? But the number of people in the opposite party was quite a lot, so if they really started to fight then his side would suffer.

As they were speaking, Cheng Shao Feng had already spotted them from afar, and his expression immediately became cheery and he said some things to the people following behind him. Their pace noticeably hastened.

Not long after, the two parties met up with each other. Although Su Mu's group was occupying the road that lead to Black Wind Forest, this road was a four-way intersection that also lead to the residences of Storm House and the Blood Group. It also continued throughout the whole of Sky Tower and it's various buildings.

With the positioning of Su Mu's group, it was equivalent to blocking Cheng Shao Feng's path.

“I didn't know who it was that dared to block my way, but it turns out it was actually Su Mu!” Walking up, Cheng Shao Feng looked down at Su Mu in

contempt while sizing him up. His voice was slightly mystifying.

Su Mu just rolled his eyes and continued to stand there with a back as straight as a javelin stick. He wasn't even in the mood to bother with him.

This blatant disregard made Cheng Shao Feng somewhat displeased.

“Ge, ge, ge, younger brother Cheng, they are ignoring you.” A tender voice sounded, it was pleasant to hear, but gave one a unrestrained feeling.

Following the sound of the voice, Su Mu looked over to see a lovely looking young lady standing behind Cheng Shao Feng. This young lady wore a loose jacket with a hint of her pink shoulder showing, while emitting a porcelain doll-like aura. Her skirt barely covered her bottom, revealing half of her **, her white legs were also revealed and her jade-like feet were enclosed in a pair of wooden shoes. Small and exquisite jewel like sparkling fingers were accompanied by a pair of seductive eyes.

[tl: The author actually wrote ** in the raws. i will assume its her panties]

Chapter 38 – Hu Mei Er

The young lady and Su Mu's ages weren't that far apart, but the way she walked was much more adult with her hips swaying seductively. With a thousand different techniques to seduce bursts of ferocious waves were coming from her chest making all those who saw her faint-headed.

At such a young age, she already had the air of a mature woman. It was just that this air had yet to fully develop, so it seemed a bit unnatural.

"Hu Mei Er!" When he saw this young lady, Su Mu's expression couldn't help but change, his mouth widened into a smile, and his gaze swept across her body. Unconsciously he swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

(TL: Lol, her name literally means Hu Enchantress. STOP GAWKING SU MU! You're embarrassing.)

Even Su Mu had reacted to such a degree, let alone others with less self control like Li Yun Tian.

Every pair of eyes were like the eyes of dragonflies and locusts, glued onto Hu Mei Er's body. As they stared at that well developed figure, their breathing gradually became ragged and their shameful inner selves were revealed. Although, throughout the lands, pretty boys and girls were not scarce, those of exceptional beauty like Hu Mei Er were exceedingly rare. Not to mention that she was only a fifteen-sixteen year old girl and still had skin so tender it was out of reach even for those using the latest nivea skin creams, which just added lethality to her body's killing power.

Li Yun Tian and the others were only boys still in puberty, adding to that their vigorous qi/energy, so when they saw such a stimulating scene, their reaction was imaginable.

But the various reactions of the boys from the Sky Tower's Pavilion didn't enrage or disgust Hu Mei Er, to the contrary, she seemed to enjoy their reactions. Placing her hand cutely on her mouth, she said: "(BITCH Please! – didn't say it, not really) It seems that younger brother Su recognises this older sister?"

Su Mu coughed a bit and forced himself to straighten up his expression. With his face a bit red he replied: "Naturally I recognise you."

Cheng Shao Feng was the leader of the tempered body practitioners at Storm House, while this Hu Mei Er was the leader for them at the Blood Group, and this female's personal status was not ordinary. For she was the daughter of the master of Blood Group.

It was just her reputation wasn't very good, not to mention that the master of Blood Group, Hu Man, did not control her and allowed her to act however she wished. Although Hu Mei Er was still young, the number of people that she controlled was vast.

Only today, the reason why she was walking with Cheng Shao Feng was a mystery. Could it be, that he had also come under her wing?

Thinking of that, Su Mu became endlessly envious. Previously he had been envious over Cheng Shao Feng's luck with women, but now he had been subdued by a woman.

When he thought about that, not only did a strange smile appear on Su's face but when he glanced over to Cheng Shao Feng again, a look of contempt appeared on his face.

His gaze made Cheng Shao Feng extremely uncomfortable, while the Sky Tower Pavilion people's eyes were still glued on Hu Mei Er's body spinning around in circles Su Mu was staring at him, and put him in a bad mood. At that moment, he took a few steps forward and cut off their view of Hu Mei Er.

This seemingly casual movement, caused Hu Mei Er to purse her lips in amusement.

"Su Mu, tell your people to make way." Cheng Shao Feng said with a gloomy face; he didn't even bother to say a few words of courtesy.

Su Mu only hehe sneered: "The great road goes to the sky, each one walks their own path. So how could we be blocking your way?"

(TL: Hehe is like a sound effect that the author included, I did too since it sounds kind of funny.)

"Yes!" Cheng Shao Feng replied with a hazy expression.

"What if I do not move aside?" A measure for a measure Su Mu asked, for the tension and friction between the two people was not the kind developed overnight. Due to this, they were each far too clear on each other's methods, so what did Su Mu have to fear?

"Younger brother Cheng, younger brother Su standing here is nothing

important, we can just take a detour. No one will say anything about you.” Hu Mei Er suddenly butted in and said. It looked like she was trying to peacefully resolve the problem, but in reality, she was fanning the flames.

Su Mu secretly called her a slut, for this woman’s mind really was too sinister. As soon as she became a member of Blood Group, she was all too eager for the animosity between Sky Tower Pavilion and Storm House to reach the boiling point and for a fight to erupt.

As Cheng Shao Feng heard Hu Mei Er’s words, his originally hesitant expression instantly hardened and became decisive. Sneering he said: “If you don’t fuck off now, you will regret it.”

He purposely acted tough in front of Hu Mei Er. How could he back down now?

The corners of Hu Mei Er’s mouth twitched into a smile, while she watched the two people with a gaze full of interest, while taking a few steps back in expectation.

“If you have the guts, come and try!” Su Mu laughed coldly back at Cheng Shao Feng, while Li Yun Tian and the others stepped up behind him.

“You brought this upon yourself.” Laughing suddenly, Cheng Shao Feng waved his arm ushering everybody behind him forward. “Charge!”

His voice firm, Cheng Shao Feng rushed out towards Su Mu while throwing out a fist at Su Mu’s face. Su Mu laughed and responded with a palm.

At the moment of the collision, Su Mu was pushed back a dozen or so steps

before he managed to steady himself, while Cheng Shao Feng had a calm look. His body remained still.

“Did you breakthrough into the Kai Yuan Stage?” Su Mu’s face changed greatly, for when they had exchanged fists, the World Qi that Su Mu felt from Cheng Shao Feng was stronger and denser than his own measly tempered body ninth stage World Qi. This was clearly strength gained from breaking through to the Kai Yuan Stage.

Cheng Shao Feng continued to charge towards Su Mu, all the while smiling incessantly. “Su Mu, you and I started cultivating at the same time, but there are great differences between people. From now on you, Su Mu, can only follow I, Cheng Shao Feng’s steps. You can only eternally dream of surpassing me.”

Su Mu’s face became ashen with despair, his heart bitter and agonised. The feeling of defeat that Su Mu experienced from Cheng Shao Feng was many times worse than being defeated by Kai Yang. In a moment, Cheng Shao Feng had nearly reached him, turning his body around Su Mu didn’t dare get any ideas. The tempered body ninth stage was strong, but it was clearly insufficient to defend against the strength of the Kai Yuan Stage of Cheng Shao Feng.

Before Kai Yang even arrived at Black Wind Forest, he could already hear the sounds of battle from afar. Mixed within the sounds, were the cursings and swearing of Li Yun Tian’s bunch, full of humiliation and mourning.

Straining his ears, he listened for a while, Kai Yang felt that something was amiss. It sounded like Su Mu’s group of people had met some type of trouble.

Coming to this conclusion, Kai Yang hastened his pace. When he arrived at that four-way intersection, he surprisingly found Su Mu bloody nosed and with a

swollen face, laying on the ground. While a youngster sat on top of him while beating him, with Li Yun Tian and the others clustered around Su Mu. They used all their strength to protect themselves, but it was no use since the amount of people on the opponent's side was too great and their accumulated strength was vastly superior. The disciples of Sky Tower Pavilion were already preoccupied with battle, so how could they pay attention to Su Mu?

"Submit or not?" Cheng Shao Feng slammed one fist down onto Su Mu's eye. Su Mu's eye socket had already long since split apart, blood was dripping out.

"Submit to hell!" Su Mu spat out a thin streak of blood towards Cheng Shao Feng's face.

"Submit or not?" He asked again, while slamming another fist down, this time on Su Mu's cheekbone area and causing it to swell up.

"I submit....I submit to your ancestors!" Su Mu was gasping for breath, yet he was still spitting out sharp phrases.

"Submit or not?"

"Submit to your grandmother's butt!"

Cheng Shao Feng didn't waste any more words, he just sent out a fist before asking "Submit or not?". While Su Mu continuously replied with poisonous curse phrases, causing Cheng Shao Feng's fists to become heavier and heavier, more and more vicious.

Kai Yang just stood afar, calmly observing the scene. He found out how much

guts and courage Su Mu possessed, and watching Su Mu like this reminded him of his old self when he met an enemy he couldn't defeat; although their bodies were littered with wounds, they did not submit.

This was not being foolish, but being unyielding!

Originally, Kai Yang didn't plan on interfering, and he didn't know which person Su Mu had offended, subduing him without even room to retaliate.

But Su Mu's current unyielding character made Kai Yang approve of him a bit.

At that moment, Cheng Shao Feng also became tired from the constant beating, although Su Mu was bloodied and swollen faced under him with broken eye sockets and mouth full of blood, the utter contempt and despise in his face and eyes had not diminished at all.

Hu Mei Er once again timely butted in: "Younger brother Cheng, why don't you spare him for younger brother Su has an unyielding character and this big sister just adores such types of people."

As soon as this was said, Su Mu twisted his head around and swore out: "Shameless whore!"

Cheng Shao Feng hehe sneered back: "Has an unyielding character? I also like it!"

As he said this, he casually picked up a stone off from the ground, and pointed it at Su Mu's head.

Chapter 39 – Battle!

Su Mu's gazed at Cheng Shao Feng with venomous eyes, without batting an eye, he spat out: "Cheng Shao Feng, if you don't kill this young master today, then this young master will never let it go!"

"You are still so foul-mouthed!" The last remaining bit of guilt Cheng Shao Feng possessed was now overshadowed by his rage, as he ruthlessly slammed the stone downwards. This time, if the stone managed to land on his head, if Su Mu didn't die, then at the very least he would be heavily injured.

"Young master Su!" Li Yun Tian and the others cried out helplessly as they lay on the ground clutching their heads, they resigned themselves to their fate of having the disciples from Storm House viciously kick their bodies,

A flash of amazement passed through Hu Mei Er's eyes, her heart couldn't help but throb continuously. It had only been a disagreement between junior disciples but a disciple bashing another's brain was different, she hadn't imagined that things would escalate to this level. If Su Mu really died here, with his status, then Sky Tower Pavilion and Storm house would be at each other's throats in enmity.

Everyone's thoughts were different, but they were all conjugated at the stone in Cheng Shao Feng's hand.

As they watched the stone slowly approach Su Mu's face, an extremely thin hand suddenly shot forward and blocked the stone's path. That hand didn't seem all that strong, it even looked thinner than average, and as the tip of the stone collided with that hand, it split the hand open and a stream of blood gushed out.

With the stone's path obstructed by that hand, it ensured that Su Mu suffered no further harm from it.

With this near fatal strike stopped, the tense hearts of Li Yun Tian and the others immediately released a breathe of relief. Anxiously they lifted up their heads, as they wanted to see who it was that had managed to stop that stone at such a crucial moment. But when they saw that person's face, their expressions turned into ones of shock and embarrassment.

"Senior Kai?" Li Yun Tian cried out, for out of all the possibilities, he would never have imagined that the saviour was in fact Kai Yang; the person they had previously planned to ambush and beat up. At that moment, Li Yun Tian was ashamed and unable to show his face.

The ruckus quickly settled down, the Storm House disciples stopped their kicking, and the victims, the Sky Tower disciples, took the opportunity to recover.

Standing to the side, Hu Mei Er's small mouth was open, she was somewhat in shock as she stared at Kai Yang. She discovered that even though this thin figured young man's hand was overflowing with blood, his brow hadn't even crinkled nor had his expression changed from the pain. On the contrary, his face showed signs of excitement and anticipation, his pair of sparkling eyes held a savage glint.

Not knowing why, Hu Mei Er suddenly felt that this person was dangerous.

Drip drip.....drip drip.....

The dark red blood dripped down his fingers towards the ground, breaking the ensuing silence.

Cheng Shao Feng's expression was concentrated fully on Kai Yang, coldly he asked: "Are you a disciple from Sky Tower Pavilion?"

"Yes!" Kai Yang nodded his head, while the familiar stabs of pain stimulated him further and made the blood throughout his body boil in excitement; itching to battle and caused him to be impatient as he tried to calm the surges of adrenaline.

"What is your motive in meddling in other people's business?" Condescending was Cheng Shao Feng's tone, while the other Storm House disciples smiled arrogantly, and went to slowly enclose and trap Li Yun Tian and the others.

"Other people's business?" Kai Yang grinned lazily, "You have already said I was a disciple of Sky Tower Pavilion, so how is this considered meddling? Even if that doesn't count, they still call me senior."

"Good, another one has delivered themselves." Cheng Shao Feng heartily laughed: "Even Laozi, can't bear to watch you Sky Tower Pavilion disciples!"

(TLN: Laozi is a Chinese Philosopher and founder of Taoism. A pacifist type person, who influenced future politicians to be more like him, helping the weak, but Cheng Shao's saying that even this miserable state would make Laozi feel pity.)

"Leave quickly senior Kai!" Crawling on the ground, Li Yun Tian cried out loudly,

“They have too many people so you aren’t their match, leave quickly.....”

Li Yun Tian was quite unfortunate, for his current position was closer to the disciples from Storm House. And since he was making such a ruckus, a bored Storm House disciple walked up and chopped down on his neck and silenced him.

While Cheng Shao Feng and Kai Yang were exchanging words, they were bickering with their words and also with that stone. Cheng Shao Feng forcibly used all his strength, but it was like the stone had grown hands, and was clutching onto Kai Yang’s hands.

Cheng Shao Feng was had already reached the Kai Yuan Stage, while the figure in front of him was skinny and lanky; a simple breeze could blow him over and to top it off this Sky Tower Pavilion disciple was only at the tempered body level, there was no way such a person could win against him, Cheng Shao Feng. This caused his mind to flare up in anger.

Immediately he released his hold and called out: “Beat him for me!”

The surrounding Storm House disciples heard the command, and threw themselves towards Kai Yang. Promptly Kai Yang moved his body, still clutching the stone that was dyed blood red and threw the stone towards a nearby Storm House disciple.

No matter what, this fist of Kai Yang’s couldn’t match up to a weapon, but even though he only held a stone, it was still mightier than a simple fist. Taking the opportunity, before the Storm House disciple reached Kai Yang, he was assaulted viciously on the head by that stone. It cut open the side of his head, revealing the red flesh beneath, while he fell to the ground.

Even though he had hit a person, Kai Yang didn't stop there, infact his movements became sharper and sharper. Like a hawk closing in on a rabbit, he did to same to another Storm House disciple.

Kai Yang's strikes were very fierce, his methods cruel and far from what anyone had imagined.

In an instant, he had dealt with four Storm House disciples, meanwhile the stone had now crumbled to pieces. Throwing out another fist, the stone bits flew out like hidden weapons, dense and closely packed, the stone bits flew out in all directions.

A wave of miserable cries rang out from the Storm House disciples clutching their cheeks, for no small amount of people had been injured as they hissed and cried out in pain.

Taking advantage of the opportunity, Kai Yang threw out two more kicks and sent two more disciples flying away, but he had also started to be drowned by the remaining people.

The amount of Storm House disciples was not a small amount, and although Kai Yang had dispatched a couple of people, it was still difficult to match up against enemies from all four directions.

Ping pang ping pang the strikes collided, Kai Yang seemed to stumble, meanwhile a few more Storm House disciples collapsed, their bodies scalding with red hot pain. The True Yang Tactics that Kai Yang had cultivated had finally, at that moment displayed its might. All of his fists and kicks were enveloped in Yang qi, so how could they, at the tempered body sixth-seventh layers, resist?

Not to mention, these were only ordinary strikes that didn't even utilise the Yang liquid. If he had used the Yang liquid, Kai Yang's strength would be even more powerful. It was just that over these past few days, he had only condensed one drop of Yang liquid, so how could he bear to use it here?

The number of Storm House disciples that were defeated by Kai Yang was no small amount, but he didn't have an easy time either. After all, he was only at the tempered body seventh stage, furthermore, he had yet to cultivate any bodily movement martial skills. How could he possibly avoid all of the attacks rain down upon him by this hoard of people?

Dripping down the side of Kai Yang forehead, his blood flooded, this scene was replicated on his arms and legs with bruises appearing all over his body. But not only were these injuries unable to impact Kai Yang's fighting strength, they actually made him more and more difficult to attack and caused his strikes to become more and more ruthless.

From his bones, a warm feeling seeped out, causing Kai Yang to have an endless amount of power. Accompanied by this warm feeling, not only was his strength replenished but it also caused his attacks to become slightly more powerful and also gave him a burst of speed.

Kai Yang really didn't know the mystery behind the golden body, but every time he sustained injuries, every time he got hurt, they would stimulate the golden body's healing effects. Injuries and pain would thus only make him even stronger.

The observing Hu Mei Er was subjected to extraordinary scenes again and again, her small cherry coloured lips had yet to close. Originally she thought that

this Sky Tower Pavilion disciple would be speedily dealt with, and then brutally beaten by Cheng Shao Feng's people. But the current battle results were vastly different from her battle forecast, there were about ten collapsed disciples from Storm House's side, not to mention first couple who were rendered unconscious by the stone, the rest were all lying on the ground rolling about in pain. Their skin steamed and was fire red in colour.

Is this person using World Qi to battle? Hu Mei Er was shocked beyond compare, for those tempered body practitioners to use their World Qi, the more they used it, the less they had; it was far too hard to recover at the tempered body stage. This was equivalent to digging one's grave, wasn't he afraid that his current actions would impact his future development?

Chapter 40 – You are such a powerful person

The high tension battle continued with Storm House disciples continually collapsing, but for every disciple that collapsed, Kai Yang gained a new injury. With his constant battling, Kai Yang's robes had long since been dyed red with blood, gasping out for breath, the veins on his neck protruded out distinctly, with bloodshot eyes his entire being seemed to have turned into one of a bloodthirsty beast.

Unbearingly, Su Mu lay on the ground in pain as he stared blankly at Kai Yang's mind shaking battle; each time he knocked down an enemy another would rise, leaving an inexplicable feeling within Su Mu's heart. Today's affair was caused by him, and Kai Yang was also his enemy, yet he had still come to help him avoid certain death.

Although he was determined to help, his strength had been exhausted due to beating he had received from Cheng Shao Feng.

"Peng!" It sounded out, another Storm House disciple was sent flying to the ground, when he landed he howled in immense pain. The energy produced from the True Yang Tactics had entered his body, causing him feel a scorching heat and painful aching.

Kai Yang's bloodshot eyes glanced over to the stunned Cheng Shao Feng, on his face was a cold and mysterious smile.

Cheng Shao Feng's heart was in turmoil, for Kai Yang's savagery made him fearful. Now that his gaze was towards him, his entire body was frozen to the ground.

Hu Mei Er's laugh full of scorn sounded out.

This laugh made Cheng Shao Feng feel embarrassed, he straightened himself up and looked to Kai Yang coldly. Calmly he said: "I couldn't tell that you actually had that much skill."

Step by step, Kai Yang just walked over, his steps steady, his skinny body emitting a crazy torrent of pressure.

Cheng Shao Feng's breathing slowly became ragged, his expression changing he suddenly called out: "You are courting death, so do not blame me!"

As soon as he finished speaking, he pulled out a sabre from his belt. When he was dealing with Su Mu and the others, he didn't use his weapon at all because he didn't want there to be any casualties; the stone was only used because blood had rushed to his head and he wasn't thinking clearly. But now, if he didn't have a weapon in hand, Cheng Shao Feng held no confidence.

This blood covered Sky Tower Pavilion disciple was extremely fierce.

"You be careful, for this person has already reached the Kai Yuan Stage." Su Mu begrudgingly informed Kai Yang, albeit unclearly.

"Kai Yuan Stage....." Muttering, Kai Yang stopped in his tracks.

Cheng Shao Face became pleased, immediately gaining arrogance, he bellowed out: "Brat, you are only at the tempered body level, so how are you my match?"

Since you have used such a large amount of your World Qi, you would need at least a few months before being able to recover it all. If you continue to battle, it will affect your foundations and don't even think about breaking through anymore. Now be a good child and kneel for forgiveness, I.....”

ds, Kai Yang had already rapidly charged over.

“You.....” Cheng Shao Feng was greatly alarmed, is this person an idiot? He already knew he was at the Kai Yuan Stage, yet he still dared to charge over.

Although he was astonished, Cheng Shao Feng didn't dare to be negligent. Gripping the sabre, he stabbed towards Kai Yang.

In response to this direct attack, Kai Yang did something that no one would have imagined; he opened up his palm and motioned to catch it.

Although this sabre was only an ordinary ranked weapon, it was still a sharp weapon. How could a corporal human body possibly withstand such a weapon?

Cheng Shao Feng's expression was pleased, thinking that he was walking down the path to his own demise. Increasing the speed of his long sabre, he went to greet Kai Yang's open palm.

“Pu” it sounded, it seemed to go exactly how everyone imagined it would go, with the sabre impaling Kai Yang's hand and blood spurting out everywhere.

Hu Mei Er's was startled, when she had seen Kai Yang's confidence and how he welcomed it with grandeur and power, she thought he had some unimaginable and amazing method. But now when she saw that he was so easily injured by

Cheng Shao Feng, she couldn't help but feel disappointed.

In the end, the person didn't amount to much, and only had foolishness!

Before Hu Mei Er's thoughts were finished, they changed by one hundred and eighty degrees. Even though Kai Yang's hand had been pierced, he didn't stop and still closed in towards Cheng Shao Feng.

In a blink of an eye, the two people were within reach of each other while the sound of flesh on the sabre made others cringe.

Pa.....it sounded, Kai Yang's skewered hand went to grip onto Cheng Shao Feng's sword hand and the handle.

With the frenzied Kai Yang in front of him, Cheng Shao Feng could no longer hide his fear. As he tried to pull back his sabre, the opponent held on firmly for dear life.

Laughing maliciously, Kai Yang's pair of bloodshot eyes glinted with a bloodthirsty luster while he threw a bloody fist towards Cheng Shao Feng's face.

Frantically Cheng Shao Feng raised his arm to block while also hastily using his World Qi to assist in his defence.

But Cheng Shao Feng had only just entered the Kai Yuan Stage, how much World Qi did he have within him? Ruthlessly, Kai Yang's fist smashed into his face, dislodging one of his teeth and his cheek immediately started to swell. The scalding that he felt afterwards, was like boiling water was constantly being poured onto his face.

Such tyrannical World Qi! Cheng Shao Feng was finally frightened. He discovered that even though he was at the Kai Yuan Stage, the World Qi inside of him, could not block this fiery invasion; in a few moment he was burnt into dizziness.

Distracted, Kai Yang's second fist arrived, causing Cheng Shao Feng's mind to become unclear.

Another fist caused his entire body to become limp, causing him to kneel in front of Kai Yang with his head bent and a dazed expression.

Moving his leg back, Kai Yang kicked out and sent him flying away.

In the midst of the ensuing silence, Hu Mei Er was shocked beyond belief. It seemed that this person wasn't foolish, the reason why he went to grab that long sabre was because he had something planned. Only once he caught the sabre, would Cheng Shao be unable to move or properly attack.

The dozens of Storm House disciples, even the Kai Yuan Stage Cheng Shao Feng were completely wiped out!

Turning his head, Kai Yang looked over to Hu Mei Er. Focusing his blood red eyes on her, Hu Mei Er unconsciously shivered.

She had never met such a savage person at only the tempered body stage, after all it was bloody battles that shaped the younger fighters, she had never really experienced such things before,

“Chi chi.....” The noise of people’s aching teeth rang out, meanwhile Kai Yang just calmly took out the sabre that had pierced his hand, letting a river of warm blood flow out.

Throughout the entire process, not even his eyebrows had creased in pain. And after he threw the sabre to the side, he unhurriedly walked over to Hu Mei Er.

This flirtatious to the bone girl shuddered on the spot and swallowed panickedly, while forcing out a hollow laugh.

As she smiled, Kai Yang had already reached her and had her slender, white neck within his bloody grip.

As her feet were lifted off the ground, she let out a muffled cry. From within Hu Mei Er’s throat, came a fiery cry, and a groan that seemed to be lost in her daydreams.

Leaning over, Kai Yang looked at Hu Mei Er, all the while laughing coldly.

Nervously Hu Mei Er’s heart thumped, and quickly she went attempted to explain: “I’m not together with them, for I am from the Blood Group. I also have not raised my hand against the Sky Tower Pavilion’s people.”

“Really.” Kai Yang smiled meaningfully.

“En.” When Hu Mei Er saw that she could still talk with this person, her heart calmed down. Although she was female, she was stronger than Cheng Shao Feng, but she had no real dominance. (like powerful aura)

That was because of the physique!

“You are.....are such a powerful person.” Picking up her courage, Hu Mei Er extended one green, green, white, jade-like hand and placed it on Kai Yang’s stomach. Shortly, a few of drops of blood landed on her hand and she didn’t go to wipe them away. She unexpectedly put her finger in her mouth and sucked on it.

In that moment, those ruby red lips appeared thrilling and alluring to touch, her mesmerizing erotic eyes flashed with a mysterious light.

Chapter 41 – Tempered body eighth stage

“I don’t know.....are you this powerful in other places too.” Hu Mei Er’s sharp and watery eyes looked at Kai Yang mysteriously, her words explicitly clear.

This type of open and brazen enticement, as long as it was a male, then I’m afraid they wouldn’t be able to resist. Not to mention Hu Mei Er, because she was also quite attractive, her figure was not bad. So many people were already thinking about it.

A series of sounds came from all directions, the sound of people simultaneously swallowing their saliva. Su Mu’s group of people were already weak in body, now with this type of stimulation, their blood rushed to their heads, their lower parts stuck up, while some fainted on scene.

(TL: Blood rushed to my head too.....T_T, man.....)

Kai Yang also felt a burning sensation rise upwards, his adam’s apple bobbed a bit. His breathing became rough, and his grip on Hu Mei Er’s neck involuntarily increased in strength.

Hu Mei Er delicately gasped, her body squirmed a bit before angrily speaking: “Why do you still not let go?”

While she said that, she also reached out a tender hand to gently prise open Kai Yang’s hand. It’s unknown whether it was an accident or if it was on purpose, all in all she had moved Kai Yang’s hand and placed it on her plump and well-rounded chest.

An astonishing amount of elasticity and warmth passed on through his hand, and Kai Yang clearly felt a defined peak from the palm of his hand. This type of stimulation cause the blood flowing from his wounds to increase a bit.

Kai Yang's face was somewhat red, he had never imagined that his woman would be licentious to this degree. She really was ah, she most definitely possessed some ulterior move with this flirtatious behaviour today.

When she saw Kai Yang's embarrassment, Hu Mei Er unexpectedly started to laugh. Exhaling she said: "What do you want to do?"

As Kai Yang looked down at Hu Mei Er, he felt like a dog that had bit a hedgehog. Thinking back to the start of the battle, this Hu Mei Er really didn't attack any of the Sky Tower Pavilion disciples so Kai Yang naturally couldn't hit her. The only reason he wanted to give this woman a lesson was because she had been constantly fanning the flames during the battle.

But because he was this easily toyed with by her, Kai Yang was somewhat annoyed. Kai Yang after all was still a man, how could he be so easily played around with by her?

As he thought over it, Kai Yang's hand that was covering Hu Mei Er's hand suddenly squeezed tighter. T_T

"En....." Hu Mei Er's expression changed as she moaned out, looking at that handsome face hers turned red. Angrily she glared at Kai Yang, for she would never have imagined he would harbour such feelings towards females.

(TL: Old man Meng's teachings are coming in)

Laughing out loudly, Kai Yang stood up and said to Hu Mei Er: “You can go.”

Hu Mei Er stared blankly ahead before looking dazedly at Kai Yang. She would have never expected that her seductions would have almost no effect. Her body, it was unknown how many people wished to have a taste. On ordinary days, there were numerous rivals that she didn’t even pay attention to. But today, when there was finally a male that she held some interest in, when she had tried to seduce him, she was actually disregarded by him.

Is he still a man?

After standing there for a few moments, she started to laugh. With a multitudinous array of movements, she got up from the ground. Towards Kai Yang, she nibbled her red lips. Walking over to Kai Yang’s side, she gently blew into his ear and whispered: “You are very interesting!”

Once she finished speaking, she chuckled and turned around to leave not forgetting to use her thousand way swaying of the hips technique.

From afar, Su Mu’s lot were watching stupidly, their eyes full of jealousy and envy. They didn’t think that Kai Yang would actually refuse this type of good luck. They were all thinking that if it was them who were in that situation, what would they do?

They would have probably pounced! No, no, no they would have definitely pounced. The good luck of meat pastries dropping from the sky, why would they refuse it? In any case, they wouldn’t have lost anything.

After Hu Mei Er left, everybody then turned their heads back to Kai Yang, feeling both sad and embarrassed.

Ai.....many sighs rang out.

Kai Yang squatted down, and went to rip a few strips of cloth off the bodies of the fainted disciples from Storm House. Then he went to roll the cloth strips around his own hands a few times.

Looking at Su Mu's group, these junior disciples all had faces full of embarrassment.

"Do you still have the strength to walk?" Kai Yang asked.

They nodded their heads slightly.

"Then walk."

The entire group had bloody noses and swollen faces, as they returned to Sky Tower Pavilion with great difficulty before dispersing to find their own medicines and seek out treatment. Although they had fought a great battle today, it was only a battles between juniors. And the three powers would often have such fights between each other, so there was nothing special about it.

Also long as nobody important died, the respective elders of each faction would turn a blind eye and ask no questions. Only through battles, would one improve, and every faction elder wished for this kind of tempering to occur so as to allow for improvement in the strength of their juniors.

Kai Yang returned to his little wooden hut, as he had planned to take out that remaining blood clotting cream. But after thinking it over, he discarded the idea.

During today's events, the only serious injury he received was the one on his hand that had been pierced by the long sabre, the rest were nothing really. Although the wound on his hand looked really serious at first, when you looked more carefully, you could see it wasn't that major. When he went to catch Cheng Shao Feng's sabre, Kai Yang purposefully avoided allowing it to pierce his bones or meridians. So although there was an extra hole in his palm, it was only a simple flesh wound.

It was literally the same type of wound that he had received from that flower patterned spider. It had taken him roughly three-fours days to basically recover, so should be the same this time too.

In addition, in just this short amount of time, Kai Yang's wound had already healed by quite a lot, and his stamina had also recovered by a bit. Without sensing his body condition, he wouldn't have guessed that the warmth emitted by the golden body also contained healing properties. And that the True Yang Tactics, Yang qi also contained a small amount of healing properties. With the assistance of these two, his injuries recovered quickly.

After he learnt that the True Yang Tactic's Yang qi contained healing properties, Kai Yang quickly drifted over to Coiling Dragon Stream to absorb the Yang qi. Although in the battle today, he didn't use a single bit of that drop of Yang energy, he had used up quite a bit of his body's Yang qi. He urgently needed to replenish it.

Just as he was absorbing the Yang qi, Kai Yang felt a drumming from within his

body. Uncontrollably, the outside Yang qi surged into his body, and within a moment, the amount he had absorbed was equal to one or two days worth at his previous speed. Not only was his Yang qi replenished from today's fight, it was also even richer than before and his meridians and channels had also strengthened and expanded by a fair amount.

Tempered body eight stage? Turning his body around, Kai Yang's face held a happy expression.

He had reached the tempered body eight stage in such a short amount of time, it came as no small surprise to him. He had originally estimated that it would take at least another seven to eight days before he would breakthrough.

For such a thing to occur, it was clearly related to Kai Yang's battle today. As expected, battling with others really helped you improve quickly.

His heart happy, Kai Yang began to cultivate his True Yang Tactics even more diligently than before. After he had broken through a level, the speed at which he absorbed the Yang qi had clearly increased by a lot and furthermore overall his abilities were strengthened.

At nighttime Kai Yang returned to his wooden hut to rest. In the end, he had still received several injuries today, so it wasn't the right time to pull an all-nighter in order to cultivate.

Over the next couple of days, apart from eating and sleeping, Kai Yang spent all his time near Coiling Dragon Stream in order to cultivate.

On the other hand, Su Mu's group, not a single one of them had popped out. It

was probably because they were all still nursing their injuries.

Early in the morning a few days later, just as Kai Yang was sweeping the grounds, he saw Su Mu leading Li Yun Tian and the others over towards him; all those who had participated in the battle that day, not a single one was missing. They were all valiant and full of vigour following behind Su Mu.

Although they had recuperated well over these past few days, their appearances were still a bit miserable, their eyes were bruised, mouths were swollen and overall they appeared very comical.

Looking over, Kai Yang couldn't help but say: "Junior Su, is your skin itching again?"

Chapter 42 – That day.....ke.....you touched right?

Su Mu's face reddened, looking at Kai Yang fiercely and then he went to stand in front of him determinedly all the while coldly looking at him. Of course, his gaze was somewhat complicated, it contained admiration unwillingness, vexation and relief.

“Give me the items.” Su Mu suddenly said while putting his hand out, and Li Yun Tian immediately carried over two wine jugs over and gave them to Su Mu.

Leaving one for himself, Su Mu gave one to Kai Yang. Without saying anything, Su Mu went to open the jug and started to drink from it.

A group of Sky Tower Pavilion disciples that had walked by were staring in a daze, and looking at Su Mu distractedly. They didn't know what sly plans Su Mu was up to now, for he was actually drinking wine early in the morning here.

Smiling faintly, Kai Yang also went to open the jug up and drank in large mouthfuls.

“Good!” Li Yun Tian shouted out loudly from behind Su Mu.

“Good!” The others also started to shout.

“Sou, sou” the two people sounded out and at the same time, both Kai Yang and Su Mu smashed their wine jugs and ended up with wine drenching them.

“Drinking in broad daylight, corrupting the Sky Tower's principles, name your

prime offenders. Five contribution points will be deducted from you each. Next it won't be as lenient as this!" A Dark Hall disciple appeared from the sidelines, as he coldly informed Kai Yang and Su Mu.

"Deduct it, deduct it!" Kai Yang was indifferent, but if this was a month earlier he would be bleeding. Now, he was indifferent.

Since Kai Yang didn't care, how could the second generation young master Su Mu possibly care? For he has a very powerful patron, so contribution points to him were not worth that much.

"Zhao Hu, help senior brother Kai finish his sweeping." Su Mu said as he waved his hand at Zhao Hu.

"Okay." Zhao Hu who had been punched senseless previously by Kai Yang hurriedly rushed over and took the broom away from Kai Yang's hands.

"This isn't appropriate." Glancing at the male Dark Hall disciple Kai Yang said before that disciple snorted coldly and walked away.

"Let's go, let's go to your small home for I have some things I need to discuss with you." Su Mu said.

Next to the small hut, Kai Yang and Su Mu squatted in front of the pond while a small group of people bustled around behind them, patching up the holes in the roof.

It looked like after the events from that day, Su Mu's group of people had completely put away their past enmities with Kai Yang. Not only had they put

them away, they even wanted to make up for it.

“Why did you come and save us?” After a period of silence, Su Mu finally opened his mouth to ask this question.

“Why.....” Kai Yang’s eyebrows wrinkled, “You guys call me senior brother, so naturally I must act like a senior brother. I should think this is the reason.”

Though the most important thing was that Su Mu’s inner character wasn’t really that vile.

Turning his head, Su Mu went to asked Kai Yang seriously: “Really?”

Laughing a bit, Kai Yang replied: “Then why did you think I saved you?”

Su Mu became silent, his heart was quite upset and after a while he answered: “Since you regard us as junior brothers, then we will also regard you as our senior brother. In regards to the silly past issues, this junior brother is sorry.”

“I never really took it seriously.” Kai Yang replied.

Looking in each other’s eyes, they started to laugh out loud.

Laughing will enable enemies to reconcile and repay one’s debt of gratitude. It probably speaks about these types of things.

With their gratitudes and grudges settles, Su Mu no longer felt embarrassed or

reserved. He really started to treat Kai Yang as his senior brother. After speaking out some unimportant things, Su Mu suddenly licked his lips and his face became red. He softly asked: "Senior brother, I want to ask you a question."

"What?" Kai Yang looked at him oddly.

"That day.....ke.....you touched right?" Su Mu didn't dare to look at Kai Yang directly when he asked.

"Touched what?" Kai Yang didn't understand.

"It's that, ah."

"That?"

Su Mu became depressed, steeling his heart and clenching his teeth he said: "It's that Hu Mei Er's....."

As he said this, his heart started to squeeze a bit, moving others.

Kai Yang laughed involuntarily, youngsters really were full of vigorous curiosity.

"Didn't you all witness the scene?"

"We didn't see clearly.....so did you really touch it?" Su Mu's mouth was opened really wide.

“If I touched it, what is the matter?” Kai Yang grinned mischievously, “She voluntarily placed my hand on her. And I merely gave her a lesson only.”

Gu dong (things falling down), and Su Mu swallowed down a mouthful of saliva. His face full of expectations he asked: “What did it feel like?”

“Junior brother has never experienced it?” Kai Yang asked in doubt while looking at Su Mu and thinking was this second generation young master still a pure virgin?

Su Mu shook his head like a rattle drum, and suspiciously asked: “Senior Brother, you previously have already experienced it?”

Kai Yang revealed a pondering expression, and then showed an angry but happy reminiscing look. Sighing out: “Ai, let’s not talk about past things.”

Su Mu looked on blankly, while giving a knowing smile. He couldn’t help but curl up his lips: “You talk big. Three years ago, senior brother, you came to pay your respects to the Main Gate. And in these three years, you didn’t go and make any friends with others, so how could you have an opportunity. If so, then it would have to be before you entered, Three years ago, how old were you?”

Three years ago, twelve years old!

Twelve years old, and a beauty felt no shame to actually come at him. If it wasn’t because she was only fifteen, and if it wasn’t because they were both naive and innocent, then something would have really occurred.

Thinking about that beauty again, Kai Yang’s heart felt sorrowful. He didn’t

know how her life was currently.

“Anyway, senior brother, you should be careful. Hu Mei Er is quite arrogant and since you brushed away her face, she definitely won’t let it go.” Su Mu went to remind him.

“She wants to deal with me?” Kai Yang’s expression turned icy.

Laughing loudly, Su Mu said mysteriously: “En, to deal with you in bed. You wait and see. She definitely will use a thousand different techniques to try and seduce you. As long as she doesn’t obtain her goal, she won’t give up. Senior brother, your luck with women isn’t bad or shallow.”

“Those types of people I disdain.” Kai Yang didn’t take this issue too seriously, and said to Su Mu: “You said that you have something to talk to me about, and it’s actually this? (Xia Ning Chang is the only one for me.)”

“Of course not.” Widening his eyes, Su Mu said: “Senior brother, this time when you were dealing with Cheng Shao and his people, you used up quite a lot of your precious World Qi. I just want to compensate you.”

“Compensate me?”

“En.” Su Mu nodded his head and then from within his clothes, he took out a bottle and said to Kai Yang: “This is a bottle of small returning pellets. Senior brother, take these to help you recover and you should be able to recover all of your lost World Qi.”

Small returning pellets, Kai Yang had actually heard of them. Although these

types of medicinal pellets effects weren't that strong, they were very gentle because they were most suited to practitioners like Kai Yang who were around the tempered body seventh stage.

From the tempered body seventh stage to the ninth stage, although martial practitioners started to produce World Qi, you could also increase it by cultivating martial skills. But because you couldn't recover World Qi swiftly until you reached the Kai Yuan Stage, it was considered extremely precious. Once you used it, one must pay a great price to recover it, however with the help of the small returning pellets, one was able to greatly reduce the time needed. To practitioners of the tempered body seventh to ninth stages, this was most suited for them, but they were also quite expensive. Though, for Kai Yuan Stage practitioners and up, it wasn't the slightest bit useful.

It was just Kai Yang's situation was slightly different other people's, the True Yang Tactics that he cultivated allowed for one to not worry about World Qi. If the World Qi within him was used up, then there was still the Yang liquid. So this bottle of small returning pellets had little value.

Just as he was about to refuse, Su Mu seemed to look through his thoughts and sternly said: "I don't want to owe others anything."

"Fine, then I shall accept it." Kai Yang didn't act politely anymore.

Smiling, Su Mu said: "Senior brother, wait for me here and I will take you to a good place."

"What good place?" Kai Yang asked doubtfully.

Su Mu only laughed without answering, telling him to wait and that he definitely wouldn't be disappointed.

Chapter 43 – The gate's secret

Inside Black Wind Forest, there was a line of Sky Tower disciples walking into the depths.

Kai Yang would never have thought that the good place that Su Mu wanted to take him too was actually located in the Black Wind Mountains. Walking in the forest, Kai Yang saw a distinct path. In this type of dense forest, if humans did not frequent it, then a clear path would not appear.

Do a lot of people come and go in the Black Wind Mountains? Pondering over it, it seemed that it was true for in the distance there were some faint figures advancing in a similar fashion to his group.

“Senior brother, do you know why that day we met up with Cheng Shao Feng and his people near Black Wind Forest?” Walking in front of Kai Yang, Su Mu went to ask Kai Yang.

Kai Yang's expression changed, while he had a faint idea: “Could it be that Cheng Shao Feng and them also wanted to come to Black Wind Forest?”

“That's right. We the Sky Tower Pavilion, Storm House and Blood Group aren't that far away from each other. The distance from Black Wind Forest to each of the three places is about the same, so if any disciples from these factions want to enter here, they would need to pass by the four-way intersection.”

“What type of people attracting place is here? Otherwise, why would you all come over here?”

“He he.” Su Mu laughed out proudly: “Senior brother, now this you may not know. Inside Black Wind Forest, there is an underground market. We disciples from the three factions and even martial practitioners from all of the Black Plum Village area come over here. Disciples are able to exchange useless data and skills that they don’t need for more useful things or for gold and silver. This Black Wind Trade area is bustling, so senior brother should definitely come here and look.”

Li Yun Tian added: “That’s right, senior brother. You can often find some good things over here. Last time young master Su used twenty or so silver to obtain some Tianyuan Fruit.”

“Tianyuan Fruit?” Kai Yang’s expression changed.

“En, earth grade lower level spirit fruit. The seller didn’t recognise what he was selling, allowing me to benefit greatly.” Talking about that matter, Su Mu became proud.

Earth grade lower level spirit fruit, if you wanted to convert it to a monetary value, it would be valued at around two thousand silvers at the least. It was actually brought by Su Mu for a mere twenty silver coins, isn’t this a great deal.

That Black Wind Trade area, Kai Yang really didn’t hear about it before at all, in the entirety of the time that he had been in Sky Tower. Since he hadn’t socialised with a single person, they naturally wouldn’t tell him such news.

It looked like Su Mu’s group often came over here to browse, and each one was fairly familiar with the layout. From their conversation, Kai Yang heard many interesting things, and he started to have some anticipation for this place. 。

Since he cultivated the True Yang Tactics, then he would be able to find some Yang attributed elixirs for him to use, but it was just that he didn't have a lot of money on hand. Then he remembered that small bottle of small returning pellets, Kai Yang gained some confidence.

Black Wind Trade was a fair distance away, so the group of people chatted to each other while walking over.

Kai Yang suddenly asked: "Junior brother Su, does our Sky Tower Pavilion have an eleventh elder?"

He had remembered that old man he had met beside the Coiling Dragon Stream and that old man was a complete mystery. It caused others to be unable to forget him.

"Eleventh elder?" Su Mu was stunned, "When did Sky Tower Pavilion suddenly have an eleventh elder?"

"Eh, I just wanted to ask ." Kai Yang understood now. That time when the old man had said he was some eleventh elder, he was already suspicious. Now it looked like his status was truly a lie, it was just that old man was calm and friendly. Since he held no malice or evil intentions to him, Kai Yang didn't want to investigate further and risk provoking his disgust.

Li Yun Tian laughed out: "Senior brother Kai, since you are always cultivating, naturally you wouldn't know too much about our Sky Tower Pavilion affairs. We only have five elders, there really isn't some eleventh elder."

This group of people all knew about Kai Yang's previous tragic history of being

bullied, so out of the goodness of their hearts, they went to inform him of the various things happening in Sky Tower to prevent him from asking another awkward question in the future.

An elder was Su Mu's backer, so his understanding of Sky Tower affairs was better than anyone else's. So as they were talking, they drifted to the topic of Sky Tower Pavilion's Head.

Lowering his voice, Su Mu said: "Listening to my old devil speak, I heard him say that our Head is a peak existence. Nowadays, it is said that he has reached the peak of the Shen You Boundary and is just a step away from breaking through to the next stage. Within a thousand mile radius, he is the number one expert."

Peak of the Shen You Boundary! Kai Yang was shocked in amazement.

For a martial practitioner's grade started from the tempered body level, followed by the Kai Yuan Stage, Qi Dong Stage, Li He Boundary, Zhen Yuan Boundary, Shen You Boundary and each level was then divided into a further nine ranks. As your strength increased, it became harder to breakthrough. You couldn't see many Shen Boundary level experts, and one would never have imagined that the Sky Tower Head had actually reached the Shen You level. If he were to breakthrough, then he would become a true peak expert.

"That Blood Group Head, Hu Man, and the Storm House Head, Xiao Ruo, were only around the Shen You Boundary sixth or seventh stages and are incomparable to our Head." As Su Mu said this, his face showed a proud expression. After all, a school head's strength is also a source of pride for the schools disciples.

“How much longer will our head need to breakthrough?” Li Yun Tian enthusiastically asked. If the head were to suddenly breakthrough, then in a thousand mile radius, Sky Tower Pavilion would become the leading faction. Who would dare to come provoke them then?

Su Mu’s face darkened and he slowly shook his head.

“What’s the matter?” Seeing Su Mu like that, Li Yun Tian asked worriedly.

“The old devil said, that it has already been ten or so years since the head reached the Shen You peak.”

“Then why hasn’t he broken through up until now?” Everybody asked.

Ten years, even if cultivating was difficult, you should be able to breakthrough.

Su Mu continued to shake his head: “I don’t dare say.”

“Young master Su, how could you do this. Invoking our curiosities but refusing to talk further. Isn’t this equivalent to taking most of a beauty’s clothes off but not all? This is too brutal.” Zhou Hu complained relentlessly, and the rest all joined in enthusiastically encouraging Su Mu.

“Okay then, but you must all remember you mustn’t tell anyone else or there will be great troubles.” Su Mu said with grandeur, then looking around he lowered his voice and said: “Ten years ago, our Sky Tower had a big situation. It was because of this, that our head’s cultivation has yet to rise.”

“What situation?” Everybody asked while swallowing.

“Our head has no wife nor children, so he accepted two disciples and the situation originated from these two disciples. Of these two disciples, the elder disciple was hardworking while the younger disciple was intelligent. Both were shocking geniuses, and the head used all of his heart to teach them without the slightest bit of reservation. These two were also hardworking, their strengths were neck and neck and no one was worse than the other. It was just because these two people’s nature’s were different, so the head’s teaching style was different for each one; the older disciple received greater amounts of praise, while the younger disciple was treated harsher and the head was stricter with him. Due to this, the younger disciple gradually drifted further away from his senior brother and also became more and more frustrated. So he went to find a forbidden and sinister technique to cultivate.”

“Ah.....” Everyone cried out in fear.

Su Mu continued to speak and captured everyone’s attention again.

You couldn’t tell, but Su Mu was born with an eloquent tongue. The way he narrated, made the story flow very well and he succinctly expressed how the grudges between these two fellow disciples had started to his audience.

Kai Yang only listened in silence, and didn’t interrupt for he thought that this affair was most likely true, but Su Mu would have also added some extra details to exaggerate the situation.

Chapter 44 – Su Yan

“After he learnt this skill, the second disciple’s temperament changed completely and his strength also suddenly increased by a large amount. The older disciple unexpectedly was no longer his opponent. With his new found strength, the second disciple thought that the Head would praise him more, but the fact that he had cultivated a sinister skill was finally discovered by the Head. But this discovery caused the second disciple, to be fully engulfed and fall into the darkness. That night ten years ago, rivers of blood flowed within Sky Tower Pavilion! The elder disciple died tragically that night, and the second disciple escaped from his punishment.”

Speaking up to that point, Su Mu paused for a moment, and swivelled his head around to see everyone holding their breath in rapt attention with their ears attentive. Highly satisfied he continued: “In one night, the head lowered his head in depression. The two disciples he was most proud of, one had died and the other had succumbed to the dark ways; the impact that it had on him, well as you can imagine it was very great.”

“From that moment onwards, the head went into seclusion and few people were even able to see a trace of him. Most people thought that he had become broken and passed away, but they would have never imagined that a few years later he would come out again even stronger than before to go and personally capture his second disciple and seal him in Coiling Dragon Stream! ”

Kai Yang’s heart suddenly shook as he remembered that mysterious eleventh elder’s last words.

“I did not come here for treasure, I am here to meet someone!”

Meet who? There was no doubt in Kai Yang's mind it was the person sealed in Coiling Dragon Stream.

Could it be that this eleventh elder was.....

Su Mu continued to speak: "But because of these events, the head was unable to breakthrough the Shen You Boundary and could only stop at this stage. If this knot is not untied, then he will be unable to advance any further in this life."

With the story finished, everyone released large sighs as they could breathe once more. They felt pity for the Sky Tower Head's predicament, while also scolding that ungrateful second disciple who had fallen to sinister and forbidden ways.

Kai Yang's mood was also in disarray, in the end was the eleventh elder him? If what Su Mu had said was true, then there was a high chance that, that old man was who he suspected him to be.

Just at that moment, the bustling and noise from up ahead transmitted over. Kai Yang lifted up his head to look and saw that there was a large clearing in this dense forest. And in that clearing was a buzz of voices, like a great marketplace. The three school's disciples were all gathered here with big and small stalls all lined up with their glittering wares, with all types of products on display. It was a feast for the eyes.

There were also ten or so wooden houses on the perimeter, with the construction being somewhat simple. There were large ones and smaller ones; the smaller ones were probably for living in, while the larger ones were for people to shelter from the rain as they could house a large amount of people.

Because it was currently very sunny, the disciples from the three factions had set up their booths outside under the sun.

Black Wind Trade was like a completely different world of in and of itself.

“Well then, we have arrived.” Su Mu’s main goal this time was to bring Kai Yang over here, ensuring that he knew there were these type of places present here. So if there were things he needed in the future, he could come over here to trade for them.

“This place isn’t bad.” Looking at the bustling crowd doing trade in the clearing, his face revealed his excitement.

Laughing, Su Mu said: “Of course, for this place has the things that we low levelled martial practitioners need. Furthermore, you don’t need to worry about safety, for each of the three factions have some of their experts stationed here to oversee and maintain public order. Do you see that small wooden house, that is the home of our Sky Tower overseer and my older sister is in there.”

“Your older sister?” Kai Yang looked towards him, and remembered how last time Su Mu had come looking for trouble and said that his older sister was a core disciple. Core disciples, they were the future hope of Sky Tower.

Su Mu suddenly became alert: “I will warn you first, don’t have any ideas with my sister.”

Kai Yang couldn’t help but laugh.

Su Mu said again: “But even if you did have an interest in her, I’m afraid you

won't have the ability to reach her."

"You older sister is very powerful?"

"Of course. Zhen Yuan Boundary third layer, not many of the younger generation are qualified to become her opponents."

Kai Yang was slightly moved, for a younger generation disciple to cultivate to the Zhen You Boundary was already too rare. For the next stage was the Shen You Boundary, in other words the stage at which the head was currently at.

"Since your older sister is that talented, why are you only at the tempered body stage?" Kai Yang asked Su Mu, puzzled.

Like he was being repeatedly poked in a sore spot, Su Mu's immediately became embarrassed. After being at a loss for a while he replied: "It's not good, but don't worry for I will work harder to cultivate. Afterall, I can't allow you, a trial disciple to surpass me."

Nodding his head a bit, for it seemed that the previous few days sufferings at Kai Yang's hands had ignited Su Mu's competitive spirit.

"Let's go, I'll first take you to meet my older sister. With her protection, then in this Black Wind Trade, it will be easier to do what we need to do."

Since they said they were going to meet Su Mu's elder sister, everybody's expression immediately became serious. Even Su Mu himself went to tidy up his clothes, and brush all of the dust from his clothes.

You could see clearly that Su Mu was really afraid of his sister or even worshipped her.

“What is Su Mu’s older sister called?” Kai Yang asked Li Yun Tian in a low voice.

“Su Yan!”

Her name wasn’t bad, he just didn’t know what type of person she was.

Soon they had arrived at a wooden house, Kai Yang went to observe the house and the surrounding wooden houses and saw that each of them had hung a plaque saying Sky Tower Pavilion. It looked like these few houses were the residences of high levelled Sky Tower members.

Su Mu was a bit nervous and lightly breathed a few breaths before cautiously walking up the steps. Then he elegantly lifted up his hand and lightly tapped the door a couple of times and then spoke out in a strange kitten-like voice: “Elder sister, I have come to visit you.”

While Li Yun Tian and the others used all their might to suppress their laughter, their shoulders started shaking. Kai Yang also couldn’t help but laugh.

Su Mu knew the reactions of the people behind him and really wanted to turn around and glare at them.

“Enter!” A light and cold voice sounded out from inside. It was like a clear mountain spring, new to their ears.

Su Mu beckoned to the others and them walked inside.

Once they entered, Kai Yang secretly looked around and saw that this house was even more simple than his own wooden hut. There was nothing inside, but once they entered the outside noise was unexpectedly filtered out, causing the house to become peaceful.

This wooden house should have some sort of secret, otherwise it wouldn't have this type of effect.

Just as he was observing the house, Su Mu suddenly let out a blood-curdling screech. Kai Yang swivelled his eyes over and saw Su Mu crouched on the floor covering his head. Not far away in front of him was a woman dressed in snow white clothes with a frosty expression.

This woman had luscious and beautiful black hair, crescent shaped eyebrows, a pair of bright and slender eyes, a small and cute nose, with peach pink cheeks, a pair of delicate cherry lips and glistening pale jade-like skin accompanied by a dainty, graceful and slender physique; indescribably enchanting.

It was just her temperament was exceptionally icy-cold and even made the room's overall temperature plummet.

Currently, that woman was sitting cross legged looking at Su Mu. Without saying anything, you knew this was Su Yan.

"Do you know why you were hit?" Su Yan asked.

Su Mu shook his head and saw a monious glint in his sister's eyes, and quickly nodded his head.

“Then say it.” Su Yan's voice was extremely light, will carrying something which didn't allow one to rebel against. Kai Yang guessed the reason why Su Mu was so afraid of his sister now. Who ever got such a sister, no one would be able to bear, even though she was a great beauty.

Chapter 45 – If you follow me any longer, I won't be polite

“It's because I was beaten by someone.” Confronted by his sister's inquiries, Su Mu didn't dare to refuse to answer. As he answered, he also secretly went to measure up Su Yan.

The latter's face was still unempathetic: “Why did you get beaten by them?”

“My skill wasn't up to par.....” Su Mu lowered his head a bit more.

“Why wasn't your skill enough?” Su Yan continued to question, in order to get to the root of the problem.

Su Mu could only honestly answer her: “I didn't practise diligently enough.”

Su Yan nodded her head lightly: “You still have a bit of intelligence! Then you know what to do in the future?”

“I know.”

“Remember your words today, so if later in the future you want to go and play around then it will not be someone else who will beat you, instead I will do it personally.”

Su Mu's face paled as he repeatedly swore he would diligently practise and cultivate so as to meet his elder sister's expectations.

After she finished lecturing Su Mu, Su Yan finally lifted up her head to look at the people behind him. Sweeping across them, her gaze landed on Kai Yang and a trace of astonishment flashed across her eyes. She asked: "It's you who defeated Cheng Shao Feng?"

Kai Yang thought that this senior sister's information network was quite fast. Although she trained here, she was still able to receive information regarding matters occurring outside in a timely fashion. He nodded his head: "Yes."

"You're a bit better than Su Mu." Su Yan was indifferent, and Kai Yang looked like he wasn't that old, about fifteen-sixteen. He was only at the tempered body eighth stage, his natural talent shouldn't be that good, so he was naturally unworthy in her eyes. The only reason why she spoke to Kai Yang was because he had saved Su Mu.

"I'll give you a word of advice."

"Please say it senior sister." Kai Yang's expression remained impassive.

"Stay away from Su Mu, if you continued to stay close to him, then your cultivation will stop and stagnate around this level."

Kai Yang smiled slightly, but didn't bother to reply. She could belittle Su Mu, but Kai Yang couldn't.

Su Mu was smiling but his face fell quickly when he heard this, but even he didn't dare say anything.

"Leave now, I want to train." As soon as Su Yan finished speaking, she closed

her eyes.

The group of people quietly exited and closed the door behind them. Looking at each other, they all simultaneously let out a breath of relief. The pressure inside was all too great, and although she was a beauty and as such pleasing to the eye, if they had stayed any longer inside, then they felt that both their bodies and hearts would be frozen.

“I’m going to look at the refined pills that everyone was talking a couple of days ago.” Li Yun Tian announced before taking his leave.

“I’ll also go.” A couple of people called out immediately.

Not long after, everyone had dispersed, each going to do their own business leaving Su Mu and Kai Yang behind.

Kai Yang saw that Su Mu looked like he had some things to do so he said: “Junior brother, you look like you have some things to do, so go complete them. I’ll just go around and browse.”

Su Mu nodded his head as he spoke: “Okay, and if you find anything you like, tell me and I’ll keep a look out for you. Although the majority of people here are not bad, they are still treacherous people and love to trick and swindle others.”

After he separated from Su Mu, Kai Yang leisurely strolled around the Black Wind Trade area.

Here, disciples from the three schools were causally situated everywhere, with their booths set up to present the things which they wanted to sell or putting up

signs saying what they wanted to purchase.

Each booth was different, each stall resident was calling out in a loud voice much making it appear similar to a busy food market, full of warmth and enthusiasm with everyone busily promoting their wares. Some were arrogant, portraying an if you want to buy then buy attitude, some were acting indifferent in a bid to attract customers, some appeared bored and were cultivating unafraid that others would steal their goods. There were numerous styles of attracting customers, each strong in their own way.

After walking around, Kai Yang found out that it wasn't just buying and selling, there were also some booths which were for the making of immortality pills to aid in cultivation, a service they did without charging a single penny.

He thought that they were doing something akin to a good deed, but in reality they were just using others in order to perfect and refine their techniques. That was because these receptariers didn't have enough experience, eight out of ten pills they made were bad, so their booth fronts were deserted.

However, this type of stall wasn't common at all, after all receptarier masters were few and far between.

Kai Yang was paying careful attention to Yang attributed products, before he even entered the trade area, the Origin of Yang in his chest had started to react wildly, showing that there were numerous Yang attributed treasures.

But after his little stroll, the things which he came across, their ranks were all rather low. The yang type herbs he saw couldn't even match up to the yang qi emitted by the Coiling Dragon Stream, so he naturally wouldn't pay any attention to them.

He had found a couple of things that interested him, but after he asked about the price, he could only shake his head and sigh. Those prices were far too high and not something his current self could afford.

(TL:you should ask ur buddy ling dong for some money advice, not chu feng tho. he's a true beast when it comes to spending money. I pretty sure he has already spent like a couple trillion dollars. ED: All stolen money though, so it doesn't really count. TL: Still, it's still \$\$\$)

After walking around for about another half hour, he was finally clear about the true price of the small returning pellets.

Since the small returning pellets were only applicable to those at the tempered body seventh to ninth stages, this type of immortality pill was only worth around fifty two taels.

The bottle that Su Mu gave him held ten of these pills, so all up they were worth about five hundred taels.

Five hundred taels, it really wasn't enough to do anything with.

In the middle of one booth, there was a fiery coloured stone from which Kai Yang could feel a blistering amount of yang qi and he couldn't determine exactly how many times more dense the yang qi it emitted was compared to the yang qi from the Coiling Dragon Stream. Kai Yang was certain that if he absorb the energy within that stone, then he would be able to condense at least two-three drops of yang liquid. This was equivalent to many days of hard cultivation if he relied on just the yang qi from Coiling Dragon Stream.

Even though he knew this, this booth owner was not easy to get along with and would certainly not sell it at a low price, Kai Yang was unwilling to give up and squatted down.

The booth owner's cold face looked like someone owed him money, he only took one glance at Kai Yang and then proceeded to ignore him.

Kai Yang picked up some other things feigning great interest and asked for their prices. The owner, with gold glinting in his eyes, casually said some prices and Kai Yang then inadvertently asked the price of the that red stone. "How much is this?"

The booth owner laughed out loud, and said a couple more words: "That is this booth's most expensive item, three thousand taels."

Kai Yang was completely out of ideas, for this was a truly sky-high price. This was far and away from Kai Yang's upper limit, so how was he supposed to haggle for it?

Just as he put it down and prepared to leave, Kai Yang's shoulder was tapped by someone. He turned his head around and saw a cute and lovable smile directed towards him.

"It really is you." Hu Mei Er said somewhat unexpectedly.

"You need something?" Kai Yang's eyebrows creased, and to tell the truth, he didn't have a good impression towards this morally loose woman. Although she was currently dressed properly, but her wanton actions that day had already left

a bad impression in Kai Yang's mind.

Sensing Kai Yang's indifference, Hu Mei Er's eyes displayed her displeasure and she cutely declared: "Nothing, I only came over to greet you. That's all."

"En, good bye!" Kai Yang softly replied before turning around to leave.

(TL: Kai Yang, you da man! Thumbs up!)

"Hey....." Hu Mei Er called out as she closely followed behind him,.. Whether it was unintentional or intentional, her body stuck closely to Kai Yang and as she walked, she also went to observe Kai Yang's reaction.

After walking around for the time it takes to burn an incense stick, Kai Yang became a bit gloomy. He didn't know what to do about this woman's flirtatious behaviour, her skin was really thick. For he already clearly showed that he was not interested in her, yet she still persisted and stuck close to him.

"Why are you following me?" asked Kai Yang as he stopped in his steps, clearly unhappy.

"I'm not following you, for in Black Wind Trade, I am only strolling around leisurely. What, do you care for me?" Hu Mei Er smiled adorably, nonstop.

"Don't follow me any longer, be careful or I won't be polite to you anymore." Kai Yang said angrily.

Not only was Hu Mei Er unafraid, on the contrary, she looked eager to try his

patience: “How will you not be polite? Will it be like last time?”

Chapter 46 – Bringing one to a place without people.....

In response to this woman's troublesome behaviour, Kai Yang didn't have any good methods to deal with her. He could only ignore her, Hu Mei Er could see Kai Yang's indifference. Although she dared to provoke him further she chose not to, rather she only wanted to follow him around.

Following the pull of his origin of yang, after walking a short while, Kai Yang stopped in front of a booth.

Looking over it, Kai Yang's eyes brightened. The items presented at this booth were quite good, with a majority satisfying his needs.

Those pieces of infant fist sized round rocks, dispersed rich and blistering hot yang qi, even stronger than that other booth's stone. They were just a bit small.

Their prices won't be as expensive as that other stone right? Kai Yang hesitated, while the booth owner warmly welcomed him: "Little brother, what are you thinking about? My items are good and cheap, as you walk past, you mustn't miss this opportunity. It doesn't matter if you are buying for your own use or to sell them later for a profit, all transactions will be fair."

Summoning up the courage, Kai Yang asked: "These stones, how much are they?"

The store owner lowered his head to look and replied: "You're talking about the Bright Yang Stone. They're not expensive, only five hundred taels for one!"

Kai Yang's expression darkened, although he knew that this price was just, he still shook his head and said: "It's a bit expensive."

From head to toe, he only had about five hundred taels, his entire fortune.

The booth owner shook his head as he smiled: "Little brother, you are telling some good jokes, for the items here are clearly labelled and definitely aren't an open lion's mouth. If you go to other booths, and observe their prices, then you will know how worthwhile my price are."

This sentence was correct, Kai Yang's journey here, although he didn't buy anything, he had inquired a lot about the prices. This person's prices weren't really that high, but if you wanted to buy something, you needed to bargain.

Helpless, Kai Yang could only start a war of words with this booth owner, and make the opponent lower the price. But the owner firmly shook his head, until in the end the owner became very gloomy. With no alternative, he said: "Little brother, these items of mine, don't belong to me. I am only helping someone else sell them, as for the price, I can only increase it, not decrease it or I'll have to make up for the losses myself. Please don't make things difficult for me anymore."

"Helping someone?" Staring blankly, Kai Yang turned around to the standing Hu Mei Er.

In the surrounding area, there was only one faction, the Blood Group!

Hu Mei Er sweetly said: "Yes, this is my family's booth. You want these stones?"

Kai Yang nodded his head.

“If you promise to abide by one of my conditions, I will give you these ten or so stones!” Hu Mei Er’s eyes rotated.

“Mis…….” That booth owner’s face changed greatly, if this stock of items were to be lost from his hands, then his future troubles would be great.

“Don’t worry, I will tell my father.” Hu Mei Er assured him. Just as that owner was about to speak, he shut his mouth.

“How about it? You only need to promise me one thing.” Hu Mei Er smiled radiantly: “For you men, it is a very simple task.”

“Don’t even think about!” Kai Yang resolutely refused. Even if he used his toe to think, he would be able to figure out what Hu Mei Er meant.

“You……” Hu Mei Er was fuming while she glared at Kai Yang, her expression was one that made it almost look like she had the desire to eat someone.

When you actually think about it, her interest in Kai Yang wasn’t that big. It was just that day, when her attempts at seducing failed, it had made Hu Mei Er gloomy, not only this, she also ate a small loss!

There is no man that can escape her enticement! Hu Mei Er was convinced of this, that was why she wanted Kai Yang to surrender to her. When the time comes and he surrenders, she would leave him and watch how much of a joke it

will be.

If Hu Mei Er wanted a man, a single beckoning from her finger would lure a whole pile of them over. If it was for another goal, why would she feel wronged? She is flirtatious and wanton in her behaviour, but that was only an image, an appearance to confuse others.

I don't believe that I can't conquer you! Hu Mei Er's heart resolute.

Her eyeballs rotating, Hu Mei Er said to that booth owner: "Sell it to him at a cheaper price!"

The booth owner scowled miserably: "That isn't good!"

"I said sell it to him at a cheaper price!" Hu Mei Er lightly clenched her teeth, her charming eyes emitting a bit of frostiness.

Just as the booth owner was about to nod his head, Kai Yang waved his hands and said: "No need, leave at five hundred taels."

Sell it at five hundred taels, he wouldn't make a profit, but he also wouldn't suffer a loss, it was the set market price.

As he spoke, he also went to take out that bottle of small returning pellets: "Can I exchange it using these pills?"

This trade also had its own set of rules regarding this, complete immortal pills are also valid currency to exchange for products.

“You can.” The booth owner nodded his head.

“This bottle of small returning pellets contains ten of such pills, so it’s about five hundred taels, you can count it.” Kai Yang then went to throw that bottle over to him, then from the booth he picked one Bright Yang Stone.

As he held the stone in his hand, a surge of powerful yang energy came out. His heart satisfied, Kai Yang knew that the transaction was worthwhile.

Hu Mei Er regretted it so much she started gnashing her teeth. Kai Yang’s actions were clearly showing that he didn’t want to owe her any debts, meaning that her goodwill went down the drain.

The booth owner observed their actions, he was afraid that his no good young lady was having ideas regarding Kai Yang. Although the transaction was just, he knew that his young lady was a bit upset. Thinking for a moment, the booth owner picked up a seed from his booth and said: “Little brother, if you don’t mind, I’ll give you this seed, since I can’t sell it for much anyway.”

“What type of seed?” Kai Yang took it, and unexpectedly felt some yang qi from within that seed, though it was a bit weak.

“It’s the seed of the Three Sun’s Fruit. We found it when we were mining for the Bright Yang Stones.” The booth owner told him, “This fruit tree’s fruit is a earth grade lower level spirit fruit. It’s just the growth period is a bit long.”

Kai Yang laughed involuntarily, thinking what will he do with a single seed? If you planted it, you would need to wait at least ten years for it bear it fruit, but it

was someone's goodwill, so Kai Yang couldn't refuse. In any case, this seed's value wasn't very high, so even if he accepted it, it wasn't a big deal.

(TL: Make it a super OP Spirit Fruit with ur OPOP Black Book Kai Yang! :D)

"Thanks." Standing up, Kai Yang put both the Bright Yang Stone and the seed within his clothes.

His only bottle of small returning pellets was already gone, and Kai Yang didn't feel like staying here anymore. But he couldn't locate Su Mu or his group after another stroll around, so Kai Yang walked out of Black Wind Forest alone.

From behind, Hu Mei Er continued to follow him, sticking to him like a tail, however her expression displayed a hint of annoyance.

He must think of a way to lose her, otherwise if she followed him back to Sky Tower, he worried how others will view him. This woman's reputation wasn't that good.

As he looked around, Kai Yang suddenly thought of a good idea, and started to walk into the depths of Black Wind Forest. As he walked, he constantly turned back to Hu Mei Er to hehe laugh at her. It goes without saying it conveyed, 'if you dare to follow me over, I will first rape you then kill you.' A sinister type of feeling was emitted with each glance.

Hu Mei Er laughed out, however she was actually a bit terrified and as she saw Kai Yang walk into the depths of Black Wind Forest, she hesitated for a bit. Thinking about it, she wasn't that familiar with Kai Yang, if she really went in and something something happened, what would she be able to do? That day, she

had personally witnessed Kai Yang's strength, and knew she wasn't his opponent. If he was just a bit brutal, then she would have scars all over her body.

Hesitating for a good while, Hu Mei Er suddenly stamped her foot and while swaying her hips, she followed after him. She was eighty percent certain that Kai Yang was only trying to scare her.

Seeing Hu Mei Er really follow after him, Kai Yang became really angry. The reason why he acted in such a way, was to scare away Hu Mei Er. He didn't expect that this woman's courage wasn't small, turning his plans to dust. This moment of anger, caused his heart and mind to twist while thinking, just wait until we arrive at an area devoid of people area, then I'll show you my might.

Chapter 47 – You think I’m Dirty?

As Kai Yang and Hu Mei Er’s figures, one in front , one behind, walked into Black Wind Forest, two figures stepped out from behind some trees.

One of the people wore a mask of extreme hatred as he looked at Kai Yang’s receding figure, there was also a light purple colour on his charming face. At one glance, you could tell that he had suffered a beating in these last couple of days.

While the other person’s expression was truly malicious, staring at Hu Mei Er’s swaying hips, a lustful glint flashed through his eyes.

“Junior brother Cheng, you were beaten by those types of people?” The cold and strict face of that youth looked over at Cheng Shao Feng, “Although you have just entered into the initial element stage and as such are somewhat weak you aren’t weak enough to not be his match. That guy looks like he’s only in the tempered body stage.”

Cheng Shao Feng began to defend himself: “I was a bit careless then, and that guy is really strange, for when he started to fight, he disregarded his life completely. As I thrust my sabre out, he actually used his palm to block it and as the sabre pierced through his hand, he didn’t even cry out. Not only did he stop my sabre, he also immobilised one of my arms, and it was because of this that I lost.”

“Oh? This is a bit interesting, only if we were to compete, who would be the fiercer one.”

Cheng Shao Feng followed him laughing: “Of course it’s senior brother Nu Tao

who's stronger, how can he compare to you."

"Have you fully investigated his status yet? We can't provoke or anger any powerful people." Nu Tao asked him carefully.

"I have investigated clearly. This guy in Sky Tower is only a trial disciple with no background whatsoever. Even if you killed someone like this, no one would care."

"Ha ha, trial disciple? According to my knowledge, Sky Tower only has about ten trial disciples right? He's one of those?" Nu Tao kept on laughing like he had heard some extremely good news, for as soon as he heard the two words, trial disciple, all his worries flew away. These people were Sky Tower's disgrace, for him to lay a hand on one or even eliminate one would be him doing Sky Tower Pavilion a favour.

"En. Before I was afraid that people would come here, so I couldn't carelessly attack. Who would have thought that this guy would unexpectedly go into the depths of Black Wind Forest with that slut. This makes things much easier."

Nu Tao laughed incomparably obscenely: "It looks like not only can junior brother obtain his revenge, he also has some luck with women. This is really killing two birds with one stone."

Cheng Shao Feng also started to laugh: "Senior brother, saying those types of words, you are a helper I have called over. So if there are good things, how can this junior brother enjoy them alone? Later, once senior brother has had his fun, then junior brother will partake. Hu Mei Er that ** although she is loose in her morals, she is young, and her body will definitely be fine."

(TL: OKAY, SOMEONE COME AND KILL THESE **** TARDS!!!)

“Junior brother is indeed generous!” Nu Tao was a bit impatient to get started and said: “Let’s go, there’s no time to lose. Let’s quickly catch up to them, and find a good opportunity to strike.”

To these two people, killing Kai Yang was a simple task. While in broad daylight with the sky as their bed, together they could ** Hu Mei Er, this was the thing they looked forward to the most.

As for when the time came, whether or not Hu Mei Er retaliated, they didn’t need to consider it. This ** person, as long as they made her feel pleasure, she would happily want more, so how would she dare to retaliate? In most likelihood, she would only immerse herself in that feeling of forceful and insulting pleasure and stop thinking about anything else.

These two people were not novices and often spent their time away in Black Plum Village’s red light district. Naturally they would know how to satisfy women like Hu Mei Er.

Deep in Black Wind Forest, Kai Yang still was walking and turning around to coldly laugh, Hu Mei Er was still a bit apprehensive. But after seeing Kai Yang repeatedly acting like this, she was no longer scared, not only was she no longer afraid, she had matched Kai Yang’s pace. Intimately she pulled on Kai Yang’s arm and covered his arm with her full and soft chest.

Kai Yang became distracted, but when he remembered this woman’s style, his aroused feelings immediately dissipated.

“What trouble do you want to cause?” Kai Yang was annoyed.

“Accompany me once! In the future, I will no longer bother you!” In all four directions, there was no sign of any humans, and Hu Mei Er didn’t bother to mask the intent behind her words in the slightest. She even dared to say these shameful things!

“Go and dream!”

“Am I not beautiful?” Hu Mei Er’s charming eyes were like silk, “Is my figure not good? Are you not even the slightest bit moved?”

“A woman is defined by her outside and inside traits. Your outside isn’t bad, and your are justified in being proud of it, but your inside is unbearable to look at.” Kai Yang looked at her coldly.

These words were a bit heavy, Hu Mei Er asked, her face down: “You think I’m dirty?”

“Yes!” Kai Yang replied straightforwardly.

Hu Mei Er’s charming face trembled, and she sneered: “You are nothing but a trial disciple in Sky Tower. Although my strength isn’t as high as yours, I am the Blood Group Head’s daughter. The fact that I can take a fancy to you is your good fortune, and yet you unexpectedly can’t see your own good fortune when it’s in front of you! Do you know how many men are outside having ideas about me?”

(TL: Yeah, at least two despicable ones.)

“Then, your royal highness can go find those men. Why is there any need to nag me?” Kai Yang indifferently replied.

“Kai Yang, don’t be shameless when other’s are giving you face! If I return and inform my father that I was humiliated here, even if you are a Sky Tower disciple, you still wouldn’t be able to see tomorrow’s sun.” Hu Mei Er hissed out as cutely as possible. Kai Yang’s attitude, had completely infuriated her, making her face hit rock bottom. After all, her status wasn’t low, how could she have suffered this type of humiliation before?

Kai Yang also coldly laughed: “I dare to ask your royal highness, if I were to kill you right here right now, will you have the opportunity to return and complain?”

Hu Mei Er looked distracted, her rage had made her forget that she was deep in Black Wind Forest, and if Kai Yang really attacked her, she definitely would have no hope of returning alive. Also this was the ideal place to murder someone. In other words, if she really died here, she would have died in vain.

When she thought about this, Hu Mei Er became alert, looking at Kai Yang she urgently retreated a few steps. A trill in her voice, she said: “You’re joking right?”

“There is a limit to my patience.” Kai Yang indifferently replied.

Hu Mei Er rigidly looked at him, her eyes containing her humiliation and fury, but she didn’t dare do anything. She wasn’t sure whether Kai Yang’s words were a joke or not.

While Hu Mei Er was in confusion, Kai Yang suddenly became vigilant and

looked over in a certain direction.

Intentionally or not, Kai Yang moved in front of Hu Mei Er. Looking at a large tree he said: "Come out!"

Hu Mei Er was surprised, but the next moment she understood what was going on.

Two people suddenly came out from behind the tree, and walked over while smilingly coldly. Their laughs were sinisters and strange, one looked at Kai Yang without rest and the other at Hu Mei Er.

(TL: Reveal! Ah, Cheng Shao Feng fancies Kai Yang!)

"Cheng Shao Feng, Nu Tao?" Hu Mei Er clearly recognised them, and cried out their names in suspicion, but in a blink of an eye, she knew the reason why these two people showed themselves here.

This time, it looked like Kai Yang was in some real danger.

Being stared at unrestrainedly by Nu Tao's obscene gaze, caused Hu Mei Er's entire body to feel uncomfortable, and she creased her eyebrows, she moved to further hide behind Kai Yang's body.

"Elder sister Mei Er, come over here. We only want that guy's life, move to the side, so you don't accidently get injured!" Cheng Shao Feng called out from about five to ten feet in front of Kai Yang, as he warned her he slowly drew the sabre hanging at his side.

Nu Tao also spoke up, laughing he said: “That’s right, if you were to get injured, my heart would ache.”

Chapter 48 – Prominent Power

Cheng Shao Feng and Nu Tao had already stated their purpose in coming here, causing Kai Yang to be startled. He never thought that these two people would be so ruthless and heartless; they actually wanted to kill him over a single dispute.

As he vigilantly watched the pair, Hu Mei Er secretly whispered in Kai Yang's ear: "Kai Yang, if you don't want to die, then obey my words. Half a month ago, that Nu Tao advanced to the initial element fifth stage, and is not comparable to Cheng Shao Feng. Not to mention there are two people, you definitely aren't their match."

"You have a method to deal with them?" Kai Yang asked unconvinced.

"I can't deal with them, but they definitely won't have the guts to kill me. As long as you agree to my condition, I can promise you that you won't die."

Hu Mei Er's status was clearly displayed, so if she really wanted to protect Kai Yang, Cheng Shao Feng and Nu Tao wouldn't be able to ignore her and not give her face thus at most they would beat up Kai Yang to vent their anger.

"No need." Kai Yang slowly shook his head.

"You are that unwilling, to the point you would rather die?" Hu Mei Er looked at Kai Yang like she was looking at a retard, disbelief in her eyes.

"I'm sorry to say, I am slightly mysophobic. What's more, who will die or live

will only be determined once fists are exchanged.” Kai Yang calmly looked over the two people opposite him.

Receiving this answer, Hu Mei Er’s face changed irregularly. After a while, she sneered out coldly, biting down with her ivory teeth, bitterly saying: “Since you’ve chosen this way, then follow it through to the end!”

After this was said, she retreated about ten feet back and crossed her arms to watch.

Cheng Shao Feng laughed out loudly: “Elder sister Hu Er is really obedient. I just knew that elder sister Hu Er wouldn’t cause us any inconvenience.”

Hu Mei Er squeezed out an extremely ugly face, and no one knew what she was thinking in her heart.

Nu Tao he he strangely laughed, and sized up Kai Yang from head to toe. Nu Tao cracked his knuckles and slowly shook his head: “You are called Kai Yang right? When you reach the netherworld you must not blame me, for you should blame yourself for meddling in others’ business. Would you like to end it yourself, or shall I do it for you?”

This question was extremely savage, but Kai Yang just smiled: “If you want my life, then use your ability to come and take it!”

As he said this, he secretly started to activate the True Yang Tactics.

Just as the True Yang Tactics were about to activate, Kai Yang already felt a violent feeling from his chest as well as blistering hot energy getting sucked in via

his acupuncture points. Within this blistering hot energy was large amounts of Yang qi. In that moment, Kai Yang's meridians were painfully hot, it was so hot smoke started to emit from his chest, roasting the skin until it turned black.

Kai Yang was greatly alarmed, and before he could respond, his meridians which were experiencing searing pain adapted and the large amount of Yang qi continued flowing into his meridians.

It took literally the blink of an eye, his meridians became packed to the brim with Yang World Qi, swelling non-stop.

Drip drip.....it was like movement from the depths of his soul, and within his dantian there unexpectedly was one more Yang Liquid drop.

A short while later, another drip sound was heard.

In the span of three breaths, two drops of Yang Liquid were formed. Just what was the matter with that third drop, for as soon as it condensed, it disappeared.

Only after that moment did the violent surge of Yang qi stop.

Bright Yang Stone! Thinking about it, Kai Yang took out that Bright Yang Stone which had cost him the bottle of small returning pellets. But how could this stone, which was previously filled to the brim with Yang energy manage to retain its former glory? Inside, not even a trickle of energy remained; it had actually been fully absorbed by him in that short period of time.

In the end, it only condensed two drops of Yang Liquid! It was only that one of these drops had disappeared, confusing Kai Yang. Including the original drop

within his dantian, there were only two drops.

This absorption rate.....isn't it a bit too fast? It was basically force feeding, not even allowing him to have any reaction.

Kai Yang's transformation was seen by Cheng Shao Feng and Nu Tao. Kai Yang's change within his chest area caused them to become at a bit of a loss, but with Nu Tao's battle experience, he immediately waved his hand and said: "Junior brother Cheng, follow me and advance. I'm afraid things have changed."

"Okay." The earlier Kai Yang died the better was how Cheng Shao Feng felt. With no hesitation, he carried his long sabre and rushed forward, his face a cruel mask.

Two people, side by side, they were like a storm and in the blink of an eye, they arrived in front of Kai Yang.

Nu Tao's strength really was higher by a level, so his speed was also faster. His fist flew forward covered in World Qi, suddenly charging straight for Kai Yang's face

Initial element fifth stage, they would have already amassed quite a decent amount of World Qi, a martial practitioner's battle prowess could not be underestimated.

The fist that Nu Tao threw out caused a faint whistling sound, clearly displaying the fact that he was using some sort of martial skill.

Kai Yang didn't dodge and also threw out a fist.

“Peng” it sounded out and Kai Yang’s wrist bone rang from the impact, while his fist felt like it was cut up by hundreds of razors. In a second, numerous cuts appeared, and he couldn’t help but retreat a few steps.

Though Nu Tao cried out oddly, for he felt that he had struck a blazing hot piece of iron. His skin and flesh were all burned painfully and he screamed out: “Such hot World Qi!”

With his initial element fifth stage strength, he was unable to defend against a martial practitioner who was at the tempered body stage’s attack. This was really a bit strange.

When these two people traded fists, each one had retreated a few steps.

Holding his sabre, Cheng Shao Feng joined the fray, his desire for vengeance raging, as he thrust towards Kai Yang, determined to cut him down then and there.

After experiencing Nu Tao’s attack, all of Kai Yang’s blood had started to boil and from his bones, a warm feeling started to seep out; it felt like he had an inexhaustible supply of power. As his eyes slowly turned red, his original gentle looking face became malevolent and berzerk.

Facing Cheng Shao Feng’s sabre, Kai Yang used one hand to catch it.

Cheng Shao Feng sneered: “I have already learnt from last time. Do you really think that this young master would really trip over in the same place twice?”

As he said this, he swept his sabre to cut off Kai Yang's fingers. Kai Yang's reaction wasn't slow. Sensing that the opponent's blade was changing directions he changed his hand into a grabbing hold.

"Pu", the long sabre still managed to chop off one of Kai Yang's fingers, causing Cheng Shao Feng's face to blossom in elation. Hu Mei Er covered her mouth, extremely disturbed, but when she remembered Kai Yang's attitude to her, she thought that he should be hacked into pieces.

"How could this be?" Cheng Shao Feng cried out in fear, for he realised that he hadn't actually severed Kai Yang's fingers. Although it wasn't an immortal weapon it was still a sharp weapon, could a tempered body stage martial practitioner's body be this strong? Even if it were someone at the initial element stage, their fingers would be severed.

Kai Yang laughed maliciously, revealing his row of eerily white teeth and looked at him with his blood coloured eyes. Cheng Shao Feng was feeling somewhat panicky now, so while he hurriedly retreated, he also shouted out loudly: "Senior brother Nu, save me!"

Before the words had left his mouth, Kai Yang had already pursued him and a drop of Yang Liquid within his dantian started to move through his will, into his fingertips.

Pointing out, he went straight for the middle of Cheng Shao Feng's head.

Cheng Shao Feng opened his mouth widely and ceased to breathe, falling to the ground. On his forehead there was a hole about the size of a chopstick penetrating through his skull. The hole was very smooth and slick, in fact not even a drop of blood flowed out. Eyes wide open, his dying expression was one

without any trace of his previous grievance.

“Ah!” Two cries of alarm simultaneously rang out. They originated from Nu Tao and Hu Mei Er who had witnessed the startling scene.

Translator Ramblings :

Q: Are you a girl?

A: Yes

Q: How old are you?

A: 16 and a half years (yes really, I am that old)

Q: Do Erza stand for Erza Scarlet from Fairy Tail? What made you TL chinese novels? What is the best wuxia/xianxia novel you read so far?

A: Yes, Erza does stand for Erza Scarlet from Fairy Tail. Erza is just too badass and powerful. What started me was when I first started to help edit the chapters, then with a help of some online chinese-english, I realised I could translate them. I mean, I can speak and listen to it, it was just that I never really learnt how to read and write, but if I'm given the pinyin I can understand it perfectly. Hehe. And what is the best What is the best wuxia/xianxia novel you read so far? Hmmm, that's a hard question because it was previously CD, but that ending.....Though if I were to pick, it would be MP, jks. It's actually TDG, as much how bastard-y Ne Li is right now, the concepts are very interesting and exciting. Though my favourite character would definitely be Duan Jian, liked the guy from the moment he appeared. And my facebook? Here.....

Hehehe. Now, how old are you Zero? And what's your favourite wuxia/xianxia novel you read so far? All you other readers please comment and share your opinions too. Now, it's getting late for me so I'm off to bed, 12-ish am.....

Chapter 49 – Victory

Cheng Shao Feng died! With no warning, he died just like that under Kai Yang's hand.

Last time when Kai Yang had fought with the Storm House disciples, Hu Mei Er had watched from start to finish. So although she knew that Kai Yang's power was great, she hadn't thought that he would be as strong as this just a few days after the previous fight after !

Initial element first stage Cheng Shao Feng, he had only faced Kai Yang for a few moments and died from a single poke to the head!

What martial skill was that? How could there be such a powerful martial skill? The hole in Cheng Shao Feng's forehead alluded to the fact the skill utilised a strong yang attributed qi in some manner to burn through the skull.

At this point, Hu Mei Er's heart was in a state of panic, for when she learned of Kai Yang's thunder-like murder methods, she finally knew that Kai Yang's previous words were no joke.

He really dared to kill others, whilst also having the ability to do so!

Nu Tao was also very shocked, for he had just exchanged one fist with Kai Yang and before he could commence his second attack, his junior brother had died in front of him. This unforeseen accident really made him flabbergasted.

"You actually killed junior brother Cheng!" Nu Tao shrieked, "What method did

you use!”

(TL: Well you did threaten to kill him. I vote self-defence.)

That single finger’s power was far too tyrannical, it was definitely some extremely rare martial skill. Nu Tao was a bit afraid, afraid that even he would be unable to resist that technique.

“You also need to die!” Kai Yang knew that to destroy the branch, he must destroy the root. The reason why these two people followed him here was because they wanted to kill him. To this these types of enemies, how could Kai Yang possibly be lenient.

The circumstances now were different to before, last time it was a group fight, so Kai Yang’s hand would naturally be more lenient. But currently, these two people wanted his life, to these enemies he mustn’t be merciful, otherwise he was just asking to die later.

Seeing Kai Yang hurriedly charge over, Nu Tao suddenly laughed out maliciously: “Don’t bluff, come and get it!”

As he shouted, he threw out two fists to greet Kai Yang. The opponent was only at the tempered body stage, so how much World Qi could they possibly store inside them? The martial attack just then was extremely powerful, so it should have used quite a lot of his World Qi. In other words, he couldn’t possibly use that type of method again.

That’s why Nu Tao had nothing to fear!

When those fists collided, Nu Tao knew that he had made a mistake. This Kai Yang could still use his World Qi, and every time they collided, he could feel a blistering hot energy seeping out from Kai Yang's fist. This energy caused Nu Tao to shrivel up, although he was at a higher stage of cultivation than Kai Yang, he was unable to suppress him.

Nu Tao came up with many countermeasures, jumping from left to right, he didn't dare confront Kai Yang straight up. He only wanted to prolong the fight until Kai Yang used up all of his World Qi, and at that moment, it would be like Kai Yang was a fish on a chopping board.

Nu Tao's tactics and thoughts weren't wrong, to deal with ordinary tempered body stage disciples this method was the most effective, allowing one to suffer the least in return for taking down the opponent. But Kai Yang was different, for he had just fully absorbed all of the Bright Yang Stone's Yang qi and his meridians were brimming with energy. If things really continued, it would possibly be Nu Tao who ran out of strength first.

Very soon, the fight became unfavourable for Nu Tao.

At the beginning, Kai Yang truly acted like a typical martial practitioner at the tempered body stage. Regardless of his fists, or power, although they were stronger than a typical tempered body stage practitioner, the strength he displayed didn't go past that of a tempered body stage practitioner. But as time went on, as various types of wounds started to appear on his body, Kai Yang's strength started to climb up bit by bit. Each fist was faster than the last, his strength also grew stronger and stronger, but the most fearsome aspect wasn't either of these, but rather that the blistering hot energy his fists released was growing stronger and more abundant.

It appeared that as the fight drew on Kai Yang's strength rapidly grew in

relation to the passing of time and the injuries he sustained.

What was going on? When a martial practitioner battled, as time went on and the more World Qi they used, a martial practitioner would only become weaker and weaker. How could it possibly be the complete opposite?

In the time to took to drink a cup of tea, it became harder and harder for Nu Tao to dodge and escape Kai Yang's attacks. With one failed dodge, he was punched in the stomach by Kai Yang.

This fist caused Nu Tao to be unable to breathe, and the fiery energy that invaded his body was also quite ferocious as it wrecked havoc.

Looking at the blood red eyed Kai Yang, Nu Tao began to consider retreat!

With a feint move, Nu Tao retreated and sped far away, and while he gasped for breath he howled out: "Kai Yang, since you have killed junior brother Cheng, you are doomed!"

Initial element fifth stage, even if they couldn't defeat the enemy, if they wanted to escape, their opponent couldn't do anything. And of this, Nu Tao was highly confident, because in the previous battle he had discovered that Kai Yang didn't cultivate any bodily martial skill.

If Nu Tao wanted to run, Kai Yang couldn't block him and could only helplessly watched as he ran away. But suddenly Kai Yang thought of an idea, and the last drop of Yang Liquid within his dantian winked out and zoomed to his fingertips.

Shortly after Kai Yang reached out with his other hand and pulled on his fingers

and a sensational scene appeared.

This drop of Yang Liquid, in the blink of an eye morphed into a blood red blade as thin as cicada wing. Just as the blade was formed, under Kai Yang's urgings, it flew out.

"Sou" it sounded, a graceful red colour pierced the air and embedded itself into Nu Tao's back.

Nu Tao's running figure immediately became rigid, and with a pu tong, he fell to the ground.

The silence of the forest was broken by a songbird's cry, meanwhile Kai Yang gasped for breath, his whole body battered and exhausted.

Hu Mui Er's pair of legs trembled, her entire body ice-cold, even her heart was cold. She had never left, waiting for the moment when Kai Yang couldn't take it anymore and had to ask for her help and then she would be able to achieve her own goal.

But no matter what, she would have never imagined that those two Storm House disciples who had come to kill Kai Yang, would be killed by Kai Yang instead.

These two people were both at the initial element stage, one at the first stage and the other at the fifth stage. Together they battled against a tempered body stage practitioner, Kai Yang, and in the end not only did they lose, they also paid with their lives.

All of this seemed too unreal, too mind baffling.

Suddenly, Hu Mei Er's face became startled. She saw Kai Yang turn his head over to face her with an expression that looked like he wanted to eat her. Within his eyes, glinted a deep and murderous light.

Hu Mei Er unconsciously retreated a few steps.

"If you dare move, then die!" Kai Yang's icy-cold voice travelled over.

"I won't move....." Within Hu Mei Er's voice was sounds of sobbing, a warm wet patch appeared on her lower abdomen, in that moment she had forgotten all her manners.

She really was scared, and she wasn't certain whether or not Kai Yang really wanted to kill her. In life or death, what could she, a young lady do?

Kai Yang no longer paid her any attention, but went to Cheng Shao Feng and Nu Tao's side to take their possessions. In a moment, Kai Yang had found some tael and two bottles of immortality pills.

Two bottles of immortality pills couldn't be considered a lot, but they were still worth something.

It wasn't a loss! It was just a shame, for he had been forced to expend those hard earned drops of Yang Liquid, leaving his dantian empty. After this great battle, the Yang World Qi within his meridians had been consumed to such a degree that just a bit less than half remained.

“Are you short of money?” As Hu Mei Er saw Kai Yang looting the two corpses, she mustered up her courage to speak out. “I can give you money, as long as you don’t kill me.”

Looking at Hu Mei Er who still dared to flirt, is she showing off her beauty? Even when she spoke, it was cautiously and carefully.

Kai Yang enthusiastically looked at her: “It’s not like I am a bandit, what will I do with your money? If I lack money, I will earn it myself!”

Chapter 50 – Disposing the corpse

Hu Mei Er didn't dare to continue speaking, too many words may result in losses, afraid to offend Kai Yang.

"You come over here!" Kai Yang suddenly beckoned her over, Hu Mei Er delicately trembled, her tears threatening to spill. Tightly she bit her lip, begging Kai Yang with all her heart and didn't dare to move a single step.

"What are you afraid of? I told you to come over, so come over!" Kai Yang called out impatiently.

Helpless and left without a choice, Hu Mei Er could only walk to Kai Yang. Slowly she walked over to him, and stopped when she was around five steps away from him, looking at him alarmingly.

Sensing her fear, Kai Yang found it ridiculous, but he still kept his face the same: "Be obedient and I won't hurt you."

His indifferent tone carried an overbearing feeling.

Hu Mei Er used all her strength to nod her head: "I will listen."

"En." Only then was Kai Yang satisfied. Bending down, he carried Nu Tao's corpse over his shoulder and looked over to Cheng Shao Feng's body: "You, bring him!"

Although she felt nauseous, Hu Mei Er didn't dare disobey his order. Kneeling

down as if she was wronged, she went to pick up Cheng Shao Feng's corpse. Although she was a female, she was after all a martial practitioner and carrying one hundred jin or so wasn't really a burden.

(TLN: Jin is about half a kilogram [0.5 kg])

"Follow me." Looking in a certain direction, Kai Yang went to walk deeper into Black Wind Forest.

Hu Mei Er didn't know what he wanted do nor did she dare to ask and thus she could only blindly follow him.

Kai Yang wanted to dispose of the corpses. This place was already quite desolate, but he didn't know which cheating couple might have a bit of courage and rendezvous with another here.

The causes of death for Cheng Shao Feng and Nu Tao were very special, they were both killed by a boiling hot energy that had directly pierced through their vitals. If Storm House investigated their deaths utilising this information as a basis, perhaps it might lead them to him.

So Kai Yang must throw the corpses far away, making sure that Storm House's people would never find them.

Two people, one in front and the other behind, walked deeper in the forest. Hu Mei Er hesitated many times, but in the end decided not to speak out.

After a while, a lake suddenly appeared in front of them. Kai Yang's eyes shined and he decided it shall be here.

Kai Yang signalled to Hu Mei Er to put down the corpses, and Kai Yang went to search for two big stones. When he returned, he tied these stones to Cheng Shao Feng and Nu Tao's corpses and threw them into the lake.

Brushing his hands, Kai Yang muttered for a while: "You can now be considered my accomplice, and you should know how to act right?"

Finished, he turned around to look at her dismissively.

With that said, Hu Mei Er was not surprised and repeatedly nodded her head: "I know."

The fact that Kai Yang could say these words meant that he had no evil intentions regarding her, guaranteeing her life. Hu Mei Er's heart and mind relaxed and she involuntarily gasped.

"Smart. Smart young girls will always be liked by others." Kai Yang laughed out lightly.

Now that he thought about it, Kai Yang really didn't know how to deal with Hu Mei Er because if he didn't kill her, she would always be a dangerous element. Today's events were all witnessed by her, however if he killed her, he just wasn't able to do it. From start to finish, Hu Mei Er did not injure him at all, she only stood to the side and watched. It couldn't be because of this, he had to kill her? That was a bit too unreasonable.

After walking for such a long time, Kai Yang had thought it through. This entire affair was completely spurred on by Cheng Shao Feng and Nu Tao and if he

didn't kill them, then he would be just sitting and waiting for his own death. So even if Hu Mei Er spread news regarding this event, Kai Yang wasn't the least bit afraid.

"Have you killed a lot of people?" Hu Mei Er was much more courageous now she thought her life was safe.

Kai Yang shook his head: "It's my first time killing someone."

"But I saw that your strikes were very experienced, and when you killed them, you didn't even crease your brows. It did not look like it was your first time." Hu Mei Er said, unconvinced.

With that said, Kai Yang wrinkled his forehead. That was true, it was his first time killing someone, why wasn't he the least bit afraid? Although he didn't feel any excitement, he definitely felt no fear. Back then, he was only focused on the battle, and his brain only thought about killing them, now when he thought about it, it was all a bit inconceivable.

"Whether or not you believe me is up to you." Kai Yang didn't bother explaining any further.

Circling around the lake, he walked to the place furthest away from the location he had dropped the corpses. There, Kai Yang stopped in his steps and dived head first into the lake.

During the course of this battle, Kai Yang had received no small amount of wounds, he needed to at least wash himself clean before returning.

Hu Mei Er stood at the lakeside waiting, while thinking about going in too. If it was before, she would definitely have gone in to provoke Kai Yang, but now she didn't have the guts.

Waiting until he finished his bath and came back up, Hu Mei Er finally spoke: "Wait for me a bit, I also want to go wash." Having carried that dead body for such a long journey, Hu Mei Er felt uncomfortable all over.

Women would always love cleanliness.

"Okay." Kai Yang replied while wringing dry his clothes, before going to lie on a stone to bask under the sun and recover his strength.

Not daring to undress, Hu Mei Er directly dove into the lake and her body, as graceful as a fish in water, was completely visible. From time to time, she would secretly look back to see if Kai Yang was looking at her, but he didn't even have ** to look at her. This was a great blow to Hu Mei Er.

He wasn't the least bit moved?

After a good half an hour, Hu Mei Er had finally washed herself clean and came ashore.

** clothes stuck closely to her body, her exquisite and alluring figure was fully revealed. Forthrightly, she walked over to Kai Yang's side with her cheeks bright red and sat down to bask in the sun with him.

Kai Yang opened his eyes to look at her, his gaze sweeping all over her, Hu Mei Er kept her head lowered.

“Figure is really good.” Kai Yang mumbled, nodding his head.

Hu Mei Er nibbled her dark red lips, her expression incomprehensible: “Actually.....I haven’t really done those types of things with a man, to the point that the only men that has touched my body.....is you alone. These past few years, the only reason why I act like I do is one, to help the group recruit a couple more talented people and two to strain the relationship between the Sky Tower and Storm House disciples. To nag had also become one of my motives.”

Hearing this, Kai Yang stared blankly at her before looking deeply at her.

“You don’t believe?” Hu Mei Er’s cheeks were very red, this secret she had never told anyone before. Outside people truly thought she playing away each night, exhausting men. On the outside, calling her princess, my lady, but behind her back they called her slut, **.

“I believe!” Kai Yang nodded his head, “But how is this related to me?”

Hu Mei Er’s face darkened as she forced a smile: “In the future, I will no longer come to pester you.”

This afternoon’s event, the impact it had on her was a bit too big.

Hearing her say this, Kai Yang couldn’t help but feel his heart relax, for he had finally gotten rid of this inconvenience.

Waiting until Hu Mei Er’s clothes had dried, only then did the two leave the

lakeside.

To avoid other's eyes and ears, Kai Yang and Hu Mei Er parted ways early on, each returning their own sect.

After he returned to his wooden hut, he rested for a while before going to Coiling Dragon Stream. This great battle had exhausted his hard earned Yang Liquid. Naturally he must quickly replenish his Yang World Qi, otherwise when he experiences this type of situations again, he would have no way to deal with it.

Not only did he consume two drops, the power roused Kai Yang's determination greatly, for he would never have imagined that the Yang Liquid's might would be so formidable. He was only at the tempered body eight stage, if his cultivation was higher, wouldn't the Yang Liquid's might be even more powerful? No matter the reason, Kai Yang was itching to begin his training again.

Chapter 51 – The seed's mutation

Arriving at Coiling Dragon Stream, Kai Yang sat down and prepared to start his training but suddenly thought of something.

Hands searching his pockets, after feeling around for a long time, from his chest he took out a seed. This seed was the one given to him when he had brought the Bright Yang Stone from the Blood Group booth's owner.

It was said to be some earth grade lower level Three Sun's Fruit's seed.

Kai Yang wanted to plant it, even though he didn't know how many years it would take for it to bear fruit, it wouldn't take much energy. Also, there were abundant amounts of Yang Qi in the surrounding area which undoubtedly made it the most suitable place to plant this fruit.

But just as he took out the seed, Kai Yang felt there was something wrong.

Earlier in the day when he saw this seed, he didn't see or sense any abnormalities within it. It only had a faint, almost imperceptible, trace of Yang qi within it.

But currently, the seed had become bright red and translucent, like a red gemstone. Holding it in his hand, Kai Yang could feel the seedling emitting a steady pulse.

It was like.....It was like a human's beating heart, surging with vitality.

Not to mention that the seed currently held a much larger amount of Yang qi when compared to earlier.

He was in a daze for a good while before waking up from that stupor! He had finally realised where that third drop of Yang Liquid from within his dantian had disappeared off to.

Clearly it had been absorbed by this seed! If this was not the case, how could this ordinary seed possibly undergo a one hundred and eighty degree change in just a few hours? One drop of Yang Liquid, if there were no outside influences helping, it would take Kai Yang several days of hard work to condense.

Kai Yang nearly went to reabsorb the Yang Qi within that seed!

Despite thinking about it, Kai Yang didn't do it. This seed had clearly undergone a huge change, so if he went to plant it, what type of fruit would it bear?

A youngster's curiosity and thirst for ** knowledge was incomparable. It was just like the curiosity Kai Yang held regarding the changes a precious drop of Yang Liquid would have on the seed.

Carefully considering it, Kai Yang started to move and first went to find a patch of relatively soft earth. Carefully, he dug a hole to put the seed inside and then went to find some water to water it.

After this task as completed, Kai Yang then sat down to activate his True Yang Tactics.

He doesn't yet know whether or not this drop of Yang Liquid he has invested in

the tree will be worthwhile.

The night passed by, after training all night he could clearly feel that his absorption speed had become faster again. Thanks to training all night, the Yang Qi within his meridians was replenished.

By his estimation, it would take another two-three days before he could condense another drop of Yang Liquid. Compared to the time it took to condense his drop, his cultivation was far more efficient now.

The morning of the second day, Kai Yang practised the tempered body record for half an hour.

The tempered body record's training, he had never skipped a single day of it. The only thing that he needed to do every day, apart from sweeping the grounds, was practising the tempered body piece, he would also go find a junior disciple to bully a bit to earn some contribution points while the rest of his time was spent non-stop training.

Half an hour later, Kai Yang stopped his work! By accident he walked to the place where he had planted that Three Sun's Fruit seed yesterday evening and when he saw it, he couldn't help but be startled.

(TL: opop seed growth~:D)

On that patch of soft soil, grew a foot long sapling! The sapling was slender with plump and tender looking leaves along with a slender stem with dark red veins faintly crisscrossing it. Although the sapling was small, it possessed vitality that could not be ignored, trying to break free of the shackles of earth that were

binding it, in order to mature.

It's not right? Kai Yang thought his brain wasn't working properly. Only one night had passed, yet the Three Sun's Fruit Tree had already grown this big? For a moment, Kai Yang even thought that he had lost track of time and more than a few days had past already.

Thinking carefully, he realised this couldn't be, for the Yang Qi within his body had not increased by a large amount, signalling that only one night had passed. Could all of this be caused by that drop of Yang Liquid that had seeped into the seed?

This was quite likely, within Kai Yang's knowledge was information that said the Yang Liquid's use was plentiful and enormous and it didn't say it could only be used in battle.

If it really was the Yang Liquid that caused the seed's mutation, it could explain the scene before his eyes.

In one night, it had grown a foot, so after a couple more days, could it bear fruit? Thinking about this, Kai Yang's spirits rose, for the Three Sun's Fruit was an earth grade lower level spirit fruit and was a priceless treasure that could greatly aid his cultivation of the True Yang Tactics. One of these fruits would definitely be able to equal at least several days of practise.

When he thought of this, Kai Yang thought that his investment was priceless. What he currently needed to do was to wait for confirmation and see how many days it would take for this fruit tree to blossom.

This was next to Coiling Dragon Stream, and ordinarily no one would pass by. Kai Yang had cultivated here for many days, and apart from meeting that eleventh elder, he had not seen another. That's why he wasn't too afraid that this fruit tree would be discovered by others.

Returning to the wooden hut, Kai Yang wanted to complete his assigned work for today. But after looking around for a while, he still couldn't find his broom, making him puzzled.

After waiting for a while, a sweating Sky Tower disciple came back and in his hands was Kai Yang's broom.

Kai Yang also recognised this person, he was one of the people who was part of Su Mu's group and was at the tempered body fifth stage. He was called **.

(TL: gg author, couldn't come up with a name so named them **.)

Seeing Kai Yang standing there, ** immediately walked up: "Senior brother, you have returned?"

"En, what did junior brother Zheng go to do? Why did you take my broom too?"

** laughed: "I went to help you sweep and from now on you no longer need to worry about such trifles. From our group of disciples, everyday one of us will come and complete this task for you, so you can concentrate solely on your training."

(TL: srsly, ** is getting bad, he even names him then goes back to **.)

“This isn’t too good.” As Kai Yang listened, he swiftly waved his hands, although sweeping wasn’t too important, it used a lot of energy. If it wasn’t because he wanted to remain in Sky Tower, he would have long since resigned from this job. But as a trial disciple, if he didn’t go receive some work to do, he wouldn’t be able to survive in Sky Tower.

** said: “What is senior brother saying, us junior brothers should definitely help you. Last time, if it wasn’t for you teaching Cheng Shao Feng and them a lesson, our anger really wouldn’t be vented. Not to mention, there are many of us, if one person came each day in rotation, each person would only come here twice or thrice a month. There will no longer be any need for senior brother to wake up early each morning, and waste his time like this. Senior brother don’t go refusing, think of our junior brother’s faces, allow us to do this. But if you truly despise this, then forget it.”

If it was presented in such a way, could Kai Yang really decline? Promptly he said: “Then I shall ask this of my fellow junior brothers. Junior brother Zheng, please come inside to drink some water.”

“No need, young master Su issued an order that everyone must cultivate bitterly. If anyone dares to slack off, they won’t be fellow brothers. I will leave now. Senior brother you must also work hard.” As ** said this, he put down the broom and jogged out.

Looking at his back, Kai Yang’s heart warmed up, saving Su Mu that day was a good decision. This person was a true villain, if you obstruct him once, he would obstruct you ten times.

It looks like he would no longer need to worry about wasting his time sweeping

the grounds. Happy, Kai Yang walked out and went to catch a disciple at the tempered body seventh-eighth stage. He cupped his hands: “Junior brother, please enlighten me!”

That person’s face immediately became bitter: “Senior brother Kai.....there are many others, why did you choose me of all people?”

These days, Kai Yang went out to duel every day and had long since fought his way to fame. Now, Sky Tower disciples that were at the tempered body stage, when they saw Kai Yang they would be afraid. He was no longer the treasure that lost every battle, giving out free contribution points, the current him had already won countless consecutive battles. Not only this, he had won each battle cleanly.

Chapter 52 – A worthwhile investment

To this bittermelon faced disciple, Kai Yang laughed: “Now, now don’t be nervous, I am only intending to earn a few contribution points. Rest assured, I will be very light with my hits and promise that you will feel no lasting pain.”

Ten breaths later, this disciple fell onto the ground and Kai Yang turned around and left.

Xia Ning Chang stood in the top of a tree watching everything that had just happened. Her eyes narrowed into crescents, a faint, faint smile on her lips as she watched this disciple who once lost one hundred and forty seven times, slowly rise in power. This caused herself to give birth to a sense of accomplishment. Although Kai Yang’s improvement had nothing to do with her, she had watched for over two years and long gotten used to watching this disciple. This could also be called being a silent guardian, with Kai Yang becoming stronger, Xia Ning Chang also felt very happy.

Next to Coiling Dragon Stream, Kai Yang was once again training. It had been five days since the Three Sun’s Fruit seed had been planted and it had already grown to ten feet; practically everyday there was an obvious change. At this very moment, the Three Suns’ Fruit Tree was swaying with the wind, while three bright red flowers were in full bloom. It shouldn’t take more than a few more days for these to bear fruit.

At that time, Kai Yang would be able to heartily indulge himself.

And in these past couple of days, Kai Yang’s training had been quite fruitful. Within his dantian, another drop of Yang Liquid had been condensed and the True Yang Tactics had once again advanced.

With his daily sweeping completed by others, Kai Yang had a lot more time to train.

Also during this time, Kai Yang had been making various discreet inquiries for news regarding Storm House, for he had killed Cheng Shao Feng and Niu Tao. There was no guarantee that trouble wouldn't arise, but what relieved Kai Yang was that Storm House didn't take any action. It looked like Hu Mei Er didn't betray him.

That woman, was actually worthy of his trust!

The eighth day of the month soon came and he could finally get a total sum of his accumulated contribution points.

The eighth day of the previous month, he had just gotten the golden body and back then, he was only at the tempered body third stage. In one measly month, he had actually reached the tempered body eighth stage. This type of training speed, in this world no one could match it, even those so called earth shaking geniuses with their high-class elixirs aiding them couldn't train with such speed.

Walking into the Contribution Hall, Treasurer Meng who was slouching behind the counter suddenly narrowed his eyes. He looked at Kai Yang surprised, he hadn't seen him recently and Kai Yang's strength had increased by a lot, a lot.

His surprise lasted only a moment before Treasurer Meng regained his composure. It wasn't something he had never seen before, for he was also to see everyone in Sky Tower in his Contribution Hall. Thus, Kai Yang's increase in strength wouldn't make him too astonished. A youngster's growth period was dazzling and bright, so in the end, he had seen scenes like this one too many

times.

“Treasurer Meng.” Kai Yang called out in greeting.

“Come to exchange some things?” Old man Meng looked up and down.

“En. This month I should have fifty nine contribution points right?”

Sweeping the grounds would give him ten points, while each duel would give two points. There were three days that he wasn't in the school, so he had battled a total of twenty seven times, but last time when he was drinking with Su Mu and got caught by that Dark Hall disciple he had been fined five points. Taking all of this into account, it should come to a total of fifty nine contribution points.

“That's right. What do you want to exchange them for?”

“Twenty nine Dead Jedi Tree Grasses and thirty Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flowers.” It had been quite some time since he had used the incense burner, mainly because he lacked the required herbs. This provided no assistance to training his World Qi, but training his body in the tempered body stage was a wondrous opportunity.

Old man Meng looked at Kai Yang with a gaze full of puzzlement, before walking to the back hall. Wrapping up Kai Yang's desired items, he came back out.

Just as Kai Yang reached out his hands to accept the package, Treasurer Meng took back the package and asked: “Little Kai Yang, can you tell me, what thing

did you eat when you went into Black Wind Mountains?”

He was still interested in Kai Yang’s good fortune.

Kai Yang spoke a mouthful of nonsense: “I don’t really know. It was a beautiful red coloured fruit. Since I was hungry, I ate it.”

“Red coloured fruit.....red coloured fruit.....” Old man Meng sank deep into his thoughts, but he couldn’t think of the corresponding spirit fruit.

After a good while, Treasurer Meng shook his head: “Never mind. Aren’t you going to save up your contribution points so you can exchange them for Essence Developer Pills?”

The old Kai Yang, he would carefully calculate and ponder each usage of his contribution points, he was always stingy with them. But now, he was quite generous when it came to spending them, as soon as they entered his account he used them. This was very unlike him.

Kai Yang smiled: “I won’t exchange for Essence Developer Pills anymore, for only one’s hard work will make one strong. To put all my hopes on an immortal pill, my gaze was far too narrow.”

Hearing this, Treasurer Meng looked at him deeply. Smiling, he nodded his head: “Not bad, not bad. The fact that you are able to understand this point has surpassed this old man’s expectations. Little Kai Yang, let this old man give you a word of advice.”

“Please say it Treasurer Meng!”

“Work hard, do not waste your stroke of good fortune!”

“This disciple has received it!”

Leaving the Contribution Hall, Kai Yang sprinted back to Coiling Dragon Stream.

Calling out the incense burner, putting the herbs inside, Kai Yang started to practise his punches and kicks. A familiar pressure descended, this pressure was definitely something Kai Yang, with his current strength, could take. In a short while, Kai Yang was gasping for breath, his body weary, but he did not give up and continued to slowly throw out punches and kicks. Each motion was incomparably hard, his strength quickly leaked away, his mental energy depleted; he had exhausted himself by pushing to the limit.

A while later, Kai Yang could no longer endure, he fell head first to the ground.

Forcing himself into a sitting position, he activated the True Yang Tactics, restoring his strength and mind.

Originally he thought that the incense burner would have no effect on the development of World Qi, but now he knew he was wrong. Under the effects of that perfume, there was like a seal on the qi within his meridians, causing it to circulate one centimeter at a time, causing one to feel a sense of helplessness.

The perfume obstructed the movement of his Yang World Qi, causing his cultivation speed to greatly slow down.

Kai Yang was in no hurry to recall the burner, and instead decided to analyse it. He felt that this incense burner didn't just assist the development of one's body at the tempered body stage, it was a marvelous object, it wouldn't be a waste of time to examine it for a bit.

With the assistance of the incense burner, Kai Yang's body grew stronger day by day, but the efficiency of the True Yang Tactics had been greatly reduced. The absorption speed of Yang Qi had been reduced by a large amount. After two-three days of training, he had hardly absorbed any.

Could this incense burner really hinder the development of World Qi? Experimenting for two-three days, Kai Yang felt a bit hungry for qi.

If this really was the case, then the incense burner's worth would be greatly diminished.

Helplessly, Kai Yang could only choose to recall the incense burner as he recovered to avoid further impacting his World Qi. This sadly increased his recovery time.

Once again exhausted, Kai Yang recalled the incense burner into the black book.

Starting to cultivate the True Yang Tactics, Kai Yang's expression suddenly changed, carefully he felt his body.

At that moment, the corners of Kai Yang's mouth twitched upwards into a smile. The speed of his World Qi in his meridians was one times faster.

The faster the World Qi revolved, the quicker he absorbed Yang Qi. If it was during a battle, the killing potential of his attacks would be stronger.

So it was like this! The incense burner's impact with regard to his World Qi was not one of obstruction, but one of benefit.

The World Qi within him had adapted to the pressure from the perfume, so without the perfume's pressure, it would naturally revolve faster than before. This like how if a person got used to carrying a three thousand jin stone and it was suddenly exchange for a three hundred jin stone, then their steps would much faster.

This was the same concept.

Understanding this point, Kai Yang started to laugh.

In the short term, the incense would only hinder Kai Yang's True Yang Tactics, but in the long term, this obstruction would result in great benefits and rewards. All in all this was a worthwhile investment!

Chapter 53 – Tempered body ninth stage

Ten days later, the Three Sun's Fruit seed had finally ripened and quietly produced the Three Sun's Fruit! Dark red, they hung off the branches, enticing people to come and eat them.

From these fruits, Kai Yang was able to sense a rich amount of Yang Qi.

A insignificant ten days, actually allowed these earth grade lower class spirit fruits to ripen; when the melon is ripe, it will fall. That one drop of Yang Liquid was far too potent.

Cautiously he reached out to pluck one of these Three Sun's Fruit. Holding it within his hands, Kai Yang played with it for a while, feeling really happy.

But no matter how enticing this thing was, he would need to eat it for it to have an effect.

Kai Yang didn't hesitate. Sitting down cross legged, he threw the Three Sun's Fruit directly into his mouth. Biting down, the sweet, fragrant fruit's flavour burst out, starting from the tip of his tongue and then traveling throughout the rest of his mouth, leaving an alluring fragrance behind.

The spirit fruit entered his stomach and the True Yang Tactics started to revolve. His stomach felt like it was on fire, but to Kai Yang who was cultivating the True Yang Tactics, this temperature was the most comfortable, it even caused him feel relaxed.

The Yang World Qi hidden within the earth grade lower class spirit fruit quickly flowed into his meridians. Filling up his meridians instantly, drip drip it sounded out and a drop of Yang Liquid condensed quietly.

A short while later, another soft and crisp sound rang.

In the end, it had condensed three drops of Yang Liquid before this earth grade lower class spirit fruit's energy disappeared.

Within his dantian, there were now four drops of Yang Liquid. While three drops were newly condensed with the aid of the spirit fruit, with the remaining drop the result of ten days of hard cultivating by Kai Yang.

With the incense burner's obstruction, these ten days of cultivation had been dark and tiring, but Kai Yang didn't really mind. How could he care about this petty thing at this point?

Moreover, Kai Yang held a faint premonition that if he ate the remaining two spirit fruits, then he could possibly breakthrough into the tempered body ninth stage, touching the doors of the initial element stage.

With this thought in his heart, without the slightest hesitation, Kai Yang ate the remaining two Three Sun's Fruit.

The Yang World Qi dissolved within his stomach and a scorching hot heat flared up in his meridians. Kai Yang's entire body suddenly became bright red.

g Tactics frantically began to work while numerous dripping sounds rang out. In his dantian, one drop after the other had started to appear. Through Kai

Yang's open pores, Yang Qi flowing out from Coiling Dragon Stream was sucked in steadily.

The steady pulsing of World Qi within his meridians gradually became stronger, becoming more and more violent. If someone were to see Kai Yang's current appearance, they would be so shocked that their chin would drop to the floor. There had never been a tempered body martial practitioner who could condense such a rich amount of World Qi before.

Tempered body martial practitioners' meridians were narrow and the space in their dantian was limited, not to mention they were completely unable to bear such a large and fierce amount of World Qi.

The quantity of his World Qi was equivalent to a martial practitioner at the initial element stage. Though, Kai Yang was still only at the tempered body eighth stage.

At that moment, Kai Yang felt a pressure and this pressure was inexplicable, like it existed between the heavens and the earth. These shackles were imposed upon him and if he didn't break these shackles, he would be unable to breakthrough.

The blistering hot True Yang Tactics started to revolve again, burning away the unrelenting shackles. As time passed, Kai Yang could sense that the shackles preventing him from entering the next stage were slowly weakening. With his advancement at hand, Kai Yang's mind became clearer and the revolving speed of the True Yang Tactics sped up.

Bang.....it sounded, it was like he had taken off the chains binding him. All over his body, he felt light and all the pressure and discomfort he had felt

previously left without a trace, leaving Kai Yang feeling bright and refreshed.

Tempered body ninth stage! He was standing outside the doors to the initial element stage.

Although he had broken through, that feeling of refreshment had yet to disappear. Moving causally, the ten drops of Yang Liquid within Kai Yang's dantian started to rotate around and escaped in all directions, infiltrating into Kai Yang's five viscera, six bowels and meridians.

(TL: hey, why isn't that a familiar term~! :D)

The Yang Liquid's bright and burning strength burned away all of the impurities within, tempering his five viscera, six bowels and meridians.

An iron ore needs numerous revisions and temperings in order to take shape, so how could it be any different for the human body? Everytime a martial practitioner broke through a stage, they would use their body's world energy to refine their bodies. After each refinement, their strength would crazily increase.

Kai Yang's current breakthrough was only a minor one, so there wasn't a lot of excess world energy within his body, but the Yang Liquid within him provided similar effects.

A good while later, Kai Yang slowly opened his eyes, for he could sense that this breakthrough had caused his strength to increase by leaps and bounds. His current power was incomparable to his power before he broke through.

If he were to meet with Cheng Shao Feng and Niu Tao now he was confident

that he would be able to effortlessly defeat them, without using a single drop of Yang Liquid.

Apart from an increase in strength, Kai Yang touched on an insight, it was just too profound and he was unable to comprehend it. He could only wait until his next breakthrough to try and understand it.

His meridians were flooded with Yang World Qi, while his dantian was completely empty.

Carefully sensing around, Kai Yang's face instantly darkened.

The results he painstakingly achieved through these past few days of hard work had vanished in the blink of an eye. All the Yang Liquid condensed from the three Three Sun's Fruit, including his earlier condensed drop, a total of ten drops, were all gone, not a single wisp of Yang Liquid remained.

Although he had gained great benefits, he didn't have any Yang Liquid.

But it was no matter, as long as he had money if he wanted Yang Liquid, it was a relatively simple task. He just needed to buy some Yang attributed treasures and directly absorb them.

The only problem right now was, Kai Yang was penniless. Apart from the spoils of war he had taken from Cheng Shao Feng and Niu Tao, he didn't have anything valuable.

Sitting down he thought for awhile, Kai Yang found a solution.

(TL: BECOME A FREAKING RECEPITARTER!!!!)

He could not afford those treasures, could it be that he can't even afford their seeds?

The benefit of the Three Sun's Fruit had been clearly displayed to him. With the power of the Yang Liquid, along with a suitable seed, the spirit fruit would easily grow.

But these types of things were very scarce, after such a long time spent browsing within Black Wind Trade, he had yet to see anyone selling any seeds. It wasn't hard to understand why, for spirit grass and spirit tree seeds, not only did you have to find a suitable place to plant them, you also had to use a lot of effort to nurture them, not to mention you needed to wait a long time for them to bear fruit.

Who would waste all that energy? If they had that much time and energy, they might as well go train. If no one bought them, then naturally no one would sell them. It was all about supply and demand.

Kai Yang decided that he would buy them, furthermore he was seeking a large amount of seeds.

With his mind made up, Kai Yang exited Sky Tower and towards Black Wind Trade.

Although it was only his second time going, Kai Yang appeared at ease. It had been half a month since he had last come, Black Wind Trade was still bustling

with commotion, Many martial practitioner came and went, the treasures in the various booths were all lined up creating a feast for the eyes.

Making his way around the bustling booths, as expected, he did not find any seeds, but since he was prepared, Kai Yang wasn't too disappointed. Following his memory, Kai Yang walked to the place where that Blood Group disciple had been selling. He wanted to see if that guy had some extra seeds left.

Chapter 54 – The thousand techniques of charm

He hadn't been walking for long before a clear, crisp voice of surprise rang out from beside him: "Senior brother Kai!"

Raising his eyebrows, Kai Yang glanced over to see Li Yun Tian waving his hand at him. His face was brimming with enthusiasm and in front of him was a booth with various different items; some were herbs, there were also a couple of bottles and it looked they contained pills.

"Why are you here with a booth?" Kai Yang asked while walking over. He remembered that last time ** had told him Su Mu had ordered everybody to go and train with all their might.

"I just broke through, so Su Mu said I could come out for a walk to relax my heart and stabilize my foundations. Just as well, my fellow brothers needed some things for their cultivation so I came here to try my luck." He explained.

"It was like this." Looking carefully at Li Yun Tian, Kai Yang saw that he really did look stronger than a few days prior. He should have broken through into the tempered body eighth stage.

"Senior brother, what did you come here for?" Li Yun Tian asked curiously.

"I wanted to buy some things."

"What do you want? Come, look at my things and see if I have what you need. If you see anything, feel free to take it." Li Yun Tian said generously while

pointing at his wares.

“Do you have any yang attributed spirit herb seeds?”

Li Yun Tian shook his head: “I don’t have any I’m afraid. To my knowledge, very few people actually sell seeds in this market.”

In other words, the market value of seeds wasn’t high but they were still a rarity.

“I also came to test my luck.” Kai Yang laughed out.

“How about this, in the place of senior brother, I’ll help you put up a notice to see if anyone has them. Since I’ll be here for the next two days, and if your luck is good, someone might come to sell them.” Li Yun Tian suggested.

“That’s also good. Then I shall trouble junior brother Li.”

On the spot, Li Yun Tian put up a notice, writing one line he put the sign up next to him.

Talking to Li Yun Tian a bit longer, Kai Yang learnt that the impact from last time was very big on Su Mu. Coupled with Su Yan’s fierce lecturing, this playful young master had finally learnt to control himself. These days, he spent most of his time cultivating and had already broken through to the initial element stage.

Saying goodbye to Li Yun Tian, Kai Yang walked straight to the place where he had brought that Bright Yang Stone.

After seeing that familiar booth owner, Kai Yang let out a big sigh of relief. He had feared that he wouldn't be able to find him again.

"Hey, little brother, you came again?" This Blood Group disciple had watched Kai Yang and Hu Mei Er walk over last time, so his impression of Kai Yang was quite deep. He used honorifics to address him.

(TLN: The honorific used would be 您 – nin, a very formal way of addressing someone.)

"What do you want to buy this time?" The booth owner asked.

"Last time you gave me that Three Sun's fruit seed, do you still have any?" Not wasting any words, Kai Yang got straight to the point.

The booth owner shook his head and said: "There are none left. I only had that one seed and, as you know, I used it as a gift and gave it to you little brother."

"It was like this." Kai Yang couldn't help but be disappointed, "I won't disturb you anymore."

There were a large amount of booths in Black Wind Trade, all with their own varieties of goods, if his luck was good, then he might be able to find his desired items.

The Blood Group disciple looked over Kai Yang's back, his face revealing his internal struggle before he suddenly called out: "Little brother, please wait a

moment.”

Kai Yang turned around: “What’s the matter?”

“Back then, there wasn’t just one seed of the Three Sun’s fruit. There were a small number of them, but I only received one.”

Hearing this new information, Kai Yang looked overjoyed: “Where are the other seeds?”

“They were taken by other disciples. Little brother, if you really want them, then you could go ask those disciples.”

“Where are they currently?” Kai Yang hastily asked.

The owner’s face was a bit hesitant, he seemed to be deliberating for a good while before saying: “They are in our group’s mining area, extracting Bright Yang Stones and other things. Even if it’s one of our disciples, it’s not a place one can tread easily. Let alone an outsider like you little brother.”

“When will they leave?” Kai Yang pressed, unwilling to give in.

“In the short term, I’m afraid they will not leave so soon. You may have to wait one or two months.”

Kai Yang’s eyebrows wrinkled, such a long time. By that time, even the cauliflower dish would have long since turned cold.

“You don’t have any methods to allow them to leave earlier? Don’t worry, I only want to go find them to buy their Three Sun’s Fruit seed.”

“I don’t, I am only an ordinary disciple in the Blood Group.” The booth owner forced out a bitter smile, before his eyes swivelled around a bit. “But another person can.”

Kai Yang’s face shook: “I would like to hear who.”

Glancing around, the booth owner’s expression was a bit ambiguous: “You can go ask my young lady for help. With her assistance, the miners wouldn’t obstruct you.”

Hearing this, Kai Yang’s expression became quite strange. Stammering out: “My relationship with your young lady is quite ordinary.”

“En, en.” The booth owner repeatedly nodded his head, it was quite obvious that he didn’t believe Kai Yang. Pointing at a far wooden house he said: “It is quite a coincidence, today the young lady has also come to the trade area and is resting in that wooden house. If you urgently need those seeds, there’s no harm in asking my young lady.”

Kai Yang was slightly hesitant, with the current situation between them and all, it wasn’t the best idea. He had completely offended that woman, and now he needed to go ask her for help. Where would he put his face?

But if he didn’t go find her, he didn’t have any other good ideas.

Unwillingly, Kai Yang continued to search around Black Wind Trade. Although

he found some seeds, they were not Yang attributed and were completely worthless to him.

Helpless, Kai clenched his teeth and thought “fine, if I lose face, I’ll lose it. It’s not like I have done something unforgivable to her, why would I be afraid of her?”

These wooden houses were all residences of each respective factions top disciples. Since Hu Mei Er was the Blood Group Head’s daughter, although her strength wasn’t high, her status was, so resting in there was not unusual.

In a thirty foot radius, there weren’t any people to be seen. All of the martial practitioners held great respect for the residents of these wooden houses. That is why they would not set up their booths near these wooden huts.

Arriving at the wooden house the booth owner pointed out, Kai Yang stood at it’s door. Just as he say wondering how to ask, from within the house, a cute voice sounded out: “Who’s outside?”

It sounded like Hu Mei Er’s voice, but it was also a bit strange.

Since he had already arrived here, Kai Yang naturally wouldn’t retreat. Speaking out: “Lady Mei Er, It’s me, Kai Yang. Come out and see.”

Inside was different from what Kai Yang expected. Sitting inside were two girls who looked practically the same, even their figures were the same. At a glance, you would think that it was a mirror reflecting the same appearance; one was the real figure and other the reflection.

Hearing Kai Yang's voice, astonishment and shock flashed through one of the girl's eyes. Turning around, she went to speak to the other girl: "Little sister, that person is the one you were talking about, Kai Yang?"

The one being questioned was Hu Mei Er. She nodded her head and said: "En. Why would he come and find me?"

She thought that ever since he had split from her that day, they would never cross paths again.

The other person coldly laughed: "Looks like he isn't one of those people who aren't swayed by beauty. Some men will pretend to be noble and virtuous but are experts in baiting women like you. Then they will capture your body and mind, confining you to eternal damnation."

Hu Mei Er's face reddened. Angrily she said: "Older sister, he isn't like you think he is."

Hu Jiao Er chuckled: "If he isn't, why would he come and find you after such a long time? He definitely knows that you think about him day and night, and has come to attack."

Hu Mei Er displeased, said: "Older sister, you only like to think about people in a negative light."

If he really was one of those people, then that day at the lakeside, she would have lost her chastity. No male could resist that type of enticement.

Chapter 55 – Good people are better than good tea

But why did he come over to find her? Although Hu Mei Er didn't believe her older sister's words, she still had some doubts in her heart.

Seeing her expression, Hu Jiao Er sighed: "To obstinately persist and go about things in the wrong way, will sooner or later lead to your own demise."

Annoyed, Hu Mei Er said: "I won't talk to you about it anymore. Since he came to find me, it must be something urgent. Let me go and ask."

Just as she was about to rise, she was pulled back by her older sister. Hu Jiao Er's adorable eyes spun around, cutely she laughed out: "Little sis, how about I make a bet with you?"

"What type of bet?" Hu Mei Er asked in doubt.

"We are betting whether or not he is a hypocrite! If he is really as you say he is, then he should be able to keep a calm mind. If he isn't, then don't blame your sister for being vicious and merciless!" As Hu Jiao Er spoke, a cold light slowly appeared in her eyes.

These past several years, with Hu Mei Er's various stirrings outside, the only reason why she was able to retain her purity was mainly because of her older sister. Those who wanted to force Hu Mei Er to do anything, had all died in the most unusual ways.

In regards to her sister's methods, Hu Mei Er knew more about them than

anyone. So when she saw her attitude, she knew for certain that she was hatching a nasty plan.

“Older sister, what do you want to do?” Hu Mei Er cried out in alarm.

“You just need to sit and watch carefully, humph!” With a wave of her white hand, a glossy smoke covered her younger sister. Then Hu Mei Er’s figure slowly darkened and disappeared from sight.

“Older sister, don’t act recklessly!” Hu Mei Er exerted all her strength, banging at the smoke yet no sound escaped. In fact, she couldn’t even walk more than ten feet from where she had been standing when her sister executed her technique. She could only watch, her anticipation rising.

Outside, Kai Yang had been waiting for quite a long time and he still saw no signs of Hu Mei Er coming to open the door. He could only helplessly sigh.

It looks like he offended her really badly that day, though her anger would be justified if that is the case. If it was any other female that was spoken about like that, they would not take it lying down.

Never mind, Kai Yang never really held any hope that she would help, the only reason he came was to give it a shot. Now that he saw that she didn’t want to talk to him, he naturally wouldn’t force her to.

Just as he was about turn around and leave, from within the house sounded Hu Mei Er’s voice: “Why don’t you come in.”

Kai Yang was startled, muttering to himself for a while before pushing the door

open and walking in.

Walking in and closing the door behind him, all the noise from outside suddenly vanished, replaced instead by a tranquil silence.

Kai Yang looked around and took in his surroundings, the size of the house was about the same as the one Su Yan was staying in. Of course, it's interior was superior to Su Yan's. Su Yan's room was empty, cold just like her own frostiness.

Where as here, there was a table, two chairs and a sweet smelling bed. On the sweet smelling bed hung some pink curtains as thin as cicada wings. On the bed was a petite pillow and the entire room was permeated by the scent of a female.

Here and Su Yan's place were two completely different worlds.

Hu Jiao Er sat next to the table, her face full of smiles, as she faced the door. Her pair of charming eyes, tender and beautiful, glistened with moisture. With a weird gaze and a smile hiding her intentions, she looked at him, a red blush was blooming across her face, causing her to appear very enchanting.

Her two jade arms were uncovered, revealing her snow-white, infant like skin and her wooden clogs displayed her delicate toes. He wasn't sure what she had put on her toenails, but it had turned them a purple colour making her seem like a wild beauty.

Seeing this, Kai Yang's heart jumped, he didn't know why, but today Hu Mei Er seemed extra enchanting. She was far more beautiful than when he had last met her a few days ago.

(TL: Kai Yang, don't thump over mere nail polish on toes please. Have some dignity.)

But her smile caused Kai Yang to feel awkward, he thought she was mocking him.

At that moment, Hu Mei Er was holding a spread out fan and fanning herself. With vigorous movements, the winds blew up in wisps, giving her the appearance of a grand noble.

Embroidered on that fan was a picture of a court lady, and that court lady's figure and full and developed, posing in an alluring position. If there were less clothes embroidered on her then it would be **.

(TLN: Court lady isn't the most accurate, but it sounds the best. It should be just a picture of traditional painting of a beautiful woman. But of course, that sounds like a mouthful in the translation right?)

Giving it a glance, Kai Yang thought that lady was really outrageous. If any other female saw this, they would hide their faces in shame, yet this woman was able to use this fan, clearly displaying that she wasn't ordinary.

It was just.....after not meeting for a good half a month, how could Hu Mei Er undergo such a big change?

Although she kept her eyes on him, Kai Yang did not shy away in the slightest as he walked over to her. Her behaviour that day, Kai Yang had seen it all, it was like he was holding her pigtails, so how could he be afraid of her?

Being looked at like this Hu Jiao Er, who was pretending to be Hu Mei Er, was unable to endure. This person was really audacious, how could there be anybody who would face a beauty like this? He didn't even know to let up a bit, this was a bit too unromantic.

However.....his gaze was very clear, there was not the slightest amount of obscene desires in his gaze.

Arriving at the table side, Kai Yang cupped his hands and said: "Lady Mei Er, we haven't seen each other for more than ten days and you look more enchanting."

Hearing these words caused Hu Jiao Er to ge ge laugh while she replied: "You also know how to flatter others?"

In regards to Kai Yang's situation, Hu Mei Er had informed her of everything, so Hu Jiao knew how to properly reply. She wasn't afraid that she would be exposed.

Kai Yang laughed: "I am only speaking the truth."

As he said this, he sat down opposite of her disregarding courtesy. A weight had been lifted within his heart, it looked like this woman wasn't angry at him, making his task much easier to complete.

"Lady Mei Er, the purpose of my trip this time....." Kai Yang had decided to discuss his goal directly. This would make him seem a bit more sincere.

"Let's not rush things." Hu Jiao Er put down the cloth fan and quietly got up. Taking up the teapot, she walked over to Kai Yang's side to pour him some tea:

“It’s hot outside, so drink some tea to moisten your parched throat. Rest for a bit then talk.”

“That’s ok!” Kai Yang nodded his head while enjoying her warmth. Picking up the tea cup, he drank some tea before his expression suddenly became strange.

Hu Jiao Er returned to her seat and sat down. Putting her hands on her cheeks, calm and unruffled she said to him: “Junior Kai, how does this tea taste?”

Kai Yang was thinking about something else, but as he lifted his head he looked at Hu Jiao Er deeply before replying: “These leaves are as flat as disks, very straight, it is as green as emeralds, with a flowery background taste. This is a first rate tea.”

Hu Jiao Er was stunned and stared on blankly. She was full of astonishment as she looked at Kai Yang: “You understand?”

She herself didn’t understand, she only brought it to drink. But Kai Yang had described it clearly and accurately, how could this not flabbergast her?

Kai Yang shook his head: “A little, but I’m not too proficient.”

“Then how does this tea compare to me?” Hu Jiao Er let out a breath like lilies. Kai Yang was only a table distance away from her, so he could smell her breath, sweet like the clear mountain spring, pure as 100 year old wine, it lingered in the memory after it had faded away.

For no reason, Kai Yang felt his breath speed up by a bit, his blood had also sped up. He blurted out: “Good people are better than good tea.”

“Ge ge.....” Hu Jiao Er’s laugh was like flowers blossoming and swaying in the wind, her chest quivering.

Kai Yang’s eyes were fixed on that big and plump chest, and his adam’s apple bobbed.

Intentionally or not, Hu Jiao picked up that cloth fan again and blocked the springtime scene of her chest, but intentionally revealed that exposed lady picture. Kai Yang’s face immediately became red.

Chapter 56 – Probing

Seeing this scene, the hidden Hu Mei Er immediately shouted out: “Older sister, you are shameless!”

But, how could her voice possibly transmit outside the smoke barrier? Even a fragrance pressing to escape, still could not. Too despicable, for someone at older sister’s level, to play around with a tempered body martial practitioner was simply too easy.

If this was a normal interaction, Hu Mei Er felt that Kai Yang definitely wouldn’t reveal any abnormal reactions. But if her older sister had done anything behind the scenes, then she could not say for certain if this would remain the case.

Inside the house, Hu Jiao Er abruptly stood up again and step by step, she started to walk over to that sweet smelling bed. Looking back, she laughed: “Wait a moment. I need to retrieve something to give to you.”

“Okay.” Kai Yang’s brow was wrinkled, as he faintly felt that something was wrong, but he couldn’t exactly put his finger on it.

Arriving at the side of the sweet smelling bed, Hu Jiao Er knelt over. Half-kneeling on the bed, she started to search around and the thin clothes she wore were unable to completely cover her thousand charms. The clothes stuck perfectly to her body, highlighting her perfectly round buttocks, demonstrating unparalleled allure.

Kai Yang’s heart rate increased by leaps and bounds, while his throat burned.

For a good while, Hu Jiao Er remained in this alluring position. Then suddenly, in a cute voice, she cried out.

“What happened?” Kai Yang’s expression changed and he hurried over.

At that moment, Hu Jiao Er retreated from the bed. Her steps unsteady, she fell directly into Kai Yang’s arms and he firmly caught her.

Both of their legs touched, and for some unknown reason, both of them fell onto the bed.

Hu Jiao Er was on top, Kai Yang was on the bottom and the fiery human body heat on his chest caused his throat to become dry. Looking down at that beautiful face with two tender lips, Kai Yang forcibly suppressed his ** and said: “What is the matter?”

“There is a bug!” Hu Jiao Er put on a show; her acting skills were really good. Her two small hands clutched onto Kai Yang’s clothes not letting go as she displayed an easily frightened appearance.

Kai Yang laughed out involuntarily: “Where is it?”

“Over there.....”

Looking in the direction Hu Jiao Er was pointing, Kai Yang actually saw a bug slowly crawling around. He thought that women were really interesting; she was already a martial practitioner, yet such a small and insignificant bug could scare her to such a degree. Reaching out, he squashed it before patting her on the shoulder: “It’s alright now. It has already been dealt with by me.”

“There are definitely more.....” Hu Jiao Er persisted. As she said this, she looked around in all directions, her gaze wasn’t limited to the bed as it swept over Kai Yang’s cheeks and lips, causing Kai Yang’s recently calmed emotions to flare back up.

“There are none left.” Kai Yang felt it wasn’t suitable for this to continue, because if someone were to burst into the room at any moment and were to see himself and Hu Mei Er like this, then they would be unable to wash clean their reputations with three rivers and five lakes.

“There really aren’t anymore?” A flash of astonishment flashed across Hu Jiao Er’s eyes, she would never have imagined that Kai Yang really could control himself in this position. He didn’t try to take advantage of her at all.

Just then, if Kai Yang really had done anything, then he would definitely have lost an arm or two.

Although her heart was still unsettled, Hu Jiao Er meekly crawled off Kai Yang’s body.

Kai Yang sat up, embarrassed, he lifted his head to look at Hu Mei Er, her face was also bright red, as she shuffled over to sit next to him.

“What’s wrong with your foot?” Kai Yang asked.

“When I tripped, I think I sprained it.” After one scheme failed, Hu Jiao Er immediately moved onto another. She thought, ‘Great Aunt, today I definitely must reveal your true colours. I must see if it’s a black or red heart.’

“Let me see.....” Squatting down, Kai Yang went to pick up Hu Jiao Er’s foot. Looking at it, he saw that her ankle was truly a bit red, proving it really had been injured.

It had actually been injured. In order to truly probe Kai Yang, a small sacrifice like this was nothing to Hu Jiao Er.

Kai Yang wasn’t shy about anything, after all Hu Mei Er wasn’t too concerned with etiquette. Previously, she had used herself to entice him, so how would holding her foot be anything to be concerned over?

“Don’t move around!” Kai Yang commanded before reaching into his clothes to pull out a bottle.

This bottle contained Sky Tower’s Blood Clotting Cream and after he took it out, Kai Yang paused, as if he was thinking about something. After a good while, Kai Yang finally poured out some cream onto his palm. Then, carefully he started to smear it on the swollen area of Hu Jiao Er’s foot.

A weak pulse of Yang World Qi also started to revolve, assisting the with the defusing of the medicine.

Hu Jiao Er’s adorable body quivered for a bit, she told herself that she really had lost big time! So many years had past, and her jade body had never been touched by others. But because she wanted to make a bet with her younger sister, she was hugged and touched by another. Not only could she not walk, she also couldn’t make them take responsibility.

Although she felt wronged, she no longer felt any more pain on her body.

That big hand was gently rubbing her ankle, his figure serious, his movement soft and gentle. His coarse and rough hands rubbing on her tender skin sent up waves of numbness.

She steadily got and up accompanied by him, he carried an air not befitting of his age.

Following Kai Yang's movements, Hu Jiao Er's imagination became wild and a peculiar feeling appeared within her body. This feeling caused her to become flustered and her maiden heart started to beat erratically. Heat started to rise in her abdomen, like lightening striking downwards causing her to clamp her legs together. She was afraid that if she didn't clamp her legs closed, then that hot feeling out come flooding out.

"Kai Yang....." A strange voice shouted out from Hu Jiao Er's mouth. She was currently too embarrassed to show her face, she had never imagined that she would ever make this type of voice.

"En?" Kai Yang lifted up his head to see Hu Jiao Er's pair of watery and beautiful eyes staring down at him and her face no longer held any other colour apart from a scarlet red.

"Do you want to.....do some other things?" Hu Jiao Er tightly clenched her ruby lips, proceeding to commence her final attack!

If Kai Yang immediately replied in agreement, then she would be able to discard all her current emotions and retreat. Then she wouldn't be merciless to Kai Yang!

Would he agree? Hu Jiao Er was nervous, hoping that he would agree so she could be free, but on the other hand, she also wanted him to refuse to prove that her younger sister didn't misread him and that she had mistaken him! This nervousness and struggle caused her to be extremely indecisive inside.

Even Hu Jiao Er was worried, so how could the confined Hu Mei Er not be worried? She had ceased all useless shouts, and was closely looking at Kai Yang, unsure what response he would give in the end.

Kai Yang looked straight at Hu Jiao Er, intentionally moving, while she had her heart in her throat afraid that Kai Yang would say the word "Okay".

Suddenly, Kai Yang softly chuckled. Slowly, without any rush, he put away the bottle of Blood Clotting Cream seriously.

"Lady!" Kai Yang muttered.

"En?" Hu Jiao Er nervous, disregarded Kai Yang's addressing of herself.

"Just then, the bottle of Blood Clotting Cream was my most precious possession. Although it's value isn't that high, it is the proof of human kindness."

"What's your meaning?" Hu Jiao Er looked distracted. She had asked if he wanted to or not, so why was he talking about this? What was his meaning?

Standing up, Kai Yang looked down at Hu Jiao Er: "What I want to tell you is, I used this precious bottle of cream to treat your injury so I ask that you no longer

hold any grudges with me. Let us end this farce here and now please.”

Chapter 57 – One big, one small

“What are you talking about?” Hu Jiao Er’s face changed as she forced out a smile: “I don’t understand.”

He couldn’t have found out that she was impersonating her younger sister, right? It’s not possible. He was only at the tempered body ninth stage, how could he possibly see through her, an initial element stage practitioner’s schemes? Nonetheless, she and her younger sister looked almost the same; regardless of if it was their voices or figures, they were all similar. Even the elders in the group often mistook them for each other, how could he have such an ability?

Kai Yang looked at her indifferently, lightly laughing: “Lady, then you are unwilling to admit it?”

“Admit what? I really don’t know what you are talking about.” Hu Jiao Er insisted for the last time.

Kai Yang massaged his temples and helplessly said: “Then I shall say it clearly. Lady, you are not Hu Mei Er. I think.....you are her older twin sister.”

Hu Jiao Er looked on blankly, before recovering and chuckled: “Why do you say this?”

This time, she didn’t force it anymore, but looked at Kai Yang full of interest, she also wanted to know in what aspect she had exposed herself. If Kai Yang couldn’t give any concrete reasons why, then it would be clear that he was using words to swindle her.

It could be that he currently held suspicions, but was ultimately unsure, therefore he wanted her to admit it. This is what Hu Jiao Er guessed was going on.

“Lady, you are now testing my observation skills.” Kai Yang didn’t get angry and he laughed. Standing up, he walked over to the table and picked up the teacup from which he had drunk from earlier and pursed his lips: “Actually, I still wasn’t sure that you really were not Hu Mei Er. Though now, I am certain that you are not her!”

Hu Jiao Er stared blankly and became really angry, to the point that she wanted to grind her teeth; it turns out that his words just then really were probing her! This infuriated her! She, a initial element practitioner, with a moment’s carelessness was played by this tempered body youngster. This was such a defeat, she had lost much face.

She held no interest in denying it further. Hu Jiao Er laughed softly, and repositioned herself on the bed, displaying her alluring body fully, while her bewitching eyes sized Kai Yang up. Her voice gentle, she said: “At what moment did you start having your doubts?”

“From the time I drank the tea.” Kai Yang lightly hit the teacup within his hands, “Although the tea was very pleasant, it couldn’t fully cover the female scent. Also, on this cup there is a faint marking of lips, and I concluded that it hadn’t been too long since someone last used it right? And that person should be Lady Hu Mei Er.”

(TLN: GG Kai Yang. What are you trying to be? Sherlock? This is xianxia not a detective/mystery novel. -_-)

“Just from that, you didn’t believe I was Mei Er?” Hu Jiao Er was amazed.

“Of course it wasn’t just from that.” Kai Yang slowly shook his head, “The second point that arose my suspicion was your temperament! I do not believe that in ten days or so, a woman’s temperament can undergo such a large change. Putting it nicely, Lady Mei Er’s charm is more young and tender, whereas your charm is more mature and developed.”

“I like the sound of that.” Hu Jiao Er started to laugh while covering her mouth, “Please continue, do you have any more reasons?”

“Thirdly, your scent and Lady Mei Er’s are very similar, but if you are to smell carefully, they are still different. Her’s is more sweet while yours possesses a more subtle elegance.”

“Stinking brat!” Hu Jiao Er’s face was a nice pink hue because Kai Yang’s somewhat straightforward answers had caused her to be unable to maintain her calm. Thinking back at how she had wanted to probe him and the self-sacrifices she had made, Hu Jiao Er couldn’t help but want to slap this confident male in front of her into a meat patty.

“Fourthly.....” Kai Yang ignored Hu Jiao Er’s oppressive glare and continued to speak.

“There is more.....” This startled Hu Jiao Er. She would have never guessed that this tempered body youngster would be able to see this many holes, in her seemingly flawless plan.

“He he, the fourth point is the injury on this lady’s foot. That injury looks like it is a sprain, but it is really a self-inflicted injury, caused internally and this was the greatest clue. Although Lady Mei Er is a young lady, she is still a martial practitioner. How could it be so easy for her to sprain her ankle?”

“This was actually my own negligence.” Hu Jiao Er lightly nodded her head. Back then, she was only concerned with revealing Kai Yang’s true colours, thus she had not thought too deeply.

As she lifted up her head, she saw that Kai Yang was still deep in thought, so Hu Jiao Er said: “Don’t tell me you there were more flaws that you saw through.”

Hu Jiao Er was quite unconvinced. How could her plan, that she thought was flawless and perfect, actually be full of holes and flaws in his eyes? Not to mention all of his analysis was clear and logical, leaving no room for argument.

Looking at this stinking brat filled her with loathing.

If he dared to point out anymore flaws, this Lady would definitely show him some attitude. He completely forgot to leave others some face.

“Then I’ll say no more.” Kai Yang replied as he wrinkled his brows.

Hearing this, Hu Jiao Er became unhappy and her charming eyes turned frosty. Laughing captivatingly, biting down with her ivory teeth she spat out a single word: “Speak!”

“I better not say anymore!” He said shaking his head.

Hu Jiao Er's anger rose: "If I want you to speak then speak. How could there be someone like you who likes leaving a person hanging."

Kai Yang bitterly laughed: "I'm afraid that if I say it, I could cause this lady to become angry."

Her almond eyes narrowing, she replied: "Make me angry? What is this flaw, is it an upsetting thing?"

"En."

"Then I want to hear it even more."

"But you must promise me that you not become angry."

"If you don't say it, then how will I know whether or not I will be angry or not?"

"Nevermind then."

"You.....don't you know that when you are arguing with a woman, you should back down a step?" Hu Jiao Er was gloomy inside. This youngster seemed shrewd, but he was actually a stubborn and cold headed youth, without a shred of sensitivity.

"If I back down a step, I would become injured. I think.....I would be unable to match you." Kai Yang's face was serious.

“I see that you still have some sensitivity!” Laughing proudly, Hu Jiao Er sprang up from the bed, carrying with her a sweet aroma, both from the bed and herself over to the table. Her clothes dancing around, she sat down and gracefully looked towards Kai Yang. Muttering for a while, she responded: “Okay then, I promise that I will not become angry with you.”

“And you also promise not to hit me.”

“Fine!” Biting her ivory teeth, Hu Jiao Er continued, “Tell me, what is this final flaw?”

His face stern Kai Yang answered: “Actually, it can’t really be counted as a flaw. It’s just that between you and Lady Mei Er there is a slight difference between you.”

“Where is this difference?” Hu Jiao Er looked at him oddly because she and her younger sister were both practically carved from the same mold. So where would this difference be?

Kai Yang opened and closed his mouth and hesitated for a good while before mumbling out: “It’s your buttocks, one side is smaller than the other! It is incomparable to Lady Mei Er’s well portioned one!”

As soon as he said this, Hu Jiao Er’s face suddenly became bright red and all of her initial element stage World Qi burst out, engulfing the house in a powerful gale.

“Please remember the words you just said!” Remaining calm, his heart steady,

Kai Yang reminded her faintly.

Hu Jiao Er's imposing air unexpectedly receded. She was so furious her entire body was shaking yet she could not vent her anger, she nearly shattered her ivory teeth from biting down too hard. It wasn't till after a long time had past that she banged the table and spoke out in her sweet voice: "Utter rubbish!"

For a proper girl to utter these coarse words, one could only imagine Hu Jiao Er's current rage.

This brat should be made into mincemeat, for he dared to evaluate her buttocks as one small and one big. Is this something a man should say? How is one smaller than the other? Aren't they clearly well proportioned?

This stinking brat, I'm afraid that you don't know how to write the word death right?

Chapter 58 – Attracting trouble

As Hu Jiao Er flew into a rage due to her humiliation, KaiYang immediately went to comfort her: “Lady, you do not need to worry about it. If you don’t look carefully, you cannot see any difference.”

Her face turned cold as she murderously looked at Kai Yang: “In other words, you looked closely right?”

Not only did Kai Yang cough a few times, he also looked embarrassed: “I did look a few times.”

You can’t blame him! She had stuck out her own bottom towards him, and could it be that he had to pretend as if he saw nothing? Kai Yang also felt quite wronged inside.

“With these points, if I still couldn’t see that you and Lady Hu Mei Er are two different people, then my eyes would have grown in vain.” Kai Yang laughed faintly.

After her anger had subsided, thinking it over, Hu Jiao Er couldn’t help but feel a little shock.

Seeing this man called Kai Yang, he had incomparable insight. Just from entering this room, looking around and drinking some tea, he had seen through it all. This type of ability is not possessed by everyone, let alone the fact that she had personally tried to entice him and ultimately failed to do so. This person’s perseverance and personality are considerably good, to not be charmed by good looks. He was a man of determination.

Genius! Although he is young, you couldn't deny the fact that he was a genius.

Arriving at such a point, Hu Jiao Er's eyes rolled and she gave Kai Yang a charming look: "Kai Yang right? Seeing that you have just offended me, this lady will give you two choices."

"What choices?" Kai Yang asked.

"The first choice, the hand that touched me shall be the one to be decapitated and the eye that saw me, shall be dug out and only then would I forgive your previous actions." As Hu Jiao Er said those words, she maintained her smile, along with a gentle voice. It was like a wife talking to her husband, but within her words there was an unreasonable amount of cruelty and bloodthirst.

Kai Yang shook his head: "Let me hear the second choice."

"Clever." Hu Jiao Er smiled: "The second choice, that is to leave Sky Tower and enter our Blood Group. I will ask father to bestow upon you the position of Small Captain. From what I know, in Sky Tower Pavilion, you are the lowest rank Trial Disciple; you are bullied, with no access to good cultivation resources. But if you join my Blood Group, your treatment would be at least a hundredfold better than it is currently. How about it, aren't my offers generous?"

"Are there any other choices?"

"None!"

“Then I shall choose neither of them.” As he said this, Kai Yang secretly started to operate his True Yang Tactics, staying vigilant and alert towards Hu Jiao Er.

“You want to force my hand?” Hu Jiao Er repeatedly laughed coldly.

“I do not think that you would really attack, because this isn’t the Blood Group’s territory. As soon as there is a hint of battle, Sky Tower and its guardian disciples would all come to investigate. At that moment, problems and inconveniences would occur for you.”

“You’re just an insignificant Trial Disciple, if I want to kill you I can, so what can Sky Tower do? At most, all I need to do is compensate them with a couple of items. In all likelihood, they wouldn’t even really care about your death that much!”

“Lady, if you really want to kill me, you wouldn’t talk rubbish with me.” Although Kai Yang appeared calm and composed, he was actually nervous on the inside, because a woman’s heart was like a needle at the bottom of the ocean, who knew what they were really thinking.

He was already regretting speaking the truth. As expected, you cannot trust a woman’s words, especially a beautiful woman’s words. He still lacks experience ah.

“Furthermore, as I have already said, I used my most precious Blood Clotting Cream to help your injury so you should no longer press on about me offending you.” Kai Yang attempted to disperse her ideas of wanting to hurt him.

“Is one bottle of Blood Clotting Cream able to compensate my losses? You

have.....” Hu Jiao Er’s words couldn’t come out. Previously she wanted to say that he had already hugged her, already touched her, but as the words were about to come out, some invisible force prevented them. Her losses were great, so could one bottle of cream for external injuries be able to make up for it?

“I can’t help you, no matter what you say. As a matter of fact, you should already know that those things only happened because you initiated them.”

Those words only served to pour oil onto the fire, causing Hu Jiao Er to become both shy and angry. Just as she was about to attack, she turned around to look over at the place where Hu Mei Er was hidden. Seeing her energetic attempts to shout something, her heart softened and her anger gradually melted away. Taking in a deep breath she said: “Nevermind, this time I won’t trouble you about it anymore.”

Kai Yang couldn’t help but exhale one long breath: “Lady, thank you for your pardon.”

Hu Jiao Er lightly laughed: “Actually your words were correct, but there was one mistake.”

“Which part?” Kai Yang asked.

Hu Jiao Er didn’t swiftly reply, but instead waved her hand making the hidden Hu Mei Er re-appear. Kai Yang was greatly shocked, because although he knew this woman’s strength was high, he didn’t think that her strength was at such a level. To wave your hands and have a person appear, clearly demonstrates that one is at the True Element Boundary.

Obtaining her freedom, Hu Mei Er looked at Kai Yang with her charming eyes. Her face relaxed, just then she was nervous to death, afraid that her sister in a moment's fury would go and kill Kai Yang.

When she looked over at her elder sister again, she couldn't help but laugh as she remembered Kai Yang's words.

My god, there were still men who dared to say those words to her elder sister. And when he had said those words, he had suffered no loss.

"Older sister!" As soon as Hu Mei Er came out, she jumped onto her older sister and threw a tantrum: "Don't be angry. This affair cannot be blamed on him."

"I didn't say I would blame him." Hu Jiao Er's gloominess disappeared, and she turned her head around to face Kai Yang: "The point that you were wrong about is, Mei Er and I are not twins."

"You are not twins?" Surprised Kai Yang was.

Looking carefully, the two ladies in front of him looked exactly the same, with no distinguishable difference. If they were to meet again and asked him who was who, he definitely would not be able to say.

"No, I am older than Mei Er by a few years." Hu Jiao Er faintly smiled. When she saw Kai Yang's shock, her heart became somewhat more balanced and at peace.

"It really is a vast world, full of extraordinary things." Kai Yang sighed out

sorrowfully, they really were two sisters. They were born a few years apart, yet they looked so similar. Under the wide sky, perhaps this was the only case.

“You don’t know me?” Hu Jiao Er was slightly puzzled, she was after all a powerful younger generation disciple of Blood Group. Her reputation was widely celebrated, so how could this person not know of her?

“I don’t know.” Kai Yang shook his head, appearing ignorant and inexperienced.

Seeing that he wasn’t lying, Hu Jiao Er could only believe him. She didn’t know his daily experiences these past few years, he was practically living separately from the outside world, never socialising with others.

“You have something you wish to trouble me with today?” Hu Mei Er turned her head around to look at Kai Yang.

Kai Yang then proceeded to tell them his goal. Hu Mei Er looked over to her older sister, asking for consultation. Her sister waved her hand and said: “Go then, but don’t cause a fuss at the mines.”

“Thank you.” Kai Yang let out a sigh of relief.

“Let’s go. The mining area isn’t that far from here.” Hu Mei Er’s mood appeared quite good, there was a rosy luster on her cheeks while she led the way.

After Kai Yang and Hu Mei Er left, Hu Jiao Er stood up, and used her jade hands to slowly rub her soft, round and well-proportioned buttocks. As she massaged

them, she muttered to herself: “How is one bigger than the other. They are clearly the same! That stinking brat, was clearly speaking nonsense. Too hateful.”

Chapter 59 – The mining site

After leaving the bustling Black Wind Trade area, under Hu Mei Er's guidance, the two people walked towards the north side of the Black Wind Forest. Hu Mei Er looked very happy and within her pair of charming eyes you could glimpse signs of happiness, she also had slightly flushed cheeks.

“That day's affair, I am sorry!” Kai Yang suddenly apologised. His actions that day were really over the top and now that he had come to ask her for help, he felt a bit two faced.

Hu Mei Er pursed her lips before smiling: “It's okay. Also, you didn't curse me or anything. These few years, I have heard even worse words and I'm still living well aren't I?”

“You don't hate me?” Kai Yang asked astonished.

“What's the use in hating you?” Hu Mei Er smiled and suddenly said: “Actually I hated you quite a bit but.....one of your actions made me unable to hate you.”

“What action?”

“He he, that day when Cheng Shao Feng and Niu Tao appeared, you went and stood in front of me. Perhaps that was a subconscious action, but these past few years, that was the first time someone sincerely and with all their heart wanted to protect me.”

“I don’t remember it, but you must have suffered quite a lot.” Kai Yang sighed. A perfectly good female, intentionally sullied their own reputation in order to find some talented disciples for the Blood Group. Although the methods were good, it still contained filial piety within.

“Ge ge.....” Hu Mei Er smiled: “It wasn’t too hard ah. Don’t you know that putting on a show or act is a women’s speciality. ”

“He he, I have never interacted with women.”

“Really?” Hu Mei Er’s eyes brightened.

“En, so these past few days I have been exhausted and toyed around with thoroughly by you two sisters.” Kai Yang said seriously.

A streak of anger flashed in Hu Mei Er’s eyes as she said: “What you said is too bad! Fortunately sister’s not here, otherwise you would be guaranteed a beating from her!”

“Your sister.....”

“True element first boundary!” Hu Mei Er said with some pride.

“Strong!” He praised.

Su Yan was at the true element third boundary, Hu Mei Er’s sister was slightly weaker than Su Yan, but nonetheless it wasn’t a big difference.

As soon as Hu Mei Er mentioned her sister, she thought about what Kai Yang had said again, causing her to throw her head back in laughter. During this flurry of actions she didn't stop laughing.

Kai Yang remained silent and stood in place waiting for her to recover her breath.

After laughing for a good while, Hu Mei Er finally recovered her breath and turned to him with a big smile: "I see that you have great courage. There has never been a man who dared to speak to my older sister like that. Her that place.....is it true that one is bigger than the other?"

"It could be because of the clothes she was wearing, so you can tell her later not to worry about it." Kai Yang gently laughed.

"Then how about mine? Is it really well portioned?" Her face bashful, Hu Mei Er asked boldly.

"Not only are they well portioned, they stick out smoothly and are well rounded." Kai Yang nodded his head, "Your body figure is very good, so you have no need to sell yourself short."

For a moment, Hu Mei Er thought it was a bit hard to bear. These frank and motiveless praises were the best words she had heard in a long time.

At that moment, she was secretly happy inside.

"How much longer will it take until we arrive?" Kai Yang didn't want to continue discussing this topic, so he asked this question.

“There is still one hour’s worth of walking and although that place can be considered a part of Black Wind Forest, it is closer to the heart of the forest.” Hu Mei Er explained: “Over there, there is a vein that our Blood Group discovered a few years back. We sent over people to protect it and extract ores, the ores that are extracted from there are quite peculiar.”

“How are they peculiar?” Kai Yang asked.

“Over there, there are only stones of two attributes. One of them is the stone you had bought, the Bright Yang Stone while the other is the Bright Yin Stone. If you say it is peculiar, it is not but these two stones mutually suppress each other. So to find them appearing together is quite a mystery.”

“That is really strange.” Kai Yang’s interest was slightly piqued.

The Bright Yang Stone contained Yang attributed energy while the Bright Yin Stone contained Yin attributed energy, they were opposing attributes. Under normal circumstances, they definitely would not form together.

“Even the elders in the group feel that something isn’t right with the mining vein, but even after years of investigation, they have yet to find anything out of the ordinary. Though, from this mine we have earned no small amount of money.” Hu Mei Er didn’t seem to treat Kai Yang like an outsider and whatever she thought, she would say.

“This is your Blood Group’s good fortune!” Kai Yang chuckled.

Hu Mei Er replied with an en and then suddenly lapsed into a reign of silence

before speaking again: “Actually it is such a coincidence that you wanted to find me today. If it was at a later date then you probably wouldn’t be able to find me. So it should be your good fortune.”

“Where are you going?” Kai Yang understood the underlying hint in her words.

“It’s not going somewhere.” Hu Mei Er shook her head and as she explained, she secretly observed Kai Yang’s expression: “After your words last time, I suddenly thought that my actions these past years weren’t correct. When utilizing those underhanded methods, the roped in talents don’t care about the Blood Group, but rather only me! And since I cannot provide them with what they really want, naturally they won’t try their best for the sect. That’s why I have decided to go into seclusion to train and become stronger so I can shoulder some of the burdens with my daddy; just like my sister!”

“The fact that you can think like this, is a good thing.” Kai Yang nodded his head in approval.

Not only was Hu Mei Er disappointed by his response she also saw that from the beginning till the end, Kai Yang’s face didn’t change much at all. Her words caused no fluctuations in his mood.

A bit pained and agonised, Hu Mei Er didn’t have mood to continue talking and only led the way at the front.

Since she didn’t speak, Kai Yang naturally wouldn’t go find something to talk to her about. After walking for another hour, the two people arrived at the mining site of the Blood Group.

It was positioned at the centre of Black Wind Forest. An area of roughly twenty li was the size of the Blood Group's mining area. In the surrounding area, a few houses had been erected to allow the disciples to rest.

Because the ore vein was underground, when Kai Yang and Hu Mei Er arrived, they didn't see many people and instead saw several large holes in the ground that lead underground.

Apart from the surrounding hundred feet or so, Kai Yang felt a weak reaction from his Origin of Yang in the center of his stomach area; a reaction to the underground Bright Yang Stones. Along with the growth of his strength the area in which he could sense Yang energy also grew larger, but it didn't increase by much.

Seeing the two people entering the mining area, a Blood Group disciple took notice of them. Then an old man suddenly dropped down from the sky and landed in front of Kai Yang and Hu Mei Er. Cupping his hands he said: "Young lady!"

"Grandpa Long." Hu Mei Er called out familiarly and pulled on Kai Yang to introduce him: "This is our sect's vice head, grandfather Long, Long Zai Tian."

Kai Yang hurriedly paid his respects: "This one meets the Long senior."

Long Zai Tian looked at Kai Yang in contempt and didn't pay any regard to him. With his immortal ascension boundary cultivation, and position as vice head of the Blood Group, was there any need to pay regard to Kai Yang's little face?

Not to mention a youngster who relied on a woman! Long Zai Tian especially

despised people like Kai Yang, and if it wasn't for Hu Mei Er's face, he would have long since slapped Kai Yang to death.

"Young lady, why did you come to the mining site?" Stroking his long white beard, Long Zai Tian kindly asked her, "It is both dirty and hot here so how is this someplace you can come to. Hurry and return, otherwise when your father learns of it, he will scold me."

"It wouldn't happen. Daddy wouldn't have the guts to scold you because you are the third most powerful elder in the sect, in fact he only respects you." Hu Mei Er used her ** spoilt child act, causing Long Zai Tian to become quite joyful.

"Grandpa Long, my friend here wants to purchase some things from some of the disciples here. Would you allow us to trouble you and enter to find them?" Hu Mei Er asked, arriving at her goal.

Chapter 60 – No need for senior to see me out

“Enter the mine?” Long Zai Tian’s face immediately fell and he went to vigilantly size up Kai Yang before asking: “He isn’t a disciple of the sect right?”

Kai Yang took a step forwards and said respectfully: “I am a disciple of Sky Tower Pavilion.”

“Disciples not of the sect are not allowed to enter!” Long Zai Tian said whilst glaring at Kai Yang before blowing out a mouthful of air, clearly displeased. From his tone you tell he despised Kai Yang as he said: “Even disciples of the sect aren’t able to freely enter as they wish, let alone you, an outsider.”

After he finished saying this, his face became full of pain as he turned around to Hu Mei Er to say: “Young lady, how could you bring an outsider to this place? Since you are young, you don’t know the ways of people’s hearts, you may know a person for a long time but not their true nature. These past years, because of this mine, we have earned quite a lot of money, with many eyes secretly watching us making inquiries, all wanting to exploit any weakness. If this old man did not guard the mine all year round, one couldn’t possibly imagine the chaos that might ensue.”

Kai Yang was deep in thought, this old timer was indirectly accusing him of spying. When you heard this spoken about yourself you really didn’t feel well.

Hu Mei Er sensed Kai Yang wasn’t happy and hurriedly said: “Grandpa Long you misunderstood. He doesn’t enquire about anything, but only wants to purchase some things.”

Long Zai Tian mockingly laughed: “Purchase some things? You need to come all the way here to buy things? This excuse is really interesting. Brat, I don’t know what your goal is, but scram for his elder now. If you dare to come here again, let’s see if this elder dares to kill you or not.”

A belly full of angry rose, Kai Yang felt this coarse senior was far too arrogant. But although he was resentful, he knew that the difference in strength was far too great and if moves were exchanged, Kai Yang was afraid he wouldn’t even last one breath’s time.

Forcibly suppressing his anger, Kai Yang didn’t say a word. If he was to start something, he would only disadvantage himself.

“Coward!” As Long Zai Tian saw Kai Yang’s reactions, he despised him even more.

Uncontrollably the Yang World Qi within Kai Yang’s daitan started to swell up, as he glowered at Long Zai Tian.

Sensing the change in Kai Yang’s World Qi, Long Zai Tian angrily said: “Impudent! You want to attack me?”

Once he finished, without any reason or regard to power seniority, a palm was sent out towards Kai Yang. Seeing this palm being sent towards him, Kai Yang stood there unable to move. It wasn’t because he was scared stiff, but rather that the opponent had used some sort of skill to immobilize him.

Kai Yang’s face changed greatly because he would never have imagined that this old timer would be so shameless. He could feel Long Zai Tian’s attitude

towards him, but couldn't figure out the reason why and faced with this intent to kill, Kai Yang didn't know how to react.

With death charging towards him, the immense pressure that accompanied an immortal ascension boundary practitioner's attack caused even Kai Yang's heart to freeze. His breathing also became shallow, meanwhile an instinctual desire for survival arose from within his body.

Suddenly from within his bones, a boiling hot warmth seeped out and rapidly spread throughout his body. The next moment, Kai Yang felt the restricting forces on his body disappear.

Hastily, Kai Yang used all of his strength to dodge to the side.

Long Zai Tian causally smashed down his palm, he thought that he would definitely have hit that Sky Tower disciple with his palm. Contrary to his predictions, the opposite party had actually dodged!

How could that be? Long Zai Tian's eyebrows creased.

How could his immortal ascension boundary restricting techniques be broken by this youngster? Because he didn't predict this, Long Zai Tian had just casually slammed his palm down.

Although Long Zai Tian's attack did not hit Kai Yang, it put him in a difficult position. His face became pale and he was left sweating all over while he stabilised his position, he looked at Long Zai Tian for a while. Within Kai Yang's eyes, there was an extra streak of coldness.

If one said that Kai Yang had annoyed over Long Zai Tian's attitude towards him, you could now say that he was furious. The opponent tried to take his life without even trying to hide his intent, like he was toying with an ant.

Although Long Zai Tian also knew this point, he still didn't know how Kai Yang had escaped his binding. But since he had shown that he wanted to kill Kai Yang, how could he be light with his strikes? One step to strike, one step to rest, as he prepared to send another strike over.

Only now did Hu Mei Er regain her senses, she quickly rushed in front of Kai Yang while she glaring at Long Zai Tian. Hissing out: "Grandpa Long, he is my friend! What are you trying to do?"

"For people trying to make inquiries about the mine, all must die, as decreed by the law! This the command of the Sect Head!" Long Zai Tian looked at Hu Mei Er deeply, while a flash of astonishment appeared in his eyes.

Before, Hu Mei Er would often have dealings with young males, but he had never seen her disregard her life for anyone. With regards to the life and deaths of those young males, Hu Mei Er never cared about them. In other words, eight out of ten of those youngsters, none had good endings.

But this time, she was undaunted by the dangers stood in front of this Sky Tower disciple while also using quite a fierce tone to question him.

This had never happened before! Long Zai Tian's eyes narrowed, thinking it over, his killing intent became stronger.

Hu Mei Er protected Kai Yang behind her, clenching her teeth she glowered at

Long Zai Tian and said: “I said, he only wants to purchase some things and doesn’t want to inquire about the mine! Grandpa Long, do you not understand my words?”

Seeing how Hu Mei Er wanted to protect Kai Yang, Long Zai Tian could no longer continue to be a troublemaker and could only say: “Don’t dare. Young lady’s words, this elder still believes them.”

“Since it is so, why do you still act that way?”

“This elder admits his mistakes, and asks for the forgiveness of the young lady.”

The Blood Group, Strom House and Sky Tower were all different, the Blood Group was a family group. The Hu family were the masters, so although Long Zai Tian was the Vice-Head, he must still give Hu Mei Er face.

“But this elder still asks for the young lady’s forgiveness because the mine is no small matter and outsiders cannot enter!” After speaking, Long Zai Tian didn’t look to Hu Mei Er but turned towards Kai Yang’s direction, he snorted out coldly and turned around to leave.

Kai Yang took in a deep breath, calming the boiling blood within him to say: “No need for senior to see me out!”

Long Zai Tian impatiently turned his head and narrowed his eyes at Kai Yang, hiding away traces of killing intent in his eyes.

“Senior, the present me is not your opponent!” Kai Yang slowly walked in front

of Hu Mu Er and without any fear he faced Long Zai Tian, “So today’s affairs, I will remember them. But after five years, ten years, I will come and return this debt. I hope that senior will be able to live till that day!”

Kai Yang spoke with great serenity, but with seriousness.

Long Zai Tian’s face became cold, before he started to laugh out loud: “Whether or not this senior would be able to live to that day, you don’t need to worry about. But I think you definitely won’t be able to live till that day! Unbridled youngster, please be careful in the future!”

“I will!”

After Long Zai Tian departed, Hu Mei Er apologised profusely to Kai Yang: “I am very sorry, I am very sorry. I don’t know why grandpa Long would act this way and if I had known earlier, I wouldn’t have brought you over.”

“Don’t worry.” Kai Yang breathed in deeply, recalling the immensely terrifying scene, he still felt some lingering fear. If it wasn’t for the golden skeleton’s actions at that crucial moment, he was afraid that he would be long dead. It was that boiling hot warmth that allowed him to break free of Long Zai Tian’s bindings and escape mortal danger.

Chapter 61 – I owe you a favour

Why would Long Zai Tian go against him? Kai Yang took a glance at the forlorn and ashamed Hu Mei Er, the reason became clear.

Some things were better left unsaid.

Hu Mei Er was also a bright and intelligent girl, and although Kai Yang only glanced at her, she still understood the reason for his gaze.

“Grandpa forbade you from entering the mine, and I am unable to not give him face. How about this, I will go and buy those seeds in your place and you wait for me here.” Hu Mei Er suggested.

“Okay.” Kai Yang knew this was the only way, and immediately went to give all of his valuable possessions to her before telling her the names of the disciple who possessed the seeds. That time in the Black Wind Trade area, he had gotten all the relevant information from the booth owner.

Hu Mei Er entered the underground mine, while Kai Yang’s eyes swept over the holes in the ground. When Long Zai Tian had left, he had entered one of the houses, and Kai Yang could sense that within that house a pair of eyes were staring at him intently.

Inside the house, a pair of eyes were currently fixed on Kai Yang’s position.

He had watched when Long Zai Tian had struck out at Kai Yang earlier, he was about the same age as Kai Yang. He was Long Zai Tian’s grandson, Long Hui!

Long Hui was currently looking at Kai Yang coldly and said somewhat discontentedly: “Grandpa, why didn’t you kill him back then?”

Long Zai Tian laughed coldly: “With Mei Er’s protection, how do you expect me to kill him?”

“All the more reason to kill him. I have never seen little sister Hu Mei Er spend so much effort for any man and that youngster’s relationship with Mei Er isn’t shallow. To allow him to live, will only cause problems.”

“En, we have never seen Hu Mei Er protect someone like that. And for him, she actually dared to go against me, which is very unusual.” Long Zai Tian’s eyebrows creased.

Long Hui was extremely jealous: “Now that Mei Er has entered the mine, how about grandpa attacks again?”

Long Zai Tian looked at Long Hui resentfully, he wanted to comply: “There is no problem with me attacking him, to kill him is no hard task. But, if because of his death, it causes Mei Er to harbour resentment towards you, do you think it is worth it?”

Long Hui looked on blankly before shaking his head: “It’s not worth it, but are we really going to allow him to continue his relationship with Hu Mei Er? I can’t bear it.”

“You!” Long Zai Tian couldn’t help but let out a breath, “Learn more from your older brother and see how he treats the women that he likes. If you want Mei Er,

you must use more of your mind. Grandpa can help you kill people, but I can't possibly help you acquire a female's heart right? Hu Man does not have any sons, only Jiao Er and Mei Er these two daughters, so if you and your older brother able to obtain these two, then in the future, the Blood Group would belong to my Long family! In all three generations of my Long family, we have put decades of work into helping Blood Group so we deserve the taste of being the sect head!"

Hearing this caused Long Hui to become hot-blooded as he nodded his head: "It should be time for my Long family to become the master family. Relax grandpa, Mei Er won't be able to escape and over on big brother's side, Hu Jiao Er will definitely be captured."

"En, seeing that you have resolve is good." Long Zai Tian smiled at him.

Long Hui was full of venom, he blamed things on the distant Kai Yang. With a bit of restlessness he said: "Grandpa, that person....."

"You go find the opportunity yourself. His strength isn't high, so you should be able to cope."

"Yes!" Long Hui laughed sinisterly.

Although he couldn't do anything now since Hu Mei Er would return shortly, Kai Yang was still a Sky Tower disciple, so he wouldn't be able to run far.

Kai Yang waited outside for a short while before Hu Mei Er came out, sweating all over. Her face full of smiles, she stuffed four seeds into Kai Yang's hands: "Fortunately it wasn't life threatening."

The young lady of the Blood Group wanted to purchase some things, so which disciple dared to not sell?

“Many thanks!” Kai Yang very carefully placed the four seeds within his chest area pocket.

After standing in his original position for a while, Kai Yang struggled before saying: “You have helped me this time, I owe you a favor.”

Hu Mei Er looked at Kai Yang strangely: “What do you mean?”

Waving his hand, Kai Yang said: “Why don’t you follow me!”

Although Hu Mei Er didn’t know what he wanted to do, she obediently followed him over.

After walking about thirty feet, Kai Yang unexpectedly stopped and stamped his foot: “I want you to remember this place. About seventy feet below here, there should be some unusual things.”

Hu Mei Er eyes widened in doubt: “How do you know?”

Kai Yang muttered a bit indistinctly: “The martial skill that I am practising, within a certain distance, I can sense all Yang attributed things. Underneath here there should be a Yang attributed treasure and its Yang energy fluctuations are many times more pure than the Bright Yang Stones.”

Before coming here, Kai Yang had already sensed that in this area was a bit unusual and after considering it, he decided to tell Hu Mei Er. One reason was, due the this area belonging to the Blood Group, even if Kai Yang wanted these treasures, he couldn't obtain them. Secondly, he still owed Hu Mei Er a favour and Kai Yang saw everything she did as she helped him today.

"Ah?" Hearing Kai Yang's words, Hu Mei Er became frightened.

"Do you believe me?"

"I believe!" Hu Mei Er replied very frankly, making Kai Yang feel a bit moved.

"That's good then." Smiling lightly: "Even though I do not know what is below, its value definitely isn't low. Also, apart from that, there seems to be something else too, for the specifics, I can't sense it. But from my guesses, the secret hidden below should be the peculiar mystery that your Blood Group has been trying solve regarding the mine. It's extremely possible it's because of their existence, that this ore vein exists."

Hu Mei Er couldn't help but be moved. If what Kai Yang said was true, then the secret hidden underneath was extremely important.

"You are an intelligent girl, so you should know how to act." Kai Yang solemnly urged her.

"I understand." Hu Mei Er kept on nodding her head.

"Okay then, let's go." He smiled as he said this.

“En.”

Walking through the forest, Hu Mei Er and Kai Yang didn't speak, but instead enjoyed the warmth of the forest together.

Hu Mei Er was extremely joyful because Kai Yang had told her such important information. It was evident that his impression of her had changed greatly, unlike last time when he had simply disregarded her and ordered her around.

This time was different, he was much gentler and softer with her.

“We shall part here.” Abruptly, Kai Yang stopped his steps, while Hu Mei Er looked distracted, showing her unwillingness. In the blink of an eye, the two people had arrived at the four way intersection; time passed by so quickly! Hu Mei Er was grieving slightly.

“Goodbye.” Kai Yang hurriedly said this and rushed back to Sky Tower Pavilion.

He really isn't an easily swayed man! Hu Mei Er laughed out bitterly, trying to cope.

Chapter 62 – Xia Ning Chang’s decision

Next to Coiling Dragon Stream, Kai Yang concentrated on his training.

Not too far from him there were three Three Sun’s Fruit trees growing healthily, the biggest of the three already had three fruits growing, all on the verge of ripening. The smallest of the three had only just emerged from the ground, it was still a tiny sapling.

Ever since the day he had left the Blood Group mine, Kai Yang had been cultivating non-stop day and night at the Coiling Dragon Stream; even forgetting to eat. Long Zai Tian’s capricious attacks had motivated him to become stronger. With regards to that event he wanted to extract revenge with his own two hands.

After ten days of training, he had reached the peak of the tempered body ninth stage and was on the brink of breaking through. But he seemed to be unable to grasp certain key points, causing Kai Yang to feel hopeless.

He knew that a realm breakthrough required an opportunity, and wasn’t easy like breaking through the various sub-stages. Even if he has enough World Qi, he must have a chance encounter and understand what needs to be understood.

But if you thought about it, these days of training went by quite smoothly. He no longer needed to go and sweep, so he had more hours to train, the Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and the Dead Jedi Tree Grass herbs had long since been finished. Without the incense’s pressure, the results from activating the True Yang Tactics were clearly faster, allowing Kai Yang to absorb the Yang Qi more easily from the earth.

But all of the Yang Liquid drops that had been condensed, were used as a catalysts to transform the Three Sun's Fruit seeds. Within his dantian, not single drop remained.

The word's essence congregated around Kai Yang who was about to break into the initial element stage and filled his body with new energy, but unfortunately Kai Yang didn't succeed.

Even after a day and night, Kai Yang was still stuck at this bottleneck. Although he didn't feel worried, or impatient, he was unable to free himself of the shackles that bound him; it was so very strange.

Another night came, under the starry sky, next to Coiling Dragon Stream, Kai Yang sank into an anxious type of mood. All of his World Qi seemed to become chaotic and on his face, an extremely painful expression appeared.

Not too far away, Xia Ning Chang who was watching Kai Yang couldn't help but cry out. Though they were quite a distance apart, she could still sense the unusual World Qi fluctuations; within those World Qi fluctuations, there was a cold and evil Qi.

How could it be like this? This was a clear sign of walking into the dark practises. He was only breaking into the initial element stage from the tempered body ninth stage, so how could there be a chance of accidentally walking into the dark practises?

Saying it badly, a martial practitioner like Kai Yang with such a low level of cultivation didn't even have the qualifications for dark practises. Only when he was at a higher stage, would he have a chance to start to cultivate in that

direction.

But this situation was actually occurring to Kai Yang.

Xia Ning Chang's pretty eyebrows furrowed together in confusion.

The reason why she was there was because she had searched for Kai Yang. She had watched over Kai Yang for more than two years, so it had become a habit. These recent few days, with the sudden disappearance of Kai Yang, had left her a bit lonely and everything she did, wasn't interesting. Searching for him, she had found him next to Coiling Dragon Stream and the big stone in her heart had been lifted.

After arriving, Xia Ning Chang knew that Kai Yang was about to breakthrough. After waiting for a day, Kai Yang had unexpectedly not, and now this strange thing had arisen, so how could she not be in doubt.

Just as Xia Ning Chang was feeling anxious inside, a pure and blistering hot energy burst from within Kai Yang. With that blistering hot energy's appearance, the demonic traces of energy were gradually being burnt away and Kai Yang's World Qi fluctuations immediately became steady.

"True Yang Energy!" Xia Ning Chang's small mouth gaped open and her charming face displayed her amazement. Nearly crying out, "How could it be so pure!"

That pure and blistering hot energy, was clearly Yang type energy. Many Sky Tower disciples cultivate fire or Yang type martial skills and possessed this type of fiery World Qi. But no matter which disciples World Qi was compared with Kai

Yang's, it wouldn't be as pure as his.

This blistering hot energy wasn't very dense, because Kai Yang's strength wasn't very high. But it was abnormally clean, without the tiniest bit of impurity; like a water source that hadn't been contaminated by the outside world.

Before she could recover herself, Xia Ning Chang saw that the demonic energy which was being suppressed by that blistering energy was also being replaced by it while it scattered inside Kai Yang.

After a short while, another burst true Yang qi came out from Kai Yang and suppressed the remaining dark energy, restoring Kai Yang.

This repeated a few times, leaving Xia Ning Chang dumbstruck! She had never seen or heard of such a bizarre occurrence when a martial practitioner broke through into the initial element stage.

In other words, although breaking through to the initial element stage one would suffer some restrictions, because the stage was still fairly low so were the restrictions. As long as one used some effort they could break through, but this was not the case for Kai Yang. She could clearly see that the restrictions he suffered were far greater than anyone else's, and were in fact comparable to those she suffered when she was breaking into the higher stages.

Kai Yang was currently suffering bitterly, but just then he had pried into the next stage a little bit. He already had a foot into the initial element stage, but at that moment from within his bones came out a evil energy causing him to lose his concentration. Fortunately his Yang World Qi allowed him to clear his mind.

Currently inside his body, the two energies were fighting a ferocious battle with one being the Yang energy that he cultivated and other one being the evil energy that came from his bones. Each side struggled endlessly, treating his body like their battlefield. The evil energy occupied the upper part of his body, making his mind a bit muddled and elicited bloodthirsty emotions from within his mind. He wanted to go find a person to kill.

This was similar to when he was injured by others during a battle, while also being different. Although when he was injured he felt bloodthirsty during battle, his mind was still clear.

While his Yang World Qi occupied the lower part of his body, leaving his body extremely clear and free.

Circling around without end, leaving one unable to determine a clear winner and loser.

Kai Yang felt most uncomfortable.

Xia Ning Chang dashed around Sky Tower wearing her tight, black clothes displaying her wonderful figure. A slender waist, with long slim legs that made people lose themselves in their fantasies. With an uneasy feeling and a black veil covering her face, she rushed over to Kai Yang.

She had watched from her position for quite a long time, and felt really concerned for Kai Yang. Thinking it over numerous times, she still decided to go over and help him. Usually, when someone was breaking through, they could not be disturbed, but Xia Ning Chang could clearly feel the chaotic battle occurring inside Kai Yang! It was like a bloodthirst for battle type of baptism.

Only a battle could help relieve him, only that could help him escape from that endless cycle.

That's why Xia Ning Chang returned to her residence to change her clothes before going to him, otherwise he might be able to recognise her. Afterall, they had met face to face before.

Returning back hurriedly, Kai Yang was still suffering and his movements seemed to be bigger than before.

Without the slightest bit of hesitation, Xia Ning Chang directly pounced onto Kai Yang. Murderous intent shone in her charming eyes, her hand attacked.

Chapter 63 – You seem like my senior sister

Since she had already decided to help him, Xia Ning Chang didn't want to expose herself and show any flaws. Only once she helped, by fighting Kai Yang, would he be able to breakthrough.

That's why her first strike was infused with killing intent.

Kai Yang's strength was only at the tempered body ninth stage, so Xia Ning Chang only used strength that was around the initial element second-third realm.

Kai Yang who was at a critical juncture sensed something amiss, and felt a cold pressure around him. Without ample time to react, he felt that he was in a life or death situation.

Just as he was in doubt about this sense, the sound of a palm came from the side of his body.

Someone had launched a sneak attack against him! Kai Yang immediately woke up, he wasn't scared, rather he was happy as he leapt to the side. Creasing his eyebrows, he swiftly threw out a fist.

His fighting spirit had been woken when he was trying to break through and just as he was pondering how to discharge the energy in his body, who would have imagined that somebody would come and present themselves like that! As to who had come to mount this sneak attack on him, Kai Yang no longer cared because he only wanted to fight, to fight a fulfilling battle!

Hearing the enemy's sounds and the beating of their World Qi, Kai Yang hastily retreated a few steps. Xia Ning Chang's attack hit empty space so she calmly slowed her pace, while a flash of surprise went through her eyes.

Even though she had only used strength at about the initial element third stage, it wasn't an even match for him. Her attack should have successfully landed.

Retreating a bit, Kai Yang used the moonlight to view his opponent's build. It was a female, but her face was covered with a black veil so he was unable to see her face.

"How could it be a girl!" Kai Yang eyebrows wrinkled as he mumbled discontentedly.

As soon as Xia Ning Chang heard those words, she was trembling with rage! Clenching her teeth, her body lightly flew over while World Qi gathered in the palm of her hand and covered with sky with images of her palm directed towards Kai Yang's head.

Those words had angered her too much!

Kai Yang howled out and released all of his strength along with his boiling hot Word Qi, matching up against Xia Ning Chang. Although the opponent was a female, Kai Yang wasn't lenient. Their strength was clearly higher than his by a level, whilst also containing killing intent, so he didn't dare to be careless.

Lightning and fire intercrossed, both Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang were tightly locked in battle but it was clear that it was unfavourable for Kai Yang. His style of

combat was bursts of heavy strength, and although his killing power was ferocious, it couldn't match up with Xia Ning Chang's nimbleness. If he attacked twice, Xia Ning Chang would attack three times, coupled with Xia Ning Chang's agile movements that allowed her to move in all directions it was like a monkey was playing tricks on Kai Yang.

Kai Yang was beaten all over, making him furious! He could sense that this opponent's strength was higher than his by quite a bit, but he would have never guessed that his opponent was hiding her true power while fighting him. Fighting these types of opponents, to manage to land a hit on them would actually be a miracle.

Face blackened, Xia Ning Chang who was seething with rage was suddenly smiling. She thought: 'Who told you to spout nonsense. You deserve to be beaten black and blue!'

(TL: Women be Scaryyyyyy)

It was just in a few moments, the aches and sores that Kai Yang had received, awoke his blood's excitement. Energy surging like a gushing river, he listened carefully; he could even hear the waves crashing down, as the familiar warmth spread throughout his body while his strength gradually returned.

Xia Ning Chang repeatedly showed signs of shock, because she sensed that this junior brother's World Qi undulations were getting bigger and bigger as his strength gradually started to breakthrough from the tempered body stage to arrive at the initial element stage. Not mention that it had yet to stop and was slowly but steadily still increasing.

The fist that carried with it a hot Word Qi became bigger and stronger, bigger

and heavier. Xia Ning Chang started to feel that she could not hold on, so she increased her strength a bit more and clenched her teeth whilst enduring.

“Who made you come and try to kill me?” In the middle of this fierce battle, Kai Yang suddenly asked her with a gloomy face, his voice was deep and tinged with dispiritedness.

Xia Ning Chang didn't answer and instead used all her focus to repel Kai Yang's moves.

Up until now, Kai Yang's strength would just match up with hers without either side having the slightest bit of an advantage. As long as she was targeted by his fist, she had to use some effort to repel the pure Yang Qi that invaded her body.

Xia Ning Chang was quite fearful and was afraid she had underestimated this pure Yang World Qi's might. This level of pureness was not something an ordinary martial practitioner could reach.

Just as Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang's hands crossed again neither of them retreated.

Narrowing his eyes at the opposing female, Kai Yang's gaze was pulled to her forehead and on it there was a faint imprint. Slightly startled, Kai Yang asked: “Your appearance.....you seem like my senior sister!”

Xia Ning Chang was currently defending against the invasion of Kai Yang's Yang Qi, so when she heard those words, it startled her. She thought: ‘When was it exposed?’ She never would have imagined it was the faint imprint on her forehead that aroused Kai Yang's suspicions.

Kai Yang remembered Xia Ning Chang's forehead had a blue gemstone in the area of that imprint.

Xia Ning Chang's eyes nervously blinked, her eyelashes quivered nonstop meanwhile Kai Yang grinned widely. It suddenly hindered her attacks, so he firmly pulled her into his embrace and tore off her veil.

Up until that moment, Xia Ning Chang had only just recovered and wasn't willing to reveal who she was. Firstly, she wanted to increase the pressure on Kai Yang, and secondly, she was a bit embarrassed. After all, last time's meeting was far too awkward, so how could she possibly take off her veil?

In a moment of desperation, she failed to suppress her strength so a ferocious burst of World Qi lashed out. Kai Yang cried out strangely, and flew backwards quite a distance. When he landed, he continued to roll some more.

When he managed to crawl up, how could that female still be there? She had long since escaped to god knows where.

"Could it really be?" Just then, he had casually asked the question, but who would have thought she would react so badly. That final World Qi infused attack allowed Kai Yang to know of the great disparity in their strengths. If she truly wanted to kill him, it would be as simple as raising her hand. Was it really necessary for her to initiate a battle with him?

Whether it was the case or not was no longer important, because under that battles stimulation, the shackles that bound him were broken. He immediately sat down and carefully started to sense the world energy.

In the next hour, the worldly energy started to flow violently towards Kai Yang's direction.

Breathing in deeply, all of Kai Yang's pores opened and gladly absorbed the world energy into his body. The pulled in world energy started to roam around Kai Yang's body and cleansed his entire body.

This was an opportunity given to every martial practitioner that broke through to a higher realm. As for the results of the cleansing, it depended on how much effort a practitioner put into it.

A hundred feet away, Xia Ning Chang panickedly hugged her chest because she didn't think that Kai Yang would recognise her. Though she had finally helped him breakthrough, so she hadn't wasted her efforts.

Just as she was panicking, a person's figure appeared. A simply dressed old man suddenly appeared. This old man was completely white with a friendly appearance.

(TL: Eleventh elder!!!)

After she saw his face, Xia Ning Chang respectfully greeted him: "Greetings to the sect head."

The old man kindly smiled: "You are not one of my Sky Tower disciples, no need for the formalities."

Xia Ning Chang softly said: “But you are a close friend of my master, so naturally you are my senior.”

Chapter 64 – Initial Element Stage

When the Sect Head saw Xia Ning Chang's clever and sensible behaviour, he couldn't help but smile: "Meng Wu Ya really has good fortune to have accepted such a well-behaved disciple."

Recalling his own two disciples, the Head secretly sighed.

Xia Ning Chang was very clear on his past, and seeing his expression dim, she didn't know how to comfort him. She could only sink into silence.

Without speaking, the Head raised his hand to the sky and then pushed in the direction of Kai Yang. In that moment, Xia Ning Chang felt that the heaven and earth in that area had been sliced in half; like a enormous invisible palm was shielding that area from all prying eyes.

"This youngster's breakthrough should have caused quite the ruckus, so it would be best to hide this first. This is to avoid investigation by others." The Head started to explain.

Xia Ning Chang was at a loss. Why was this head who often did not show himself to others all year round, treating Kai Yang with such interest. But although she was puzzled, she didn't dare to ask.

One old, one young, remained at this one hundred foot distance as they watched over Kai Yang's situation.

The world energy entered the tempered body staged body of Kai Yang and

spread through every inch of it. Even though one could not sense the initial element fluctuations, they could see that in a ten foot radius, a large gale of wind was circulating with Kai Yang as the origin, the commotion around Kai Yang really wasn't small.

This was only a breakthrough into the initial element stage, so how could it be like this? Xia Ning Chang really didn't understand it.

With the passing of time, a drumming sound slowly began in Kai Yang's body. He felt his body was like a balloon expanding, because there was quite a large amount of world energy pouring in.

Just as Xia Ning Chang was secretly worrying for him, his body reverted to how it was previously. Even under the Head's barrier, she could still feel the sinister World Qi fluctuations.

What was even more shocking was that the immense amount of World Qi had been completely absorbed by Kai Yang. And unexpectedly, a blazing hot, red stream of energy came gushing out from Coiling Dragon Stream.

These strips of energy were like red ribbons, rising from the bottom of Coiling Dragon Stream, they entered Kai Yang through his pores.

Yang attributed Qi! Xia Ning Chang realised, the energy Kai Yang had previously absorbed was world energy, and this time it was Yang attributed Qi. Although it could still be considered world energy, it was energy with a single attribute.

Only after this Yang attributed Qi had been completely absorbed by Kai Yang, did the commotion cease.

“Not bad.” The Head smiled slightly, and snapped his fingers to remove the barrier he had erected. In a split second his figure had disappeared leaving only his voice near Xia Ning Chang’s ear: “Please ask if your master is well in my place.”

“Understood!” Xia Ning Chang respectfully replied, before going to investigate the results of Kai Yang’s breakthrough.

With only one look, Xia Ning Chang was stunned.

Initial element second stage!

She actually thought she had sensed incorrectly, so she checked again and confirmed that Kai Yang really had reached the initial element second stage!

His breakthrough this time had not only involved him breaking into a higher realm, but also breaking through one of the sub stages. Was she dreaming?

Xia Ning Chang’s own physique was special and even with her meticulous cultivating and training, when she broke through she didn’t directly break through two stages. So today when she saw Kai Yang in front of her achieve this feat, how could she not be stunned?

Just as she was staring at him flabbergasted, Kai Yang who was sitting down cross-legged suddenly muttered to himself: “So it was like this!”

That being said, the World Qi fluctuations from his body became denser, he

broke through to the initial element third stage!

“Monster!” Xia Ning Chang didn’t know how to react, as she once again felt a blow to her confidence.

After holding her position for a while, and confirming that Kai Yang wouldn’t increase in strength again, Xia Ning Chang finally let loose a sigh of relief, then left sorrowfully.

Kai Yang sat next to Coiling Dragon Stream for the entire night, but didn’t cultivate his True Yang Tactics at all, rather he set about understanding the insights he had gained during his breakthrough.

During his breakthrough, two different types of energy had entered Kai Yang. One was the world energy, this had not been absorbed into his dantian, this had been absorbed by his bones, apart from a portion of tempered body energy.

The second type was the Yang attributed energy from within the Coiling Dragon Stream which had fully become his. This energy had condensed into five drops of Yang Liquid and was calmly residing within his dantian. After thinking for the entire night, Kai Yang had finally achieved a vague understanding.

The golden skeleton was able to sense when he sustained injuries or pain and restore his stamina, but this boost required energy to work. It could not come from nothing, so it absorbing world energy was not something hard to comprehend.

The world energy absorbed by it this time, would be given back to him later when he needed the stamina boosts. This was also one of the golden skeleton’s

profound uses, and the reason why it could supplement his stamina when needed during battle.

Kai Yang had also thought that he could only take in Yang type energy because he was cultivating the True Yang Tactics. But it looked like now, this theory ought to be tested.

If he really could absorb energy that wasn't Yang attributed, then his training speed would be even faster than before.

That made Kai Yang a bit joyful. Even though the True Yang Tactics were powerful, it still had limitations. However if his theory was correct, then he would no longer need to worry about finding adequate training environments.

Breathing out deeply, Kai Yang stood up. Using all of his concentration to sense that he truly had broken through and that he was at the initial element third stage.

Thinking back to the size of the two energies that had entered his body last night, Kai Yang felt at ease.

With his internal World Qi stabilized, arriving at the initial element stage, even if his World Qi amount was small, this breakthrough was clearly out of the ordinary.

The World Qi in his body had succeeded in increasing his heaven cycle, connecting his heaven and earth bridge and thereby increasing the speed at which his True Yang Tactics worked.

Not to mention that after reaching this stage, to a certain extent, training was easier. But of course, the prerequisites was that you had a suitable cultivating environment.

Walking back from Coiling Dragon Stream, Kai Yang only felt happiness. With a realm increase, his view on the world had changed a bit, resulting in his eyes becoming a bit clearer.

In a fifty foot radius, he could even sense a person's breathing.

Just as he was walking to his wooden hut, Kai Yang suddenly heard a familiar cry of agony. Stopping in his tracks, Kai Yang went to listen but couldn't resist the urge to laugh.

How could Su Mu be beaten by someone again?

But this was inside the Main Gate's territory. So if he was being beaten by someone, it was probably because of a duel. If he couldn't match up with others, then he couldn't blame anyone but himself.

No matter what, Kai Yang decided to go over and see what was going on.

Inside Sky Tower Pavilion, as soon as people started to duel, any place could become a battlefield. The distance from where Su Mu was getting beaten up and where Kai Yang was actually wasn't that far, and you only needed to walk a short distance before arriving.

Over there, quite a number of people were spectating and as Kai Yang swept his eyes over the scene, he clearly saw two main groups of people. About ten

feet away from where he was standing were the familiar Li Yun Tian and Zhao Hu and assorted other underlings. But their expressions were full of wrath as they confronted the people opposite them.

It didn't seem quite right! As Kai Yang watched his, his eyebrows furrowed. The comparing of notes between Main Gate disciples, no matter who lost or won, it wouldn't escalate to such a degree. Li Yun Tian and the others clearly looked like they were feeling indignant at some injustice and like they wanted to start a gang war.

Chapter 65 – Wei Zhuan

Apart from these two groups of people, there were quite a few Sky Tower disciples encircling the fighters to view the theatrics. The number of these unrelated bystanders was not little as they pointed with their fingers at the ongoing duel.

Bringing with him a few doubts, Kai Yang broke through the crowd to slowly walk over to Li Yun Tian.

He saw that Su Mu had a bloody nose and swollen face, he was cutting quite the sorry figure as he was facing a youngster who couldn't be much older than him. The youngster was very calm and composed, without a single sign on injury on his body as he smiled at Su Mu with a contemptuous look. As he effortlessly blocked Su Mu's attacks, he was also provoking him. And as Su Mu yelled loudly, he jumped forward but his attack was easily countered.

After watching for a while, Kai Yang's eyebrows creased because he saw that it wasn't because Su Mu's attacks didn't hit that youngster, but rather Su Mu's attack had no effect even when they hit. When Su Mu's fist landed, that youngster didn't even bat an eyelid, while Su Mu on the other hand received some light injuries.

Between the two, the difference in World Qi energy fluctuations was quite small, in other words, their strengths were about equal. How could there be such a large disparity when they battled?

"What's going on?" Kai Yang patted Li Yun Tian's shoulder as he asked.

Turning around, Li Yun Tian's face turned joyous as he replied: "Senior brother Kai!"

Hearing this shout, Zhou Hu and the others saw Kai Yang and went to greet him before turning around to re-face the people facing them.

"How come Su Mu is not his opponent?" Kai Yang voiced his puzzlement, "Their strengths should be about the same?"

Li Yun Tian immediately nodded his head, however his expression fell: "En, Young Master Su is currently at the initial element second stage while that person is at the initial element third stage. If you really wanted this to be fair, then you would have to say Young Master Su is not exactly his opponent, so he would not have an easy time. But this person is despicable to the extreme. As fellow disciples when we are exchanging notes and during our duels we do not use any treasures or artifacts, however he actually dared to wear a defensive artifact. How can Su Mu's attacks show their might?"

When he heard this, Kai Yang expression showed his contemplation: "Defensive artifact?"

"Right." Li Yun Tian clenched his teeth: "He is the Grand Elder's flesh and blood grandson, he is called Wei Zhuan. His defensive artifact was given to him personally by the Grand Elder."

"Another second generation master?" Slowly things became clear. Behind Su Mu, there was an Elder and this Wei Zhuan was the grandson of the Grand Elder. Both had powerful backings, their positions were about the same, so if others didn't dare to fight Su Mu, that did not mean that Wei Zhuan didn't dare. But wearing a defensive artifact was a bit unfair.

“The Grand Elder and the Second Elder were never on good terms, so much so that even Su Mu and this Wei Zhuan held unfavourable impressions of each other. Now that he has this opportunity, he definitely plans on teaching Su Mu a ruthless lesson.” Li Yun Tian was secretly worried.

Kai Yang oh-ed out: “So it was just some boring and senseless internal strife.”

“Senior brother Kai, please think of a way to save Young Master Su. You know his character, if he continues like this, then he will receive heavy injuries. ”

Kai Yang remained calm: “The exchange of notes between Main Gate disciples, if you are not up to par with them then you are beaten up a little. Are you saying that Sky Tower disciples are afraid of this?”

“But this duel wasn’t fair from the start, and Wei Zhuan is hiding behind the might of his defensive artifact.”

Kai Yang coolly laughed: “This world was never fair! The strong prey on the weak, the strong are respected. You guys should already know all of this.”

(TL: GG, Kai Yang giving us valuable life lessons. Listen well to Shi-fu Kai.)

Li Yun Tian became speechless, left at a loss for words.

In the exchange of notes between Main Gate disciples, they weren’t able to intervene. Although Kai Yang’s actions were fierce in the past, even he couldn’t disobey school rules, so how could they expect him to go and save Su Mu like

last time?

On the battleground, Su Mu was already on the verge of collapse and his attacks no longer had much strength behind them. Wei Zhuan was laughing out loud, exceptionally pleased with this outcome. Hitting his chest proudly he said: “Su Mu don’t be polite, please come over. This young master is feeling very generous today, for I will not move from this spot at all. And if you are able to hurt me, then it will be my loss.”

Su Mu’s eye’s blurred, both his fists had smears of red blood over them. The defensive artifact that Wei Zhuan wore not only had defensive properties, it could also deflect World Qi imbued attacks, causing Su Mu’s every attack to rebound back on him with at least half the original strength. The injuries on his fists were caused from this.

Hearing Wei Zhuan’s arrogant words, Su Mu spat out some blood as he retorted full of contempt: “If you have the guts then take off that turtle shell you’re wearing. If this young master doesn’t beat you until you can only crawl, then you aren’t my grandson!”

(TL: So insulting Su Mu. o.o)

Wei Zhuan’s expression became frosty and sinister. Laughing evilly: “No small amount of courage! You actually dared to take advantage of me! You will pay for your words!”

Wei Zhuan was clearly enraged, three steps, two steps, he rushed towards Su Mu. Throwing out a punch at Su Mu’s cheek, Su Mu could only attempt to block with his hands. But his strength was already incomparable to his opponent, so he couldn’t defend against it. As the punch landed, it immediately caused his

cheek to swell up, and his head to turn one hundred and eighty degrees.

Wei Zhuan was imposing like a tiger, walking forward he kicked out and kicked Su Mu to the ground before throwing both his fists down.

Su Mu used all his strength to resist but to no avail. The defensive artifact that Wei Zhuan wore clearly held many uses and wasn't something Su Mu could contend against with his current strength.

"Call me grandfather and this young master will spare you!" After hitting him for a while, Wei Zhuan paused to say this.

Su Mu coolly looked up, smiling with disgust evident in his eyes.

Last time, Su Mu narrowly avoided Cheng Shao Feng smashing a stone into his head, but he still hadn't yielded. How could he surrender this time?

"You make me laugh!" Wei Zhuan didn't hesitate and resumed hitting Su Mu, Su Mu's teeth went flying and his nose started to overflow with blood causing his appearance to be quite pitiful.

This Wei Zhuan's hands were very fierce, even more so than Cheng Shao Feng's had been.

"Young master Su!" Li Yun Tian and the others could no longer bear it, but as they took a step forward they realised they couldn't do anything more, because the Main Gate rules could not be violated.

Wei Zhuan didn't continue but instead turned to sneer at Li Yun Tian and the rest, he he saying: "You want to save him?"

Li Yun Tian and the others didn't reply but took in deep breaths, full of resentment.

"I asked, do you want to save him?" He slapped his hand across Su Mu's face as he asked again evilly.

Seeing Su Mu being attacked again, they nodded their heads but were afraid that he was scheming something.

"The kneel down! Obediently kowtow a few times and if this lord is feeling good, then I shall spare him today!" Since Wei Zhuan couldn't deal with Su Mu completely, he turned towards Li Yun Tian and the others. Since they were Su Mu's underlings, if they were humiliated, then it was equal to humiliating Su Mu.

Hearing this, the people there went into an uproar while Li Yun Tian and the rest became ashen faced, humiliated to the extreme.

Su Mu struggled to look towards them, and with his broken teeth he said: "Do not listen to him!"

"Pa" it rang out as Su Mu received another slap.

Li Yun Tian and the others turned pale in fright because they knew that if they hesitated any further, Su Mu would only suffer more. Faces full of despair, they slowly knelt to the ground.

Kai Yang looked at them in astonishment, because he would never have imagined that they would go to such an extent for Su Mu. Was there gold underneath their knees, if their relationship wasn't close, who would do this for someone?

Originally Kai Yang thought that Li Yun Tian and the others followed behind the second generation Su Mu to earn some benefits, but that was clearly not the case.

Wei Zhuan's eyes narrowed and he suddenly laughed loudly. Towering over them, he looked down at Su Mu: "You couldn't tell that these dogs you trained were so obedient."

From the corners of Su Mu's eyes, leaked out two strands of tears, tears of humiliation! Even when he was beaten by Wei Zhuan to such an extent, he had yet to shed any tears, but now when he saw Li Yun Tian and the others kneeling on the ground, he couldn't restrain those tears.

Chapter 66 – Please teach me

Seeing Li Yun Tian and the others kneeling on the ground, Wei Zhuan's look of arrogance became even more pronounced. Laughing out heartily he said: "But kneeling alone doesn't show your sincerity!"

Li Yun Tian and others became ashen faced as they clenched their teeth together before saying, their voices full of grief: "We ask that Senior Wei please be lenient."

Wei Zhuan narrowed his eyes and his smile gradually disappeared. Li Yun Tian and the others had shown great courage, making him slightly moved.

"Wei Zhuan!" Su Mu called out as a belly full of blood rose up, "Between you and I, we cannot exist together!"

"You really are resolute!" Wei Zhuan clasp his two hands together and smashed down towards Su Mu's abdomen.

With a loud bang, Su Mu spat out a mouthful of blood before fainting from the pain.

"Young master Su!" His followers bellowed out because they hadn't predicted that Wei Zhuan would break his promise in front of such a audience.

"Don't spare a single one!" Wei Zhuan cruelly commanded his men. Then he stood up beside Su Mu and kicked him like he was kicking a dead dog to the side.

The Sky Tower disciples that were previously facing Li Yun Tian and the others, sneered out and rushed over to them issuing challenges!

(TL: lololol, even when they are beating up people, it's like: "Wait! Let's first issue a challenge, because we need to obey school rules.")

Just as they were going into a rage, not knowing how to vent their anger, their enemy came knocking. Was there any reason to reject the challenges?

This was a open and wild group fight, but each person had a set opponent. Wei Zhuan stood to the side as he watched and mocked: "Whoever refuses to comply, beat him to death. You might as well kill him to avoid a fuss!"

He clearly wanted to teach a good lesson to the people following Su Mu, to show them what lay in store for them when they followed the wrong person.

Because Kai Yang had been standing close to Li Yun Tian, he was also targeted by a disciple under Wei Zhuan. This person scuttled in front of Kai Yang, stated his name and, without waiting for Kai Yang to respond, he attacked.

Kai Yang sent out a kick accompanied by a thunderous sound into that person's stomach causing them to immediately crouch down.

(TL: Don't mess with his waifu SM. ED: I thought KY was done with sweeping trash, appears not.)

It was only because of his bad luck, with his cultivation at only the tempered body eight-ninth stage, and according to rules, he didn't have the necessary qualifications to even challenge Kai Yang. But since he had asked for a beating,

he could only blame himself.

Dodging through the battlefield, Kai Yang walked step by step to Su Mu.

“En?” Squinting his eyes towards Kai Yang, Wei Zhuan sized him up and a flash of suspicion passed through his eyes.

How many people were under Su Mu, what were their names, Wei Zhuan naturally knew all this. But Kai Yang he had never met, so he temporarily didn't know Kai Yang's identity.

Kai Yang silently approached Su Mu with a stoic face. Moving his hand, he went to feel for Su Mu's breathing and found out that Su Mu had only fainted; leaving him at ease.

“Who are you?” Wei Zhuan wasn't happy. With the differences between Su Mu and himself, when this person appeared to check Su Mu's condition, it clearly showed that they didn't put him in their eyes.

Standing up, Kai Yang calmly looked at Wei Zhuan.

“This master asked who you are.” Wei Zhuan lifted up his chin and stated in a stern voice.

“Trial disciple Kai Yang, please teach me!” Kai Yang cupped his hands at Wei Zhuan because this was the battle etiquette between Sky Tower disciples.

“Kai Yang?” Wei Zhuan looked blankly before quickly recovering himself, “You

are the Kai Yang that won against Storm House?”

“I don’t dare, but if there are no other disciples called Kai Yang in the Main Gate, then that is I.”

“What a joke! An insignificant trial disciple dares to come and challenge this master! Do you have the right?” Wei Zhuan sneered.

“The Main Gate rules state that as long as the difference in cultivation between disciples doesn’t surpass three stages, then they are able to duel!”

“This master is at the initial element third stage, what can you be considered as?” Wei Zhuan looked at him with contempt. A trial disciple, he was only a disciple that had yet to breakthrough into the initial element stage. Since he had yet to breakthrough, then their stage difference would naturally have surpassed three stages already.

“I am also at the initial element third stage!” Kai Yang replied indifferently.

A sound of bewilderment echoed.

“That can’t be possible. Kai Yang has already reached the initial element third stage?”

“Didn’t they say it took him three years to reach the tempered body third stage? Was it because he had said the wrong thing? Or did I just remember incorrectly?”

“That’s strange, Kai Yang only just recently challenged me. When he did so he was still at the tempered body eighth stage, so how could he reach this stage in less than a month?”

All types of questions, by no means few in number arose.

Wei Zhuan was also full of suspicions regarding Kai Yang, constantly wondering if he was lying or not. If he had reached the initial element stage, then why was he still a trial disciple?

What he didn’t know was that it was only last night that Kai Yang broke through. Furthermore, he had gone from the tempered body ninth stage directly to the initial element third stage.

“Don’t I have the right to challenge you now?” Kai Yang narrowed his eyes as he asked, there was an ominous glint in them.

“If you really have this level of cultivation, then you have the necessary right to challenge me.” Wei Zhuan nodded his head and laughed maliciously: “Only if you are not afraid of death!”

Kai Yang laughed indifferently: “I hope that you are also not afraid of death!”

“Talking big!” Wei Zhuan was angry as he thought about the fact that he was still wearing his defensive artifact. So even if he was an initial element staged martial practitioner, he still wouldn’t be able to break through his defense; this made him practically invincible. While only being at the initial element third stage, how could he possibly win against me?

“Come. I’ll allow you to punch me as a test!” Wei Zhuan waved his hand towards Kai Yang, full of arrogance and anger.

Would Kai Yang be courteous? Rushing forward, he directly sent a fist straight into Wei Zhuan’s chest.

Boiling hot Yang World Qi erupted. Not only was Wei Zhuan unharmed, Kai Yang’s body instead shook as he retreated quite a few steps. Lowering his head, he saw that his hand was red; it was clear that he had been injured by his own World Qi.

“Hehe! You overestimated yourself!” Wei Zhuan was very proud of this outcome, but his face soon fell because he discovered that this Kai Yang’s eyes had become red in colour. He started to emit violent and boiling hot fluctuations of World Qi from his body.

In his eyes, there wasn’t the slightest hit of a desire to retreat or fear, rather only excitement beyond compare. His eyes were like those of a terrible beast, looking at its prey; the slightest bit of movement would make him pounce.

Without warning, Wei Zhuan started to move but Kai Yang had already pounced on him. Within his dantian, a drop of Yang Liquid disappeared and appeared in his fingers. With a simple thought, it became a blade as thin as a cicada’s wing and as red as blood.

A blood red ray of light flashed by, accompanied by slicing and cutting sounds as Kai Yang and Wei Zhuan exchanged blows.

Wei Zhuan only felt his stomach turn cold. As he looked down, his heart

dropped and he shrieked out: “My Embroided Cloud Locking Mail!”

This Embroidered Cloud Locking Mail was an ordinary grade middle class artifact. Although it's rank wasn't high, it was very suitable for someone at his level. He didn't know where the Grand Elder obtained it from, but he had given it to him. Back then, the Grand Elder had said very clearly that normally, a initial element martial practitioner would be unable to break through this defensive artifact's defenses, unless they used a great killing weapon.

But now, this treasure that he had such faith in, had been cut by a fellow disciple in a duel; one who was only at the initial element third stage.

What martial weapon did he just use! Was that red blade also a secret weapon? And its grade should also be higher than the Embroidered Cloud Locking Mail? If not so, how could this shocking event occur?

Chapter 67 – You can't compare to him

At that moment, you could even say that Wei Zhuan was oh so regretful.

He was shocked that his Embroidered Cloud Locking Mail was unable to block even a single blow from his opponent, and was crying over the tear in his defensive artifact. That was because it had lost all its defensive properties now.

He was extremely angry. Turning his body around, Wei Zhuan jumped towards Kai Yang and bellowed: "You dared to break my defensive artifact! I want you to die!"

Wei Zhuan was also at the initial element third stage, so when his strength burst out, it didn't lose to Kai Yangs. But, unfortunately for him, when Kai Yang was still at the tempered body stage, he could already kill someone at the initial element fifth stage. How could an insignificant person at the initial element third stage gain any advantage?

When Wei Zhuan reached Kai Yang, the blood red blade criss-crossed through the air, slashing Wei Zhuan multiple times, leaving various wounds.

Wei Zhuan's body immediately froze, his fist stopping three inches away from Kai Yang. No matter how much he struggled, he couldn't move a step further because he felt a scalding hot feeling.

Shuddering, his eyes turned to face the ground. Only to see the blood red blade in Kai Yang's hand, like a quick snake attacking incessantly.

“A defensive artifact isn’t all it’s made out to be.” Kai Yang sneered as his eyes swept over the Embroidered Cloud Locking Mail on Wei Zhuan’s body; it was full of holes and tears.

Kai Yang was also shocked, because he also hadn’t predicted that his Yang Liquid blade would be this powerful; it was actually this sharp.

Speaking of which, Kai Yang really wanted to fight Wei Zhuan. Originally he thought he would have to use some power, but currently he had only used one drop of the Yang Liquid, to dominate him.

Since the opponent used the Embroidered Cloud Locking Mail, why couldn’t he use Yang Liquid.

“Come and try to injure me!” Wei Zhuan’s cheeks trembled, looking at Kai Yang with a bit of resentment. Even though his life was in the hands of Kai Yang, he wasn’t the least bit afraid because he was the grandson of the Grand Elder! With a person holding such an honorable position backing him, no one in Sky Tower would dare injure him.

“Brat, you probably don’t know but my grandfather is the Grand Elder so if you dare injure me, you are looking for death!” Full of confidence, Wei Zhuan looked over at Kai Yang threateningly.

Kai Yang did have a reaction when he heard this, the blood red blade between his fingers becoming more menacing and the red glint in his eyes appeared more ferocious than before.

“I don’t know whether it’s you who dies first or me?” Kai Yang said to Wei

Zhuan, his voice full of interest. On his face was a strange smile, and he slowly exerted strength with his fingers.

Slowly, a trickle of dark red blood dripped down from Wei Zhuan's chest and he couldn't help but let out a groan. In the moment that he got injured, Wei Zhuan felt a rush of boiling hot World Qi enter him, burning his skin and flesh painfully.

"You actually dared....." Wei Zhuan looked at Kai Yang in disbelief. He couldn't believe that there were still people in Sky Tower who dared to injure him.

"Whether I dared or not, I have already done it. Do you say I don't dare?" Kai Yang continued to exert strength and pushed the blade half an inch deeper, causing the blood to continuously flow out. Showing his cowardly inside Wei Zhuan cried out: "Aren't you afraid that my grandfather will kill you!"

"In the comparing of notes between disciples, one is responsible for their own life and death!" Kai Yang sneered out coldly, "If you can't compare to others, you can't blame others for killing you. What can the Grand Elder do? Sky Tower Pavilion does not belong to him."

Wei Zhuan, to this frantic to the point of craziness disciple, felt shivers and cold all over.

Just as he was about to speak, Kai Yang suddenly interrupted him: "If you say I concede, these two words, I will kill you. So don't even think about it."

Wei Zhuan became deathly white because he had just thought of conceding. In

a battle between disciples, if one felt that they were unable to match up against their opponent, they were able to concede. Then their opponent could not pursue them or attack them any further.

But now he didn't dare to say these two words, because he couldn't see any hint that Kai Yang was joking in his crazy but serious eyes.

"What do you really want to do?" Wei Zhuan clenched his teeth as he asked this.

"I don't want to do anything. I'm just thinking how you can't compare to Su Mu because you relied on your defensive artifact to win against him!" Kai Yang said as he slowly shook his head.

"I can't compare to him?" Wei Zhuan was like a cat that had its tail stepped on. Lowly shouting: "How can I not compare to him? My strength is higher than his, my status is also higher, so how am I not comparable to him?"

Kai Yang shifted his head to the side: "You don't believe me? I'll show you."

Stopping his words, Kai Yang exerted some strength with his fingers causing Wei Zhuan face to contort and shiver uncontrollably.

Kai Yang turned around to size up Wei Zhuan's underlings. Previously they were fighting against Li Yun Tian and the others with all their might. But as soon as they saw Wei Zhaun fall, they stopped fighting and didn't dare to do anything other than stare stupidly.

"Do you want to save your young master Wei Zhuan?" Kai Yang asked them.

No one dared to reply because they were all terrified at Kai Yang's craziness. After his display of ferociousness, how could any of the ten or so young men dare to confront him?

"If you want to save him, then obediently kneel down and admit you were wrong! If I feel merciful, I will spare him!" Kai Yang coldly laughed out.

Their faces paled, this.....didn't Wei Zhuan just say this to Su Mu's underlings?

After Su Mu's underlings heard this, they had kneeled without hesitation and kowtowed to Wei Zhuan. Did that mean they had to do the same?

These people just stared, because if they kneeled, then they would lose a great amount of face. Without face, how could they continue to stay in Sky Tower? But if they didn't kneel and Wei Zhuan blamed them, what would they do?

Each person's face was different, each contemplative and unsure as to which decision to make.

"It looks like you want him to die." Kai Yang sighed out softly, and pushed the blade a bit further into Wei Zhuan's body.

Wei Zhuan cried out in fright, because he could feel that if the blade in Kai Yang's hands were to penetrate even deeper, then it would stab his heart.

That was a fatal attack!

Wei Zhuan didn't want to die and shouted out in desperation with a hoarse voice at his underlings: "Why are you still dawdling? Hurry up and kneel down! If I am to die, then none of you shall be spared!"

Only then did the underlings under Wei Zhuan shake their bodies and kneel down.

Watching this scene, Li Yun Tian and the others were overwhelmed with emotions, because the previous injustices they had suffered were being washed away by their actions. They were much more carefree.

Kai Yang turned back to Wei Zhuan, enthusiastically saying: "Now do you know the difference between you and Su Mu?"

Wei Zhuan looked on blankly before his face suddenly changed and he looked at his underlings with a gaze full of malice.

In order to save Su Mu's life, Li Yun Tian and the others threw away their pride. But how about his underlings? Only when he had bellowed out and threatened their lives, did they grudgingly obey Kai Yang's request.

When comparing the two, the difference between Wei Zhuan and Su Mu became clear. In personal charisma, Wei Zhuan couldn't compare to Su Mu.

"Are you satisfied now?" Wei Zhuan asked, looking at Kai Yang coldly.

Kai Yang narrowed his eyes, his expression unreadable.

Wei Zhuan turned pale with fright and said in a shrill voice: “You can’t possibly.....”

But before Kai Yang could reply, from afar, a voice bellowed out in rage: “Detain them all!”

Chapter 68 – A sinful desire

Immediately after this order, a row of people appeared in front of Kai Yang and without waiting giving an explanation, one of them attacked Kai Yang. Groaning out, he flew backwards.

“Senior brother Kai!” Li Yun Tian and the others turned in pale in fright and quickly rushed forward to help him up.

Kai Yang struggled to stand up, and while sighing out exasperatedly, he looked at the new youth. He stood beside Wei Zhuan, supporting Wei Zhuan with one hand and directing a look filled with maliciousness at Kai Yang, he spoke out: “Young master Zhuan, are you alright?”

Wei Zhuan looked over at Kai Yang, his gaze full of poison. His body appeared a bit unstable and he shook his head: “I’m fine.”

“It’s good that you are fine. I have come late.” The youth spoke again. Although his strength was above Wei Zhuan’s, he was still a person under the Grand Elder so his position was naturally below Wei Zhuan’s.

“You are considered too late!” Wei Zhuan laughed out, and peculiarly asked: “Senior brother Cao, ever since you became a Disciplinary Disciple, you should understand school rules better than any of us. So I ask u, if one was to murder another in the Main Gate, what would their punishment be?”

Cao Zheng Wen sneered, booming out: “This is very serious. We would first break their arms and legs, then expel them from the school and then kill them. This also acts as a warning for others!”

Wei Zhuan hehe laughed and pointed his finger at Kai Yang: “Just then, this person threatened to kill me! Senior brother Cao, punish him as you see fit!”

With someone backing him now, how could Wei Zhuan possibly continue to act as submissively as before?

Cao Zheng Wen sternly asked: “You are serious?”

Wei Zhuan coldly nodded non-stop: “Senior brother Cao, when you arrived, didn’t you see everything that happened with your own two eyes?”

Cao Zheng Wen nodded his head: “That’s right, when I arrived, I truly saw this person, with a lethal weapon, pointing it at your chest. If I had not hurriedly blocked his attack, then you would have long since fallen under his poisonous hands. This person actually dared to act so brazenly during the day while breaking school regulations!”

These two sang the same tune well, in sync with each other, and managed to put Kai Yang under suspicion of attempted murder.

“Nonsense!” Li Yun Tian hissed out, “Just then, senior brother Kai and Wei Zhuan were only duelling and exchanging notes. How could it be as serious as the way you guys are presenting it?”

Cao Zheng Wen snorted: “It was as simple as exchanging notes?”

Zhao Hu answered: “If you don’t believe it, then you can ask any of the

disciples here who came to watch the fun. They were all witnesses to this. Furthermore, this entire thing was first started by Wei Zhuan. Senior brother Kai was dragged into this.”

“There are witnesses, who are the witnesses?” Wei Zhuan tilted his head, chuckling as he looked around.

The Sky Tower disciples that were watching immediately scattered like birds and disappeared. They had naturally heard how it involved the Grand Elder, and didn’t have the courage to involve themselves. No matter which side they offended or sided with, their future days in Sky Tower would be painful.

Li Yun Tian saw this and became speechless and wanted to cry out, but he steadied himself enough to say: “This entire event has been witnessed by us. Each and every detail was seen clearly. We are the witnesses!”

Cao Zheng Wen shooked his head: “You guys were gathered together and brawled, so you were preoccupied. How are you able to testify?”

“Gathered together to brawl?” Zhou Hu jumped up and bellowed: “It was clearly Wei Zhuan commanding his underlings to challenge us, how could it be described as a group brawl? Cao Zheng Wen, don’t think that just because you are a Disciplinary Disciple you can do whatever you want. It hasn’t reached the point where you can freely make decisions in Sky Tower.”

“Impudence!” Cao Zheng Wen reprimanded, “The Disciplinary Hall represents the school’s rule and upholds the regulations, so they are always just and impartial. You actually dare to question the Disciplinary Hall’s authority, your crimes are increased by one!”

“If you want to condemn me, no need to worry about the pretext right?” Kai Yang waved his hand to silence Li Yun Tian and sneered at Cao Zheng Wen, “Just and fair? Today, I truly experienced what is just and fair.”

“Humph!” Grinning coldly, Cao Zheng Wen walked forward and ordered, full of grandeur: “Arrest them all! After discussions with the Grand Elder, the punishments will commence!”

“Sou sou!” The sound of clothes swishing and rapid movement rang out, and out of nowhere appeared more than a dozen Disciplinary Disciples from all directions. The weakest of them were at the initial element fifth stage, so how could Li Yun Tian and the rest be their opponents? In three steps, two moves, they pressed them down to the ground in a kneeling posture. Kai Yang didn’t resist, because he knew nothing would happen even if he resisted.

“Let’s see in the future!” With the cowardly Wei Zhuan accomplishing his goal, he walked in front of Kai Yang grinning smugly.

“Take them away!” Cao Zheng Wen ordered, and the Disciplinary Disciples took them away.

Looking over at Su Mu who was lying unconscious, Cao Zheng Wen wrinkled his eyebrows because apprehending Kai Yang, Li Yun Tian and the rest was a simple matter but apprehending Su Mu wasn’t. He didn’t dare act and thought for a while before saying: “Take junior brother Su to the Second Elder’s place.”

“Yes!” Someone replied, and went to pick up Su Mu from the ground before carrying him away.

(TL: Princess hold???? :D)

“Young master Zhuan, you have suffered!” Cao Zheng Wen softly said.

Wei Zhuan narrowed his eyes and gnashed his teeth: “That person called Kai Yang, you definitely must not let him off easy! He has humiliated me today and made me suffer endlessly! You should know what to do!”

Cao Zheng Wen looked a bit hesitant: “Young master Zhuan, today’s event was somewhat big and Grand Elder Hui will definitely be notified. If we were to act now, it would be somewhat inappropriate. Why don’t we act after the Grand Elder has made his decision.”

“But I can’t swallow this rage!” Wei Zhuan’s face revealed his evil intentions.

“Don’t worry, I will help young master Zhuan relieve a bit of your anger and teach him properly. I shall teach him what the consequences are for offending young master Zhuan.”

“Don’t kill him, I want to personally deal with him!”

“It shall be as you say!”

Kai Yang and the rest were currently being imprisoned in the Sky Tower Forest Prison. It was very dark and damp, with dense cold air, they were accompanied by many rats and mozzies. From all directions a hideous stench wafted towards them, making one want to puke. Overall, it was an uninhabitable environment.

The Forest Prison was the place where Sky Tower imprisoned disciples who committed mistakes. Li Yun Tian and the rest never thought that they would one day be imprisoned here, it left a bitter aftertaste.

“Senior brother Kai, we have dragged you into this.” Li Yun Tian sat next to Kai Yang and softly apologised.

Kai Yang smiled: “This isn’t related to you, I couldn’t hold back and jumped into the situation. I couldn’t bear to see our people bite each other like dogs.”

“Bite each other like dogs.....” Li Yun Tian felt like choking, wasn’t he including them when he was cursing Wei Zhuan’s people?

“Putting it in a better light, it would be a family quarrel, but if you put it bluntly, isn’t it dogs biting one another?” Kai Yang asked as he chuckled.

“I guess you’re right. But senior brother Kai don’t worry, young master Su definitely won’t abandon us. We only need to wait a few hours here, and young master Su will come and rescue us.” The way Li Yun Tian thought was relatively simple.

Kai Yang turned his body and repositioned himself so he was in a more comfortable position: “To ask you, why are the Grand Elder and the Second Elder so against each other?”

Li Yun Tian sighed out as if he expected this question: “This is related to the school Head.”

“Eh? Let me hear the details.”

(TL: Title Unlocked – Gossiper)

Li Yun Tian began: “Last time young master Su told you about the Head’s disciples’ affair right? Ever since the Head left to capture his second disciple and trap him in Coiling Dragon Stream, our head has rarely appeared in public ever since. He doesn’t even pay much attention to the internal affairs of the school, so these past several years they have been all managed by the Grand Elder. Maybe it’s because of ambition, but regardless, the Grand Elder now acts like he is the Head. Seeing this, the Second Elder has become displeased and thinks that the Grand Elder has thoughts of usurping the Head for the position, and because of these things, there is naturally friction and disputes between them.”

Chapter 69 – The difference between a disciple and an ancestor

“Currently in Sky Tower the Grand Elder, Fourth Elder and Fifth Elder have all banded together, with the Grand Elder leading them. Meanwhile the Second Elder and Third Elder are opposing them, representing and supporting the current Head. In these past few years, the Second Elder and Third Elder have suffered much in this bitter battle.”

Listening to Li Yun Tian, Kai Yang immediately understood the situation much more clearly than he had previously.

Since the elders did not get along, then the younger generations naturally wouldn't get along. Su Mu and Wei Zhuan's disputes were probably a result of this.

Zhao Hu sneered: “It's only because the tiger doesn't leave it's cave, so the monkey is acting like the king. If the Head decided to reappear, what importance would the Grand Elder and them then hold?”

Li Yun Tian glared at Zhao Hu: “Don't gossip behind other's backs. Us younger generation can't disrespect our elders, even if we disapprove of their ways.”

Zhao Hu poked out his tongue and muttered: “Don't you also think like this.”

Li Yun Tian said: “But I won't say it out loud.”

At the Contribution Hall, Xia Ning Chang hurriedly, panting with exhaustion ran over. Seeing her like that, Old Meng laughed at her: “My disciple, you have come

to visit your master again? En, such a filial disciple, I am happy.”

Xia Ning Chang impatiently said: “Master, big news, bad news.”

“What happened?” Meng Wu Ya was a bit puzzled because he had never seen his disciple this flustered before.

Xia Ning Chang immediately started to narrate the things that happened between Kai Yang and the others, along with Wei Zhuan.

Meng Wu Ya became quite gloomy when he finished listening: “You’re saying that brat Kai Yang has already reached the initial element third stage? He also defeated Wei Zhuan?”

“That’s right!” Xia Ning Chang kept on nodding her head, whilst thinking that she had also assisted him in breaking through.

“Looks like that lucky encounter he had in the Black Wind Mountains last time wasn’t small. Such an astonishing rate of growth.” Meng Wu Ya said, slightly shocked.

“Master don’t sigh away your sorrows, please hurry up and think of a method to save him.” Xia Ning Chang impatiently said.

Meng Wu Ya looked at her blankly and said in a strange voice to his disciple: “My dear disciple, why are this nervous?”

At a loss, Xia Ning Chang stammered out: “I am?”

“En, you are currently very nervous.” Meng Wu Ya nodded his head. In all these years, although she was as clear as ice and as pure as jade, he still understood her the best, but he had never seen her like this before. In all the years he had known her, there had been countless male disciples who chased after her, but she didn’t pay much attention to them at all. She maintained a respectful distance from them all, yet today she had asked him for help for save a mere person at the initial element third stage; how very queer.

Xia Ning Chang continued: “I just don’t want his fruitful cultivation journey to suffer such a major setback.”

“You are very close with him?” Meng Wu Ya immediately became alert.

“We are not close, but I have watched over him for two years already. Master you know that I am a Dark Hall Disciple and have been assigned to watch over his area.” Xia Ning Chang honestly said and after this, she continued to plead: “Master please think of a way to save him. This time he has offended the Grand Elder and if there isn’t someone powerful there to save him, then I’m afraid he will meet a calamity. Not to mention that the Second Elder may not necessarily care about his life or death, but master you are that powerful someone!”

Meng Wu Ya’s face was full of pleasure, because no matter if there were a thousand flatteries or even ten thousand flatteries, they would not affect him. But this time, it was his beloved disciple who was flattering him.

After his wave of excitement passed, Meng Wu Ya frowned: “My disciple, this matter isn’t easily intervened in. No matter how you look at it, it is an internal situation within Sky Tower involving the Elders, whereas I am only a caretaker, what would it mean if I intervened.”

This was the truth. Although his impression of Kai Yang wasn't bad, how could he, an outsider dare to interfere in the internal affairs of the school?

Xia Ning Chang didn't reply, but only lifted her head and directed her watery eyes at Meng Wu Ya. Although there was a veil covering her face, Meng Wu Ya could still see her fiery cheeks.

This was the type of face he could not resist, bitterly, Meng Wu Ya said: "Ai~yo wei! My young lady, please don't be stubborn. Not to mention that the Second Elder will definitely go and save Kai Yang. Kai Yang was only involved because he went to save Su Mu, so if he doesn't help him, then how would he be able to recruit more people in the future and gain their respect and trust?"

"If it, it isn't so?" Xia Ning Chang asked angrily.

"There shouldn't be any situation in which he doesn't." But Meng Wu Ya wasn't certain, because in a high level battle, to sacrifice one or two unimportant, low levelled disciples wasn't uncommon.

"Humph!" Xia Ning Chang turned her body and walked up to the seat next to him, saying sulkily: "Master, if you don't go to save him, I will stay here forever. I'm afraid that your disciple's cultivation will stop here."

Hearing these words, Meng Wu Ya turned pale in fright, and submissively rushed out from behind the counter. Bending his waist, he waited on Xia Ning Chang like he was waiting on his master: "Why did you say this?"

Xia Ning Chang turned her head to the side, not speaking a word.

Meng Wu Ya changed his position again so he was once again facing Xia Ning Chang: “Please tell me, if I don’t help him you won’t leave where?”

“Since you already don’t care about his life or death, you won’t care about my life or death either. Master it appears you are this type of untrustworthy person regarding justice!”

These words were like a sharp arrow, they pierced straight through Meng Wu Ya. Then it was like he was struck by lightning, shaking all over before shattering into a thousand pieces.

“My lady, my dear lady, if we need to discuss things, let’s discuss them in a peaceful manner? My old bones can’t bear the burden of your tricks.” Meng Wu Ya repeatedly bowed to her with his hand in front of him in a petty and low manner.

How was this treatment fitting towards a disciple, it was clearly treatment saved for an ancestor.

Only then did Xia Ning Chang turn her head back and softly say to Meng Wu Ya: “He trains in a Yang attributed martial skill, and his Yang World Qi is highly pure and dense!”

“Yang attributed World Qi?” Meng Wu Ya’s expression changed greatly, “Highly pure and dense?”

“It is at least five times better than that last person you found!” Xia Ning Chang answered.

“You have tested this?” Meng Wu Ya impatiently asked for confirmation regarding this.

“Yes!”

“If it’s like this, then he definitely can’t meet any accidents!” Meng Wu Ya suddenly straightened up. After thinking for a while, he started to walk outside.

Walking to the entrance he stopped, and turned to ask Xia Ning Chang: “My disciple, do you reject him?”

“I don’t reject him!” Xia Ning Chang slowly replied.

“Then you like him?”

“It’s not like either, I just don’t hate him.” This line of questioning made Xia Ning Chang turn quite red.

“Okay, okay, okay. You should also know what you need to do if you go there. But you must promise your master that you won’t develop feelings for him, only then will I go and save him!”

“Master what are you talking about!” Xia Ning Chang was full of shyness, “I still haven’t even spoken to him.”

These words caused Xia Ning Chang to become less confident and she couldn’t help but think about the events that night.

“The reason why I am stopping your affections is because.....this small place isn’t where you truly belong. There also aren’t any people here who are qualified for your love, and sooner or later you will reach a place no one can imagine. By then, you will be able to live for hundreds of years, even thousands of years, meanwhile the people you love will slowly age and die in front of you and your master doesn’t want you to suffer that pain. My disciple, you must remember, the martial peak is a lonely and solitary journey, an extremely high peak full of coldness!”

Chapter 70 – 1 vs. 5

As Meng Wu Ya said these words, he also sighed like he was in a constant state of sadness. Listening to him explain himself, Xia Ning Chang could hear the sadness and grief in his words.

Could it be that her master had experienced this before? Just as she wanted to asked him further, Meng Wu Ya had disappeared from her sight.

Right at that moment in the Black Wind Trade in front of one of the Sky Tower wooden houses, a youngster dripping with sweat was standing. Knocking lightly on the door, he calmed his breathing and called out: “Senior sister Su.”

“What’s the matter?” A pleasant but cold voice rang out. This voice was nice to hear, but it was permeated with a frostiness that didn’t allow anyone to come close.

That youngster’s sweat had condensed into droplets and quivered as he said: “Young master Su Mu has been beaten unconscious, meanwhile the people under him have been detained by the Disciplinary Hall and locked in the Forest Prison.”

Just as these words left his mouth, the wooden door abruptly opened and the white clothed Su Yan appeared.

That person quickly retreated two steps and lowered his face because he didn’t dare to look into her unblemished and flawless gaze.

“Say it clearly, what’s the matter?” Su Yan coldly asked, spreading a frosty air around her and the wooden house. ‘Ka ka’ sounds could be heard as ice appeared on the floor around her.

The youngster immediately began narrating the story from beginning to end in the most concise way possible. After finishing his report, he waited for quite a while, but hearing no response, he mustered the courage to ask: “Senior sister Su?”

After calling out with no response, this person courageously lifted up his head to look at her, but there wasn’t even a hint of her figure; she had left before he could react.

“My lord!” That Sky Tower disciple collapsed on the spot and fell butt first onto the ground.

This senior sister Su is too cold! In the future, the person who takes her as their wife, will need a quilt in the hot summer, in order to not freeze to death. But for someone cold and mighty like senior sister Su, there shouldn’t be any man that can match her?

(TL: (๐5๐))

No one could have imagined that the friction between the younger Sky Tower disciples would cause such huge waves.

Inside the Sky Tower Forest Prison, Kai Yang, Li Yun Tian and the others were still trapped. They had been locked inside for an entire hour already, without the slightest hint of motion outside.

Li Yun Tian and the rest had started to become anxious, wondering why Su Mu had yet to come and rescue them. But after thinking for a while, they remembered that Su Mu had been knocked unconscious. So if he wasn't conscious, how could he come and save them.

Just as they were feeling anxious, the prison doors were suddenly opened and they heard the echo of footsteps. A Disciplinary Disciple came up to the cell where Kai Yang and the others were locked up and yelled: "Who is Kai Yang?"

Kai Yang called out in reply: "I am!"

"Follow me!" That disciplinary Disciple very impolitely ordered him so, "Someone wants to see you."

Kai Yang's expression shifted and he laughed out coldly. Without any fear, he stepped out and followed.

"Senior brother Kai, don't go. Wait for young master Su to come and save us." Li Yun Tian cried out in great alarm, pulling on Kai Yang.

"Let go!" That Disciplinary Disciple bellowed in anger, "Anyone who dares to block even a step, would be making a direct challenge to the Disciplinary Hall. You should be clear regarding the consequences."

Kai Yang said to Li Yun Tian: "I'm just going to have a look, no need to be alarmed."

Li Yun Tian helplessly let go and said in a sunken tone: “Senior brother Kai, please be careful!”

“Humph!” That Disciplinary Disciple sarcastically laughed, “You overestimate yourself.”

Walking out of the cell, the Disciplinary Disciple locked up the doors once again and then took Kai Yang outside.

Not long after, they had arrived at a wooden room and a strange laugh came: “Please come in.”

Kai Yang turned to look at him and also laughed out as he walked in.

The Disciplinary Disciple followed closely behind and then closed the door behind him.

In the instant the door was closed, Kai Yang swivelled around and sent a palm directly into the stomach of the Disciplinary Disciple behind him. Boiling hot Yang World Qi rushed into him, causing him to let out a bloodcurdling scream as he slammed into the wall.

He didn’t think that Kai Yang would actually strike him, causing him to receive the attack in it’s entirety and leaving him momentarily paralysed.

“Such big dog courage!” A voice full of anger sounded and immediately three-four human images appeared, pouncing on Kai Yang.

Kai Yang could reaction only allowed him to block one attack as the others landed, pushing him to the ground. Then he began to receive a thorough beating.

In the midst of that chaos, Kai Yang snarled as he spat out a mouthful of blood. The fishy yet sweet smell of blood, only caused to excite him and heat up his blood, the True Yang Tactics started to work at an unimaginable speed within his meridians. The scalding feeling from his bones travelled throughout his whole body, causing Kai Yang's skin to become fiery.

This energy seemed to be many times stronger than it had been previously.

Rawr! The Kai Yang that was being kicked was suddenly disturbed, then his frenzied actions became several times more ferocious. Jumping into the air, he kicked out and hit two Disciplinary Disciples on the head, this was followed by two cries of pain as they stumbled back.

But before he could continue, another person, emitting killing intent, had managed to grab onto his leg. Then, tossing him like a rag bag, they threw Kai Yang, slamming him into the wall. Groaning in pain, he felt his 5 viscera turn over.

Struggling up, Kai Yang wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth and sized up the situation in the dimly lit room.

This was a closed private room with five Disciplinary Disciple in it. From their exchange just now and their World Qi fluctuations, Kai Yang could tell that their strengths were about initial element ** stage. But the one that had thrown him into the wall, his World Qi aura clearly showed that he had entered the qi transforming stage.

One vs. five! Not to mention the the differences in their cultivation levels was also immense, this battle was doomed to end in failure.

But Kai Yang only smiled. In this hopeless situation, his heart only became more ferocious, raging with emotion.

“You actually dared to injure someone on your own accord!” The qi transforming stage Disciplinary Disciple sneered out, “You have no lack of courage!”

The other four people were standing behind him, looking at Kai Yang mockingly.

They had received Cao -what’s his name?’s order to properly teach Kai Yang a lesson, as long as they didn’t kill him. Unexpectedly Kai Yang had attacked first and injured one of them by catching him unaware, making them lose a great deal of face.

“He he.” With his back facing the wall, Kai Yang’s blood red eyes swept across the five of them as he said in an icy cold voice: “You guys are allowed to attack, so why can’t I retaliate?”

That qi transforming stage Disciplinary Disciple couldn’t stop his evil laughter: “You are actually quite smart, since you already know what we are thinking about. Why don’t you obediently allow us to beat you up, so we can help young master Wei Zhuan vent his unhealthy anger. If you dare to resist, you might lose an arm or leg!”

“You can come and try!” Kai Yang looked at them coldly.

“Stubborn headed pig! Go beat him!”

Under that command, the five of them went out again! Their hands fierce without the slightest bit of hesitation. With their cultivations, they would have more than enough energy, with some to spare as they took care of Kai Yang. So as the five leaped forward to teach Kai Yang a lesson, it was naturally an easy thing to do!

Chapter 71 – Freak

Inside the room was total chaos, with angry shouts thundering and punches echoing. Occasionally, there would be the sound of someone grunting and specks of blood could be seen flying out.

As the saying goes, four hands are hard to defend against with only two. There was already a large difference between their levels and Kai Yang's, not to mention it was one against five. How could he possibly hold against them on his own?

Attacking out once at someone, he would have to endure four or five hits himself.

Not to mention the power of these Disciplinary Disciple's strikes. Each strike was strong and landed on flesh. Although they weren't be life threatening to Kai Yang, after taking so many strikes, anybody would need to lay in bed for one or two months to recuperate.

"Stop!" After a good half an hour, the qi transforming staged Disciplinary Disciple called out angrily and quickly leapt away from the battle scene, "Don't hit him anymore. If you hit him further, he will die."

The remaining four quickly leapt back and looked at Kai Yang who lay on the floor, with a bit of fear and worry.

"My Lord!" Amongst them, one of them held their cheeks and said, "Being hit by him once, nearly caused me to lose my tooth."

Another clutched at his crotch, a face full of fear: “Daddy nearly lost his future generations. If I had not dodged in time, then the one lying on the floor would be me.”

Dodging at the crucial moment, the blow had landed on his thigh, causing him to feel scalding pain. A hit that was from Kai Yang struggling with all his might was extremely powerful. Even thinking about it now, left him with shivers.

The looked at each other, staring blankly on, because in that situation with such a disparity in their strengths, each one of them had a visible injury from Kai Yang. Even if they had knocked him to the ground, weakened.

This caused the five people to be stupefied! Their five faces then became embarrassed, isn't this too embarrassing?

How could a trial disciple, who was only at the initial element third stage be so savage? Just then while they were beating him up, they didn't think too much about it. But thinking over it now, it was all quite inconceivable.

“Pu.....” A sound was heard. Looking to the origin of the sound, five gazes fell on Kai Yang who should have been paralysed, who was struggling to stand up as he spat out the blood in his mouth.

His body looked dark and unclear, with great changes occurring, his skin started to shine with a red light. An extremely hot feeling could be felt emanating from him, like a ten million year old volcano was erupting.

“This World Qi aura.....” The qi transforming staged disciple's face showed a trace of fear, “Something's not quite right.”

How was this the World Qi Aura that a disciple at the initial element third stage supposed to have? This was clearly the aura of someone at the peak of the initial element stage, and with another step, they would be in the qi transforming stage.

“You are still able to stand?” A person said with their eyes wide open, nearly biting their tongue in the process. Even if it was him who had been beaten like that, he wouldn’t even have enough strength to lift a finger. How could he stand up?

“He’s coming!” Someone else suddenly cried out in alarm. Just as the words were spoken, the previously tottering Kai Yang produced a large gale and sprinted to the five in front of him.

Halfway there, Kai Yang’s fist became blazing, like a piece of metal that had just been taken out of a furnace.

The person who had cried out immediately activated his World Qi and clashed with Kai Yang’s fist.

‘Bang’ it rang out, then the Disciplinary Disciple flew backwards and smashed into the wall. His throat gurgling, he spat out a mouthful of blood, meanwhile Kai Yang’s body only lightly shook as he went to the next person already.

“Impudent!” The qi transforming stage Disciplinary Disciple was agitated and angered. His five fellow disciples were not only unable to knock down a single opponent, instead their enemy was given the chance to retaliate. If this was spread out, wouldn’t it be a scandal? Where would he go and put his face?

In a fit of anger, the qi transforming staged disciple sent out his palm. Condensing his qi from his dantian, he shouted out: “Strengthened Revolving Cyclone!”

Inside the room, a splitting wind howl sounded and from his hand, a small cyclone appeared. It directly went to confront Kai Yang’s fist.

Snap, snap, snap.....echoed out, while the clothes on Kai Yang’s arm looked like they were being repeatedly cut by razor blades, turning into shreds in just moments. His entire arm was covered in bloody cuts.

Both of Kai Yang’s blood red eyes contained astonishment. Gathering up his Yang World Qi, it exited his body via the cuts on his arm to block his opponent’s martial skill.

‘Ah’ rang out, as a blazing energy exploded within the room.

Kai Yang’s World Qi stopped that qi transforming staged disciple’s Strengthened Revolving Cyclone and set it on fire.

Within the blazing cyclone, Kai Yang punched out towards that qi transforming stage disciple’s palm. Upon impact, both sides retreated a few steps.

“Why are you guys standing around distracted? Go attack!” The qi transforming stage disciple’s palm was very red. He never thought that his opponent’s World Qi was this unusual. Although he hadn’t suffered any injuries, but no matter what, he still had suffered some deficit. In rage, he immediately howled out.

The other three Disciplinary Disciples who were in a stupor now awoke and rushed up to surround Kai Yang once again. Facing Kai Yang, they were in for more painful attacks.

The person who had been sent flying by Kai Yang first also charged back in a fit of anger.

In a short while, the four people stopped their attacks. While breathing in deeply, they also held treacherous expressions as they retreated ten feet.

Their strengths were currently being suppressed by his younger disciple's savage might.

The second time they gathered to beat him up, the results were drastically smaller!

The injuries that Kai Yang sustained this time were far greater, but.....these four people had paid a certain price to achieve this.

"He wouldn't stand up again, would he?" One of them covered their mouth coughing while asking this question. Finishing his coughing, there was a small pool of blood in his palm.

"He shouldn't, after all he has been injured to this state." Another one was massaging his eye. There, a bruise had already formed, while a nasty blister was present, like it had been constantly burned by boiling water.

Within their five hearts, they all felt extremely bitter. They thought the reason why they had suffered so much this time was because of his strange strength.

Within this small and narrow room, although it was five against one and it looked easy to beat him up, they couldn't exert all their might, whereas Kai Yang was surrounded. This allowed him to use his full power, but if it was an open environment, they would be able to use their full power. Then it wouldn't be such a sad result right?

But.....this junior disciple called Kai Yang, his strength was really something else. An ordinary initial element person wasn't their opponent at all. No wonder Wei Zhuan lost under his hand.

Just as the five of them thought they had beaten Kai Yang down, he unexpectedly started to move again. Weakened beyond compare, like a wolf without fangs, bit by bit, cun by cun he stood up. Not only had his World Qi aura not diminished, it had strengthened.

"Curse it!" That qi transforming stage disciple cursed, what sort of freak was this junior disciple? No matter how they attacked him, why didn't he fall unconscious?

"Don't come over. If you come over, we will really beat you to death!" The disciple with a bruised eye shouted out, making a lot of noise, but there was no real strength behind it.

This was an extremely funny sight to behold, because the ones who were attacking were gathered in a bunch telling the one who was getting beaten to not come over. While the one who was getting beaten was quite confused, covered in blood he slowly made his way over. Step by step, he walked over to

the group of five.

Each step was heavy, each step was tottering and unsteady, like he would collapse in the next moment. But he still walked forwards, step by step.

If not for the wall behind them, the five people would keep on retreating.

Chapter 72 – Such a big fuss

The sound of several people gulping down mouthfuls of water rang out.

“Senior brother, what should we do?” Someone asked nervously from amongst the bunch, because he feared that if they continued to beat Kai Yang, he would die.

“My lord, he is a freak!” The qi transforming staged disciple swore as his eyelids flickered and he clenched his teeth before replying, “We can’t care about that anymore. If he comes over, we shall attack! This time, we must knock him unconscious!”

“Okay!” The remaining four replied a bit begrudgingly.

Just as these five were being extremely alert, a great sense of foreboding arose in their hearts. Immediately the temperature within the room dropped by several degrees.

Cracking sounds echoed throughout the room. The five people turned their heads to look and saw that on all four walls was a thin layer of ice.

“What is happening?” One person asked questioningly, before immediately shivering.

“Boom” rang out as the room’s door was kicked open by someone.

“Who is it!” The qi transforming staged Disciplinary Disciple called. Turning

around his mouth became as large as a duck's egg, and no matter what, he couldn't muster the strength to close it.

Although the temperature within the room was rapidly decreasing, a thin layer of cold sweat still appeared on that person's forehead as he gazed at the female at the door. Stammering, he said: "Senior.....Senior sister Su Yan!"

"Senior Sister Su Yan?" The four other's expressions changed greatly.

Looking over, there was a stunning beauty with a cold and indifferent expression, wearing white robes standing there.

She was like a never dying, never ageing, eternally blooming snow lotus on the mountain top, carrying with her a biting cold as she descended to the mortal realm; she was that noble, that cold. As her beautiful eyes swept across the room, the five disciples felt greatly inferior to her and unconsciously lowered their heads.

Su Yan had hurriedly rushed all the way from Black Wind Market over to the Forest Prison. Thinking that Su Mu was entrapped here, she charged in, but felt traces of a battle occurring here, so she had rushed here instead.

Opening the door, the sight she beheld here made her heart slightly shiver.

(TL: Opening the door....., you kicked it open hun. ED: Violent women, what's new in this story?)

Inside the room were six people, five were Disciplinary Hall disciples, with one at the qi transforming second stage and the rest at the initial element ** stages.

The other person covered in blood and dirty rags, shaking and stumbling yet within his eyes, was a strong gaze of refusal to yield.

This person.....she had met before!

Kai Yang! Su Mu had brought him over to Black Wind Trade once, he was the Trial Disciple that had defeated Cheng Shao Feng!

Sending out her divine sense to examine the scene, Su Yan was stunned. Examining Kai Yang, she discovered that he was full of injuries; although those injuries weren't enough to take his life, but with his strength it was impossible to him to remain standing and conscious.

How strong was his willpower in order to remain standing and not fall?

In this short while, Su Yan had understood what had more or less occurred in this room. Rarely did emotions ripple in her heart, but this time she was slightly angered.

With a flash, Su Yan appeared at the side of Kai Yang to support him. Sending out her ice-cold World Qi, she controlled his injuries inside and outside of his body.

If you thought about it, it was slightly strange. That was because as soon as the ice cold energy entered his body, the fiery energy in his body receded and his fuzzy mind became much clearer.

A pure and crisp aroma lingered at the edge of his nose, Kai Yang turned his head to look at Su Yan, his fierce expression gradually disappeared.

It was like he was sitting on a snowy mountain, all he felt was cool and crisp breeze, eliminating all noises and shapes from the outside world. With her at his side, Kai Yang couldn't help but think of taking her hand and living in seclusion with her.

"Who attacked him?" Su Yan calmly asked them in her cold voice.

The five Disciplinary Disciples trembled as they looked at each other. Heads lowered they said: "We all had."

In front of Su Yan, to lie to her was sully and pouring dirt on her. That nobility and grandeur, caused all of them to speak the truth in front of her.

Su Yan nodded her head slightly: "Very good!"

Saying this, she supported Kai Yang and step by step she walked out of the room.

It wasn't until Su Yan's figure could no longer be seen, that the five gasped for breath. By then, they felt as if they had escaped a great calamity.

But before the five of them could rejoice, they suddenly felt great fear. Looking at the doorway, they saw a small patch of ice that had expanded quickly to the size of a palm. This palm sized piece of ice was in the shape of a snowflake.

"Pa" rang out as five snowflakes disintegrated. Following this, the five disciples dropped to the ground in pain as they felt their World Qi disappear along with

the destruction of the snowflakes. Along with their World Qi's disappearance, they all suffered numerous wounds.

"So powerful! Worthy of the title of number one!" The qi transforming staged Disciplinary Disciple's face paled with fear as he trembled from the cold.

He was completely unable to see how Su Yan was able to attack. Without any notice she had planted her attack.

If it wasn't because the Senior Sister was so calm, it wouldn't be as easy as receiving a few light wounds. With her strength, if she really wanted to take their lives, it would be as simple as pinching and breaking snail shells.

Outside the room, Kai Yang was still walking with staggering steps. Hearing the sounds behind him, he turned his head in amazement towards Su Yan: "You have attacked them?"

Su Yan's long eyelashes blinked: "En. You're fine right?"

"I'm fine." Kai Yang nodded his head, "Oh right, go and free Li Yun Tian and the others."

"What about Su Mu?" Su Yan asked.

"I don't know." Kai Yang slowly nodded his head, "He hadn't been locked up. He has probably been sent back, as those people didn't dare to make a move on Su Mu."

Hearing this, Su Yan finally let out a breath of relief.

The two people swiftly walked deep into the Forest Prison. Not long after, they arrived at the cell in which Li Yun Tian and the rest were imprisoned. Seeing Kai Yang and Su Yan arm in arm, and with such intimacy shocked them to no end. On the spot their eyes dropped to the ground and they all forgot how to breathe.

Oh my god! If they could be this intimate with Senior Sister Su, even if they died, they would be satisfied! Li Yun Tian and the others were jealous to death.

“All of you come out.” Su Yan raised her hand and broke the door’s lock.

“Oh.....” This group of people involuntarily let out gasps and stupidly walked out. Ten pairs of eyes all were fixed on Kai Yang and Su Yan’s figures.

No matter how collected Su Yan’s expression was, being watched by them like this, she couldn’t help but become a bit stiff.

“Come, I’ll take you guys out.” Su Yan continued with her cold but beautiful face. Supporting Kai Yang, she walked at the front while Li Yun Tian and the rest followed behind them.

Not long after, this group of people walked out of the Forest Prison. As they walked out, the sun’s bright rays assaulted their eyes, causing them to narrow their eyes. As they did, around one hundred Disciplinary Hall Disciples greeted and surrounded them.

“Such a big fuss!” Kai Yang coldly called out, “Senior Sister, this is probably catered to counter you right?”

Su Yan didn't answer. She only swept her eyes across the group of people, she continued to support Kai Yang and advance forward.

No one dared to block their way. All of the Disciplinary Hall Disciples in their way scattered with fear in their eyes, in their eyes, automatically moving to the side and making way.

Chapter 73 – Junior sister's sincerity towards me

All eyes gradually converged on Su Yan and Kai Yang, whom she was supporting. Their gazes, within which traces of envy and jealousy could be seen, were accompanied by a sour atmosphere.

Before that moment, they had never seen Su Yan be intimate with a male. Even those outstanding Core Disciples had never received such attention.

What Su Yan cultivated was the Ice Heart Secrets. With her heart frozen these many years, even usually when she talked to males who were close to her, she was still quite cold.

Every Sky Tower disciple, no matter how powerful they were, no matter how high their status, everyone of them had to be extremely careful around her, to make sure as to not offend this beauty in any way. But now, she actually took the initiative to support a youth only at the initial element third stage. Her white as jade hands rested on his waist, while her icy face was tinted a light shade of red, accentuating her beauty.

This originally hard to reach person, seemed far more approachable now.

All of these male Sky Tower disciples' hearts all shattered. This was because their untouchable goddess seemed as if she was being sullied by her contact with mere mortals.

The person who had sullied their goddess was standing right in front of them. He was being supported by their goddess, smelling their goddess' scent, feeling the softness of the goddess' hands and enjoying treatment that none of them

would dream of enjoying!

“There is murderous intent!” The corners of Kai Yang’s mouth turned up forming an unusual smile. And as Su Yan strode forwards, he followed like a fox exploiting the tiger’s might, grinning.

Walking confidently in front of these people, a petite looking male was standing in Su Yan and Kai Yang’s way. Within that person’s gaze was sweetness and tenderness with subtle hints of jealousy and unhappiness.

Su Yan suddenly stopped, lifting up her head to look at him.

“Move aside!” Her cold voice rang out. It was dull and unfeeling, leaving one unable to sense any of the speaker’s emotions.

The male bitterly smiled, shaking his head: “Junior sister, please don’t make things difficult for this senior brother. This Senior brother is only doing his duty!”

This was Sky Tower’s number two expert, Xie Hong Chen.

“Move aside!” Su Yan repeated these words, unwilling to say another word to that person.

Xie Hong Chen helplessly said: “Junior sister, these people cannot leave right now! They have offended Zong Gui, and the Grand Elder has said previously that no one can take them away from here. ”

“Zong Gui?” Kai Yang took a step forward with a sneer, “I dare ask who is this

senior brother. Which Zong Gui have I offended?”

Xie Hong Chen looked at him with a gaze full of disgust and snorted out: “Gathering to fight a gang fight, killed a person and disrespecting Disciplinary Disciples. Any one of these would be enough to expel you from Sky Tower.”

“Gathering to fight?” Su Yan spoke out, “Fight with who? Since it was a gang fight, there should be an opponent right? So why did your Disciplinary Hall only restrain one side? Where are the other culprits?”

Xie Hong Chen’s expression was priceless as he was left speechless. The other side was naturally Wei Zhuan’s underlings, so how could they dare to restrain them.

“Killed someone? Where is that person’s corpse?”

Xie Hong Chen forced out a smile and immediately went to explain: “Attempted, attempted to kill someone, but luckily he was stopped in time by our Disciplinary Hall. We avoided a bad outcome.”

“The life and death of disciples in the Main Gate while they are comparing notes is a matter for the disciples themselves to manage! If it was to be managed according to your words, then every disciple that compares notes would be attempting to commit murder? Then all of the Disciplinary Disciples would be running all across Sky Tower to imprison every disciple right?” Su Yan’s expression was unsympathetic, her tone ice-cold: “What else was there, disrespecting Disciplinary Disciples, if you Disciplinary Disciples can really be just and fair, then who would disrespect you? This person who is supposed to represent Zong Gui has long since fallen and become a mere tool in a power struggle, extinguishing his own dignity. No wonder he is stepped on!”

“Junior sister.” Xie Hong Chen’s smile was extremely dry and tart, he was looking helpless beyond compare, “Do you really need to speak so frankly?”

“True or false, you know which is which in your heart.”

Xie Hong Chen’s expression dimmed and he said in a low voice: “Junior Sister, I have accepted your sincerity to me, so why are you still making things difficult for me?”

Su Yan indifferently responded: “If Senior brother’s words were heard by Zhao Fei Xue, junior sister Zhao, how do you think she will feel?”

Zhao Fei Xue, like Xie Hong Chen and Su Yan was a Core Disciple of Sky Tower. But this female’s relationship with Xie Hong Chen was unclear.

Xie Hong Chen’s entire body shook, looking at Su Yan his gaze was filled with grief as he lamented his current situation, but he was left with no way out. Moving his gaze, he glared at Kai Yang, directing all of his complaints to him.

Kai Yang was still calm, showing no fear towards him.

“You are called Kai Yang?” Xie Hong Chen forcibly suppressed his inner grievances and asked. Any male who saw the girl he liked supporting and being intimate with another male, who wouldn’t feel anguish.

“How will senior brother enlighten me?”

“I know that these events were caused by you. If not for you, then there wouldn’t be all these inconveniences. If you don’t want to pull in junior sister Su, then obediently return to your cell and save me the trouble of doing it myself.” Xie Hong Chen indifferently said. He couldn’t convince Su Yan and was unable to raise his hand against Su Yan, so he could only turn towards Kai Yang.

Kai Yang only smiled.

“What are you smiling about?” Xie Hong Chen asked with a frown on his face.

Kai Yang’s entire body was covered in blood, causing his appearance to be quite appalling. As he smiled, he slowly took Su Yan’s jade like hand that was on his waist. Taking it into the palm of his hand, he slowly patted her hand and turned his head towards Su Yan and said in a very sweet tone: “I also don’t want to implicate senior sister, but senior sister’s sincerity I have received. I really can’t fail to live up to that so I can only allow her to do whatever she wants.”

Xie Hong Chen’s expression paled meanwhile Su Yan remained stationary, as if she was rooted to the spot, her face perplexed.

The jaws of Li Yun Tian and the rest fell to the ground and from within their throats, emerged a strange creaking sound. But no matter what, they couldn’t say a single word.

While the surrounding hundred or so Disciplinary Disciples only felt that each of their hearts had been split open. Each and everyone of them was left dumbstruck!

“Senior sister, aren’t I right?” Kai Yang didn’t seem to take in the critical state

of things and still poured salt into the wound.

Xie Hong Chen looked towards Su Yan with extreme nervousness, unwilling to hear an answer that he didn't like.

Su Yan suddenly turned her body around.

Despite growing this old, she had never been treated this way by a male before, her hand was actually held within his and being wantonly felt. That coarse hand with callouses rubbing against her skin continuously felt painful yet warm.

Su Yan was extremely angry! Turning around, she wanted to send Kai Yang flying, but looking at him, she understood what he wanted to do. Suppressing her urge to hit him, Su Yan faintly nodded her head and honestly said: "Yes!

While she responded, she formed a stream of energy and sent it into Kai Yang's meridians.

Kai Yang suddenly groaned and from his nostrils came two streams of blood.

"Why did you start to bleed?" While she said this, Su Yan also went to take out a silk cloth before tenderly wiping away the blood for Kai Yang.

"I can do it, I can do it!" A cold shiver came out from Kai Yang's heart. Although this senior sister looked indifferent, he knew that if he touched her bottom line, then he would die ruthlessly under her hand.

“You guys.....” Xie Hong Chen called out madly in jealousy. If previously he didn’t want to believe Su Yan’s words, now seeing that scene, he couldn’t help but question her feelings.

Had he ever seen Su Yan treat a male this tenderly and gently before? Had he ever seen Su Yan’s hand in another male’s hand without any resistance or reluctance?

It looked like she was really happy and willing. But with Su Yan’s strength, how could Kai Yang win her over?

“Junior sister, you were born with privilege, how could you possibly take fancy to such trash?”

“Who are you calling trash?” Both Kai Yang and Su Yan simultaneously turned their heads; their expressions like raging tempests.

Chapter 74 – The Head enters the discussion

Like they had planned this beforehand, like they shared the same mind, Kai Yang and Su Yan yelled out the same words. Even the tone and attitude with which they yelled at Xie Hong Chen was the same.

Xie Hong Chen became wholly stunned by their shout! Looking at Su Yan, his gaze full of pain, he miserably said: “How is he not trash? His status is merely that of a Trial Disciple and his cultivation is only at the initial element third stage. These type of people are clearly trash. Junior sister, what could you possibly see in him?”

“You need not worry about our affairs!” Su Yan was such a great actress, taking full advantage of this opportunity to rid herself of Xie Hong Chen’s nagging which she had suffered from all these years. She even used such intimate sounding words.

“Senior brother, do you know the phrase ‘love at first sight’?” Kai Yang said to Xie Hong Chen with a bit of ridicule.

“You shut up!” His expression dark, Xie Hong Chen shouted at Kai Yang, “I am talking with my junior sister, so how are you qualified to interrupt?”

Kai Yang’s eyes narrowed and he laughed out loud.

“Trash is trash!” Xie Hong Chen had long since cast him away to god knows where. His handsome face contorted, unsightly as it could be, “When I was your age, I was already at the qi transforming stage, while you are still only at the initial element third stage. Where as now, I am at the peak of the separation and

reunion boundary. We have an entire two realm gap, with this how can you compare to me?”

“Senior brother please wait and see!” Kai Yang didn’t waste words because some things couldn’t be explained, you could only do them to make others understand.

“Xie Hong Chen, I don’t want to tangle with you any further. Move aside, under the care of your Disciplinary Hall, he has suffered no small amount. I need to take him back to tend to his injuries!” Su Yan’s cold voice rang out.

“Today, no one shall be able to leave here!” Xie Hong Chen’s voice bellowed out. Looking at Su Yan with pain in his eyes, his entire body shook as he sent out the command: “Listen here Disciplinary Hall Disciples, no matter who tries to dash out, attack to kill! This is even more prevalent with regard to senior sister Su, you musn’t be lenient with her.”

Love, hate, no matter which emotion, at that very hour, Xie Hong Chen expressed his meaning clearly.

Hua hua hua.....after hesitating for a while, the hundred or so Disciplinary Disciples rushed forwards to engage. Once again, these disciples surrounded Su Yan’s group.

“You are determined to do this?” From within Su Yan’s pair of crystal clear eyes, flashed a dangerous streak of light.

Xie Hong Chen forced out a bitter smile: “Junior sister, I know that I am not your opponent. But if you really want to pass me forcibly today, then you will

need to pass over my dead body!”

Since he was pushed to this point, he tried to use his courage and helplessness to move Su Yan.

Su Yan was so angered, her chest heaved up and down non-stop!

She didn't fear the Disciplinary Hall Disciples, after all, her strength was at the true element third stage. She was higher than Xie Hong Chen by three small stages and as soon as she used her Ice Heart Secrets, no one would be able to block her path.

But.....Kai Yang and Li Yun Tian's group were destined to not have such an easy time.

After all, she was only one person and couldn't possibly protect everyone under her wing.

Currently, they were in a deadlock because Su Yan didn't dare to forcibly try to bring her group of people out, while the Disciplinary Disciples didn't dare to initiate any attacks. Thus they remained stationary in their current positions.

Just as this group of the younger generation was causing such a large fuss, the Sky Tower Elders were having an earth shaking argument in another part of the school.

In the Elders Hall, Sky Tower's Grand Elder Wei Xi Tong, the Second Elder Su Xuan Wu, the Third Elder He Bei Shui, the Fourth Elder Zhou Fei and the Fifth Elder You Zi Zai had all gathered.

The five major elders sat in two opposing groups, one group was lead by the Grand Elder Wei Xi along with the Fourth Elder Zhou Fei and the Fifth Elder You Zi Zai sitting behind him.

Similarly on the other side, sat the Second Elder Su Xuan Wu and the Third Elder He Bei Shui.

This represented the current Elder factions within Sky Tower.

The previously clashing Wei Zhuan and Su Mu were kneeling on the ground on their respective sides and narrated the things that had occurred earlier in the day.

Su Mu was the first one to speak and he spoke the truth, how he was first blocked and how he was first provoked. Also how he was humiliated when they were comparing notes, though regardless of the importance, he didn't add any personal opinions.

After he finished the five Elders sat and didn't say a word, only waiting for Wei Zhuan to narrate.

But when it came from his mouth, things didn't quite match up with what Su Mu had said. Although it was about the same with regards to the beginning, but once he got to the moment Kia Yang appeared he started to veer off. His tongue like silver, accompanied by mucus and tears, he tearfully cried out about how overboard Kai Yang acted and how he had a Treasure Weapon which he used to attack and destroy his Embroidered Cloud Locking Mail and how he had attempted to kill him.

With such a miserable tone, his heart wrenching narration would be enough to bring his listeners to tears; just like a TV drama with its dramatic body language, he exaggerated the events by a hundredfold.

“You are lying!” Listening to this, Su Mu was indignant and couldn’t help but cry out.

“The truth is exactly so!” Wei Zhuan took the opportunity to embellish because Su Mu had been unconscious while the situation had played out, insisting on his truth.

“The truth my ass! You make a fuss out of nothing, you rumor starting and deceiving piece of trash! You don’t even need a script to lie.”

“Silence, all of you!” The Grand Elder repeatedly slapped his chair. Su Mu actually dared to curse his grandson like this in front of him, so how could he remain calm? But anger can only be anger, for it wasn’t appropriate for him to intervene in the disputes between the younger generation.

“Humph!” The Second Elder coldly snorted out.

The Grand Elder asked: “Both sides have said their parts, my fellow Elders, how do you view this?”

Although he had worded it like so, his eyes never left the Second Elder Su Xuan Wu as he wanted to know his opinion.

Su Xuan Wu responded: “What how do we view it? Isn’t it already extremely clear? The disputes between the younger generation and their duels should be settled amongst themselves. Why should us Elders be involved?”

The Grand Elder chuckled slightly, while the Fourth Elder Zhou Fei went to back up the Grand Elder: “Second brother, what you said isn’t correct. Originally the situation should have been settled amongst the younger generation in their duels, but since that Kai Yang came, he caused a disturbance and complicated things.”

“How so? Under the eyes of everyone, he openly challenged Wei Zhuan to a duel and didn’t break any Main Gate rules. Wei Zhuan’s personal strength wasn’t sufficient, so if he was defeated, who is he to blame?” Su Xuan Wu was furious that his own grandson had been humiliated, so his tone naturally wouldn’t be courteous.

The Fourth Elder opened his mouth to speak: “If he really just challenged Wei Zhuan to compare notes then defeated him, then there wouldn’t be any problems! But during the battle, he had taken out a weapon and used that weapon to break Wei Zhuan’s Embroidered Cloud Locking Mail. The head has said, that in battles between fellow disciples, one is unable to use weapons! That Kai Yang has clearly broken this rule, and should naturally receive the appropriate punishment!”

Su Xuan Wu laughed sarcastically: “Old Four, the Head didn’t set any rules like that right? With the Head in seclusion these many years, someone has actually dared to change his rules?”

Thus clearly pointing fingers and hearing this, the Grand Elder was greatly moved. Wei Xi Tong said: “Oh? Then Second Brother, please tell us what the Head had said exactly?”

Su Xuan Wu sneered: “The Head said, that in the duels between disciples, disciples are not to use weapons, nor to use strength enhancing immortality pills nor Secret Artifacts! For duels, disciples are only able to use their own martial skills and fists! Big brother, this, I haven’t said incorrectly right?”

The Grand Elder’s face turned grim, nodding his head he replied: “That is correct!”

Chapter 75-76 – All Hail Treasurer Meng

“That’s right then!” Su Xuan Wu laughed non stop, “In the duel between Wei Zhuan and Su Mu, why was he wearing a defensive artifact? Is this not breaking the Main Gate rules? How should we handle this?”

He didn’t ask about Kai Yang first, but went to rope in Wei Zhuan first, causing the Grand Elder to stare blankly at him, unable to respond.

“If Wei Zhuan really used his own skill to win against Su Mu, then it’s no wonder for Su Mu’s loss. But since Wei Zhuan was under the protection of his defensive artifact and used that protection to humiliate my grandson, First brother how can this be endured?” Su Xuan Wu bellowed out in fury as he slammed his palm down on the arm of his chair, turning it into smithereens.

Wei Xi Tong couldn’t help but lower himself: “Second brother, please quell your anger. Wei Zhuan’s defensive artifact was given to him by myself, but that was only because I wanted to make sure he would be safe. But he was like a child and actually used the artifact’s power to duel with others. This was Wei Zhuan’s fault.”

Right after this, an angry voice immediately sounded out: “Wei Zhuan, why haven’t you apologised and admitted your wrongdoings to your senior brother Su yet?”

Wei Zhuan was extremely clever and immediately cupped his hands towards Su Mu, saying: “Senior Su, this time it was this junior brother’s fault and he says his apologies to you. Senior brother, you are a great person with great forgiveness, so please don’t care about my wrongdoings!”

“Humph!” Su Mu overexaggerated his disregard.

But since things had reached this point, how could Su Xuan Wu say anything else?

The Grand Elder said: “Wei Zhuan was wrong, but Kai Yang committed a bigger violation of the rules. With a divine weapon in hand, he threatened to kill Wei Zhuan. If not for the Disciplinary Hall Disciples timely intervention, then I’m afraid that Wei Zhuan would have lost his life already. This was done with extremely evil intentions, so Kai Yang must be punished accordingly and used as an example to others.”

The Fourth Elder Zhou Fei and the Fifth Elder You Zi Zai both nodded their heads in agreement.

However the Second Elder laughed out coldly: “Wei Zhuan broke the rules and only needed to apologise to be forgiven, meanwhile Kai Yang needs to suffer the punishment? Could it be because Wei Zhuan is your grandson first brother, so he can have special privileges? If this is the case, then how would our great Elder Council have any reputation and prestige in Sky Tower?”

Wei Xi Tong’s face turned grim: “Second brother, your words are piercing. Kai Yang’s wrongdoings and Wei Zhuan’s wrongdoings cannot be put on the same level. Wei Zhuan only wore a defensive artifact to protect himself, not to hurt others. While Kai Yang’s weapon was used for attempted murder and could be used at anytime in the future, so second brother you should be able to see the differences!”

Su Xuan Wu replied: “I dare to ask first brother, who has seen Kai Yang with

this so called treasure? If this weapon really existed, then why couldn't the Disciplinary Hall Disciples confiscate it or find it on Kai Yang's body? Old Four, did your Disciplinary Hall report of anything similar to that being found?"

The Disciplinary Hall came under the jurisdiction of the Fourth Elder Zhou Fei. When he was addressed, he merely shook his head and said: "Although it wasn't found, under the eyes of the many disciples present, they all saw Kai Yang holding a blood red blade, this is the undeniable truth."

Su Xuan Wu laughed coldly, and then using his World Qi, he formed a long and slender blade comprised completely of World Qi. Although it's form flickered, you could still feel its power and majesty.

"If this was the case, then am I not also in possession of a weapon?" Su Xuan Wu laughed mockingly, looking at the three opposing people facing him.

"This is only the fine use of World Qi, how could it be considered as a weapon?" The Fifth Elder You Zi Zai shook his head faintly.

"Second brother means that Kai Yang who is only at the initial element third stage can already use his World Qi to this extent?" The Fourth Elder Zhou Fei looked at Su Xuan Wu with a smile, that was not a smile.

These words were such a joke. Because only when a martial practitioner reached the true element stage, and their World Qi became True Qi, were they able to form their Qi into a solid substance. While Kai Yang was only at the initial element third stage and the distance between it and the true element stage was like a thousand and eight hundred li. How could he have this ability?

“I didn’t say that his control over his World Qi had reached such a state, but have my fellow brothers forgotten martial skills can also make this possible?” Su Xuan Wu snorted out.

“Impossible. Even if he used such a peculiar martial skill, a mere initial element third stage martial practitioner cannot possibly destroy the Embroidered Cloud Locking Mail.” Wei Xi Tong replied while repeatedly shaking his head.

“There is nothing impossible in this world. It can only be that my fellow brothers have been far too busy snatching power these past years that you simply cannot keep up with the times!”

These words were slightly unpleasant to hear, and Wei Xi Tong’s face immediately turned cold: “Second, are you really insisting on protecting that Kai Yang?”

“So what if I am!” Su Xuan Wu suddenly stood up, “These affairs this time, in simple terms, it is only a duel between the younger generations, but you insisted on causing such a fuss. Since you insist, then I shall humor your endless pestering. You either punish both Kai Yang and Wei Zhuan, because they have both broken the Main Gate rules, sparing neither. Or this matter will be considered settled and no one shall pursue this matter any further.”

“That cannot do!” Wei Xi Tong rebuked this proposal in one go, “If it is as you say, then Kai Yang really used a weapon to break the Embroidered Cloud Locking Mail. But at such a young age, he is already this ruthless, so in the future he will definitely stray off onto the wrong path. My Sky Tower Pavilion cannot have such people!”

“He is only at the initial element stage, how are you to know whether or not he

will fall into depravity in the future? Could it be that first brother can foresee the future?”

“Second brother…….” Just as the Fourth Elder Zhou Fei was about to say something, he was cut short by a rage filled shout from Su Xuan Wu. Pointing his finger at Zhou Fei’s nose, he cursed him: “Old Four, before the Head went into seclusion, he left you in charge of the Disciplinary Hall. And in these past years, let’s see and what the Disciplinary Hall has done? Fair and just, when have they been so? If the Disciplinary Hall can only suppress disciples and enter a power struggle, then what use is it to you? Tomorrow I shall go to the Head and ask him to strip you of your Disciplinary Hall duties! What a show!”

The Fourth Elder cursed till his eyes started to twitch in fury, but he couldn’t refute anything he had said and could only feel wronged inside.

“Second brother, what if I am adamant about expelling Kai Yang from Sky Tower?” Wei Xi Tong asked, his face devoid of warmth.

“You dare!” Su Xuan Wu didn’t back down.

“Fine, then we shall follow those rules that the Head had set, and decide by vote. If the Grand Elder’s opinion wins, then second brother should have no objections right?”

“He he, raising your hand and voting?” Su Xuan Wu laughed loudly, “First brother, you don’t really think that I, Su Xuan Wu, am an idiot right? To vote by raising your hand, is there any need for it?”

“This isn’t good, that isn’t good, then what will satisfy you? Are you not even

putting the Head's rules in your eyes." Through this quarrelling, Wei Xi Tong had also been angered.

From within the Elder Hall, smoke was rising, so much so that it was about to burst out.

"Calm yourselves, all of you calm yourselves and come and drink a cup of tea. Everyone, cool your heads." The Third Elder who had yet to say anything, finally intervened and advised them all to not act rashly.

The Third Elder was gentle in nature, and though he stood on the side of the Second Elder, he didn't intervene in any of the disputes. Not to mention that his name is the exact same as his catchphrase, He Bei Shui, drink a cup of tea!

As soon as there was any friction between the Elders, he always mediated between them like this. It was just that the results weren't very big.

"I won't drink!" Both the First Elder and Second Elder bellowed out at the same time, looking at each other with distaste, refusing to comply with each other.

The Third Elder was left helpless and could only continue to enjoy it himself.

Just as the Elders were arguing and causing a ruckus, a person's voice sounded out from outside the door: "This disciple has some important information he needs to inform the Elders about!"

The Fourth Elder's eyebrows immediately crinkled together and he promptly said: "Come in!"

While the Elders were discussing things, disciples didn't dare disturb them. Since someone came to disturb them, it must be something important regarding Sky Tower.

When the Elders were informed of this, they momentarily stopped their quarrels.

When that disciple walked in, the Fourth Elder Zhou Fei asked: "What is the matter?"

"Reporting to the Elders, someone has forcibly charged into the Sky Tower Forest Prison and saved the ruckus causing Kai Yang, Li Yun Tian and the

"What?" The Fourth Elder immediately stood up on the spot, while the other Elders were also equally startled.

"Who is the one who is so daring, that they dared to charge into the Forest Prison to save them?"

That Sky Tower disciple didn't dare to reply and could only lift up his head and stare timidly.

Su Xuan Wu's heart thumped and he suddenly had a bad premonition.

From all of this, the Grand Elder could work out what had happened and he immediately calmed down before instructing the disciple: "You, speak."

“It’s.....it’s Su Yan, senior sister Su!”

Once those words were spoken, the Grand Elder’s smile expanded greatly. More importantly, even the Fourth Elder and Fifth Elder looked at Su Xuan Wu weirdly, while the Third Elder continued to drink his tea.

Su Xuan Wu’s expression changed non-stop, angered to point he couldn’t stop grinding his teeth together, he shouted: “Did you see clearly? That person who had charged into the Forest Prison really was Su Yan?”

That Disciplinary Disciple was so scared that he trembled non-stop, and replied at once: “This disciple saw it as clear as day. I clearly know of senior sister Su Yan’s name and fame and if the Second Elder doesn’t believe me, then you may make a trip to see for yourself!”

“No need.” Su Xuan Wu waved his hand and went on a spiritual journey. A short while later he had arrived at the Forest Prison and felt an ice cold chill. This type of chill, apart from Su Yan, no one else in the entire Sky Tower possessed it.

This girl really didn’t know of the severity of the situation, too reckless!

“Second brother, how would you view this situation?” The Grand Elder asked with an extremely large smile, holding his cup of tea as he waited for him to come back to his body. He was calm and unruffled as he asked.

At that moment, the Grand Elder was quite calm.

If both sides were refusing to allow each other to win, then this event would be the key allowing a side to win.

What type of place is the Forest Prison! That was the place where disciples who had committed wrongdoings were placed in Sky Tower! No matter if Kai Yang hadn't committed any wrongdoings, if he was locked in there, until a proper resolution had been made, he could not leave.

But now it was great, Su Yan had stormed the place and forcibly tried to take him away. A spur of the moment decision, the result was that she had gone and broken a major rule in Sky Tower!

If this wasn't properly taken care of, even Su Yan would have to be punished!

Wei Xi Tong knew that Su Xuan Wu definitely wouldn't allow Su Yan to be roped in. Since this was the case, he must take a step back and give him face, but of course, that would be on the premise that he was allowed to deal with Kai Yang!

Now that you think about it, none of these five elders were related to Kai Yang in any other way. Up until today, the big fuss they had caused was only for their own personal gain, fighting over the leadership of Sky Tower.

Now the Grand Elder felt that he would win this battle.

If this affair were to be spread out, then all of the disciples would think that his faction would be the true decision making faction in Sky Tower. And then their goal would be achieved.

Su Xuan Wu's face became ashen, and his expression struggled for quite a while, before saying in a resentful tone: "However first brother wants to deal

with it, then you shall deal with it!”

Since Su Xuan Wu was forced to concede, how could he have the mind to quarrel with them further? In order for Su Yan not to be punished, then Kai Yang must be sacrificed.

Where the hills are green, there will be wood to burn. In the future, there will always be a chance to get revenge!

“Old ghost!” As soon as Su Mu heard those words, his eyes opened wide and looked at Su Xuan Wu in disbelief.

“What did you call me?” Su Xuan Wu flared up in anger like he was talking with his siblings.

“Grandpa! You can’t be like this!” Su Mu immediately corrected himself.

“You have no right to say anything regarding this matter!” Su Xuan Wu glared at him fiercely.

“Senior brother Kai has saved my life, you cannot not care about him. If you do not care about him, then that is being highly ungrateful!”

“You shut up!” All this speaking had caused Su Xuan Wu’s face to turn bright red, and although he was unwilling in a hundred different ways, he was under the knife and was fed this, what could he do?

With Su Mu chattering like an insect beside him, Su Xuan Wu’s hand lashed

out in the air, immediately afterwards Su Mu froze like a statue, unable to move or speak only able to hear.

“Wait until we get home for me to deal with you!” Su Xuan Wu’s nostrils flared with heat and anger.

“He he!” The Grand Elder laughed with satisfaction, “Since second brother has no objections, then this shall be settled like this.”

Finishing, he looked at the disciple still standing there: “Send down this command, the Trial Disciple Kai Yang has repeatedly broken Main Gate rules, his actions ruthless thus the Disciplinary Hall will capture and imprison him in the Forest Prison until the Head returns to decide his punishment. As for Su Yan.....since she is young and ignorant, and this was also her first offense, we shall not take it too seriously. What do my fellow brothers think about it?”

How could the other Elders have any objections?

“Go then!” With a wave of his hand, an order tablet flew into that Disciplinary Hall disciple’s hands.

The Elder Command, seeing this tablet was equivalent to seeing the person himself! With this order tablet, Su Yan would no longer dare to act recklessly.

“Yes!” That Disciplinary Hall disciple received the order and swiftly walked out.

A short while later, from the direction of the door front came a bloodcurdling scream, and the sound of someone falling to the ground could be heard. The Elder’s faces changed significantly, and just as they were standing up to find out

what happened, a person's voice was heard.

"Fellow Elders have such power." The voice rang out, while a thin, old man with wispy white hair walked inside. When he walked inside, he was also carrying the disciple who had just left, but he had been knocked unconscious, even the elders had been suppressed by this old man.

That man walked to the kneeling Wei Zhuan and Su Mu and casually lifted up one of his legs and kicked Wei Zhuan to the side: "Go go go, don't block the way!"

Wei Zhuan's body flew out, as he wailed miserably.

In the Elder Hall, all five Elder's faces were changing non-stop and Wei Xi Tong narrowed his eyes and said to the person: "Treasurer Meng?"

The person who had just arrived, really was the Contribution Hall's Meng Wu Ya!

Speaking of this person, all five Elders were confused.

Ten or so years back, this person had suddenly appeared in Sky Tower. They didn't know what relationship he had with the Head, but with this he had started to reside in Sky Tower and was in charge of the Contribution Hall. Many times, they had tried to inquire about him from the Head, but each time they were left confused and without answer.

But all five Elders knew that this person was an expert! They also knew that he was below their Head.

Fortunately this person had no goal and only spent his days inside the Contribution Hall, knowing his place. Because of this, they didn't pay much attention to him.

But today he had come uninvited to this place.

Wei Xi Tong had a faint feeling, that when he was facing this Treasurer Meng, the pressure he felt was stronger than what it was like when he was facing their Head.

In the midst of his smile, Wei Xi Tong began to speak: "May I ask as to why Treasurer Meng has come to my Elder Hall?"

Meng Wu Ya didn't respond, he only smiled and looked at Su Xuan Wu. Su Xuan Wu was quite confused, thinking was it because his face had started to grow flowers, otherwise why would he be looking at him?

"You think that your decision is correct?" Meng Wu Ya suddenly questioned?

"What?" Su Xuan Wu stared blankly.

Chapter 77 – Release them

“Sacrificing Kai Yang in order to save Su Yan, do you think your choice is correct?” Treasurer Meng asked before lightly chuckling.

Su Xuan Wu became greatly embarrassed and thought he had come to criticise him.

Meng Wu Ya continued: “If so and you do this and really save Su Yan from her predicament, what would she think when she realises the reason for her safety?”

Su Xuan Wu stared ahead blankly before a beads of perspiration fell from his forehead as he realised the severity of the situation.

“If you really do this, then you only create inner demons/guilt in her heart! She trains in the Ice Heart Secrets, so if these demons/guilt really appeared you more than anyone else should know of the consequences.” Meng Wu Ya whispered into Su Xuan Wu’s ears, while he felt like he had been struck by lightning, a feeling of great remorse arose within him.

He had only thought about the short term benefits, and failed to see the disastrous long term effects it would have brought about for Su Yan. True, that by sacrificing Kai Yang he would save Su Yan, but as long as she lived every day she would think about how she was saved and how it was all from Kai Yang’s hard work. After thinking about it for a long time, she would become tormented by guilt, so how would her cultivation rise?

“Many thanks to Treasurer Meng for his pointers!” Su Xuan Wu respectfully responded.

“Ha ha.” Meng Wu Ya chuckled lightly, “Even if I didn’t say it, you would still have thought of it. It’s only that you would only have thought about it later!”

The Grand Elder stood to the side, his face unreadable; after all this time, with great difficulty he had finally managed to find an advantage over his second brother, but just as things were about to come his way, Treasurer Meng appeared. With just a few words from him, how could his second brother willingly continue to raise his white flag? For Su Yan’s future prospects, he definitely wouldn’t concede this time.

Realising this, Wei Xi Tong’s face fell: “Treasurer Meng, this the Elder Hall of Sky Tower, no one, even elders, without a permit cannot enter here. I suggest you return from whence you came. ”

Meng Wu Ya merely glanced at him, backing away quietly, then his figure suddenly flashed and reappeared on the highest place in the Elder Hall.

“Audacious!” Wei Xi Tong shouted out vigorously while the other couple of elder’s faces were all sharp with anger, they were all looking at Meng Wu Ya with unkind faces.

Their issue wasn’t with him personally, but was due to the fact that seat belonged to the Head of Sky Tower and apart from the Head, no one else held the qualifications to be there. Even though these fellow elders had been struggling with each other over the years, not even the Grand Elder dared to occupy that position.

But now, a mere treasurer of the Contribution Hall of unknown origins dared to go to that place. How could these fellow elders not be angry? This was

insulting the entire Sky Tower!

“He he, everyone, please don’t get angry.” Meng Wu Ya laughed indifferently, and while stroking his beard he said: “I am here representing your Head and am only here to pass on a message!”

“Representing the Head?” The five elders shouted at the same time.

In recent years, even if it were the five elders who wanted to meet him, it was equivalent to reaching for the skies, they wouldn’t have thought that Treasurer Meng would have been able to meet him. And by his tone, it seemed that because of today’s events, he had some things he wanted to say.

What is this all about? On an ordinary day, even if things flipped upside down, the Head wouldn’t intervene. So why did he intervene when it was just a small dispute between the younger generations?

“What is this, you should all recognise this right?” Within Meng Wu Ya’s hand, was a purple coloured jade pendant.

“The pendant of the Head!”

This jade pendant was the symbol of Sky Tower Pavilion, and was absolutely impossible to be counterfeited.

“Since you know, that’s good.” Meng Wu Ya smiled softly.

Wei Xi Tong asked in a pondering tone: “May I dare to ask what instructions

did the Head want you to pass on?”

Even though it had been ten years since the Head had managed any of the affairs relating to Sky Tower, the prestige and power of his position hadn't weakened a bit.

Meng Wu Ya replied: “Your Head said, you have made big things become small and small things become big, all these things are because of name of the people involved! As the older generation, are you not ashamed to intervene in the problems of the younger generations? You are a bit too shameless.”

Wei Xi Tong was shocked and finally spoke after a long period of time: “The Head.....The Head really said that?”

“Oh, that last part was my words. Your Head only said the first half!” Meng Wu Ya replied indifferently.

The five elders were angered to the point that they wanted to spit blood! This scolding, really strong! This really wasn't a good one.

“Also, Kai Yang has already entered the initial element stage, so he should be promoted to being an Ordinary Disciple. Afterall, continuing to have his Trial Disciple status isn't a good thing.”

“This, this is also your words?” Wei Xi Tong asked with quite a lot of doubt.

“This was said by your Head.” Meng Wu Ya laughed a good amount, “Since I have transmitted these words already, then I shall leave you all now.”

With these words, he began walking down from the position.

The five elders all looked at each other, and signalled each other with their eyes. Since the Head had already given his words, what else is left to discuss because it wasn't really a big issue. They all caused such a fuss because of their own motives, so not pursuing, wouldn't it be a simple task?

Su Xuan Wu laughed coldly and waved his hands before walking out. With the Head's commands, he no longer needed to quarrel any further and when he reached the bottom of the hall, he carried Su Mu and quickly walked away.

Soon after the Second Elder had left, the Third Elder He Bei Shui also excused himself leaving only the Grand Elder's faction in the Elder Hall.

The Fifth Elder You Zi Zai: "First brother, something's not right. Today's events were not that big, yet they moved the Head. Could there be some sort of conspiracy in it?"

The Fourth Elder also nodded his head in agreement: "Could it be that the the Head wanted to send us a warning that he was still watching over Sky Tower?"

This was also the hidden guess that the Grand Elder had made, but he just wasn't willing to admit it. Now that someone else had voiced it his heart gave a loud thump.

"Not matter what, we must retreat a step and in the future, no matter what, we must be careful, more careful." The Grand Elder said, muttering to himself, "But you could try and probe around for the Head's intention and see what the

Head is really thinking about. See if he has any ideas about leaving seclusion and taking over Sky Tower, then I would have to become an assistant, but if he only acted on the spur of the moment.....then this shouldn't continue further in Sky Tower. There should be someone who can really take charge."

"That's right! But, how should we probe about?" The Fourth Elder asked softly.

"Didn't the Head say to promote that Kai Yang to an Ordinary Disciple? You could also gain something from that."

"So it seems!" Both the Fourth Elder and Fifth Elder suddenly realised.

The Forest Prison, Su Yan, Xie Hong Chen and the rest were still facing off, no one daring to move.

This situation had already persisted for an entire thirty minutes, the cold air around Su Yan had gotten much stronger. If not for the fact that the martial skill that Kai Yang cultivated happened to suppress her Ice Heart Secrets, he might have long since been frozen to become an ice sculpture.

Just as they continued to be in a deadlock, a Disciplinary Hall Disciple came rushing over and loudly yelled out: "The Grand Elder has sent out a command, release them!"

"What?" Xie Hong Chen became stupid.

That Disciplinary Hall Disciple continued with a bitter look on his face: "Senior brother Xie, the Elders have said already that today's matters end here and no one is to investigate any further or you'll be punished according to the School

Rules!”

Xie Hong Chen looked at Kai Yang with a venomous gaze. That was because if Su Yan had started to attack, then he could have found an excuse to take out Kai Yang! But Su Yan never gave him that opportunity, and hearing the order from the Elders, he knew that there was no longer any chance for him to take Kai Yang out.

Clenching his teeth in grief, Xie Hong Chen bellowed out in rage: “Release them!”

Su Yan continued to support Kai Yang while slowly leading Li Yun Tian and the others outside. Under the complex gaze of Xie Hong Chen, they slowly walked away.

Chapter 78 – Sentiment (Third part)

Author's note: It pains me to death....to release a chapter, I actually needed to do it three times. I don't know if it is possible, but a book once said that ten-eight-two words are able to complete things and make it harmonious. I just want to finish this chapter, otherwise I will start to spit out blood.

The curtains just weirdly closed on this large-scale battle between the younger disciples. A lot of people thought it was unusual especially since it happened without an explanation.

The battle this time involved many people, with the Disciplinary Hall sending over a hundred disciples to surround and stop Su Yan, which only confirmed her power.

Whilst the other person involved, Kai Yang became known to many disciples, those whom were involved and those who were envious of his relationship with Su Yan. In all, there were numerous different rumors regarding him.

The subject of these rumors, Kai Yang, was fast asleep.

Right after leaving the Forest Prison, Kai Yang immediately went to sleep. When he was ganged up on and beaten by those five Disciplinary Hall Disciples, although they weren't serious, they were still quite harsh. If not for the dire situation at hand, Kai Yang would have long since fallen.

With the situation resolved, and no worries in his heart, one would naturally be

unable to continue to support themselves.

When he woke up, Kai Yang found himself in an unknown bed. With his body aching all over, he looked around the room and found himself in an extremely elegant yet simple room without much furniture and in quite a secluded place.

It was just like Su Yan's house in Black Wind Trade.

Struggling to get up, the noise that he made alerted the people outside. So not long after, Su Mu pushed open the door with a face full of emotion.

Li Yun Tian and the others were also present and as Su Mu walked in, they all looked at Kai Yang in relief.

"Senior brother Kai, how do you feel?" Su Mu asked as he walked over to support him.

"I'm fine now." Kai Yang started to work his World Qi and found that there were no real problems, he just needed to rest for a few days.

"This time senior brother saved me, Su Mu, I thank you." Su Mu replied somewhat awkwardly.

"No need to apologise." Kai Yang replied, lifting up his hand to stop him.

"Oh right, my family's old ghost gave me this pill to give to you to help you heal and cultivate better." Su Mu took out ten bottles and placed them side by side on the bedside table.

“The Second Elder?” Kai Yang was amazed, “Isn’t this a bit too much?”

“It’s not much, not much. This time you received heavy injuries, so you should properly rest and heal.”

“Then junior brother, please help me thank the Second Elder.”

“No need for thanks.” Su Mu waved his hand before a wave of fury appeared on his face.

This time, Su Xuan Wu thought he had really treated Kai Yang badly, so that was the reason why he had bestowed him with so many immortal pills. If not for Treasurer Meng’s timely arrival and announcement of the Head’s command, then he would have had to sacrifice Kai Yang. Su Mu was angry at the way things were handled and specially wanted to give Kai Yang that many pills.

“What about senior sister Su Yan?” Kai Yang turned his head around as he queried.

Su Mu’s expression became strange, he had already heard from Li Yun Tian and the others about Kai Yang’s feats. He felt both afraid and respectful, because from when he was young till now, Su Yan had never felt like an older sister, but more like his own mother. In front of Su Yan, he never dared to take even a single deep breath.

But looking at this senior brother Kai, his courage was beyond large! He actually dared to hold his older sister’s hand in front of so many people and say such daring words.

And afterwards, this sister of his did nothing! Not only did she do nothing, she actually arranged for him to rest in her house. This course of action was simply unbelievable!

These past two days during which Kai Yang had been unconscious, Su Mu had racked his brains. But he still couldn't come up with any viable theories.

Why? Why would she do this?

"Ai! Senior brother Kai!" Su Mu took in a deep breath and clapped Kai Yang on the back. After a while, carefully considering his wording he finally said: "Grief! Since ancient times, beautiful flowers would often leak water and do ruthless things. Senior brother Kai, you must open your eyes and be careful."

Kai Yang was startled and it wasn't until a short while later that he managed to let out a dry laugh. He knew that Su Mu had misunderstood him, but he didn't know how to explain it and could only ask: "Where is she?"

This time, it was all thanks to her arriving at the crucial time and rescuing him that he was okay, otherwise he would have needed to use his Yang Liquid to kill those Disciplinary Hall Disciples in the wooden hut. But facing those disciples, he wasn't confident that he would truly be able to execute the killing blows required. But no matter what, if he walked down that path, then there was no room for leeway.

"After she settled you down here, she left Black Wind Trade." Su Mu answered.

“When senior sister left, did she say anything?” Kai Yang was a bit suspicious. Originally, he thought that Su Yan would want to speak with him, because the actions that he took were a bit over the top.

“Nothing.” Su Mu slowly shook his head in reply.

Kai Yang secretly admired her inside.

This senior sister really wasn't affected. When it concerned her reputation and integrity, she actually didn't even bother to explain anything, about the complications, about the truth!

After saying this words, Su Mu left.

Lying on the bed, Kai Yang didn't ponder it further, because things had already reached this point, thinking about it anymore wouldn't make a difference. Just as well Su Mu brought those immortal pills, now he could really go and test whether or not his theory was correct.

Within these pills, half of them were for healing while the other half were for cultivation. Adding them together, their value wasn't small at all.

Kai Yang first took some healing pills, then he started to work his True Yang Tactics. This helped to dissolve the pills and allowed him to feel changes occurring within his body.

It didn't need to be said, but these healing pills' effects were quite good. He felt the pills working within his meridians and a short while later, he could feel a comfortable feeling flow to the position of his injuries, meanwhile the aching

feeling became dull.

But Kai Yang could feel that apart from healing his wounds and entering his meridians, a portion of the energy had also entered his bones.

Feeling this, Kai Yang's eyebrows lifted as he confirmed his suspicions.

Once confirming his guess, Kai Yang spent the entire day eating all kinds of pills.

The end result was clear, his golden skeleton, truly could absorb other types of energy, and wouldn't just absorb Yang type energy!

Long before he had broken into the initial element stage, he had already made this hypothesis, it was just that he didn't have any way to prove it.

The True Yang Tactics was no doubt a special and powerful skill, allowing him to absorb Yang energy endlessly and when used in battle, it's killing power was great. But this skill had a great flaw, that was it's cultivating conditions were far too strict.

You must be in a Yang type environment to cultivate.

Originally he was worried that he would be affected by the environment, but now with his golden skeleton's domineering power he no longer needed to worry about this.

When there was Yang energy, he would cultivate with the True Yang Tactics,

when there wasn't any it didn't matter because his golden skeleton wasn't picky and would accept all types of energy.

With both options available, he would no longer need to worry about his cultivation being hindered when Yang energy wasn't present.

This energy was being absorbed by the golden skeleton, and later when he battles, the skeleton would just give the energy back to him allowing him to power up.

Kai Yang faintly felt that there was some undescrivable relationship between his golden skeleton and the True Yang Tactics. But as for what that relationship was, he wasn't too clear.

By the time Kai Yang recovered and became conscious again, he was given quite a scare.

Without his notice, he had actually used up five bottles of the pills, each bottle contained ten pills; in other words, he had consumed fifty pills. They weren't that high quality, but if a normal person were to consume that many pills, their body would be unable to support it.

However, he was still perfectly fine and his injuries had healed by quite a fair amount.

Within the darkness, a sluggish light could be seen within his eyes. Looking at the remaining seven to eight different kinds of pills left, he thought of a crazy idea.

Once this idea formed, he was unable to suppress it.

After thinking it over, Kai Yang finally decided to take the gamble!

Picking up a bottle, he opened it up; no matter if it was healing pills or cultivation ones, he poured the entire contents of the bottle into his mouth. Then he took another bottle and poured it into his mouth.....

Once all of the bottles had been emptied, Kai Yang nonchalantly licked the inside of his mouth.

If a normal person were to see this scene, they would pee their pants! Although these pills weren't poisonous, you still couldn't eat them like you were eating beans. One must know that all medicine contains poison, and no matter what kind of pill, there was always a bottom line. If you surpass this limit, then it would prove detrimental to your health, cultivation and even your foundation.

But in that short time, Kai Yang actually swallowed seven or eight different kinds of immortal pills.

Smacking his lips, Kai Yang felt that his stomach was bulging and bursting with the various types of weak medicinal energy clashing. After a short while, the various energies converged together into a terrifying energy.

Kai Yang had been prepared for this and immediately started to activate the True Yang Tactics.

The energy was akin to a flood dragon that had broken free from a trap, turning around in his stomach. This caused Kai Yang to groan softly, as he felt

that his abdominal area was being ripped apart.

The revolving speed of the True Yang Tactics hadn't accelerated by that much, it was more like an attraction force was present. The converged energy from the seven-eight different pills contained a type of attraction force allowing them to be slowly assimilated into his meridians.

Kai Yang didn't dare to relax in the slightest and diligently monitored his condition.

This flood dragon like energy raged about in his meridians and was incompatible with his World Qi. Although the two energies mixed with each other, no matter what, they wouldn't fuse together.

Not only this, the flowing paths of the two energies within his meridians were completely different.

While the True Yang World Qi flowed in a clockwise direction, the immense immortal pill energy flowed anticlockwise.

Kai Yang's body suddenly became bright, suddenly became dark, and in an instant it became bright red. After his skin changed colour, in every meridian, it felt like thousands of insects were crawling around. And a drumming noise rang out non-stop, if anyone were to see this, they would be horrified.

As time passed, the impurities within that vast amount of energy slowly disappeared and drop by drop, little by little the energy was absorbed into his bones. The golden skeleton turned into some kind of ravenous beast, hungrily swallowing the overflowing energy by the mouthful.

Under this extreme pain, Kai Yang's senses were at their peak. It was like he had grown a pair of eyes within his body. This allowed him to see the mixing of the True Yang World Qi and see how each and every strand of the tumultuous pill energy melded.

Faintly, he realised something!

Kai Yang thought about the battles he had previously, how blood flew everywhere, how painful he felt and about his bloodthirsty **. Each and every time, after his pain, along with his unshakable willpower, his own power would rapidly increase to a level that allow him to defeat his opponent.

This was especially so in that battle two days ago in the wooden hut outside the Forest Prison against the five Disciplinary Hall Disciples, their cultivation had clearly been much higher than his. That battle was clearly imprinted in his mind.

With his blood boiling once again, a warm and familiar feeling came out from his bones, the energy that was absorbed by the golden skeleton was given back to him and momentarily allowed him to increase his strength.

This wasn't enough! Kai Yang felt that he was still missing something and without that part, he would never be able to fully understand the mysteries of the golden skeleton.

He still needed one more true battle!

Realising this point, Kai Yang jumped off the bed. Breathing rapidly with coarse breaths, he pushed open the door and looked around, and walked directly to the

house opposite him and kicked it open.

Kai Yang guessed that Su Mu was residing in that room, because not long ago he heard movement. He wanted to find someone to have a good fight with, and Su Mu was that person.

As he opened the door, Kai Yang's eyes fell upon a clean and clear back. Just as he was about to issue his challenge, he was forced to swallow his words.

Under the moonlight, beside the windowsill, was an extremely beautiful and heartstring pulling scene.

Creamy white skin, icy firm muscles, flowing around the various curves on her back.

This scene really shook one to the core, Kai Yang's three carnal desires nearly flew out.

This room really had someone in it, it just wasn't Su Mu as Kai Yang had imagined, but Su Yan!

Chapter 79 – The price for looking

The current Su Yan was only wearing her underwear. Thus her her jade white curvaceous backside, along with her perfectly rounded bottom, long and slender legs and her snow white skin, were all seen by Kai Yang.

Even though it was at night, Kai Yang still saw everything quite clearly.

That back was so perfectly curved, while her glossy shoulders emitted a scent of seduction. That exquisitely balanced waistline rested on a pair of perfectly round buttocks, not too big and not too small, the overall picture caused ones blood vessels to expand and ones heart rate to skyrocket. The underwear that clung to her bottom a bit obscenely, only served to make his heart pound even more fiercely.

Because her skin was so fair and white, and because her undergarments were both white in colour, it seemed as if her entire body was on display.

Maybe it was because she heard the movements behind her, she immediately used her hand to cover her chest and turned her body halfway towards the door. In her other hand was a white nightgown; it seemed that she was just in the middle of changing.

(TL: Nah genius, and does Su Yan love white or something?)

The two people's gazes met in midair, Kai Yang looked startled but couldn't help that his gaze travelled downwards to her white and full chest. Su Yan on the other hand, was quivering with anger and a flash of killing intent could be seen in her eyes

That was because she saw a pair of blood red eyes! These blood red eyes were like those of a hungry wolf, with hints of gluttony, unbridled as it swept its gaze across her irreproachably. Not only this, the male was breathing coarsely, like his ** was rising.

“Ka cha cha…….” With Su Yan as the centre, a sheet of ice quickly spread across the room in all four directions. Her dark red lips pursed, coldness within her eyes.

Kai Yang finally realised something wasn't right so he quickly turned his body around and sprinted away from the room with his top speed.

His speed was very fast and in three breaths time, he had already run out of the room. But before he could choose a clear direction to head in, from behind him he heard a loud cracking sound. A large hole had appeared in the middle of the house, a white figure flew out from within the hole. Reaching Kai Yang, he could see traces of fury on that cold face.

Kai Yang immediately retreated a few steps and took up a defensive stance as he thought of a way to explain everything. But thinking it over, no matter what he said, it would make no difference.

Any girl who had her back seen like that, wouldn't let the culprit off easily!

Su Yan had already dressed herself, while she stood there looking at Kai Yang frostily. Although she knew that Kai Yang probably didn't do it on purpose, because he wouldn't have known he would wake in Black Wind Trade, not to mention that he would be in the house opposite to her, she couldn't forgive him.

You could only say it was a big misunderstanding! But even though it was just a misunderstanding, Su Yan couldn't just let the matter slide like this!

She was waiting for an explanation, an explanation that would calm her fury.

Unfortunately, that male who was standing directly opposite to her, didn't say a single word. His eyes were still that blood red colour and he let out a heavy aura of bloodthirstiness, without the slightest bit of cowardice or shame.

Good, then I don't want your explanation, rather I only want to beat you up to relieve this lump in my throat!

An ice crystal slowly formed on Su Yan's fingertips. Then she flung her fingertips forward and that ice crystal flew out towards Kai Yang.

As it flew out, it rapidly grew in size whilst also rotating at high speeds. By the time it reached Kai Yang, it was the size of a wash basin.

Kai Yang didn't dare to be negligent in the slightest. Activating his True Yang World Qi, his fist collided with the ice crystal.

His fist aching, the Yin attributed ice crystal and Yang attributed True Yang World Qi collided, cancelling each other out. When the punch connected with the wash basin sized ice crystal, it quickly shattered into pieces.

Sou, sou, sou.....the shattered ice crystal became sharp ice shards that bombard Kai Yang.

Kai Yang couldn't react in time, so more than ten wounds appeared on his body, causing blood to flow freely. His already battered body, became even more battered and seemed on the verge of collapse.

Kai Yang yelled in a low voice and the golden skeleton once again showed its might. As the warm feeling spread, he felt his body's strength slowly increase bit by bit.

Shock could be seen in Su Yan's eyes. She thought that her move would be more than enough to knock Kai Yang unconscious, she never would have thought that her move would be countered.

Her body swaying, like an immortal fairy that descended amongst mortals, she flew towards Kai Yang. In an instant, she was at Kai Yang's shoulder.

An ice-cold feeling immediately spread from his shoulder and he hurriedly retreated a few more steps. Turning to see it, Kai Yang narrowed his eyes as he saw a layer of ice on his shoulder, that was quickly forming ice crystals.

Without any hesitation, Kai Yang tore off the clothing around his shoulder and called out a drop of Yang Liquid to smear on his shoulder.

Hiss hiss.....the ice hissed, Kai Yang's shoulder burned like a burning piece of iron, momentarily becoming bright red. The coldness that had been spreading, was burned away by that Yang Liquid drop, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

Su Yan became even more stunned, she had never imagined that Kai Yang would be about to use such freakish methods to melt her ice qi. Frost

appearing in her eyes, Su Yan called upon the Thousand Layered Snow Waves which swarmed around her, hiding her body within the layers of snow, as they rotated towards Kai Yang.

The Thousand Layered Snow Waves were not only majestic like a snowstorm but also extremely powerful, in an instant Kai Yang was swallowed up by the waves of snow.

The bone piercing cold, froze his heart. Even though he cultivated the True Yang Tactics, Kai Yang felt that he would soon freeze and become an ice sculpture.

He knew that this senior sister Su Yan was extremely angry, although there was no killing intent in her attacks, it was clear that she wanted to severely teach him a lesson.

However this situation gave Kai Yang an idea. Although his opponent was much higher levelled than him, and he couldn't resist in the slightest, he could still use it to test his findings.

This opponent was a thousand times better than Su Mu.

Within the snowstorm, Su Yan continuously attacked and Kai Yang was completely unable to defend himself, groaning with each blow. A trail of blood leaked out from the corner of his mouth, while his body was shivering from the cold, bitterly fighting the invasion of the cold air.

In the midst of this predicament, Kai Yang's thoughts became clearer and clearer and he actually gave up all forms of resistance and began to openly

receive the entirety of Su Yan's attacks.

"What's the matter, what's the matter?" The ruckus had woken several others, with the Second Elder Su Xuan Wu being the first to arrive at the scene, followed by Su Mu leading Li Yun Tian and the rest over.

Seeing the scene before them, the arriving people couldn't help but unconsciously take a deep breath.

Snow was flying wildly all over the place, Kai Yang's ** upper body was visible as he stood still with his eyes closed, he was currently enduring all of Su Yan's attacks. His body looked like a very shredded rag sack, repeatedly being hit by Su Yan. As he was being hit, his body flew all over the place from the impacts, but never seemed to touch the ground.

"Hiss....." Su Mu exhaled a breath of air, "How did senior brother Kai provoke elder sister?"

"It could be that senior sister is extracting revenge for the things that happened a few days ago." Li Yun Tian suggested with great fear.

"It must be so, otherwise with senior sister's temper, why would she beat senior brother Kai for no reason?"

"Our pitiful senior brother Kai. His injuries have yet to fully heal, yet he has already invited such a great calamity. Senior sister's attack are too ruthless."

All of the whisperings from the group of people were heard by Su Yan, they only served to anger her more. Today it was Kai Yang who had seen her body,

causing her to act out. But from their mouths, it seemed like she was the villain with a small mind, extracting her revenge.

Su Yan's hands became even more ruthless.

Chapter 80 - Immovable Will

Su Xuan Wu was squinting his eyes as he looked at Kai Yang, who was currently being beaten up, and remarked: “He looks like he is trying to understand something.”

“What do you mean?” Su Mu didn’t understand.

Su Xuan Wu only shook his head slowly and didn’t bother to explain further.

In his eyes, although Kai Yang was very pitiful, he could tell that he was currently trying to understand something, that something could be a mental understanding or it could be a martial skill. Wrapped within that cold hurricane of air, shivering due to the cold piercing him to the core of his body, he could see a flaming hot energy within his core spreading its warmth. When this fiery energy burst outwards, perhaps he would be able to step into a new level.

If he were to succeed, then his future accomplishments definitely would not be ordinary! Su Xuan Wu had truly never seen a martial practitioner who while in such a sorry state, would actually be able to enter such a deep state of enlightenment. This was nothing short of a miracle.

“Grandpa, I’m afraid that if elder sister continues like this, then senior brother Kai Yang will die.” Su Mu cried out urgently.

Su Xuan Wu replied with a shake of his head: “Yan-er knows how to control the strength of her attacks properly, and within her attacks, there are no killing attacks; after all, she doesn’t want Kai Yang’s life.”

Finishing this statement, he then whispered to himself: “Strange.....why would Yan-er punish him like this?”

If not because Su Xuan Wu was mature and sophisticated, then he definitely wouldn't be able to guess as to what had just happened between Su Yan and Kai Yang.

When the ice storm died down, Su Yan continued to float in the air, while Kai Yang fell towards the ground. His entire body was battered all over, his clothes torn and where you could see his skin there were signs of frostbite.

Just as he was about to hit the ground, Kai Yang suddenly did a flip and landed firmly on the ground and opened his eyes to look around.

Under the starlight, Su Yan's white clothes fluttered about with the night breeze, she was like a fairy descending with the full moon hanging behind her.

Her grand and clean aura made people become more modest for no apparent reason.

Ka cha cha.....could be heard from all directions as ice started to form all over Kai Yang's body. Soon, he had become an immense ice block.

The smoothness of the ice block was obvious, it was also as clear as glass. It was so clear that every single strand of Kai Yang's hair could be seen, even his attitude and feelings could be clearly seen on his face.

Su Yan didn't say a word, only turning to look at Kai Yang mysteriously before turning around and returning to her room.

The scene of her leaving was clearly seen by Kai Yang.

"Look after him, once he breaks free from the ice it will be the start of his success!" Su Xuan Wu solemnly told Su Mu.

Su Mu was nervous to the point that he started perspire: "Grandpa, senior Kai won't be frozen to death, will he?"

Su Xuan Wu gently laughed: "He won't, this is his good fortune!"

After reassuring Su Mu he turned and left.

Only then did Su Mu's group walk up quietly and softly to the ice block containing Kai Yang. Each and everyone of them surrounded that enormous ice block, tapping away at it. But with Su Yan's comprehension of the ice arts, would they be able to break it?

"This is bad, this is bad! Senior brother is already injured, and now that he is frozen, I'm afraid that his little brother may also become frozen and fall off. How is this good?" ** didn't have any sort of filter, so as soon as he thought of it he said it, he was glared at by Su Mu: "Didn't you hear my grandfather say, this is senior Kai's good fortune, huh? Everybody don't move, if this ice breaks and hurts senior, it won't be good. We'll just stand guard here."

"Yes." The group of people chorused.

Guarding until the fifth bell toll of the night (3-5 am in current time), there had still been no movement from the ice block and Kai Yang continued to stay in it like the living dead. His breath shallow, he could only continue to look at the place where Su Yan disappeared to.

Su Mu's group considered the situation for a while before deciding to leave two people behind to guard Kai Yang while the rest returned to do whatever they needed to do.

This continued for an entire three days. Within a small attic was a large ice block, and inside that was a living person. Looking at it, it was as strange as strange could get.

During these past three days, they had rotated their shifts countless times and yet the ice still showed no signs of breaking. This caused the group to become so anxious that their lips were blistered.

During these three days, Kai Yang didn't feel the flow of time; although his eyes were open, he couldn't see anything.

All of his focus was on comprehending the changes occurring within his body.

Sensing the energy within his bones, sensing that unyielding warmth the energy brought along with it, and sensing how that warmth would boost his strength each and every time.

The ice that Su Yan left behind for him, provided him with the perfect place to comprehend what was happening accurately. The energy contained within the

ice block left behind, constantly released cold air that permeated him to his core.

This cold was something that the current Kai Yang could not resist, but he managed to resist every time. Each time, he relied on the mystical properties of the golden skeleton.

Resisting hundreds of times, thousands of times, allowed Kai Yang to understand the mysteries of the golden skeleton and why it could amplify his abilities.

Within his body, a small flame had started to burn hotter and hotter, and it would do so until the day he finally comprehended what was occurring. This flame continued to burn peacefully, until it finally started to send heat waves out of Kai Yang's body.

A breaking sound rang out!

Su Mu and Li Yun Tian who were currently on the guarding shift were startled but they quickly turned their heads around.

They only saw small numerous cracks appearing all over the ice block, with the cracks resembling the strands of a spiderweb.

"Senior Kai is about to come out!" Su Mu cried with enthusiasm and certainty.

Sure enough, as soon as he said those words, the ice block exploded and the shards melted in the light before disappearing.

Kai Yang remained standing in his previous position, his bloodstained upper body ** did look a bit weak, but his eyebrows were creased showing he was still deep in thought.

Su Mu and Li Yun Tian didn't dare to disturb him, so they quietly waited off to the side.

After a good half an hour, Kai Yang's worried look disappeared and he stated in a cheerful tone: "Since it's so, I will call you Immovable Will."

Immovable Will was the thing that Kai Yang had gained an understanding of during these three days. This martial skill was not one you could use to attack, but rather one that helped to strengthen one's body.

This was the skill that he had learned from the golden skeleton, so this skill was closely related to the skeleton.

Only when one has an unyielding spirit, is unwilling to surrender under any adversary, will they be able to unlock this type of skill. As soon as he activates it, the golden skeleton will give him energy to temporarily increase his strength and fighting ability.

Although previously he was unknowingly activating this Immovable Will skill he didn't have any understanding of it, with this type of martial skill there is a big difference in the power it displayed once it was understood.

In other words, he could now say that he had completely grasped this secret skill with his own hands. It could also be said it was a skill exclusive to him.

It was no longer the same as before, when he is battle and/or receives injuries, he no longer needs to rely on his stubbornness to activate the skill.

Although his harvest this time was great, Kai Yang was still a bit unsatisfied, because he could sense that there were still secrets hidden within the golden skeleton. Yet since he couldn't see through them he couldn't claim them, thus he couldn't help but feel regret.

The days are long, and one shouldn't care over one lost hour, Kai Yang consoled himself.

Only when Kai Yang started to move, did Su Mu and Li Yun Tian walk up to him, asking worriedly: "Senior Kai, are you alright?"

"Me? I'm very good!" Kai Yang moved his limbs around and found that all this past injuries had all healed.

"I shall help you put your clothes on, otherwise if elder sister were to see you again, I'm afraid she might beat you again." Su Mu said, his voice full of worry.

Chapter 81 - You are still a boy right?

Inside the Second Elder of Sky Towers residence, Kai Yang could be seen wolfing down food, while Su Mu's group sat off to the side talking to him.

Naturally, they tried to probe Kai Yang and asked why had Su Yan beaten him like so that night, but Kai Yang didn't dare reply.

"That's right, Wei Zhuan didn't come and cause any more trouble for you guys right?" Guiding them away from the previous topic, Kai Yang enquired. Speaking of this, ever since he had left the Forest Prison, he had either been unconscious, or unable to enquire due to other reasons, such as being frozen in an ice block, so he really didn't know how the Main Gate had dealt with the problem.

"That affair has already been brought to a close. The Elders have ordered us juniors to not pursue this matter any further." Su Mu answered before suddenly looking at Kai Yang with great suspicion: "Truth be told, the reason why we are safe and will suffer no further punishment, is not because of my Grandfather."

"Eh?" Kai Yang lifted up his head, "It wasn't because of the Second Elder?"

"It wasn't." Su Mu slowly shook his head, then a bit awkwardly he retold the events that had occurred in the Elder Hall that day. Then he followed up with: "Just as I was being restrained by my grandfather, guess who appeared?"

"Who?"

"This person is someone you would never have thought of. It was the

Contribution Hall's Treasurer Meng. He brought the Head's jade pendant, and issued his direct command. Only after this did this affair die down and turn into something small that could be resolved."

"Old man Meng?" Kai Yang asked incredulously.

"If not for him, then senior Kai, I'm afraid that you would have already been severely punished by the Grand Elder." When Su Mu spoke of this, his face became filled with extreme guilt.

Meanwhile Kai Yang smiled, unaffected: "Junior Su, you don't need to take this so seriously."

Su Mu clasped both his hands in front of him saying: "I know that senior is a generous and benevolent person, and I apologise to you in place of my grandfather. The old ghost truly didn't settle things well this time."

Kai Yang really didn't mind such a thing, because in the higher levelled battles, they would naturally use the disciples under them as chess pieces. This was only human nature.

Su Mu spoke again: "Treasurer Meng's background is quite a mystery, the old ghost said that his cultivation is quite high and profound. It is quite a puzzle as to why he interfered in this matter, also it appears his friendship with the Head runs deep."

This caused Kai Yang to contemplate a bit: "Old man Meng is someone who grabs feathers from a flying goose, and wouldn't act if there wasn't any profit in sight. This type of brain wracking idea is most likely for a reason regarding

the bigger picture. But no matter what it is, he did help us, so we should pay a trip to him to thank him at least and take this opportunity to see what he actually wants to do.”

“Senior speaks the truth, we were waiting for senior so we could go together.” Su Mu replied.

“Let’s go now.”

Some things should not be delayed, so this group walked majestically off towards the Contribution Hall, like they were charging off to battle.

In the Contribution Hall, Treasurer Meng was actually not sleeping, but sitting straight behind the counter smiling. As he smiled, he looked at Kai Yang and others who had just walked in; it was like he was expecting them.

Su Mu followed Kai Yang in with a smile, hiding his true thoughts: “Good day to grandpa Meng!”

This is how they addressed Treasurer Meng now, it used to be “Damn old man”. But now, how would Su Mu dare to call him that?

Treasurer Meng lightly chuckled: “This child is quite polite.”

“Hei hei.” Su Mu said with a bit of embarrassment.

“You have come to say your thanks?”

“En.” They all nodded their heads.

“Then that’s fine, only little Kai Yang needs to stay, the rest of you can all scram!”

“Yes!” Su Mu and the rest replied without hesitation and before the places they stood in could heat up, they had all quickly retreated from the Contribution Hall. By then, they had all realised the reason why Treasurer Meng had aided them was because of Kai Yang. Otherwise, why would he have only asked Kai Yang to stay behind?

It was just.....why did he help senior Kai?

Inside the Contribution Hall, Kai Yang was also a bit suspicious: “Treasurer Meng, what are you scheming?”

He didn’t talk in circles and directly voiced the suspicions in his heart.

Meng Wu Ya only he he laughed, and then walked out from behind the counter. Claspng both hands he started to walk in circles around Kai Yang, and only after a few revolutions did he lift up his head and ask: “What do you think I am scheming?”

“I don’t know.” Kai Yang rolled his eyes while thinking if he knew the answer, would he ask need to ask.

Meng Wu Ya replied: “Since you are this honest and do not talk in circles. You should be someone who knows how to pay his debts. So, since I helped you this time, I want to you help me with one little favour.”

Kai Yang knitted his eyebrows together: “A favour I can help you with?”

Treasurer Meng’s cultivation was high and profound, so if he couldn’t do it, how could Kai Yang possibly do it?

Like he could see through Kai Yang’s worries, Treasurer Meng smiled: “Don’t worry because there isn’t much danger at all. If you do as I say, not only will there be no danger, you will actually gain many rewards.”

Kai Yang was able to see that when Treasurer Meng said those last words, his face showed a bit of sadness.

“Helping you complete this favour, there are also conditions?” Kai Yang was a bit puzzled. When he was asking for a favour, he still put so many conditions up.

Treasurer Meng said: “Not only do you have to comply with my conditions, you also have to make the opposite party completely satisfied.”

“So troublesome, I won’t do it.” Spinning on his heels, Kai Yang started to leave.

“Don’t!” Treasurer Meng cried out in worry. He had finally found someone who fit his requirements, how could he let him leave like that?

“Little Kai Yang, you can’t be like this ah. If you let water drip, then it will repay you by giving you a spring pond. No matter what, this senior is your benefactor, so how could you just disappoint me like this?”

“Then don’t walk around in circles. Speak out the truth and if I can help you I will help you. If I cannot, I will find someone else to help you.”

“Stretch out your hand, I want to test out your World Qi.” Treasurer Meng didn’t dare to drag it out any further and directly stated what he needed.

Kai Yang looked at him suspiciously as he stretched out his hand. He was convinced that Treasurer Meng was going to do something harmful to him

Meng Wu Ya used two fingers and placed them on Kai Yang’s wrist, then with a solemn face he started probe about. His face was a flurry of expressions, the first one was indifference, the next one was stern, while the one after that was amazement, and finally he looked flabbergasted.

“Good, good, good! Such strong and pure Yang World Qi!” Retracting his hand, Meng Wu Ya was overjoyed at this unexpected discovery.

“This favour is related to me training my World Qi?” Kai Yang guessed.

“Naturally they are related.” Meng Wu Ya vigorously nodded his head, “Otherwise, why would I come and ask you. Little Kai Yang, I will ask you another question and you must answer honestly.”

“What question?”

Meng Wu Ya suddenly became really embarrassed as his eyes flitted to and fro. After thinking for quite some time about his word choice, he asked in a nervous

but anticipating tone: “You are still a boy right?”

Because he was too nervous, Meng Wu Ya’s neck was stretched out quite far as he pushed his face in front of Kai Yang’s; both his eyes fixed on him.

Kai Yang immediately retreated two steps, then three more. Following that, goosebumps rose all over his body and his body shivered as he asked with extreme vigilance: “What are you doing?”

This old thing, could it be that he had some special disposition? This question was far too nonsensical!

“Why have you retreated so far? It isn’t like this senior is going to eat you!” Meng Wu Ya chased Kai Yang, once he backed him into a corner he asked in a mysteriously low voice: “Are really still a boy or not?”

“What do you really want to do?” Kai Yang adopted a *“if you dare do anything I will take you down with me”* type of pose.

“What do you think this senior is?” When Meng Wu Ya saw Kai Yang’s position, he finally realised what Kai Yang was thinking or thought he had meant when he had asked him. Not only did his face turn red, he also retreated a few steps, “It isn’t like this at all. This kid, you are so dirty minded!”

Chapter 82 - The person that night really was you

“Who’s the dirty minded one, staring at the asses and legs of girls all day long.” Kai Yang showed no quarter as he refuted.

“Don’t speak about this matter again.” Meng Wu Ya was so frightened that he looked in all directions, scared about who might have overheard this. Cupping his hands and begging: “Lord Kai Yang, Lord Kai Yang, could you not speak about this matter anymore? This senior only wanted to see how well they developed. It’s not like I wanted to do anything to them.”

Seeing that he had surrendered, Kai Yang didn’t press him further and sternly replied: “The favour that you want me to help you with, is it related to these cases in anyway?”

“That’s right!” When they started to speak about the true matter at hand, Meng Wu Ya’s face turned solemn again: “So little Kai Yang, you must truthfully answer me; are you still a boy.....cough cough.....en? It is of great importance to the matter.”

Kai Yang became very embarrassed as he took in a few breaths through his nose: “I’m not!”

“Good!” The weight within Meng Wu Ya’s heart had finally been lifted, “This is too good! Little Kai Yang, you are good.”

In this age, many boys at fourteen-fifteen years old, had already had intimate dealings with females. This is not to say anything bad about the children of poor families, since they married at a young age to help them in the long run. As for

the children of rich families, you don't even need to ask. Every one of those second generation young masters, had several maids that they shared a room with.

That left only martial practitioners. Since their hearts were always focused on cultivating, they often lost their virginity quite late, whilst some practitioners did not even have any intimate relationships with the opposite sex.

(TLN: Where the hell is this going???)

Even the male disciples in Sky Tower, many of the fifteen-sixteen year olds often busied themselves with carnal pleasures. Nonetheless, Meng Wu Ya believed that Kai Yang wasn't like those people, but he had to be careful, so he had to ask.

"In other words, I am able to help you?" Kai Yang looked at Meng Wu Ya (like this:)

"If you can't, then no one else under the sky can. You have passed this round!" Since Meng Wu Ya's mood was fantastic, he laughed out loudly.

"Didn't you just say that you wanted the other person to be completely satisfied?" Kai Yang asked suspiciously.

Meng Wu Ya's laughter suddenly halted. Retracting it, he stiffly nodded his head and replied: "You do have to make her satisfied, if she isn't satisfied, then the job cannot be completed. Not to hide anything from you, but a few months earlier I had found someone who fit the criteria, but she wasn't willingly, so I could only drop the matter. Forget about it, I will take you to her, if you can do

it, do it, but if you can't.....then you can't.....”

After talking for all this time, Meng Wu Ya still didn't know how to continue explaining. Only after letting out a small sigh, he grabbed Kai Yang by the collar and led him outside.

Hastily, Kai Yang said: “First finish what you need to say. I am helping you because I want to thank you for your benevolence, but if what that person is asking is too excessive, I will not agree.”

“Stinking brat!” Meng Wu Ya was highly depressed. When he heard Kai Yang making all types of excuses, he burst into a fit of anger while thinking if you knew what I really wanted you to do, then you wouldn't be able to wait and would instantly jump and attempt to complete it. He actually dared to act cold front in front of him.

As he followed Meng Wu Ya, Kai Yang realised that they were walking towards Coiling Dragon Stream.

Furthermore, he discovered that it was near the place that he often cultivated.

Why are they walking over there? When he was training over there, he hadn't seen any traces of housing near there at all. Afterall, Coiling Dragon Stream is a dangerous place, so ordinarily no one would go there.

When they were about hundred feet away from his training place, Meng Wu Ya, suddenly stopped, and pointed his finger in front of him: “Look, it's over there.”

Looking over, Kai Yang couldn't help but stare blankly over.

Standing where he usually trained, was a female. She stood in front of the Three Sun Fruit tree, wearing a light green dress. You couldn't see what she was thinking about, it seemed that she was deep in thought. Her body didn't move at all, she stood there unmoving, while her dress billowed in the wind.

She wore a veil, not allowing anyone to see her appearance.

On her forehead hung a sparkling blue gemstone, highlighting her elegant and refined nature.

Her figure looked weak and fragile, like it couldn't even endure a gust of wind, but it was a graceful figure.

Within her pair of crystal clear eyes was naivety, like she was a child that had yet to grow up.

Looking at her, Kai Yang thought about that night, the sleeping beauty on his worn out bed.

"It's her!" Kai Yang's gaze suddenly softened.

"You recognise her?" Meng Wu Ya immediately became alert, because his beloved disciple had told him from her own mouth that she hadn't even talked to Kai Yang before. But why, when Kai Yang arrived, had they actually recognised each other?

“You wanted me to help her?” Kai Yang asked, looking at Meng Wu Ya.

“Yes!” Meng Wu Ya nodded his head.

“I’ll help!” Outside of Treasurer Meng’s expectations, Kai Yang agreed to his request without the slightest hesitation. It seemed as though his persuasive words and appeals to him through reason, emotion, violence and bribery were not completely useless after all.

Within Meng Wu Ya’s heart, for no reason a wonderful feeling burst out and he suddenly regretted asking Kai Yang for help.

“Why did you agree so readily?” Old man Meng vigilantly asked. “Didn’t you ask for my assistance?” His brows creased, Kai Yang looked at Meng Wu Ya. This old man changed attitudes far too quickly.

“I did want you to help me, but you agreed far too quickly for my liking.” Meng Wu Ya kept on shaking his head, “You must give me an explanation.”

“Then do you want my help or not?” Kai Yang impatiently asked.

“Of course, of course I do.”

“Then what are you asking for. Me agreeing, isn’t it a good thing?”

That’s right, him agreeing that readily, isn’t it a good thing? Why did he feel that something wasn’t right? Meng Wu Ya looked distracted.

Step by step, Kai Yang walked forward.

The sound of his footsteps startled Xia Ning Chang who was currently deep in thought, and by the time she regained consciousness, Kai Yang had already arrived at her side.

Xia Ning Chang was clearly at a loss, and looked at Kai Yang not knowing what to do.

She couldn't help but be frightened because the previous two times they met were both at night and embarrassing things had occurred. How could Xia Ning Chang stay calm?

"Senior Xia." Kai Yang looked at her, "Why are you here?"

"I.....I came here to check up on the fruits for you. Since you haven't come these past few days, I was afraid that others might have taken them." She promptly replied.

Looking over, Kai Yang saw that all of his Three Sun Fruits had disappeared. The only ones remaining were the ones on the last tree that were about to ripen.

"These are your fruits, I have refined them into immortality pills." As Xia Ning Chang spoke, she took out a small bottle and handed it to Kai Yang.

Taking it, Kai Yang discovered nine pills were rolling about inside and they dispersed a rich Yang energy.

It was extremely pure, they didn't have any impurities in them at all. It was just.....how did she refine them into pills?

“Senior knows that I train over here?” Kia Yang asked and raised his eyebrows. If this was not the case, how could she have come here to guard his Three Sun's Fruit.

Xia Ning Chang evaded his gaze: “I accidentally stumbled upon it.”

“The person that night really was you.” Kai Yang lightly smiled, a warm feeling spreading from his heart throughout his body.

Chapter 83 - What is special about Xia Ning Chang

The night that Kai Yang broke through into the initial element stage, there was a female wearing a veil that attacked him during his breakthrough. Originally, he thought that she was going to kill him, it wasn't until that final moment, he found out that this really wasn't the case. She had just wanted to assist him with breaking through, otherwise he wouldn't have been able to block any of the strikes from that veiled female.

At that time, Kai Yang already had his suspicions about the identity of the lady, and now he had finally been able to confirm the identity of that veiled female.

Once he did so his heart filled with appreciation for his senior Xia.

Unfortunately old man Meng jumped into between Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang, interrupting their sweet moment. And, like a mother hen protecting her little chicks, he protected his treasured disciple.

Suspiciously, Kai Yang looked towards him, asking: "You know each other?"

Snorting, Meng Wu Ya showed a face full of pride and righteousness: "This is my disciple!"

"Your disciple?" Kai Yang's jaw nearly fell to ground as his eyes continuously flitted between Xia Ning Chang and Meng Wu Ya in complete disbelief.

He never would have thought, he truly never would have thought it. That such an irresponsible man like Treasurer Meng would actually accept a disciple. This

couldn't be a accidental or false disciple could it?

"You two.....know each other?" Glancing to the side, Meng Wu Ya asked Kai Yang.

"We don't know each other!" Xia Ning Chang's response was extremely clear and firm, leaving no room for argument. As she replied, she also moved to hide behind Meng Wu Ya, positioning her hands in a defensive manner.

Kai Yang took the hint and chuckled: "It can't be counted as knowing each other. It's just that on that night, senior sister helped me with a small matter."

Meng Wu Ya nodded his head. Xia Ning Chang had already informed him regarding this matter, and if it wasn't for that night's matter, then she wouldn't have found out that Kai Yang had such pure Yang type World Qi.

"Treasurer Meng, what type of task does senior sister need my help for? Could you please tell me?" He asked with an inquisitive look. Since it was related to Xia Ning Chang he wouldn't reject the request no matter the task.

Instead of replying, Meng Wu Ya turned to his beloved disciple and inquired: "Is he okay?"

Xia Ning Chang's delicate earlobes suddenly reddened, lowering her eyes one could see her long eyelashes were trembling. Only after a good while did she tentatively nod her head.

Seeing her act like this, Meng Wu Ya couldn't help but let out a small sigh of exasperation: "Stop, stop, stop. Since time is limited, it will be him."

Standing to side, Kai Yang observed the proceedings without saying a word.

A few minutes later, Meng Wu Ya suddenly started to speak in a serious tone: “Kai Yang, you should know that on this earth, there are certain types of people that are different from ordinary people. These people possess skills and abilities that normal people can’t possibly fathom.”

Kai Yang could only stare blankly before softly responding: “Treasurer Meng, you are talking about those people who have a special physique?”

“That’s right.” He answered while nodding his head, “These people are protected by the heavens, and are the children of the heavens. Some are gifted in cultivating, others can heal quicker than others, while other physiques are more suited to battling. There are various types of physiques, coming in all shapes and forms, but no matter who it is, as long as they possess a special physique they are subjected to the envy of others. It’s just, those who possess special physiques are extremely rare; you might not even find one in a million people. Little Kai Yang, you are very lucky because today you are blessed enough to see someone with a special physique.”

In shock, Kai Yang glanced at Xia Ning Chang who was currently hiding behind Meng Wu Ya: “Don’t tell me it’s senior sister.....”

“He he.....” With a face full of arrogance, Meng Wu Ya grinned from his heart, nodding his head he replied: “That’s right. Ning Chang is different from ordinary people.”

Kai Yang’s heart was going up and down. Never in a thousand instances would he have thought this little and easily shy senior sister was actually someone who

possessed a special physique.

“What is special about senior sister?” Kai Yang couldn’t help but curiously ask.

Meng Wu Ya didn’t reply but instead sank into contemplation while muttering to himself, finally saying: “These fruits on the tree have just matured, so my dear disciple, turn them into pills.”

“En.” Xia Ning Chang walked up to the Three Sun’s Fruit Tree and lightly plucked the ripe fruits from its branches.

Kai Yang didn’t ask anything, he felt that all his questions would soon be answered.

“My disciple, let him see some of your might.” Meng Wu Ya chuckled.

Xia Ning Chang nodded her head then walked up to Kai Yang. Taking one of her white jade hands she placed the fruits on the palm of her hand.

“Please watch junior brother.” Xia Ning Chang quietly instructed him, before activating her World Qi.

Kai Yang was extremely shocked. This was because as she activated her World Qi, he saw that the from within the fruits, out surged a glowing red energy.

The Yang energy within the fruits burst out. Since Kai Yang cultivated the True Yang Tactics, he was extremely sensitive to Yang energy. Currently he could clearly feel the the energy within the Three Sun’s Fruits, violently bursting

outwards.

But.....how did this happen?

The energy that came from within the fruits converged in front of Xia Ning Chang. Once all the energy had been extracted from the the fruits, Kai Yang watched as they deflated without an ounce of Yang Qi to be sensed within them before disintegrating into the wind. This process all happened in the span of ten breaths.

Xia Ning Chang moved again; one hand held the extracted energy, while the other hand performed some unknown movements in the air.

Then the Yang Qi from within Coiling Dragon Stream rushed towards her in one solid stream. With a motion of her hand, Xia Ning Chang grabbed that qi and added to the already condensed red coloured energy from the fruits.

As time went on, her grabbing speed became faster and faster as each handful of Yang Qi assimilated with the red energy from the fruits in her palm.

Though as more energy was poured in, not only did the accumulated energy not expand, it actually decreased in size.

But the energy within the energy ball was becoming stronger and stronger.

A few minutes later, Xia Ning Chang finally stopped seizing Yang Qi from Coiling Dragon Stream, she then used her two hands to squeeze the energy ball.

Her two hands quickly clasped together and when she reopened her hands again, there were three bright red pills within her palm. The pills were smooth and round, with a alluring luster, not to mention the pill marks were all clearly visible.

Watching this had long since caused Kai Yang to stare blankly ahead with no reaction!

The scene that had played out, apart from using peak level skills, there was no possible way to explain it.

It was only at that moment, did Kai Yang realise how his senior sister had obtained that bottle of pills. They were refined by her in such a manner!

But, wasn't that too easy and simple? Receiptair masters were originally rare, and along with the successful refinement of pills, there would always be many failures. Not to mention when receiptair masters refined pills, they required the usage of special tools, examples of which would be furnaces, fire, *etc.*

But senior sister Xia had only used her hands, and apart from the Three Sun's Fruit, she didn't use any other materials, yet she so easily crafted those three pills.

"For you!" Putting her hand in front of Kai Yang, she offered the pills to him.

Taking in a deep breath, Kai Yang calmed his flustered heart before taking the pills from her. Then he carefully inspected each pill and discovered that each and every one of them held Yang Qi that was far richer and denser than the original fruit. Afterall, when Xia Ning Chang was refining the pills, she had also added

Yang Qi from Coiling Dragon Stream.

“Senior sister, if you were to start refining pills, then the current sellers would have no customers left.” Kai Yang said as he forced out a bitter smile. Never had he seen someone simplify pill refinement to such a degree.

Chapter 84 - Holy Spirit Pill Body

I'm afraid even those renowned pill masters wouldn't even come close to possessing an ability like Xia Ning Chang's.

"What special body do you have senior sister?" Kai Yang asked.

"Meng Wu Ya replied: "Holy Spirit Pill Body!"

"Used for pill making?"

"Not bad." Meng Wu Ya nodded his head, "These physiques are extremely unique. For those people who possess a Holy Spirit Pill Body, they can make pills without any sort of side-effects or backlashes. You should know that all medicines contain one third poison, and although they can increase a practitioner's strength, the benefit they can provide is limited. But for pills made utilizing the Holy Spirit Pill Body, the body is able to refine the poison away. Up until now, your senior sister has only cultivated for five years, today she is at the separation and reunion boundary and if I hadn't deliberately suppressed her ability, then I'm certain that she would have reached the true element boundary already.

Kai Yang was astonished, in a period of five years, she had already cultivated to the separation and reunion boundary. Xie Hong Chen was also only that this stage, but how many years had it taken him? It should have been around ten years. Not to mention senior sister had done this under suppression, so if she wasn't suppressed, then wouldn't she be more powerful than Su Yan?

Kai Yang was embarrassed to death, for his aptitude paled in comparison to the person in front of him. I was simply something on the ground, gazing up at something in the sky.

This person was the number one genius in the entire Sky Tower!

But for Xia Ning Chang to have such rapid growth, you couldn't forget the large amount of assistance she had received from cultivation pills.

Meng Wu Ya continued to speak: "Not only are there advantages to the Holy Spirit Pill Body, if you cultivate it with a suitable skill, then, as long as they had energy,, one would be able to refine anything under the sky. Take the qi in the air for example, as long as my disciple is willing, she would also be able to refine it into pills."

As long as it had energy, anything under the sky was refinable into pills! Since the energy in the earth and heavens were refinable, then you didn't need to talk about the Three Sun's Fruit.

Kai Yang could see that in the future, this Senior Xia will be the best alchemist master in the entire world. Born with this type of body, nobody would be able to match her prowess.

"This time, in order for her to breakthrough into the next boundary, she needs to refine and form something within her body. As for this thing, she is unable to do it herself."

"So that's why you need my help?" Kai Yang asked.

Meng Wu Ya nodded his head.

“What type of thing?”

“Nine Yin Dew Crystals. These things are extremely helpful to those in the true element boundary. So if she were able to refine and form this thing, then it would help to prevent anything from hindering her cultivation.”

To go from the separation and reunion boundary into the true element boundary, one must change their World Qi into True Qi, which is far more pure and powerful. This was also a process that all practitioners needed to undertake, and if this process was accompanied by some precious treasure, then the transformed True Qi would more powerful than normal.

This Nine Yin Dew Crystals, were clearly such a precious treasure and were definitely one of the best treasures.

“The Nine Yin Dew Crystals are naturally a spirit essence, and obtaining them is extremely hard. And if it were used by people who were not suitable, then it would immediately melt and disappear. Only those who cultivated Yang Qi, would be able to control them. Not to mention that the purity of their Yang World Qi must reach a certain degree. That is also the reason why we need your help.”

“What the exact things do I need to do?” Kai Yang questioned.

Suddenly Meng Wu Ya became really impatient: “Why are you asking so much, you will know when the time comes.”

Kai Yang pinched the bridge of his nose, and wondered why old man Meng would be this angry.

“Where is this thing? When are we leaving to retrieve it?”

“It’s in Black Wind Mountain. Over there, some Nine Yins have gathered. And only on the 7th of July, will the Nine Yin Qi truly gather, and only then would you be able to retrieve its Yin Qi.”

“Then there isn’t much time left.” Kai Yang pondered as he calculated; there was only ten days until 7th of July. If you needed to enter Black Wind Mountains, then journeying in would also take some time.

“So if you don’t have anything to do, then I would like to hurry over now. Otherwise, we would have to wait another year for it.” Meng Wu Ya spoke solemnly.

“I can depart anytime.” Kai Yang smiled.

“Then come to the Contribution Hall to find me in two days, because I still need to prepare some things.” Meng Wu Ya warmly replied.

“Okay, then we’ll meet in two days time.”

With the date set, both parties met two days later in the Contribution Hall and departed.

Looking at his receding back, Meng Wu Ya let out a small sigh, his expression

oddly queer. You couldn't tell what he was thinking, and only after a good while did he speak: "My disciple, are you certain that you want to do this?"

Xia Ning Chang's clothes fluttered as she nodded her head: "En."

Meng Wu Ya continued: "If you truly aren't able to refine the Nine Yin Dew Crystals, you are still able to breakthrough, it's just that your future power would be slightly weaker."

Xia Ning Chang lightly laughed: "But, if I want to help master, then wouldn't it be better with purer True Qi? Master you saved me and raised me, disciple also wants to help you."

"But.....ai, why don't you think over it again?"

The reason for the two days of delay, was because Meng Wu Ya wanted Xia Ning Chang to think it over again.

Blushing, Xia Ning Chang replied: "It's nothing, I really don't hate him."

Meng Wu Ya sighed out knowingly: "We took advantage of the kid."

Thinking about Kai Yang's indifferent manner, Meng Wu Ya became so hateful that his tooth started to itch. You only know that you are here to help with a favour, but you don't know how much you will be taken advantage of.

By all means, sparks must not be created or fly! In the end, this little place isn't something where his disciple will settle, Meng Wu Ya worried anxiously, he

intestines tied in a knot.

Kai Yang didn't return to Su Yan's wooden house, but instead returned to his secluded wooden hut, which he hadn't visited in many days. Although it had been quite some while since he had last been here, it was still as clean and tidy as before. Not even a speck of dust could be seen. He wondered who it could have been, that had been tidying his hut.

Although Treasurer Meng had been very vague, Kai Yang still knew the brief details on where he was going and what he needed to do.

Since it was the place that the Nine Yin gathered, then the Yin Qi would be extremely dense. And his Yang Qi is the perfect bane of the Yin Qi, so there wasn't much to worry about. It was just that his current cultivation was far too low, so he needed to stockpile some Yang Liquid, so he wouldn't suffer too much in a drawn out battle.

It was just by chance that his Senior Xia had refined all of his Three Sun's Fruits into pills, which was a good replenishment for his Yang Liquid Drops.

Four Three Sun's Fruit Trees, each tree grew three fruits, totalling twelve bright red pills. And each pill allowed him to form three drops of Yang Liquid, so he had condensed a total of thirty-six Yang Drops.

These drops, whether or not they were used in battle or used to defend against the Yin Qi, they would be extremely helpful. These were the things he would rely on to survive.

By taking an entire day, Kai Yang finally managed to refine all twelve pills and

condense out the Yang Liquid Drops.

When he had condensed them, not only had he condensed thirty-six drops, but an extra 4 drops as well for a total of forty drops. If you added the drops he already possessed within his diantian, then he had quite a haul.

This time round, he finally had some advantage.

When he had condensed and refined all the Yang Liquid Drops and pills, Kai Yang found out he had broken through into the initial element fourth stage.

This breakthrough was truly too sudden, without any forewarning, but the breakthrough had been extremely fluid, like water; without him feeling anything in particular.

Thinking it over, Kai Yang came to the conclusion that it was probably due to the large amounts of cultivation pills he had eaten these past few days, followed by twelve Yang pills. The convergence of this large amount of energy, enabling him to breakthrough isn't something inconceivable.

Chapter 85 - Dark Tide

Early in the morning of the second day, standing before the contribution hall gate, Kai Yang knocked gently on the door.

After sometime, the front door opened, and Xia Ning Chang came out from within. From her shoulder hung an arm length package, containing many things.

“Junior brother you came.” Xia Ning Chang greeted him in a soft voice .

“En.” Kai Yang nodded, “Where is Treasurer Meng?”

“Yesterday he had a sudden resurgence of an old illness, he has left to heal, so he cannot come with us.” Xia Ning Chang explained, her pair of eyes blinking incessantly, the two rows of eyelashes trembled like miniature fans.

Kai Yang looked at her suspiciously, and Xia Ning Chang’s eyes flashed with a trace of panic.

“Do we need to wait for him?” Although Kai Yang had guessed what had happened already, he didn’t expose anything.

“No need, I know the location of that place and time is running out. Master said that we do not need to wait for him.” Seeing Kai Yang didn’t enquire further, Xia Ning Chang relaxed her heart.

“Okay then.” Kai Yang hesitated slightly before complying.

“This time I will trouble junior brother.” Xia Ning Chang said in one breath.

“Elder Sister is too polite.” Kai Yang exhibited a faint smile.

Swiftly, the two people left the Contribution Hall.

In the Contribution Hall’s inner chamber, Treasurer Meng was currently asleep. On the table lay plates of various exquisite dishes, as well as few pots of wine; it looked like treasurer Meng had fallen asleep after drinking some good wine.

The dishes on the table were made by Xia Ning Chang but each had a special seasoning. This seasoning was refined using her Holy Spirit Pill Body. This grade of medicine couldn’t even be resisted by someone at Meng Wu Ya’s level.

As for the duration of his sleep, it should last for a few days!

Meng Wu Ya throughout his entire life, had always been shrewd and would have never expected that someday he would fall at the hands of his own beloved disciple.

It was estimated that by the time Meng Wu Ya woke up, everything would already have occurred.

Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang arrived at the Black Plum Village, where they bought two horses and some daily necessities they would require for the long journey ahead.

While shopping Kai Yang also enquired about the location of their destination. According to Xia Ning Chang, their destination was about nine-ten days away from Black Plum Village. They would have to cross into Black Wind Mountain. Although the journey would be long, they had plenty of time.

Shortly after the two left the village, news of them was passed to Xie Hong Chen's ears.

Since the day he saw Su Yan and Kai Yang being intimate in the Forest Prison, Xie Hong Chen had drunk large quantities of wine for several days in frustration. He had finally returned to his normal life yesterday. After thinking it over clearly, he thought that it should not have been exactly as he saw it.

Su Yan's temperament was one which Xie Hong Chen was very clear of. With her arrogance and strength, how could she be intimate with trash like Kai Yang? Furthermore, they absolutely don't have any thing in common and probably hadn't met prior to the incident at the Forest Prison, so they were basically strangers.

After thinking it over Xie Hong Chen came to the conclusion that Su Yan and Kai Yang were acting that day. At the time, due to envy and hate making his blood boil and cloud his mind, he had been unable to think clearly.

But after thinking it over, Xie Hong Chen's spirit was greatly restored. Yesterday when saw Su Yan display the same beauty and elegance as always, he was no longer crazy and didn't lose his self-control like he had that day.

Although that had been explosive news from Su Yan, after this revelation, the knot in Xie Hong Chen's heart disappeared.

So long as Su Yan had not been obtained by other men, then sooner or later she would be his. Xie Hong Chen was very self-confident about it. After all he was Sky Tower's most outstanding male disciple and Su Yan was the most outstanding female disciple. The union of the two of them was naturally one all the elders were willing to see.

Early in the morning, Xie Hong Chen carefully prepared, as he wanted to go and see Su Yan later in Black Wind Trade.

But when he was just about to go out, a disciplinary disciple suddenly ran up to him in a hurry, with a flushed face, he said "Brother Xie, I just saw Kai Yang leave the Sky Tower a moment ago".

Xie Hong Chen listened to this and smartly asked, "Did he leave alone?"

"No, he departed with a Dark Hall disciple called Xie Ning Chang". The disciplinary disciple replied.

"Xia Ning Chang!" Xie Hong Chen narrowed his eyes, "I know her. Her strength is equal to mine, but she is not a core disciple, this woman is quite strange."

"Where did they go?" Xie Hong Chen, at that moment, had a crazy look in his eyes. God have mercy, that waste actually left the tower at such time, it was as if he was asking to be killed off. This was just the solution to solve the hate in my heart!

"I don't know their destination but evidently it must be far, because they purchased two horses in Black Plum Village."

“That far?” Xie Hong Chen raised his brows. “Ok, good, good.....”

Xie Hong Chen suddenly turned, and with a twisted face, said: “Look for several disciples whose strength is at least at the separation and reunion boundary to accompany me on a trip.”

“Brother what do you want to do?”

“He he, what I want to do, I am not clear enough? Do you want to ask again.” Xie Hong Chen’s facial features distorted. He wanted to chase down the rival, to get rid of Kai Yang, all the while keeping Xia Ning Chang in the dark. After all, if news of this was leaked, the consequences would not be a joke.

“Brother, this is improper.” That disciplinary disciple’s face turned pale, because Kai Yang was only a initial element stage trial disciple, so even if he did die outside the school, nobody would care. But that Dark Hall disciple, Xia Ning Chang, was different. Her background was unclear, but since she had reached the separation and reunion boundary in strength, she definitely was not an insignificant person. If she died and Sky Tower started to investigate, then the brothers who participated would be chased and have no other choice but to leave Sky Tower.

“I told you to go find some people, so what are you still standing here for?” Xie Hong Chen said impatiently, “Do you want me to go and personally find them?”

Because of jealousy Xie Hong Chen had become possessed, he couldn’t maintain his original calm state of mind. He only held ideas about killing Kai Yang now.

“Brother, after the previous matter, the Grand Elder strictly ordered that, nobody is allowed to fight Kai Yang. Did you forget Elder’s warning?”

Hearing this reminder caused Xie Hong Chen to regain control of himself. That’s right, last time, the Grand Elder had suddenly announced that nobody was allowed to make trouble for Kai Yang for a short period of time. This instruction had made everybody bewildered. However Xie Hong Chen didn’t care about it; how could he let such an excellent opportunity pass in vain?

It was such a good opportunity, did he really have to watch it pass by? If he didn’t kill Kai Yang this time, then he must wait till god knows when. What would he do later if he chose to stay within Sky Tower and refused to leave?

He was not willing to let go of this chance, the disciplinary disciple thought of something something and said with a sly smile: “Brother Xie, we cannot get involved, but others may like to get involved. I think that plenty of people would be willing to take this opportunity if they knew of it.”

“What do you mean?” Xie Hong Chen narrowed his eyes and asked.

“It is said that the Blood Group’s Vice-head Long Zai Tian, has been enquiring about news regarding Kai Yang this past month.”

Long Zai Tian, Xie Hong Chen naturally knew knew him as he was a popular person in the Blood Group and his strength was also at the immortal ascension boundary. But his grandson wasn’t quite as outstanding; this year he was probably only at the qi refining boundary.

Xie Hong Chen was confused: “Why would Long Zai Tian be enquiring about Kai

Yang?”

That person couldn't help but sigh exasperatedly: “Long Zai Tian has been pursuing Hu Mei Er, that seductive girl, for his grandson and has been regarding her as his own already. But relationship between Kai Yang and Hu Mei Er is unclear, so Long Zai Tian said that Kai Yang must die. Teaching him the consequences of having any ideas about touching someone else's woman.”

“Hu Mei Er!” In Xie Hong Chen's mind, a large breasted female appeared, with a curling upward buttock, and a charming young girl's figure. His breath suddenly became very heavy.

That seductive girl excels in stimulating people and almost every disciple from the three schools had heard about her. Xie Hong Chen had also seen her once.

“That waste truly isn't somebody good. He unexpectedly has a relationship with that seductive girl!” Although righteous words were coming from Xie Hong Chen mouth, in his heart he was actually cursing angrily.

After thinking for some time, he doubtfully stated: “Something's not right. Such detailed news, where did you obtain it from?”

Even if Long Zai Tian wanted to take Kai Yang's life, he wouldn't announce it far and wide; if it was widely known, would it not alert his enemy? If Kai Yang knew about this, would he still have the courage to leave Sky Tower?

The disciplinary disciple's complexion changed slightly as he knew the details but didn't know how to answer the question.

“Tell me!” Xie Hong Chen commanded him sternly.

“Yes!” The disciplinary disciple desperately spluttered out: “A few days ago when I was in the Spring Wind Rain House in Black Plum Village. . . . drinking, Long Zai Tian happened to be in the next room. So I listened in to his discussion with the female in next room.”

“Spring Wind Rain House!” Xie Hong Chen looked at that fellow ill-humoredly with one eye. He couldn’t have been there just for drinking.

That person hurriedly continued: “Brother Xie, if Long Zai Tian was to know about this news, he will not let Kai Yang off easily and we won’t need to get our hands dirty. Long Zai Tian is lusty by nature, if we tell him this, he will know that Kai Yang has a beautiful woman by his side, how do you think he will react?”

Xie Hong Chen’s face lit up and he coldly smiled before praising the disciple, “Ingenious plan!”

This move of murdering with a borrowed knife, was a good plan. Hesitating slightly, he then said: “Since Long Zai Tian wants to look for him, pass the news to him, but this matter should be kept secret. Do not reveal anything that exposes you. For Long Zai Tian absolutely mustn’t know that this news was passed by us. Also tell him that the female with Kai Yang has cultivation at the separation and reunion boundary, so he doesn’t try to capture the chicken but lose the rice he lured it with.

“Yes!” that person said before quickly going away.

Kai Yang, this time let’s see how you escape death. It’s just a pity..... Xia

Ning Chang wears a veil all day, and although he has never seen her appearance, Xie Hong Chen was almost certain that she was an outstandingly beautiful female.

If such a female fell into Long Zai Tian hands, her fate was more than certain. At that moment, Xie Hong Chen somewhat envied the luck of Long Zai Tian.

The Sky Tower Pavilion, the Disciplinary Hall began they all began to make trouble; someone in Black Plum Village was also making trouble.

After Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang departed on horseback, a group of people came out from hiding. The leader's face was cold, and after staring at Kai Yang's back, he asked: "Did you see clearly, was that person Kai Yang?"

"Absolutely. I saw clearly brother Nu Lang, he was Kai Yang without a doubt. Previously we were beaten up by him, after this Cheng Shao Feng went to look for Brother Nu Tao. He said he would find an opportunity to teach him lesson. So they went to Black Wind Trade one day and never came back."

Nu Lang's complexion became hazy, he waved his hand saying: "Buy some horses, we must follow them. I must know the whereabouts of my younger brother, and whether he is alive or dead."

Nu Tao and Cheng Shao Feng had been missing for more than one month now. Nu Lang had looked everywhere for them but had been unable to find them, and during his inquiries the name Kai Yang arose multiple times.

He didn't know the real situation, but he must pursue Kai Yang to ask about it. If his younger brother died by his hand, as an elder brother he must take revenge

for the younger brother.

Chapter 86 - Following at the heels

Nu Lang's group of people, with him as the leader, prepared to set out. Since he had recently broken through into the qi transforming stage, his World Qi had yet to stabilize. For martial practitioners at this level, they were the most easily agitated by this type of flurry of emotions tumbling through them, Nu Lang was no exception. The remaining seven to eight people were only at the tempered body stage, with a few at the initial element stage, but overall they weren't too high leveled in their cultivation. It was just their numbers that were great.

As for Kai Yang's cultivation, Nu Lang naturally knew of course, so he didn't really put it in his eyes. It was only the female next to Kai Yang that didn't seem to be easily provoked.

But after thinking over it carefully, this female didn't seem too strong. Looking at her, her age didn't seem to be very old and she didn't seem to be any of the famous Sky Tower disciples he had heard of or knew about.

Also, if her strength was truly high, why would she need to buy horses to travel? Once you reached a certain cultivation stage, just by relying on your feet, you would be many times faster than a horse.

(TL: Monsters -_-)

Analysing it so, Nu Lang's worries dissipated.

Unbeknownst to him, the reason why Xia Ning Chang purchased the horses, was due to her concern for Kai Yang. Afterall, Kai Yang was only at the initial

element fourth stage, so how fast could his feet possibly be?

This group of disciples from Storm House started to follow their hoof prints, whilst hiding in the bushes and shadows.

As Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang were urging their horses, they didn't know that two groups had followed and trapped them in a pincer formation. Not only that, both groups harboured malicious intent.

Even though Xia Ning Chang's cultivation wasn't bad, she still had yet to reach the stage where she could use her divine sense. This caused her to be unable to sense all the things that were occurring the surrounding area.

Since the two were rushing on their journey, they didn't really say anything to each other. With Xia Ning Chang leading the way at the front and Kai Yang following closely behind, the two rode their horses in a straight line.

It wasn't until nightfall, that the two people found a water source to settle down at for the night.

Sitting near the bonfire in a circle, they ate the food they had bought from Black Plum Village.

From just one day together, Kai Yang had become quite familiar with this senior sister's nature. She is timid, shy and she when talked her ears turn red. She also always speaks softly, as soft as the wind, as if it was natural for her.

Because of her nature, Kai Yang didn't take the initiative to talk to her, so as to avoid frightening the opposite party.

Ever since he understood the character of the mysterious golden skeleton and gained an understanding of the mystical martial skill, he discovered that his True Yang Tactics had changed.

At present, Kai Yang's True Yang Tactics could absorb Yang Qi and then condense it into Yang Liquid.

But now, not having a Yang environment, he can practice the true Yang Tactics to absorb the energy in the air, which can then be refined to form Yang Qi which then could be absorbed into the golden skeleton.

Environmental constraints for practicing this skill had suddenly disappeared. For Kai Yang this was great news which brought him a great deal of happiness.

After riding for three days on the road, they finally arrived at a small town thousands of miles from Sky Tower.

With Xia Ning Chang words, they no longer needed horses for the rest of the journey, only the mountains were ahead.

In town they stabled their horses and found an inn to stay at for the time being.

According to Xia Ning Chang they couldn't use horses for journey ahead, because of the hilly nature of the terrain.

Xia Ning Chang was very irritated, after all she had asked him for help & had

been neglecting him unexpectedly, and it really cannot be justified. Kai Yang & Xia Ning Chang lived in adjoining rooms, in a brightly lit room, Kai Yang was meditating and practicing. Meanwhile Xie Ning Chang was indulge in a flight of fancy.

But each time she tried to talk to him, at the last moment she can't help but get discouraged. She has been used to observing him secretly, but now suddenly has contact with him face to face & does not know what to do.

Moreover, this fellow is also an uncommunicative person, if she talked to him can that make him dislike her?

While Xia Ning Chang is worrying about this, in the inn there are another two groups quietly watching these two peoples movements.

In another candle lit room, Long Hui sits with the members of the Blood Group.

On Long Hui's face is a frown. After the Blood Group obtained the news, they started the pursuit, although a little late they were finally able to catch up.

Breaking the silence, Long Hui said suddenly, "Lord Wen, when do we begin? Kai Yang, that boy is in this inn. Given Lord Wen's skill, it is a simple matter to seize him, is it not?"

Wen Fei Chen is a middle aged man, his strength has reached the true element boundary fifth layer. He is a leader of a fraction of the Blood Group. Because the news obtained by Long Hui is accurate, he asked the lord to accompany them for the purpose of capturing Xia Ning Chang alive.

Beside this group of people of Wen Fei Chen, outside there is also many separation and reunion boundary's masters, they number around six or seven. It looks like, Long Hui took steps to ensure that the plan is foolproof, it can even be described as a fanfare.

Wen Fei Chen smiled, "Young master Long, if you want me to begin, we can begin at any time, although this is a small town, with my strength, wanting to deal with them is an easy matter, people on the side will not be alarmed and no clues will be left behind."

"Then what are we waiting for?" Long Hui looks inspired, "Kai Yang must die and that female must be captured alive, it is said she is very beautiful. Since he dares to have ideas on my women, then this road goes other way too, I will have a taste of his women."

Wen Fei Chen knows Long Hui's nature and has anticipated this response, he then said, "But master Long one must think, why have they rushed to this place from afar?"

"Why?" Long Hui asked.

Wen Fei Chen hesitated for a moment, then said, "I believe that their trip has a goal for sure. Perhaps..... they must enter Black Wind Mountain, seeking some treasure!"

Long Hui's brows wrinkled, "This does not have anything to do with us. In Black Wind Mountain many people go looking for treasure, but are lost to never come back again."

Wei Fei Chen shakes his head saying, “Master Long this is incorrect, they can enter Black Wind Mountain from Sky Tower, but they have actually ridden horses for thousands of miles before finally stopping here. If I have not guessed wrongly, tomorrow they will enter the mountain from here. Their goals are quite explicit, and then it is simple to confirm this matter. They know what they are looking for and where to find it. If we follow in behind quietly, when they have found it.....”

He has to say the observation of Wei Fei Chen is very exquisite, the analysis is also quite accurate, worthy is a man of wisdom.

Long Hui’s expression at present is bright, “When they find it we can go and rob!”

Wei Fei Chen smiles, “It is as master Long said. However if master Long cannot wait for the beautiful woman, I can get her tonight, I will not let you down.”

Long Hui hesitated slightly and looked a bit confused.

Wen Fei Chen is good at tunneling into his thoughts, “But if master Long waits for several days, not only may he have the beautiful woman, treasure young master may also have. Think if they spend untold hardship to seek the treasure and it was snatched by us. That Kai Yang, will he not be spitting blood madly?”

Listening to him Long Hui looks stearn, “Good, if they run, in any case the Buddhist priest cannot escape the temple, then let Kai Yang live for several more days, while we obtain the advantage without labor like elderly fishermen!”

Then Wei Fei Chen said with a light smile, “Endurance is uncommon; Master long is destined to do great things.”

“Ha, the Lord Wen over praises.” Long Hui was swallowing his flattery comfortably.

Chapter 87 - Nu Lang's Grief

Given Wen Fei Chen was attempting to curry favour with Long Hui, he naturally wouldn't oppose his idea.

Although Blood Group's Master Hu Man was very fierce and ambitious, it didn't matter since he didn't have a successor; only two daughters beautiful as jade.

As far as Wen Fei Chen was concerned, sooner or later the Blood Group would fall into the hands of the Long family. Now that he is with young master Long, he must try to curry favor with him, for future benefits.

The discussions in the room had finally ended so everyone got ready to get some rest. Suddenly from opposite side of the door came a gentle knock.

"Come in!" Wen Fei Chen said lightly.

The door opened and a Blood Group disciple walked in from outside. Giving a salute to Long Hui he then whispered something into Wei Fei Chen's ear softly.

Wei Fei Chan's face changed immediately, "So that's how it is."

He then signaled several disciples in the room and ordered them: "Go and seize those people. Do not let them escape, as it would be bad for master Long's plan."

"Yes!" several people in room complied and hastily moved out.

“What happened?” Long Hui urgently asked.

Wei Fei Chen ha-ha smiles, “Master Long this matter is very interesting. Remember when we were travelling here, along the way there were many horse hoof prints on the road. According to news which I just received we are not the only ones pursuing Kai Yang’s kill him. It looks like we have company.

“Oh?” Long Hui sounded surprised “Who is it?”

“Several small disciples from Storm House. At this very moment they are preparing to attack Kai Yang, it looks like they can’t deal with Kai Yang when he is together with that female.”

“They will be bringing their own destruction.” Long Hui sneered and continued, “What does Lord Wen want to do with them?”

“Naturally I cannot let master Long’s important plan be ruined.” Wen Fei Chen said while bowing slightly.

The sound of people talking on the opposite side of door can be heard before many people burst into the room through the door. These are the disciples from the Blood Group who went out a moment ago and it looks like they all came back uninjured accompanied by startled face Nu Lang.

Nu Lang’s group was very frightened, they had managed to pursue Kai Yang with great difficulty and just when they were planning to bust into the room and capture Kai Yang to enquire about the missing Nu Tao and Cheng Shao Feng they were captured.

Who would have thought that before they could execute their plan, they would be surrounded by a group of devils, whose strength surpassed even their leader.

Nu Lang was scared shitless after being released, he hastily kowtowed to beg for mercy, “Seniors, we didn’t offend you, right? This one pleads for you to spare us.”

“Shut up!” A Blood Group disciple waved his arm and hit him hard with his palm, Nu Lang’s mouth became bloody due to the hit, he felt very indignant but didn’t dare to say anything and could only shut up and listen obediently.

Nu Lang nervously looked around; the other Storm House disciples were all shivering with fright. Their strength was not very high so they couldn’t even try to escape. Any one of these people was enough to kill them, on top of that there were six-seven people who were encircling them on all sides.

Had they bothered anyone recently? The Storm House disciples were also confused, this time they did not annoy anyone on the way, they just came here to catch Kai Yang, but had not even gotten their hands on him before they were captured, how did it become such a big fuss?

Nu Lang looked around and suddenly discovered a youth in the opposing group who looked a little familiar, he stared at them with a smile.

Thinking carefully, Nu Lang’s facial color changed, probing he asked: “Are you Blood Group’s Long Hui?”

Long Hui chuckled: “Do you know me?”

Nu Lang smiled awkwardly: “Naturally I can recognize you, for I have heard so about Long senior’s descendants.”

“Since you are able to recognize me, this matter has become very easy to solve.” Long Hui said lightly.

Nu Lang became filled with suspicion, no matter what, he wouldn’t have thought he would meet with people from Blood Group; such a great distance away from home. Meeting old friends far from home, although it is good indeed, but in their present situation.....weak people need to lower their heads.

“I want to ask you, why are you pursuing Kai Yang?” Long Hui asked with squinted eyes.

This question caused Nu Lang’s heart to be startled, he looked at Long Hui and did not dare to conceal anything, after telling him the whole story, he says with a long face: “Master Long, I suspect that the matter of my missing younger brother and Kai Yang are related, if you have a problem, I will immediately bring my people back to Storm House and absolutely will never have any ideas about hurting Kai Yang.”

Long Hui smiled: “Do you think that Kai Yang and I are friends?”

“Is not it so?” Nu Lang asked timidly.

“What a joke!” Long Hui sneered: “What is this lord’s status, and what is his status, how can we be friends? You have got a pair of blind dog eyes!”

Nu Lang did not dare to say anything but in his heart he was criticizing, since you are not friends, then why are you disrupting our gratitude and grudges? Isn't it nosy to mind other's business.

"It looks like you really do have a pair of blind dog eyes. This time, young master Long has saved your life and unexpectedly you do not know how to thank him." A Blood Group disciple said reprovingly.

Nu Lang looked confused.

The Blood Group disciple sneered: "You only know Kai Yang's strength to be low, but do you know that the female on his side is a master of the separation and reunion boundary level?"

With these few words, Nu Lang and his group started sweating profoundly, separation and reunion boundary, compared to Nu Lang who is only in the qi transforming stage they have surpassed him by two big boundaries.

If they were to have attempted to extract revenge for Nu Tao they would have been annihilated.

At this moment Nu Lang knew that he had made a big blunder. Suddenly he was fearful then he rejoiced, he quickly kowtowed over and over again: "Many thanks to young master Long for saving us. My brothers and I are very grateful!"

The group of Storm House disciples hurried to express their gratitude.

“Well it looks like you do know how to show gratitude after all.” Long Hui looked to be enjoying himself: “I’m not afraid of telling you the reason for me coming this far. For I am here to take Kai Yang’s life. But it looks like we will need to wait a few more days, because of your actions my plan was nearly ruined.”

“The others and I did not know, but we ask young master Long for his forgiveness.” Nu Lang looked awed.

“Ok I will not haggle with you over this matter. It looks like everybody’s goal is Kai Yang, and with me you can get to Kai Yang. When we have seized Kai Yang, you may enquire about your younger brother’s whereabouts.”

Although, Nu Lang’s heart was very uneasy about this, but with the strength of opposite side, how could he dare disobey? At this moment he could only nod and say: “Master Long I will wait for your instruction come hell or high water, and even risk my life without hesitation!”

“Go to your room for now, tomorrow we will find you.” Long Hui said dismissing him with a wave of his hand.

“Yes!” Nu Lang crawled up from the ground slowly before retreating to wait in his room, only once he was in his room did he realize that his clothes were soaked in sweat.

After they had left, Long Hui looked doubtfully at Wen Fei Chen: “Lord Wen, why do we need to let them go with us? Their strength is too low and they will easily expose us, our people can easily deal with Kai Yang, we only need to capture that female.”

Previously, what was said was Wen Fei Chen speaking through Long Hui. Although things were going according to plan, Long Hui didn't analyse it too deeply.

Chapter 88 - The Scent of a woman

Hearing the disdain in Long Hui's voice, Wen Fei Chen smiled: "Killing Kai Yang and capturing that female, naturally we wouldn't want those people to interfere. But young master Long, since Kai Yang and that girl have decided to enter Black Wind Mountain, then they should have already made preparations for the dangers ahead. But we are different; even our strengths aren't low, even if we don't mention those high levelled demonic beasts, there are still various dangers. Just those natural traps and poisons alone, are enough to whittle away at our manpower, but if someone were to walk ahead of us and clear the way, then we wouldn't need to worry about a thing."

After hearing this, Long Hui understood where Wen Fei Chen was going; he wanted to use the Storm House people to scout ahead and avoid any hidden dangers ahead.

"En, Hallmaster Wen truly thinks ahead. I have indeed neglected this point." Long Hui nodded his head faintly.

"Young Master is naturally gifted, it's just that you haven't experienced much of the world yet, so you are still honest and naturally you wouldn't think of this tactic." Wen Fei Chen chuckled.

As to how they would deal with the Storm House Disciples later, the two came a mutual understanding without saying another word. The female called Xia Ning Chang, at such a young age had already reached the separation and reunion boundary, so she definitely had a powerful supporter teaching her from the shadows. With these types of people, you could either avoid offending them or pluck them out from the roots. So none of the Storm House disciples could be left breathing.

Only after arranging the appropriate things, did the Blood Group begin their preparations to enter Black Wind Mountain.

The next day, Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang truly moved according to Wen Fei Chen's prediction and left the small village, directly entering Black Wind Mountain.

Only after half a day had passed did the Blood Group and Storm House people dare to follow after them. Since Xia Ning Chang's cultivation wasn't low, if they followed too closely behind them, then she would discover them and if the distance was too great, then they would lose track of them. So half a day's worth of waiting was more than enough, furthermore, Wen Fei Chen had many years of experience in the Jiang Hu, so he was adept at tracking. He was confident that he wouldn't be unable to follow the tracks of these two youngsters in the mountains.

Entering Black Wind Mountain, Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang's speed naturally slowed down.

Without the sound of the horses and the distance between them, the two naturally started to converse with each other. In just one day's worth of time, the two felt their relationship had become closer than ever before.

When night fell, Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang found a tall tree and climbed up its trunk to rest in it for the night.

Although the branch was very wide, when the two of them rested upon the branch, there was only a small gap between them, close enough for Kai Yang to smell whiffs of Xia Ning Chang's scent.

“Little senior sister.” After interacting for a while, there was no longer that feeling of estrangement between them, even the way they addressed each other had changed. This was also due to the fact that Kai Yang felt that Xia Ning Chang was like a child, especially those big round eyes of hers, naive and without any trace of impurity. Even the way she talked was full of simplicity and cuteness.

“Senior sister is just senior sister, why do you need to add an extra little?” Xia Ning Chang asked a bit unhappily.

“In that bundle of yours, what did you put inside?” Kai Yang didn’t reply to her answer and instead pointed to the bundle placed next to her.

That question had already tormented him for the past four-five days, and Kai Yang couldn’t hold it in anymore so he asked her.

“This eh!” Just like that, Xia Ning Chang was easily diverted from the previous subject. Lifting up the package, she hugged it like it was a treasure and replied: “These are the materials prepared by master these past years, because if you successfully receive those Nine Yin Dew Crystals, then I must refine them on the spot. The Nine Yin Dew Crystals are a very special, because if you don’t refine them within two hours of obtaining them, they would slowly started to dissipate.”

“So it was like this.” Kai Yang nodded his head in understanding.

“Junior brother, ah.” Xia Ning Chang suddenly called out intimately.

“What’s the matter?”

“I have a question I want to ask you.”

“Good timing, I also have a question I want to ask you.” Kai Yang grinned.

“Then we must both honestly answer, alright?”

“Okay!”

“Then I’ll start.” Xia Ning Chang said, impatiently.

“Go and ahead and ask.” He chuckled: “I promise I won’t lie to you.”

Pursing her lips, Xia Ning Chang swivelled her body around and hesitated for a moment before asking: “I heard from master, that when he asked you to help him, you made all sorts of excuses to reject him. But when you heard it was me that needed assistance, you swiftly agreed. Why is that?”

“What do you think?” Kai Yang also turned his head around and asked.

Staring at each other’s eyes, Xia Ning Chang’s face became red, and she hurriedly diverted her head and shyly said: “I don’t know why, but master said that you don’t carry good intentions and told me to stay vigilant around you.”

“Old man Meng said this?” Kai Yang said angrily.

“En.” Xia Ning Chang trusted her master greatly and replied without any guilt.

“This old man!” This caused Kai Yang to be indignant beyond belief, what did that old man think I was?

“Then why did you agree without any hesitation?”

Glancing at her, Kai Yang hehe laughed out: “What your master said was correct, I truly don’t hold any good intentions towards you. That’s why I agreed so readily!”

As he laughed sardonically, he also slowly inched closer towards Xia Ning Chang.

Startled, Xia Ning Chang instinctively retreated backwards, before she suddenly remembered something: “Junior brother, you are unable to defeat me.”

This was actually the truth and Kia Yang considered that if he continued to act brazenly, then he would soon find himself flying out of the tree. Although Xia Ning Chang was innocent and cute, that didn’t mean that she was easily dealt with.

Withdrawing his grin, Kai Yang’s expression became serious again and he slowly took out a bottle from within his clothes. Stroking it carefully he said: “Because of this!”

(TL: I love how these people can put literally anything in their clothes. I want clothes like that, no more bags! ED: Ye, instead you would have to wear extremely baggy clothes with many pockets. Your call.)

Xia Ning Chang was extremely confused as she lowered head to look closer at the object and she saw that it was a small bottle of Sky Tower's external injury balm, Blood Clotting Cream.

The events that had occurred two months earlier flashed through her mind, causing her to cover her mouth in surprise. Foolishly, she stared at Kai Yang, because she never thought that he would keep this little bottle of Blood Clotting Cream.

Chuckling lightly, Kai Yang spoke: "Those who treat me well, I, Kai Yang can still tell. It has been three years since I entered, and this bottle of Blood Clotting Cream was the first token of warmth I have experienced this whole time."

"How did you know....." Xia Ning Chang looked at him in disbelief. This bottle of cream was left for Kai Yang by her, but wasn't he unconscious at the time?

Kai Yang's eyebrows lifted up a bit: "There is a saying, smelling the scent of a woman tells all."

This caused her face to be painted red, for the words were slightly lecherous sounding.

But her heart and mind loosened, it seemed that just from a small bottle of Blood Clotting Cream that cost only ten contribution points, was the reason why he had agreed unconditionally. It seemed that master was wrong.

"It's your turn to ask now." Since she had cleared the doubts in her heart, Xia Ning Chang would feel embarrassed if she continued to ask further thus she

hurriedly went to change the subject.

Kai Yang then carefully put the bottle back in his clothes and then asked: “The reason why Treasurer Meng didn’t come wasn’t really because of an old illness right?”

Xia Ning Chang momentarily became embarrassed and replied after some time: “I used medicine to knock him unconscious.”

Stunned, Kai Yang suddenly erupted into a fit of laughter, and no matter what, he couldn’t stop.

“What are you laughing about.” She was both angry and ashamed, “That night he suddenly said I no longer needed to come, and in desperation I knocked him unconscious.”

Kai Yang continued to laughed, so Xia Ning Chang hit him a few times. It was only afterwards, she realised how intimate her actions were, and was left at a loss on what to do.

“I’m going to rest now. You continue to laugh to yourself.” Xia Ning Chang couldn’t bare to continue to stay there. Wrapping herself up, she jumped to the nearby branch and no longer paid any attention to Kai Yang.

Chapter 89 - Mysterious Crimson Yang Flower

After walking through the Black Wind forest for several days, Kai Yang realised, to his surprise that, they hadn't encountered any dangerous beasts.

This caused him to be filled with anxiety, because Black Wind Mountain was filled with formidable demonic beasts. Furthermore, if they happened to bump into any, due to his current cultivation, he would only be a burden for Xia Ning Chang.

But Xia Ning Chang had come prepared. Kai Yang didn't know what method she used to avoid the demonic beasts in this forest, but it worked.

Their route often changed from east to west, sometimes they would circle around a place, or they would circle around a bigger place. But it was thanks to this circling that they had remained so safe. Occasionally they would bump into a beast of the second or third realm, however they would be quickly dealt with by Ning Chang with minimal effort.

After carefully observing her for some time, Kai Yang discovered that Xia Ning Chang was able to discover existence of formidable demonic beasts thanks to the deep colored bracelet on her wrist.

Whenever this little senior sister felt a high level demonic beast obstructing their path, she activated her bracelet which then sent out a deep green ray.

This was a bracelet she hadn't been wearing previously. From top to bottom her only accessory was the sapphire on her forehead. So this bracelet should

have been prepared specially for their current expedition.

This was surely a rare treasure! Kai Yang's eye fell on the bracelet and from what he could see it looked like it was given to her by Treasurer Meng.

Ultimately what was the background of old man Meng? Kai Yang was truly puzzled, he was merely a Contribution Hall treasurer, yet he was able to get Xia Ning Chang, with her special physique, as a disciple. Moreover, he has a rare treasure he can afford to give to her. This bracelet, if in a normal place, would be placed under the highest security and would not be carelessly given to anyone. Although he didn't know its grade, he estimated that it should at least be an earth grade rare treasure. A treasure of this rank was rarely seen in Sky Tower.

While Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang were able to pass through easily, the people tagging behind suffered many bloody battles to the death.

During the past several days, small and large battles occurred several times. If it was not for the overall level of the Blood Group being so high, they probably would have become demonic beast food by now.

Although Wen Fei Chen was a true element boundary fifth boundary powerhouse, his luck wasn't very good. Just that moment their group bumped into a peak fifth realm demonic beast, equivalent to a peak true element boundary powerhouse; several levels above his present strength.

An incomparably difficult fight ensued. Through taking advantage of their numbers, they were able to deal with it. However due to this battle, the Blood Group lost a master of the separation and reunion boundary. This caused Wen Fei Chen to become extremely angry because a total of eight people had come, but he was the only true element boundary master. The separation and reunion

boundary group only had four people remaining, and rest were only at the qi transforming stage mid level. Long Hui's strength was the weakest of all, at the lower levels of the Qi transforming stage.

Originally they thought that as long as they followed Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang's trail, they wouldn't encounter any big dangers. But god only knows how those two were able to avoid these demonic beasts, while they, their followers, encountered battle after battle.

And now, they had lost a separation and reunion boundary master. Why wouldn't Wen Fei Chen get angry?

But it wasn't the time to back down; not after losing so many people, how could they give up halfway? After taking a short break, Wen Fei Chen said to Nu Lang: "Go in front, we must get going!"

Nu Lang looked on the ground at an abandoned limb absent mindedly. Earlier, the Blood Group had lost some people, so how could their lowly Storm House disciples stay safe?

Two disciples from Storm House were swallowed into the belly of a fifth realm demonic beast, leaving only half an arm left on ground.

He finally understood why he had felt something was not right that night, where were the good intentions of the Blood Group to help them look for Kai Yang? It just was to make the people from Storm House the pathfinders along the way!

But even if he understood in his heart, he wouldn't dare to complain, not to

mention revolt. Forging the way at the front, perhaps they could also have a chance to live. But if they revolted at this time, then there is only death awaiting them.

With a pale complexion Nu Lang made a disciple from Storm House walk in front. Behind him, Wen Fei Chen gave instructions; heading from the east towards the west, from time to time they also lost Kai Yang's trail.

At this moment, Kai Yang, who was hurrying along with Xia Ning Chang, suddenly stopped in his step. Turning his head to look towards a direction, his eyes glittered with a joyful look.

"What is the matter?" Xia Ning Chang turned her head to ask, while stopping.

"Is there any danger over there?" Kai Yang asked pointing to one side.

"Doesn't have any danger, I haven't felt any trace of a demonic beast. Xia Ning Chang lowered her head to look at own bracelet.

"Then let's go." Kai Yang moved rashly. Although Xia Ning Chang doesn't know why he was so happy, so can only follow.

Although Xia Ning Chang was at a loss as to why Kai Yang was so happy, she still followed him.

Walking for a short distance of only a few tens of feet, Xia Ning Chang suddenly felt steam on her skin. This caused her face to become red. Looking around the ground was yang type Qi and the ground was unexpectedly covered with a variety of palm sized, big, red flowers.

The quantity of flowers was not small, there were at least a dozen of them.

Kai Yang was unceremoniously quickly picking up these flowers, in total he picked eleven of these flowers.

After a short time, Kai Yang had reaped a great harvest and was walking happily, he asked, "What do you think these are?"

"Mysterious Crimson Yang Flower, Earth grade low level material. So you came here for these things." Xia Ning Chang was suddenly enlightened.

"Earth grade lower level material!" Kai Yang's brows creased together, "Not bad."

He could feel the Yang energy contained in each Mysterious Crimson Yang Flower was not inferior to the Three Sun Fruit. A moment ago the Yang Energy contained in his chest had reacted; he arrived at this place to look at what had caused it and in turn reaped a bountiful harvest.

Since they were in the Black Wind Mountain's inner region, the valuables around should be few in number. But this time the goal was to help Xia Ning Chang, even if he had thoughts of searching all directions he couldn't do it.

Delaying time like this would be taking a major risk.

But since it was in vicinity of his senses, naturally it can't be left alone.

“Want me to help you refine them?” Xia Ning Chang asked.

“You don’t have to right now. Let’s wait until evening, at that time we can refine them.”

The refining method for a pill of immortality from little senior sister is superb, but refining will always consume world Qi. Walking in this dense forest Kai Yang is still thinking to be careful every step of the way, if consumption of world Qi can be avoided then it should be avoided.

“Also good.” Xia Ning Chang nodded, “We are not far from that place, after walking for two-three more days we can reach our destination, we have got enough time.”

Kai Yang did not know whether it was luck or something else, walking for one day he was able to find several yang energy treasures at a distance of only one days walk from the Mysterious Crimson Yang Flowers.

But this time his luck was not so good, these Yang energy herbal medicines, had a level three demonic beast protecting them.

Xia Ning Chang was able to deal with that demonic beast by exhausting some of her World Qi, so that Kai Yang could harvest them. After passing through the forest, they arrived at a giant mountain valley. Xia Ning Chang said in one long breath: “Junior brother, we have arrived.”

Chapter 90 - Destination

The mountain in front of them was very big, while the valley around it was at least a several tens of li. Furthermore, the valley was perfectly circular.

From where Kai Yang was standing, when he lowered his head to look down he discovered that the depth of valley from their current position was about three hundred feet. The valley below was green and lush, there was nothing to distinguish it from the outside jungle, the scenery in the valley was very beautiful.

Verdant hills and limpid waters, the landscape wasn't bad.

Xia Ning Chang looked down at her bracelet carefully. After some time, she jumped joyfully: "Our luck is very good. There aren't any formidable demonic beasts down there."

While she spoke, she couldn't help but start to relax, because on the way here she was able to avoid high levelled demonic beasts blocking their path. But if there were dangerous demonic beasts in the valley, they could only fight them. After all, their destination was precisely this place.

"It looks very ordinary." Kai Yang said frowning.

"Don't worry. It's just not time yet." Xia Ning Chang showed a faint smile: "If not for passing through this place accidentally with master, then perhaps we wouldn't be able to discover this mysterious place. It was also at that time, that master conceived the idea of refining the Nine Yin Dew Crystals."

“But why did he go back at such a critical time? Also, you haven’t told me how I am going to help you obtain them.”

For the past few days they had been rushing the journey, and Kai Yang was not eager to know the reason why. Now that they had arrived at the destination, he could not help but ask, what if when the time comes, when the Nine Yin Dew Crystals actually appear, he didn’t know how to capture them, wouldn’t he be ruining important plans.

Therefore some preparation needed to be made before hand.

“When the time comes I will tell you.” Xia Ning Chang still didn’t explain.

Kai Yang was still doubtful but did not continue to ask. After all this matter was quite mysterious. Treasurer Meng’s temper before was still causing Kai Yang some confusion. But since he had promised to help them, he would have to help them with everything he’s got when the time comes.

“Come.” Xia Ning Chang beckoned to Kai Yang.

Kai Yang looked at her curiously, “Where?”

“I’m going to carry you down.” Xia Ning Chang replied while blinking her big eyes, “We are at quite a high altitude.”

“I can go myself.” said Kai Yang while refusing her offer. In a joking manner, he said, “I am a man how can I let a woman carry me down. What would it look

like?”

After saying that he proceeded to jump down, Xia Ning Chang screamed, as Kai Yang was falling like a meteorite towards the ground , scattering leaves and plants everywhere.

Xia Ning Chang was quite frightened, Kai Yang’s strength was not that high after all, but after jumping from such a height would he be able to live to see tomorrow? At that moment she followed him down, preparing to help him at the critical moment.

The speed of their fall was increasing steadily, and when they were seven feet from ground Kai Yang’s legs struck the mountain wall and rebounded him off the wall, Kai Yang did several somersaults, gradually breaking the speed of his fall before finally landing with a big bang. Kai Yang’s legs formed a curved pit in the ground with dust flying upwards.

Xia Ning Chang then fell gently at his side. Between the two of them, one was like a fairy returning to earth and the other was like a human rock falling to the ground, there were no similarities between them. No matter what, they still kept calm and steady after the jump.

Kai Yang’s skin had some scratches and there were some twigs on his clothes, and both of his legs were slightly trembling.

Xia Ning Chang pursed her lips, while suppressing a smile. With her ability to judge, she could just see it. But her good junior brother had already suffered some losses.

Thirty feet ah. With his initial element third stage strength, jumping down with just this strength, even with an extra jump, it would be considered a miracle if he landed on the ground safely.

Xia Ning Chang pretended to look around and then said, "Today is the fifth day and after two days it will be the seventh, I'm going to need to arrange something in this mountain valley. Junior brother wait for me here, since there is no danger in this area anyways.."

Kai Yang's expression was solemn as he silently nodded in response.

Xia Ning Chang started walking, but after taking a few steps she turned around again to reassure him and said, "The arrangement will take quite some time so do not run all over the place, otherwise I may not be able to find you."

Kai Yang nodded his head once again slightly, looking grim; as his handsome face was slowly turning sour.

Waiting for Xia Ning Chang's shadow to disappear from his line of sight, Kai Yang finally sat on the ground, rubbing his painful and sore legs with his two hands.

Although he was able to reduce the speed of his fall while he was falling, the fall was still quite painful.

After quite a while, the numbness in his legs faded away, Kai Yang didn't stay still for long, and he started searching around. Although Xia Ning Chang had told him this place was safe it was always good to be careful.

After checking the mountain valley, he wasn't able to discover any dangers nearby.

Kai Yang had to wait until the afternoon of the following day before Xia Ning Chang finally returned back to the mountain valley.

Even though he didn't know what she had arranged around the valley, he was able to tell that this arrangement had consumed quite a bit of her world Qi, judging by her pale complexion.

"I am going to go rest first, tonight between 11pm and 1am the Nine Yin Dew Crystals will gather together and open, they will remain open until sunrise. We must find the Nine Yin Dew Crystals, then obtain them, if we are unable to succeed within that time, they will go into hiding once more." Xia Ning Chang said anxiously, before putting several grains of compounding drugs in her mouth and forcing herself to close her mouth.

She then sat down to meditate.

Kai Yang stood next to her, protecting her while following the Buddhist law, motionless like a sculpture.

Somewhere nearby the mountain valley, several miles away, the members of the Blood Group and Storm House were distressed.

Following Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang they penetrated the interior of Black Wind mountain, but they suffered a great loss doing so.

There were originally 17 people, and now only 13 people remained, the others

had lost their lives due to the constant demonic beast attacks.

In the Blood Group they still had seven people left; but they had once again lost a separation and reunion boundary master. Now there were only three separation and reunion boundary masters remaining. Many of them had wounds on their bodies, Wei Fei Chen's chest had bloodstains, the two remaining qi transforming stage disciples were utterly exhausted.

In the Storm House group there were only six people remaining, apart for Nu Lang who was in the qi transforming first stage, there were four disciples at the initial element stage. The final member, his luck was too good, the only blow he had received was to his head, leaving him mentally disabled.

Out of the all the people present the only one still in perfect condition was Long Hui.

His status was special, even during the most difficult fights he was protected and kept on the inside, thus naturally he was impossible to kill or injure.

After pursuing Kai Yang for several days, Long Hui had finally lost his patience, "Hallmaster Wen, do we still need to pursue? Pursuing further will only lead to more losses, and when the time comes for Grandfather to investigate, who will take responsibility for this?"

Wen Fei Chen was thoroughly angered that Long Hui wanted him to carry this burden. If not because I wanted to please you, I wouldn't have made such a decision and if I had known earlier that this trip was going to be this dangerous would I have had the guts to follow? If so, I would have already killed Kai Yang in that small village.

Although in his heart he was thinking this, Wen Fei Chen only said, “There is no need to pursue any further, evidently they have already arrived at their destination, it seems that the mountain valley ahead was their goal.”

Chapter 91 - Almost frantic to the extreme

As soon as he heard those words, Long Hui's expression shook: "What you just said. You said the thing that they're looking for is just up ahead?"

"That's right. They should have arrived there yesterday. But even after such a long time, they still haven't moved, so it's likely that they reached their destination." Wen Fei Chen smirked.

"Then what are we still waiting for? Didn't we chase them all the way here, for this moment?" Long Hui's heart **. Obtaining treasures, all these were secondary. All he wanted right now was to see Xia Ning Chang's true appearance. He had held it in for so many days already, how could he still hold it?

Wen Fei Chen only smiled: "Although they have arrived at their destination, it seems that they have yet to find what they are looking for. Young master Long, please bear it for a bit longer. This Wen promises that the female won't fly away."

Long Hui was somewhat impatient, because previously Wen Fei Chen had said those same words in the small village. And during their journey here, they had suffered great losses, so naturally he was unwilling to keep waiting.

But he couldn't express his emotion plainly, so after thinking about it for awhile, he could only say: "Then we shall wait two more days. Two days later, if they haven't made a move, then we shall!"

Wen Fei Chen nodded his head helplessly and sighed internally. Someone useless like Long Hui, who only had women in his mind, in the future, he would only be a useless person.

It was late in the night before Xia Ning Chang finally opened her eyes, the previous battered look was gone from her eyes; it was clear that she was fully recovered.

Saying a quick thanks, she and Kai Yang took out some provisions to eat.

“Soon it will be the Zi hour (11pm-1am) and this mountain valley will be filled with Yin energy. Junior brother, your cultivation is far from mine, and the amount of World Qi you possess is limited and should not be squandered.” Xia Ning Chang warmly, but seriously reminded him.

“En.” Kai Yang nodded his head in understanding. Although he possessed ten or so drops of Yang Liquid in his dantian, and needn’t worry about the energy problems, but he wouldn’t say that out loud.

Just as the two were talking, something suddenly changed within the mountain valley.

According to logic, in this type of mountain valley with high cliffs on all four sides, there shouldn’t be any wind. But currently, ill, howling wind had begun to blow within the valley, like a woman weeping at night, chilling the heart.

Following the ill wind, cold air rose up from the ground, forcibly activating Kai Yang’s True Yang tactics.

This cold air wasn't like the winter's chill, rather it was more like the chill brought by a ghost or malicious creature, freezing one all the way to their core.

The speed at which the True Yang Tactics worked, had to increase yet again before Kai Yang could disperse the chill within his heart.

"Junior brother!" Xia Ning Chang called out and pulled Kai Yang to her side, quickly taking out a purple jade pendant.

As soon as Kai Yang came closer to Xia Ning Chang, he felt the coldness disappear and become replaced by a warmth that filled his entire body.

"Stay close to me and don't stray too far. This jade pendant can counter the cold from the Yin energy. "

His eyes widening in astonishment, Kai Yang looked over at the purple coloured jade pendant in Xia Ning Chang's hand. Looking at it, he saw that it was a secret artifact, and due to her injection of World Qi, it emitted a glow, dispersing the surrounding Yin energy.

Kai Yang was shocked. This senior sister's wrist held a secret artifact, and now the jade pendant she took out was another secret artifact. How many of these did she have?

"Why are you staring at me?" Xia Ning Chang's face turned red and her voice as soft as a mozzie.

Staring blankly, Kai Yang took a moment to realise that what he was doing was a bit inappropriate.

Because the area of protection from this jade pendant wasn't too large, when the two people stood together, their bodies were basically sticking together. His own shoulder and arm, could clearly feel her body temperature, her body's softness and he could smell her unique scent.

This situation was definitely the same for Xia Ning Chang.

This intimate situation was somewhat difficult for her to bear, even her eyes showed signs of her shyness and had gathered a layer of liquid. And her neck was just as red as her face.

"You World Qi is very precious, so you mustn't use it here. You can only use it to subdue the Nine Yin Dew Crystals later." With nothing to say, Xia Ning Chang forced out something to say, to keep her attention away from their current situation and from Kai Yang's body temperature. But the more she tried to avoid thinking about it, the more she thought about.

"This is only the beginning of this period. Later on, this entire mountain valley will be completely covered in dense Yin energy. Junior brother, you definitely mustn't leave my side, or the results will be unimaginable."

"Okay!" Kai Yang nodded his head lightly.

The two people no longer said anything. In such a position, with their bodies sticking together at such close proximity, they quietly waited.

A beating heart.

So frantic, it tingled.

Xia Ning Chang's body began to heat up more and more. This was the first time in her life that she felt as if thorns were stinging her heart, and her entire body itched. Even if she wanted to move, she couldn't. It was at the point, where she had started to tremble.

Kai Yang also felt her embarrassment. Seeing her blood red skin, he knitted his eyebrows together and said: "How about, I go outside?"

He still held some confidence that he would be able to block the surrounding Yin energy himself, because his True Yang tactics was the nemesis of Yin energy. Even if it did expend energy, it wouldn't use a lot of energy. For this little senior sister was too innocent. Seeing her this uncomfortable, Kai Yang also felt bad.

"Don't!" Xia Ning Chang quickly shook her head, "Just....stand by my side. Definitely don't leave."

Because she was this adamant, Kai Yang was left at a loss.

On the other side, the Blood Group's group had already sensed the changes occurring in the valley and all rushed over.

Looking down at the Yin energy below, Wen Fei Chen probed about and pondered.

Long Hui's spirits were rising: "Hallmaster Wen, have they started to act already?"

As long as Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang moved, then his group would be able to charge down without any hesitation.

He didn't reply immediately and instead continued to look around. There definitely was something strange happening down below, but even with all of Wen Fei Chen's experience and knowledge, he still wasn't sure what it was. Seeing Long Hui's impatience, he grudgingly said: "Whether they moved or not, it is still unclear. But certainly, there should be some mysterious object down there. How about we....."

Before Wen Fei Chen could finish his words, he was impatiently cut off by Long Hui: "Don't wait anymore. Since the object has decided to show itself, whether or not they make a move is no longer important. Hallmaster Wen, how about we go deal with them now? Afterwards, it still wouldn't be too late to retrieve that treasure."

Sighing, Wen Fei Chen could only nod his head: "Okay then. You all, go!"

In the night's darkness, a sinister light flashed through Long Hui's eyes. Later on he would be able to capture that masked female and take her cover away to reveal her full glory, then pin her beneath himself to enjoy her bliss, Long Hui couldn't suppress the excitement he felt just thinking of it.

Kai Yang ah, Kai Yang. Since you dare to have ideas about my woman, then you shall suffer the consequences that await you.

Later, I won't kill you. I'll personally let you witness how I will sully that woman. Making her scream out miserably, I will then relish your anger and powerlessness.

Thirteen people, no longer concealing their tracks, under Wen Fei Chen's directions, sprinted and jumped down into the mountain valley.

That tempered body staged Storm House disciple was the most pitiful. With such a large height, he didn't dare to jump down. But he waited only to be mercilessly kicked down by Long Hui and directly fell to his death.

An angry wave, doesn't wait for people. The falling disciple felt extremely humiliated.

Chapter 92 - Confrontation

People from the Blood Group and Storm House were making too much of a ruckus. And even before landing, the tempered body disciple had died with a pitiful yell. Due to the outburst of Yin energy, his yell traveled far and wide.

Listening to this Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang's faces both changed colours. They turned their heads to look in the direction from where the yell had originated.

They hadn't known that they were being tracked by enemies. Wen Fei Chen's tracking method was quite good, and the distance at which he tracked them from was also quite a good distance, so the danger of being discovered was also close to none. Although Xia Ning Chang was at the peak of the separation and reunion boundary, she still wasn't able to sense things happening too far away from herself. By doing some mental arithmetic regarding the tracking distance, Wen Fei Chen was able to successfully tail them.

"How come there are other people here?" Xia Ning Chang furrowed her delicate eyebrows, something wasn't right.

Kai Yang's expression also turned cold. According to his little senior sister, this place was ordinary throughout the year and only on the seventh of July, did this change take place. This couldn't have come to attention of anyone.

In other words, those people who were not that far away, came for exact same thing as them, either they knew about this change or they were here for them.

The possibility of latter was enormous, and it looked like they had quite a large number of people on their side. But thankfully, some of them died while jumping down the cliff.

If these people came to Black Wind Mountain to seek medicine or to hunt demonic beasts, they wouldn't bring people with such low levels of cultivation and they wouldn't move in such large groups. "Looks like we have got trouble." With many thoughts racing through his mind Kai Yang, suggested: "Let's flee first."

"Okay!" Xia Ning Chang nodded in agreement.

"Where do you think you're going?" A cold voice transmitted from behind them. Then, suddenly a silhouette appeared a few feet in front of the two people, impeding their path.

Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang were startled by the sudden appearance of the powerhouse. Simultaneously, they dodged the palm, while vigilantly revolving their World Qi.

Before the person revealed their real intentions, Kai Yang didn't plan to confront them head on.

Wen Fei Chen arrived there to block Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang. Seeing them knowing their place, he didn't launch another attack, but instead calmly stood in same place.

Kai Yang didn't enter his eyes, but when he saw Xia Ning Chang wearing the veil, Wen Fei Chang admired the beautiful pure girl in his heart. Although he

couldn't see her facial features, with those eyes clear like stars her looks couldn't be common. More so, the figure of this girl was also outstanding.

Looking at the eyes of this sexually attractive girl, Wen Fei Chen thoughts filled with a feeling of palpitating eagerness. But if it was Long Hui standing here instead of him, he was afraid of what shameful things he would do.

All three were looking at each other vigilantly. Kai Yang looked for an escape route, but discovered that all means of escape were blocked by the qi of the middle aged man; just by standing there, he blocked all of their escape routes.

"This person is a true element boundary powerhouse, so junior brother don't act rashly." Xia Ning Chang warned him in a soft voice.

True element boundary! Kai Yang's breath's slowed, his heart became more alert.

After some time, the other people from Blood Group and Storm House caught up, and they were all looking at Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang with bad intentions.

"Who are you?" Kai Yang furrowed his brows sizing them up, but discovered that he didn't know anyone in this group, in his heart he was very suspicious.

He actually didn't know that originally in this group there were many people with whom he was quite familiar. But because their strengths were low, they were eaten by demonic beasts on road and the last remaining one had plunged to his death while jumping down the cliff earlier.

"I am a person who wants to send you to your death." Long Hui came from

behind Wen Fei Chen, smiling coldly. When saw Xia Ning Chang his eyes immediately emitted green light, looking at her with lewd eyes, he said, “Wonderful, wonderful! What a beautiful pure girl, this time really was worth it!”

Xia Ning Chang furrowed her delicate eyebrows, her face revealing her loathing of him, she hid quietly behind Kai Yang. Although her strength was higher than Kai Yang’s by many times, she was very innocent, so hiding behind Kai Yang didn’t have any meaning but rather it was the instinct of a woman.

Since she was so close to Kai Yang, he could feel two soft delicate bumps on his back, and couldn’t help but swallow while straightening his back.

Under this crisis, Kai Yang’s state of mind was steady, without any ripples, hesitating he asked, “Gentlemen do we have grudges between us?”

Now Kai Yang knew that the opposite party hadn’t come here by chance, this was absolutely a deliberate trap. Otherwise when meeting for first time how can they be hostile.

Are these enemies of Treasurer Meng and his disciple? All kinds of scenarios were playing out in Kai Yang’s mind, even though he can only die at least he will know the reason why.

“Naturally there are grudges.” Long Hui knew victory was in his hands, so he didn’t want to hide his status, “Boy, let me tell you, I am Blood Group Vice Guild Master Long Zai Tian’s Grandson, you dare to have ideas about Hui Mei Er, and did you ever think that because of it you would be in such a pinch today?”

Kai Yang was stunned, he hadn’t thought this time people were looking for

trouble with him about this kind of thing. He had only met Hui Mei Er three times and their friendship was not too close yet it led to the jealousy of someone considering him a love rival, Kai Yang could only sighs in his heart as he was left speechless.

However Kai Yang hadn't forgotten the Long Zai Tian who was mentioned, previously he had run into that old man in mining area of the Blood Group. The humiliation left behind during that encounter, he can never forget.

Hearing Long Hui, Nu Lang also said gloomily, "Nu Tao is my younger brother. He and Chen Shao Feng together have disappeared without a trace, boy I wanted to ask you if their disappearance have any relation to you."

Turns out these two groups were looking for him. Kai Yang then immediately figured out everything that was going on.

Sighing darkly, the first time he left the sect, he was actually followed by two groups of enemies, and they also brought along such a powerhouse.

This time he had also involved Xia Ning Chang.

Taking a deep breath Kai Yang revealed a fearless face, he also lightly looked at Xia Ning Chang, his hands gently squashed Xia Ning Chang's hand, then he said in a low voice, "It is my mess, you don't need to get involved, find an opportunity to run away."

Since this is his mess, he can't let Xia Ning Chang endure hardship, her running away would also reduce the burden in his heart.

Although Kai Yang's voice is very light it was still heard by the opposite party.

Long Hui laughed, "Running away? Do you think it will be easy, this young master was following you in the mountain forest for many days, how can he let you leave without paying you back. Kai Yang you will die today without a doubt, as for her, after your death this little bitch, will become my toy. Relax I will not kill her immediately, but will play with her until she dies."

Kai Yang's face turned cold, he shouted angrily, "Run."

Simultaneously his hands goes around and grasped Xia Ning Chang's arm, under her astonished gaze he exhausted all of his strength to send her flying to safety.

"Wishful thinking." Wen Fei Chen smiled coldly before disappearing. Suddenly a palm attacked Xia Ning Chang's back.

Chapter 93 - July Seventh, Yin Qi gathers.

This strike of Wen Fei Chen's was not intended to kill but rather to stop Xia Ning Chang from escaping.

Fortunately Xia Ning Chang was quite quick to respond. Although Kai Yang had caught her off guard and she had been swept away by his powerful strike, she swiftly turned around to borrow the momentum from Wen Fei Chen's strike. By borrowing its power, she lightly fell beside Kai Yang.

"Hey!" Watching this occur, Kai Yang sighed inwardly. Having a true element boundary powerhouse assume command, was equal to having well trained soldiers and sturdy horses. Even if there had been hope they might make it out of this situation earlier, it looked like they were really doomed now.

"Lord Wen, bring this female to me. If she dares to revolt again...." Long Hui smiled sinisterly, before continuing coldly, "Break both her arms and legs; just don't damage her face too badly. I must have a look at what kind of peerless beauty is hiding under that veil!"

Wen Fei Chen gently smiled: "Master Long please be at ease, I will not let her flee."

He was also a little worried that if during the course of the fight he accidentally harmed Xia Ning Chang, Long Hui would blame him. But since he had said that he can break her arms and legs, what did Wen Fei Chen have to worry about?

The young master Long had very high ambitions, but he also knew his limits. He knew that he couldn't match this female, but if he could disable her arms and

legs, then she wouldn't be able to rebel; this act may also cause her to act in a self-serving manner in an attempt to preserve her life.

When their dialog was heard by Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang, their eyes revealed loathing.

Wen Fei Chen said in a clear voice: "Little girl, you also heard Master Long's words, if you are sensible, then obediently lie down and I promise not to hurt you. But if you insist on resisting, I will not stay my hand."

Xia Ning Chang spat out: "No way!"

"Ok then!" Wen Fei Chen smiled coldly, "You brought this upon yourself."

His voice fading, his body soared like a swallow and both of his palms erupted with the strength of a true element boundary powerhouse. Just listening to the sound, it was like hearing a echoing tiger's roar. Suddenly the attack split into many smaller attacks and flew towards Xia Ning Chang.

Feeling the might of attack, Xia Ning Chang also turned serious. Both her white hands flew out like they were dancing, while Qi condensed around her index finger, touching the sapphire on her forehead, causing violent waves of Qi to erupt from it.

Although the power contained in the attacks originating from her sapphire was not small, they couldn't prevent much of the incoming attack.

In the next instance, the attack arrived in front of Xia Ning Chang.

This all happened so fast, there was no time for Kai Yang to react.

The several attacks flew towards her, one after another. Those attacks severely wounded her, before suddenly the sapphire on her forehead emitted a mysterious and profound ripple, which was followed by a semi circular light, completely covering her and Kai Yang.

When Wen Fei Chen's strike came in contact with the light curtain, it just dissolved away.

Xia Ning Chang stood there motionlessly with a frosty expression.

Wen Fei Chen dropped to the ground, his eyes staring at the light curtain with a shocked expression. His voice cracking he said: "Heaven Grade treasure!"

Hearing these words, everyone's eyes became red, including the eyes of Long Hui; containing nothing but lust.

"What did you say?" Long Hui finally diverted his attention from Xia Ning Chang and looked at Wen Fei Chen. His voice slightly shaking, he asked: "Lord Wen, what did you say a moment ago?"

Wen Fei Chen's cheeks trembled, his eyes contained a faint trace of greed. Swallowing a mouthful of saliva he said, "Heaven grade treasure, to resist my attack so easily, this is a heaven grade treasure without a doubt."

"Are you serious?" Long Hui was excited beyond belief. He hadn't thought that

this time while eradicating this pipsqueak Kai Yang; who was nothing more than a bug; not only would he obtain a beautiful woman, but he would also gain a heaven grade treasure.

Heaven grade treasures are priceless items, in the Blood Group only Hu Man was in possession of one of these.

If this heaven grade treasure were to land in his grandfather's lap, it could increase his strength by another level; perhaps even Hu Man would no longer be his match.

"Seize, we must seize it." Long Hui shouted excitedly, "Lord Wen if you can snatch this, in the future the Vice Guild Master's position will belong to you."

Hearing this Wen Fei Chen looked inspired: "Many thanks for young master Long's care."

Although he said that, he knew that breaking the defense of that heaven grade treasure wouldn't be easy. Given how his earlier strike had no effect, he knew that this bone would be very hard to gnaw. However, luck was on their side, with this small girl's strength she would be unable to protect both herself and Kai Yang for an extended period of time. So if he attacked unceasingly, there was a chance of breaking this light curtain.

"Begin!" With this thought, Wen Fei Chen started to hit the light curtain. At the same time other masters from the Blood Group also stepped forward to fiercely display their skills.

Under these numerous strikes many ripples were created on the light curtain.

But, by the light curtain's protection Xia Ning Chang and Kai Yang remained unharmed, meanwhile all the attacks were completely dissipated.

This situation allowed Kai Yang a little hope for escape; both his eyes glittered with this hope. His thoughts were flying rapidly in his head, trying to find a way out before the light curtain disappeared.

"Junior brother, are you afraid?" Xia Ning Chang asked suddenly.

"Eh?" Kai Yang turned his head to look at her.

"We could die, are you afraid?"

"Afraid of what, you do not need to be afraid." Kai Yang said, then he looked to the side where Long Hui was. Thinking coldly that if he could seize that person, then everything would be solved.

But wanting to break through the blockade of these powerhouses from the Blood Group who were protecting Long Hui wouldn't be easy. Perhaps even Xia Ning Chang, with her strength, would be unable to achieve it.

"I'm not afraid!" Xia Ning Chang smiled gently: "They do not know the consequences of their actions."

Kai Yang was startled. Attempting to decipher her words, he suddenly felt that the mountain valley had become discoloured.

Midnight!

On July seventh, Yin Qi would gather! The place where these Nine Yin Dew Crystals gather suddenly emitted a cold and gloomy Yin Qi one after another from within the ground. This Yin Qi formed a strange, big hand on surface of earth. It kept on growing bigger, whoever looked at it would be frightened.

In the blink of an eye, the temperature in the mountain valley fell drastically, the bone seeping cold made everyone tremble.

The powerhouses from the Blood Group suddenly realised that, their World Qi was being sucked away by the Yin Qi in the atmosphere.

Although this Yin Qi was making these people uncomfortable, it was not life threatening; as long as they could still circulate their World Qi it didn't pose a big problem. However, the disciples from Storm House, whose cultivations were low, wouldn't be able to resist this Yin Qi for a long time. If they stayed here for a long time their World Qi would be exhausted and they would freeze to death.

In an instant the entire mountain valley was buried in Yin Qi. Xia Ning Chang suddenly moved, her appearance was graceful, like she was dancing. With unknown hand signs, her World Qi was divided into many parts and dispersed.

Chapter 94 - Seal

Following Xia Ning Chang's strange movements, the entire valley's dense Yin Qi began to react. If one were to look down at the valley, the scene would be quite similar to that of a pot of boiling water; it was like the Yin Qi was alive, repeatedly rolling around and around, intimidating to the extreme.

"Not good!" Wen Fei Chen shouted. Although he wasn't too sure what Xia Ning Chang was doing, but as a powerhouse of the true element fifth boundary, he could more or less understand that it wouldn't be good for them.

This female probably set up some sort of formation within this valley earlier and was rushing to activate it now.

If she truly activated this formation, then this situation might be turned around.

"Put some effort in! Quickly help me break this light screen!" Wen Fei Chen bellowed out. He wanted to capture Xia Ning Chang before she successfully activated that mysterious formation or there would be no end to this matter.

"You guys come over too, otherwise I will kill you right now!" Wen Fei Chen threatened those Storm House disciples who were just standing off to the side.

Nu Lang and others, how could they dare hesitate. Afterall, for a battle such as this, they knew their limits and were completely unable to contribute. This had caused them to watch from the sidelines. But once Wen Fei Chen's order came, they quickly jumped in to assist him.

Although their skills were weak, if combined, it could still whittle away at the light screen's defense.

The twelve people present all squeezed out all of their power, attacking the barrier with all their might.

Although waves rippled across its surface making it appear like it was about to break, it still held firm.

Inside the barrier, Kai Yang's heart palpitated rapidly. He wanted to help, but his cultivation was far too low to do anything. He could only stand next to Xia Ning Chang so that if the barrier fell, he could use what little strength he possessed to protect her.

Xia Ning Chang's hand movements gradually became faster and faster, until after images were formed. This caused the Yin Qi to blow more fiercely and shrilly, it sounded like the howls of wolves and the wailing of ghosts, causing hearts to shudder.

While Wen Fei Chen's face revealed his greed; he had underestimated the grade of the defensive artifact. It should at least be a heaven grade upper level defensive artifact, otherwise it wouldn't be able to hold up for such a long period of time without breaking.

Heaven grade upper level ah. This thing was able to block attacks from cultivators at the upper boundaries of the immortal ascension boundary. So if he possessed this treasure, it would be equivalent to gaining an extra life.

After the time it took to burn a stick of incense, a tiny crack appeared on the light barrier.

With the appearance of the crack, Xia Ning Chang's face also turned white! In order to use this defensive artifact, Xia Ning Chang had used up a good portion of her World Qi. Furthermore, in order to complete this formation that she was doing, she need to utilize waves of her World Qi further depleting her World Qi.

Seeing this ray of hope, Wen Fei Chen urged the others to attack more furiously, while increasing his killing intent. Although it looked ordinary and harmless, he urged his World Qi to rise up from his body and push forwards.

Throwing a powerful palm strike on the surface, the entire barrier shook, along with Xia Ning Chang's petite body. With this strike, her face became even more white.

Crack, crack, crack.....finally, cracks had started to streak across the barrier like a spiderweb.

"Ha ha ha!" He laughed out loudly. Wen Fei Chen had faith that as long as he let out another full powered strike, he would be able to fully breakthrough.

But before he could release this final palm strike, the Yin Qi within the valley suddenly settled down. The howling and wailing that he could hear, also disappeared.

Xia Ning Chang's clear and pure as star eyes glittered and she called out in her lovable voice: "Seal!"

At that moment, Xia Ning Chang's preparations were complete!

Crash, crash.....from the sky, chains suddenly appeared along with the sound of locks locking.

Looking up in confusion, they could see ten foot long chains, that were coarse and black, floating in the sky. These black chains excluded a dense Yin Qi and a chill that froze the heart.

These black Yin Qi chains, floated around the heads of the Blood Group and Storm House. In the next instant, as if they had a mind of their own, they flew towards the people.

His face contorting, Wen Fei Chen knew that he was step too late. Hurrying, he hastily sent another palm strike towards the barrier.

At the same time, Xia Ning Chang's body flashed as she once again activated her defensive artifact.

But that palm strike pushed on unobstructed towards Xia Ning Chang.

At that instant, the vigilant Kai Yang finally found an opportunity to move. Just as the palm was about to arrived, he quickly pulled Xia Ning Chang to the side, but he was still a bit too slow, as the palm grazed her body. When that strike grazed her, Xia Ning Chang's adorable face shivered. Without any hesitation, Kai Yang pushed her head into his chest and rapidly dashed away with her.

The enemy had far too many people and their cultivations were far too high. He wasn't so stupid as to face them head on.

As Kai Yang carried Xia Ning Chang away to escape, those Yin Qi chains finally trapped the experts from the Blood Group.

There were eight of these chains in total. With Wen Fei Chen's special attention to Xia Ning Chang, three of these chains sped straight towards him. The remaining five chains made their way towards the separation and reunion boundary and qi transforming staged experts of the Blood Group.

Those who were being captured by these chains thought their lives were going to end. But just as they thought this, the eight chains seemed to disappear into their bodies and out of sight.

Wen Fei Chen immediately felt that his true element boundary cultivation had been suppressed. Releasing a groan, he then spat out a mouthful of blood.

Those three experts at the separation and reunion boundary, as well as the qi transforming staged disciple were in the same predicament. Their faces had all turned quite pale and they all vomited out blood.

Meanwhile the remaining qi transforming disciple directly stopped breathing and fell to the ground dead!

"What is happening?" Long Hui shouted out vigorously, for he had watched all that had happened. Just as he realised the opponent possessed a heaven grade defensive artifact and was thinking about how to defile Xia Ning Chang's body, it had all changed. In an instant, someone from his side had died, while five were seriously injured; even Wen Fei Chen was in a sorry state!

How could Long Hui not be angry? The duck that was at his lips, suddenly flew away!

“Please calm down young master Long.” Gritting his teeth against the pain, Wen Fei Chen managed to call out and began to use his World Qi to forcibly suppress and expel the chill in his body. His voice extremely weak, he began to explain: “I’m afraid that, that female had set up some things here before hand. Borrowing the environment, she was able to activate some mysterious skills and gain the upper hand. Due to a moment of negligence, I allowed her to succeed.”

“Trash, a group of trash!” Long Hui stamped his foot in fury, before continuing loudly: “So many people to deal with just two people and you still lost.”

A hint of anger appeared on Wen Fei Chen’s face, but he suppressed his anger and said: “Although we suffered a loss, that female definitely isn’t in a much better condition. I’m afraid that she doesn’t have any more World Qi left. So if we are able to find them now, they would be pigs on the chopping board!”

Itching to get this plan underway, Long Hui ordered: “Then what are you waiting for, hurry up and chase after them!”

Turning his gaze towards the Storm House disciples, he commanded: “I’ll give you a chance to save yourselves. If you are able to capture that female and bring her back to me, then I, Wen Fei Chen promise to bring you out of here safely!”

Just then, Xia Ning Chang’s eight chains had all targeted powerhouses from the Blood Group, so it was the Storm House’s people that had suffered no major injuries. Of the five that had entered the valley, none had died and their conditions were much better than the Blood Group’s.

Chapter 95 - On the other side.....

Does Nu Lang have the guts to go against the order of Wen Fei Chen? Despite how miserable the opposite party looked they truly don't have enough power to cope with them. At this moment Nu lang asked, "May I confirm with senior Wen, if that female really doesn't have the power to hit back?"

"Absolutely!" Wen Fei Chen answered patiently, "Now go and pursue, even you can catch her with your hands, bring her back to master Long, doing so can also bring you many advantages."

"Ok, then we can chase." Nu Lang's eyes flashed with wisps of madness and hatred. To reach this day, he had suffered through many bloody battles, along with the disciples of Storm House, many people had died along the way and they had lost all the disciples at the tempered body stage.

His anger couldn't be relieved on Wen Fei Chen, so naturally he can only shift it onto Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang.

Xia Ning Chang doesn't have any strength remaining and how can that trivial Kai Yang be placed in their eyes.

When the people from Storm House disappeared into that mountain valley filled with dense Yin Qi, Wen Fei Chen looked at the remaining people from the Blood Group, "You also go, you absolutely can't let that female run away, behind her there is definitely a powerhouse supporting her, if news of today is revealed we will have huge trouble."

"Yes." Although these people were also frail, when their lives are at stake, they

can only give chase.

Suddenly the only remaining people were Long Hui and Wen Fei Chen.

Long Hui's expression became a little gentler, he opened his mouth to ask, "Lord Wen, What happened?"

Wen Fei Chen smiled wryly, "I don't know what method that female used, but my strength has been sealed by three layers of Qi, that form a chain in my body locking my strength and world Qi.

"She has such method unexpectedly?" Long Hui looked aghast.

Wen Fei Chen nodded, "It is so, those disciples also can't withstand this seal, now they can only display about thirty percent of their original strength."

"Then what should we do?" Long Hui asked restlessly.

"No need to worry." Wen Fei Chen shook his head: "I haven't deceived the Storm House disciples, that female has used such a strong method and also had maintained that defensive treasure for such a long time, because of that there isn't a drop of World Qi remaining in her dantian and she has also been hit by me, she doesn't have the slightest fight remaining in her. As long as she is found by them she should be yours.

Hearing this Long Hui breathed a sigh of relief, Long Hui has got a good impression of Wen Fei Chen since he been with him, he personally wanted Lord Wen in his group so he said, "I will definitely tell grandfather about all the pains of Lord Wen this time."

"Master Long doesn't need to worry, after all we are family." Wen Fei Chen smiled satisfied, "Now I want to ask Master Long to protect the Buddhist law for me, I want to see if I can break this chain of Yin Qi."

“No problem!”

In their talk they didn't mention Kai Yang. In their eyes Xia Ning Chang is a thorny existence and Kai Yang is a nobody, Xia Ning Chang was a severely debilitated, as long as she was captured it was their win.

At this moment Kai Yang had brought Xia Ning Chang to the edge of the mountain valley and had found a crack in the mountain which was only a few feet high and a few feet deep, which the two of them can easily fit into.

Placing Xia Ning Chang inside it, Kai Yang went out and covered the entrance with loose bush to block it from plain sight.

Then Kai Yang had to hold her so tightly that it felt like they had melted into one person.

“Do not speak, some people are pursuing.” Kai Yang said softly as he hugged Xia Ning Cheng.

Xia Ning Chang looked pale, she concentrated on holding her breath and making no sound.

After a little while Nu Lang and his people flashed passed the entrance, the sound of footsteps gradually went further and further away. Both sides had been separated by a distance of only a few feet, but on this night this valley was filled with dense Yin Qi letting Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang hide perfectly without being detected.

After Nu Lang and his group went far away, Xia Ning Chang was finally unable to bear it any longer and spurted out blood, the silk on her mask immediately turned a dark red colour. Wen Fei Chen's attack a moment ago had injured her.

“Are you alright?” Kai Yang asked anxiously.

“Help me take the compounding drug.” Xia Ning Chang's voice sounded weak, her body collapsed softly onto the ground, she didn't even have enough strength to move her finger.

“Where is the drug?”

“In my bosom.”

Kai Yang hastily put his hand in her bosom to search, in the next moment he is struck by lightning and looks at his little senior sister.

Xia Ning Chang is also looking at him, on her pale complexion appears a hint of a blush, her body shivers slightly, just when Kai Yang was searching around her jade like front, she felt like lightning was passing through her body paralyzing her, she nearly fainted on the scene.

“Please hold on.” Kai Yang knew that this was not the moment to be sentimental, he whispered this to Xia Ning Chang and his hand once again began to search in her cloths to try and find the compounding drug.

Xia Ning Chang was only wearing outer women’s clothing inside of which is only her skin. Kai Yang's hands tracing this felt like they had entered her immortal place, one which makes humans forget to return.

One pair of full, soft bulges which have an astonishing elasticity, they are neither small nor big, his palm can encompass them perfectly, his five fingers move over her bulges for a while. Every time there is a movement the energy from the movement makes her body tremble, feeling each other’s body, just after a few moments, both Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang’s breathing becomes rapid and the blood starts to flow faster.

Kai Yang is still okay, although this matter is somewhat awkward, he is a man with a thick skin and doesn’t consider this a serious matter.

On the contrary Xia Ning Chang’s limp eyes contained a trace of youthful love, although her eyes also have traces of shame and anger, the fragrance of her breath has the power to even attract the spirit of a person, with an unspeakable innocence.

“Don’t think anything.” On the other hand Kai Yang’s hand’s are comfortably fumbling inside her clothes.

Xia Ning Chang finally couldn't bear it and said in a weak voice, "On the other side."

"Oh!" Kai Yang finally recovered, searching in her secret passage for such a long time and could not find it because originally it was not there.

This thing is troublesome.....

His other hand searches the other side and goes deeper inside, eventually he found several bottles, in the meantime he had been shaken several times by Xia Ning Chang.

"Which one is needed?" Kai Yang asked.

"The middle bottle." Xia Ning Chang replied weakly, secretly looking at him.

Kai Yang hurriedly took out the middle bottle, pouring some compounding drugs from this bottle he lifted her face then forcefully placed the drug in her mouth.

His little senior sister has a special physique; she has a medicine spirit body, which is the best in this world best body for the consumption of medicine. They can eat as many medicines as they like without any side effects.

Several compounding drugs enter her abdomen while she sits in a meditative position, meanwhile Kai Yang turned around and remained alert for any traces of sound outside.

After about half an hour, Xia Ning Chang gradually recovered, opening her eyes her face is covered by a shy blush, she was looking towards Kai Yang with mixed feelings.

After thinking about what happened a moment ago, her cheeks became hot, although she knows that at that time there were no alternatives, Xia Ning Chang still felt like digging a hole and crawling into it.

As if feeling the gaze of Xia Ning Chang, Kai Yang who was on lookout turned his head, seeing Xia Ning Chang had finished her restoration, he couldn't help but ask, "Are you alright?"

Xia Ning Chang's eyes flash with panic, she quickly turned her head before replying, "Although there is no danger to my life, I will not be able to fight at least for now."

"That's alright." The knot in Kai Yang's heart finally loosened.

Chapter 96 - Initiative

She didn't dare to think too deeply about that disgraceful matter, so she turned her head around and asked instead: "How did you find this hiding place?"

You could say that this place was simply an ideal position; so how had this junior brother found this place in the dark?

Kai Yang replied while grinning: "When you previously left me alone, I searched the nearby area and accidentally found this place. Back then, I hadn't thought this place would turn out to be a lifesaver."

"This is truly too lucky." Xia Ning Chang said while sighing.

"You should have a good rest. As soon as things calm down, I will take you out of here."

Xia Ning Chang looked gloomy as he said this. She shook her head and slowly, said: "We can't leave this place."

"Doesn't everything depend on one's skills and effort, so how are we unable to leave here?" Kai Yang chuckled.

"Since I unsealed the Nine Cloud Eight Locks, this entire mountain valley has been sealed off. Before dawn, no one will be able to escape from here."

Kai Yang froze, realising the meaning of her words: "When you left me, it was

to prepare this formation?”

Xia Ning Chang nodded slightly: “I wanted to use this formation to deal with the Nine Yin Dew Crystals, but I was forced to activate it before the scheduled time.”

“Where those black chains the result of the formation?” Kai Yang asked as he recalled the scene that had occurred moments ago.

“Yes.”

“They wouldn’t have been killed by it already, would they?” Kai Yang questioned hopefully. If all of those powerhouse died, then they could certainly escape this time.

Xia Ning Chang shook her head, “No, this formation is unable to kill them; those people are no weaklings. This formation will only be able to eliminate one or two of them, those with the lowest strength among them, at most.”

“That’s not too bad either.” Kai Yang secretly thought to himself that it was a pity.

“It’s just.....although it is unable to kill them, with all the Yin Qi from the chains invading their body, most of their strength will be sealed. And before dawn they will be unable to unseal themselves and restore their strength. I also think that before dawn, I will be able to recover some of my Qi, then we will be able to escape together.”

Suddenly Kai Yang’s eyes were filled with aggressiveness, he looked at Xia Ning Chang and asked in an excited voice: “You said their cultivations were sealed, how much of their power was sealed?”

Xia Ning Chang thought for a moment: “At least 60-70%. For that powerhouse

at the true elemental boundary, it should be around 80%.”

“So that means they won’t be able to display their destructive might.” Kai Yang looked excited and was filled with an urge to test himself and his limits.

Xia Ning Chang looked at him nervously: “What are you thinking about? Even if their strength has been sealed, you won’t be able to deal with them, so junior brother please do not act rashly.”

She had seen through what Kai Yang was thinking.

Kai Yang chuckled, his eyes hiding a hint of mischief, he replied: “How will we know if we don’t try? Don’t forget, this is the place where the Nine Yin Dew Crystals gather. Not only are their cultivations sealed, but in order to resist the invasion of Yin Qi, they will need to use World Qi. So as time passes they will gradually become weaker and weaker.”

“But there are so many of them!” Xia Ning Chang grabbed Kai Yang’s hand and shook her head repeatedly: “Don’t be hasty!”

Kai Yang patted her hands gently: “Relax, I have confidence. If we continue to hide here, sooner or later we will be discovered. At that time, we will become turtles that have been flipped onto their backs, who can only wait for death. If we take the initiative and attack, then perhaps we will have a small chance.”

“No way.” Xia Ning Chang shook her head like a rattle-drum: “I am your senior sister, so you must listen to me. If you go out now, you won’t have any way to resist; the Yin Qi in the Valley will be enough to consume your World Qi.”

(TLN: Rattle drums are toys that Chinese children play with. You shake side to side, to make the little balled drum on the drum. It’s actually quite amusing.)

“Little senior sister, if you want to live, then please don’t stop me. You also saw that Long Hui’s mentality and you should know what fate lies in store for you if you fall into his hands.”

Xia Ning Chang's body trembled fiercely.

"Since this is the case, do not block me." Kai Yang shook off Xia Ning Chang's hand.

"If you are this insistent on going out, then at least take this treasure with you." Xia Ning Chang said helplessly. If Kai Yang wanted to leave, she wouldn't be able to stop him with her present strength. She could only hand over the jade pendent.

"You need this more than me." Kai Yang said rejecting her flatly. "You shouldn't be worried about me. Although I am only at the initial element fourth stage, I still possess a method to restore my World Qi, and the Yin Qi in this mountain valley cannot affect me. On the contrary, if someone was able to find this place, would you be able to fend them off?"

"I have already restored some of my World Qi, so I will be able to activate the defensive artifact again. Furthermore, with their true strength already suppressed, they won't be able to threaten me." Xia Ning Chang said.

"That's a relief!" Kai Yang slowly walked towards the exit.

Restraining himself for so long, he was finally going to be able to get some action going. Kai Yang looked quite ferocious.

After walking a few steps Kai Yang suddenly stopped, then whispered: "Little senior sister, if by dawn I don't come back, then return to Sky Tower as soon as possible."

Xia Ning Chang's heart clenched, an indescribable pain spread throughout her heart.

Kai Yang smiled at her and reassured her: "If I come back, will you promise me one thing?"

"Promise you what?" Xia Ning Chang asked, enduring the pain in her heart.

"When I come back, I will tell you it." Kai Yang said chuckling. Exiting the cave sideways, he descended towards the bottom of mountain. Coming out, he covered the crevice behind him. After checking that everything had been covered properly, he disappeared into darkness.

Leaving behind Xia Ning Chang alone in that desolate cave.

There were still three or four hours remaining until dawn would arrive, while there were a lot of enemies for him to take care of in this time. This sure would be a difficult fight.

In the forest, some people were moving about at high speeds. Listening to the sound of the footsteps, it sounded like there was two people. Kai Yang hid behind a big tree, calmly waiting for them to draw closer.

He had no idea which group that pair belonged to nor their cultivation levels. So for the time being, he could only observe them and then plan accordingly.

If the two of them were strong, he could only avoid them and wait for the first sign of weakness.

As the sound of the footsteps got closer, someone spoke up: "Senior brother Xiong, where did they go? We have looked for them for so long yet are still unable to find them."

Another voiced replied: "Junior brother, you should not be worried. Senior brother Nu and those brutes from the Blood Group are also searching, so Kai Yang will not be able to hide for long. We are only putting on a front, and perhaps right as we speak, they have already found Kai Yang and that female."

The disciple nodded: "It's just a pity, that girl really is a beauty. Falling into the hands of Long Hui; I don't want to imagine how she will be played with."

Brother Xiong sneered: "Long Hui is a sex maniac and doomed to not have any great achievements. In the future when we become stronger, we will have our good times."

While he was speaking, a figure had suddenly appeared a few feet in front of the Storm House disciples. Stopping suddenly, senior brother Xiong shouted: "Who's there?"

A light chuckle could be heard from the side: "Aren't you looking for me?"

"Kai Yang!" Brother Xiong became overjoyed; for in such a hopeless situation, bumping into Kai Yang without even setting a trap sure was lucky. Now they wouldn't have to waste any effort attempting to draw him out.

(TL: What? A Kai Yang is something you hunt? A rare hunt? Ohh look, it's a Kai Yang! Spawn rate of 0.001%! Lucky us~)

Brother Xiong became excited, Kai Yang was also happy.

From their conversation earlier Kai Yang knew of their statuses; the Storm House group consisted of five people. Except for Nu Lang, who was at the qi transforming first stage the remaining four disciples were all at the initial element stages.

Cultivators of this level, Kai Yang didn't fear at all.

Chapter 97-Two kills

These two disciples from Storm House had no enmity or grudges with Kai Yang, however during their pursuit of him many of their brothers had died, they did not have enough power to turn against Wen Fei Chen for revenge, so they could only hold Kai Yang responsible for deaths of their brothers.

At that moment, personally meeting the enemy, naturally they would be infuriated.

Brother Xiong smiled while sizing up Kai Yang before coldly saying, “Courageous, he unexpectedly dares to challenge us, where is the female disciple you saved?”

“If you can defeat me I will tell you.” Kai Yang’s knuckles made cracking noises as he formed them into fists, shaking his head he slowly walked towards the two.

Brother Xiong laughed, “Acting recklessly, junior brother help me to pick up the goods after I have taught him a lesson.”

While speaking he drew out the long sword hanging from his waist from its sheath, then took a stance before attacking Kai Yang.

Brother Xiong was an initial element boundary sixth level practitioner, with Kai Yang’s initial element boundary fourth level cultivation they had a difference of two levels. In his hand was also a sharp weapon which further increased his advantage.

The move he executed was only for probing, brother Xiong did not believe he would be able to get rid of Kai Yang with this move.

In the darkness the sword flashed before Kai Yang, Kai Yang quickly moved sideways to dodge, following this brother Xiong raised his sword again and attacked Kai Yang several times in succession, Kai Yang dodged all of his attacks, after this exchange they both stepped back from each other.

Brother Xiong laughed, “A rice grain dares to dream of glory, Kai Yang your life is mine to take. Come!”

The previous attacks had given him get a clear understanding of Kai Yang’s strength, now that he had a basic idea about how Kai Yang fought he could easily kill him, activating his World Qi, wind and lightning sounds came from senior brother Xiong’s blade.

“Thunder Wind Cry!” Brother Xiong swung his sword heavily, on his long sword there was lighting visible, which in turn produced an arc of lightning as he swung his sword, this arc was incomparably sharp and was moving towards Kai Yang’s chest at great speed, Kai Yang was left unable to dodge this attack.

Kai Yang really was unable to dodge this attack, but on his face there was no trace of panic, instead he simply raised his palm towards the blade.

Brother Xiong sneered, in his heart he was thinking the body of this sword is covered in lightning and you are merely an initial element boundary fourth level, if it touches you then you will be paralyzed and will be at my mercy.

Thinking this Brother Xiong increased the speed at which the blade was

approaching Kai Yang.

Kai Yang made a low sound, his palm became incomparably red, just like a burning flame, brother Xiong felt a heat wave coming towards him which not only removed the cold from the surrounding area but also made him feel like he was crashing into a sea of fire, this made him feel like he was actually on fire.

“Clang.....” A metallic sound could be heard, Kai Yang’s palm was on top of the sword, whenever his palm came into contact with lightning, the lightning would just suddenly vanish, due to this sudden collision, the long sword was also diverted from its original path, instead it ended up merely scratching Kai Yang’s shoulder without injuring him.

Brother Xiong became startled, in this confrontation he had found that his World Qi was simply not a match for his opponent’s. Could it be that he was not an initial element fourth level practitioner afterall? Could his World Qi actually be more concentrated than his own?

Moreover the World Qi contained in Kai Yang’s palm a moment ago was truly too pure, otherwise it would be impossible for it to extinguish the lightning on his sword.

Brother Xiong became uneasy as he thought of these things, retrieving his sword he hurriedly retreated away from Kai Yang, he was preparing to stabilize his Qi before trying again, but was Kai Yang going to give him this chance? While retreating brother Xiong became unbalanced, in his gaze there was now a trace of fear, he felt a fist impact against his stomach, then blood spurted out from his mouth.

Kai Yang knew that he needed to deal with a lot of enemies, so he was in a

hurry to deal with these two, he didn't even hesitate to consume a drop of Yang liquid, using it in his strike to kill his opponent as soon as possible.

Brother Xiong's body stopped moving and became motionless, the only remaining sound was the howling of the Yin Qi throughout the mountain valley which also created an eerie atmosphere.

The younger disciple from Storm House didn't understand what had occurred and after a short while he called out in a soft voice, "Xiong elder brother, bro.... Brother Xiong."

Before his voice had fallen, brother Xiong's body fell to the ground, Kai Yang grinned suddenly, straightening his body he said, "Your elder brother Xiong just set foot on the road to the Yellow Springs and will be waiting for you."

The younger disciple stared dumbfounded at Kai Yang before making a strange cry and attempting to run for it.

His strength was inferior to brother Xiong, he was only at the initial element boundary fifth level, Kai Yang had killed elder brother Xiong in one move, how could he have enough strength to cope with him?

"Running away?" Kai Yang sneered, in his hand he was holding Xiong's long sword while he pursued.

It could be said that the Yin Qi in the mountain valley was helping Kai Yang, everyone was suffering under the corrosive effect of the Yin Qi and their strength was reduced, only Kai Yang who had practiced the True Yang tactics, which was a natural counter to Yin Qi, simply didn't need to worry about it affecting him.

He just needed to consume a little of his Yang Qi to scatter the chill in his surroundings.

Although the young disciple from Storm House was an initial element boundary fifth level practitioner, in this mountain valley the strength he could wield was comparatively lower.

After pursuing him for a short while, the distance between Kai Yang and him was reduced greatly, now he was merely 10 feet away, this distance was close enough.

Kai Yang threw the long sword while he was running, the sound of the wind being cut could be heard, the young disciple initiated a movement martial art with the intent of dodging.

But without enough time to complete his skill, the distance of ten feet had become zero.

Seeing no way to escape the Storm House disciple became decisive, turning around quickly, he took out his own weapon, but he only saw a streak of bright red light coming his way, almost by instinct he crossed his long sword over his body to block the attack.

Bang..... bang, the bright red weapon cut through his sword like a knife cutting through tofu, his weapon was instantly cut in half, in the next moment he felt his neck becoming hot, however was no longer able to distinguish between the different directions and fell down.

Kai Yang stopped, in his fingers he was holding a bright red long sword, which was dripping blood.

The disciple from Storm House rolled over, he was staring up at Kai Yang, he was not even able to make a single sound, after a moment his head suddenly burst open and it looked like bloody rain was falling from the sky.

They were both dead!

He had won this battle easily, he didn't even need to use the golden skeleton and was still able to deal with them, in previous fights Kai Yang always needed to rely on that mysterious skill every time he fought with an enemy, but this time he discovered that even without using that mysterious skill he was able to fight with people at higher levels of cultivation than him.

Kai Yang thought that it was necessary to re-examine his strength.

Kai Yang was about to leave the scene, however from both sides of his current location he could hear the sound of clothes flapping due to the wind.

From left it sounded like two people were coming, while from right it only sounded like there was one person. It should be the strange sounding cry made by the young disciple which had attracted them.

Kai Yang wanted to hide, but after thinking carefully for a moment he rapidly closed in on the sound coming from his left side instead.

It was he had thought, these were the remaining three disciples from Storm House.

They had thought that looking separately would be more effective, so they had separated from each other but still didn't go too far from each other.

Now the remaining three were all coming, it was naturally what he had wished for. The strength of the Storm House disciples was much lower than the strength of those from the Blood Group.

Chapter 98- Killing two more

It was only that between these three people, only Nu Lang was at the qi transforming first stage. So if he wanted to take them down, it would a bit more troublesome.

So that's why Kai Yang needed to first deal with the other two Storm House disciples that were only at the initial element stage, before he could put all his heart into fighting Nu Lang.

Looking at himself, Kai Yang wondered if he could fight against a qi transforming practitioner! Thinking about this, Kai Yang's blood began to boil in anticipation.

What Kai Yang had predicted was on point; the two disciples that had come from the left, truly were Storm House disciples. Their cultivations were also at around the same level as the other two whom he had killed; even if they could be considered strong, they weren't especially strong.

Hearing the cries of their junior brothers they had rushed in the direction from which they had heard them, however before the two could even arrive at the location of the sound someone had already been sent flying away.

"Who!" Stopping in their tracks, the two Storm House disciples became alert.

Not replying, Kai Yang instead quickened his pace and threw himself onto them. Sensing Kai Yang's killing intent and hostility, how could those two be unable to react? They immediately cried out: "It's Kai Yang!"

Just as they finished speaking, their weapons appeared in their hands. One from the right, one from the left, they jumped towards Kai Yang.

With Kai Yang's battle spirit aroused, he met their attacks without the slightest bit of fear. Fast as lightning, the blood red blade once again appeared within his hands and he targeted one of the attackers.

The disciple who was being attacked, raised their blade to block the incoming strike. But how could his ordinary grade weapon possibly

compare to a drop of Yang Qi? As the two blades met, the Storm House disciple's blade broke in two. Thankfully his reactions were fast enough for him to hurriedly dodge that life threatening strike, as it skimmed the side of his rib.

Shing, the sound of the blade skimming his rib rang out.....

The disciple in question cried out in agony, feeling as if a flaming piece of metal was branding him. Immediately the taste of burnt flesh could be sensed in the air.

(TL: Oh nasty~)

"Senior brother!" The other person's complexion changed greatly as he quickly withdrew his previous attack.

In this life or death situation, he re-evaluated himself and realised he had put himself right under Kai Yang's blade.

How could Kai Yang be merciful with regards to them? Right after the breaking of the blade, Kai Yang sent a palm strike towards the Storm House disciple's solar plexus, causing fiery hot World Qi to enter his body. Once the World Qi entered his body, that person's eyes bulged out as he flew backwards. Landing on the ground, he jerked a few times before ceasing all movement.

In an instant he had killed another Storm House disciple; and that death was far faster than the one suffered by his preceding senior brother.

Before Kai Yang could initiate another strike, the other Storm House disciple who was still alive, swung his blade.

Unable to dodge, Kai Yang tensed all his muscles in preparation of receiving the strike.

"Shua....." As the blade glinted with light, it cut open his abdomen area. Immediately pain flared throughout his body originating from that wound, and blood spewed out. But Kai Yang still remained unmoved. He only became more vicious and bloodthirsty as he turned his head towards that disciple.

That person had personally seen his junior brother killed right in front of his eyes. So how could he be think about anything else? He had only harboured thoughts about killing Kai Yang right that instant, in order to avenge his junior brother's death. Right after his first slice, he raised his sword again and this time he aimed straight for Kai Yang's throat.

Kai Yang only raised his arm to block the incoming strike. The blade caused an inch long wound to appear on his arm, only to be stopped by his bone, unable to penetrate further down.

“Hehe!” As the blood dripped down, Kai Yang only sardonically laughed.

(TL: I’m starting to worry for Kai Yang’s mental state.....)

Within the darkness, a set of of ivory white teeth appeared; they were like the teeth of a night predator. The current Kai Yang, from head to toe, emitted an demonic aura!

Kai Yang was vicious, excited and emitting a demonic aura! That smile alone would make anyone who saw it tremble with fear!

“You.....” How could that still living Storm House disciple have ever had the opportunity to see someone like him before? After receiving two wounds, he could still smile. Was this person a madman?

His mind a mess, he only wanted to retreat. In this death match, to be intimidated by the opponent’s aura alone, how could he possibly hope to survive?

Kai Yang’s leg immediately flew out, aiming for his crotch. The sound of something breaking rang out. That person immediately

arched his back and fell to his knees; his face deathly pale.

Swiftly, Kai Yang extracted the sword embedded within his arm and swung it down to finish the job.

He had killed two more!

“Shua!” It wasn’t until then, that the person hurrying over from the right side finally arrived at the scene. It was Nu Lang! The five disciple from Storm House had split into three groups and had been searching in the vicinity for Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang’s footprints. Unexpectedly, they were finished off one by one by Kai Yang.

His gaze sweeping the scene, Nu Lang saw his two junior brothers lying dead on the ground. In an instant, he turned around and said in a very furious tone: “Was it you who killed them?”

Kai Yang turned his head; within that insane gaze of his, was a calm and collected coldness.

“It looks like everyone had underestimated you. You actually possessed such abilities.” His expression hazy, Nu Lang forcibly suppressed his inner rage. Taking a deep breath, he continued solemnly: “I have something to ask you.”

“No need to ask. Nu Tao and Cheng Shao Feng were killed by me. You guessed correctly!”

“It really was you!” Nu Lang’s body suddenly began to shake; he had always held the hope that his younger brother had lost himself while playing around. Although the chances of that actually happening were very low, it was still a hope he had clung onto.

But now, that sliver of hope had been shattered by Kai Yang! He had personally admitted that his younger brother’s disappearance was related to him and that he had actually killed him!

“They wanted to kill me, so naturally I also had the right to kill them!” Kai Yang seemed a bit impatient, “Let’s not talk anymore nonsense. Let’s battle!”

“Good, good, good.” Nu Lang’s killing intent was seething as he told Kai Yang in a voice dripping with poison: “Since you dared to act and dared to admit it, then I shall not say anymore. Today, I shall use your life as a sacrifice for those who died!”

Between words, Nu Lang readied himself and rushed forward. His body flickering, he arrived in front of Kai Yang in an instant. His hand curled like an eagle’s claw, he slashed horizontally at Kai Yang’s throat.

Kai Yang’s expression hardened; a qi transforming stage practitioner’s power was truly incomparable to one at the initial element stage. Their power really couldn’t be compared.

Hurriedly, Kai Yang leaned backwards and used his hands to cover his throat; the vital area.

Nu Lang only smiled out coldly, and his five fingers actually changed directions midway; directly aiming downwards.

Whoosh.....

Kai Yang took a few steps backwards. Looking down, he saw his clothes ripped and five, bloody, clawlike marks across his stomach. Accompanying the marks, he felt a strange energy enter him.

Activating his True Yang Tactics, he immediately dissolved that strange energy.

“A mere initial element fourth stage practitioner actually dares to act presumptuous in front of me! I won’t kill you quickly, but instead torment you to the point that you wish you could die but can’t!” With his successful strike, Nu Lang’s expression became more and more sinister.

“A flowery strike and fancy footwork, you fight like a girl. Aren’t you ashamed?” Kai Yang immediately tore off his ragged clothing, revealing his skinny and shrivelled body, coldly mocking him.

Nu Lang’s face reddened, but he couldn’t retort; who told him to train in the claw arts? This truly wasn’t a elegant art.

“A tongue as sharp as ivory, I hope that later you won’t beg for mercy!” Nu Lang didn’t want to battle with words. Moving both his hands, they took on the shape of a hawk’s claws, and once again he began to attack Kai Yang.

“How about you taste the might of my fists too?” Laughing loudly, Kai Yang rushed forward to meet those two claws head on.

“You overestimate yourself!” Nu Lang laughed coldly. With his cultivation at the qi transforming stage, even if it was a boulder, he could still claw through it. So how could he not do the same to someone at the initial element fourth stage?

Chapter 99 - Battling Nu Lang

In the space between them their hands became locked together. Kai Yang's fist had violently attacked Nu Lang's hands, but they had both caught each other's attack and interlocked fingers to prevent the other from retreating.

At this moment, World Qi from both of them simultaneously burst out, fiercely colliding within their palms.

"What?" Nu Lang was astonished. He discovered that Kai Yang's World Qi was more overbearing than his own and he wasn't able to resist it for a long time.

How is this possible? The difference between their strength was so large, it was impossible for Kai Yang to be a threat to him. But looking at the facts in front of him it looked like he couldn't afford to be careless.

If he refused to back down now, perhaps his fingers would be burnt to a crisp.

Thinking about this Nu Lang hurriedly withdrew, jumping back several feet. While he was withdrawing he hastily dissolved the Kai Yang's burning hot World Qi which was invading his body.

Looking at Kai Yang, Nu Lang became even more surprised because his move had failed to break even one of Kai Yang's fingers.

Although Kai Yang's fingers had holes in them, it hadn't gone as planned, with the grasp a moment ago he should have been able to crumble Kai Yang's fist.

This boy.....really has some methods. No wonder my brothers were all killed by him. Looks like it wasn't just luck after all, Nu Lang was forced to become serious.

Kai Yang shook his fist, after looking down at his hands, when he lifted his head his eyes contained even more excitement and anticipation.

The uncertainty as to the outcome of this battle, had made his blood boil with excitement, feeling the pain from his wound, feeling the pressure from the enemy, all of this had made Kai Yang's Indomitable Will to awaken.

The unyielding will to win and determination to rise, only this would lead to the awaking of his mysterious martial arts.

Finally, the moment had come.

Kai Yang didn't need to suppress his strength anymore.

From deep within his bones a boiling hot strength flowed into Kai Yang. With this power Kai Yang felt like a whole new person.

Previously he had always accidentally triggered his Indomitable Will. During those times he would become a little perplexed, because even though he would win he didn't understand the reason for his win, it would also leave any nearby people bewildered.

But this time it was different, he could feel a huge quantity of energy pouring

out from his bones into his meridians, nourishing his flesh and blood, promoting his strength crazily.

“Come again!” Kai Yang was like an apex predator in the jungle. His eyes were staring at Nu Lang stubbornly, Kai Yang shot forward like a bullet while punching out.

It was a basic punch just like the one moments ago.

“Courting Death!” Nu Lang sneered, although he was surprised by Kai Yang’s World Qi, based on Kai Yang’s strength he wouldn’t be able to hurt him. As long as he is able to receive his fist and dissolve his World Qi it would be impossible for him to get injured.

Kai Yang will once again be injured by me, just like a moment ago, only this time his whole fist will be crushed. It could be said that Kai Yang had chosen quite the rash method. Nu Lang looked confident in his ability to win this exchange.

Sneering, Nu Lang caught Kai Yang’s fist just like the previous time.

In the second confrontation, Nu Lang felt that something was not quite right, because the might of Kai Yang’s fist had become greater than the punch a moment ago, the World Qi it contained had also become fiercer than before.

Kai Yang’s strength suddenly reached the initial element fifth level.

But how was this possible? Be it practitioners at the initial element fourth level or fifth level, in his eyes they were like commoners, they couldn’t threaten him,

rather they can simply be killed with little effort.

In this confrontation the injury on Kai Yang's hand was becoming more serious. Blood dripped and Kai Yang moved back. Nu Lang was in hot pursuit, his fingers were cutting through the air with a howling sound, in the darkness Nu Lang was attacking Kai Yang repeatedly.

Kai Yang was silently dodging Nu Lang's attacks. While Nu Lang was attacking Kai Yang was countering with his fists, left fist then right fist in a rhythmic manner. Although the injuries on his hands were not light he was still able to block all of Nu Lang's attacks. He couldn't let Nu Lang have a chance to take his life.

Dull thumping sounds rang out in the dark night one after another, with each sound Kai Yang's body would fall back several steps. The injury on his hand was becoming more and more serious.

But his eyes didn't show the slightest hint of panic, but rather carried a determination, a will to win this fight had been born in his heart, he was simply waiting for the right moment to attack.

"How is this even possible?" Nu Lang had become completely shocked, however at present it seemed like Nu Lang had the upper hand. After all he was an entire boundary higher when compared to Kai Yang, if he was still unable to gain the upper hand then he had practiced these many years in vain.

Nu Lang swallowed his spit; his ten fingers had been burnt by Kai Yang's hot World Qi. Each of his fingers had been covered in blisters. His fingers felt like they were constantly on fire. Since one's fingers are connected to one's heart, moving his fingers made his heart become cold due to the pain.

If it was only this much then Nu Lang wouldn't be shocked. What truly shocked him was the strength of Kai Yang.

In their first confrontation Kai Yang was merely a trivial initial element fourth level practitioner, such a level wasn't sufficient to make him fear.

But during their second confrontation he had achieved initial element fifth level.

In the fourth clash his strength had increased yet again, he had reached the initial element sixth level.

The seventh clash, he reached the initial element seventh level.

In the twelfth clash, he reached the initial element eighth level.

As he continues to fight, his strength continues to increase, which is a very sly, unique and unimaginable thing.

Moreover this rise in strength was showing no signs of stopping.

Nu Lang had become dismayed; he didn't know that Kai Yang could increase his strength nor to what degree he could. If he continued and reached the Qi transforming stage, he couldn't hope to win, because the World Qi of Kai Yang was too overbearing.

After a joss stick time had passed, Nu Lang had realised he was unable to

directly confront Kai Yang. Nu Lang was not a dull witted person, with each confrontation Kai Yang's body was becoming steadier, he was now as steady as a rock, standing in same place motionless. On the contrary, after each strike Nu Lang was suffering greater and greater amounts of backlash.

Nu Lang could only use his agility and his flexible style, to look for a weakness in Kai Yang, attempting to strike Kai Yang a fatal blow.

But the defense of Kai Yang was simply overbearing, so much so that no weakness could be found.

Initial element ninth level! Nu Lang's eyes trembled. He discovered that along with each confrontation, Kai Yang's strength really did climb to another level; it had climbed directly to the peak of the initial element boundary.

But with this his World Qi finally calmed down, it no longer continued to increase. With this Nu Lang could finally let out a sigh of relief.

Although he was only at the Qi transforming stage first level, which was just one level higher compared to the initial element peak, this small gap of just one level represented a large gap in terms of strength.

Therefore Nu Lang had confidence in being able to strike a fatal blow against Kai Yang.

He increased his strength by eating a compounding drug, which one he didn't know. But no matter which compounding drug he ate, there certainly would be consequences. Kai Yang was originally at the initial element stage fourth level thus, his current storage capacity of World Qi was still limited to this, he was

unable to store the same quantity of World Qi as someone truly of the initial element peak level. Nu Lang just needed to wait for Kai Yang's strength to be used up and then he would be able to strike a fatal blow.

Chapter 100 - A demonic aura all over

Just as Nu Lang formed his plan, Kai Yang suddenly stopped all movement as he furrowed his brows; he appeared as if he was deep in thought.

The next moment, a roar rang out. And from within the darkness, a fiery hot brilliance burst out. This scared Nu Lang and he became confused.

Looking at Kai Yang he saw that his upper body was cloaked in raging light in the form of flames.

They weren't true flames, but rather what Yang Qi looked like when it had reached a certain degree of concentration. Flaming hot World Qi burned around Kai Yang, sending waves of heat out into the mountain valley. The Yin Qi reacted like it had met its' worst nightmare, as it could no longer condense around the area affected by the Yang Qi.

Due to the light of the flaming World Qi, Kai Yang's ** upper body became unclear. It was purifying and binding his muscles, appearing unrestrained as it spread all over.

Both his fists were bloody and mutilated, he had a thirty centimeter long gash on his abdomen, which was still bleeding. His battered body was terrorising to look at, both his eyes had also turned scarlet. He appeared akin to a beast emitting an aura with an endless amount of bloodthirst and insanity.

Truly a demonic aura!

Nu Lang's face dropped as he hurriedly took a few steps backwards and shouted out: "Berserk magic?"

He thought that during the battle, Kai Yang had lost control of his World Qi and had allowed his World Qi to control his mind.

But, shouldn't this situation only occur when a practitioner reached the qi transforming stage? He was merely an initial element staged practitioner, so how could this possibly occur to him?

"Berserk magic?" Tilting his head, Kai Yang looked over questioningly. Although his eyes showed traces of rage, he still kept a cold and indifferent expression, like he hadn't been poisoned by some berserk magic at all: "Your gaze is far too shortsighted!"

Finishing his statement, the World Qi all over his body receded. There was no longer the overpowering brilliance being emitted by the flames, they shrunk back until they only covered his two fists, coating them with a layer of flaming Yang World Qi.

From the appearance, it looked as if those two fists were clasping onto two small flaming fires; although the flames were wavering, they persisted to burn with an unmatched intensity.

"You are still conscious?" Bewildered, Nu Lang looked towards Kai Yang as he searched for a sliver of humanity within his eyes. But he was disappointed, because within those two scarlet eyes, he couldn't find any trace of humanity nor human emotions. Only a crazy bloodthirst and a burning battle hunger lay within.

This shouldn't be. After all, those were the symptoms of berserk magic; within his eyes, no trace of humanity was left. So why was it that he could still think?

"You say I'm not!" Taking another step forwards, Kai Yang shortened the distance between them. This step caused the distance between them to close extremely fast. This caused Nu Lang to turn pale with fright, because Kai Yang's speed had already reached a frightening degree.

Hastily he stepped back while lashing out with his claw shaped hands in a desperate attempt to stop Kai Yang's advance.

Kai Yang's burning fists rushed out to meet that claw attack head on. Amidst the whistling sound of his strike, he smashed into Nu Lang's five fingers.

"Ka cha....." A crisp breaking sound could be heard followed by a bloodcurdling scream emanating from Nu Lang. Following that, his entire body flew backwards and, when he landed on the ground, five throbs of pain could be felt from his hand. As far as Nu Lang could tell, his five fingers were badly twisted and no longer usable.

There were burns all over his hand and all of his bones were broken!

Not only that, there was also a very violent, overbearing and searing hot World Qi invading his body. Burning through his meridians and bloodstream.

Nu Lang didn't dare to dally, and quickly used his other hand to stop the invasion of that World Qi in his disabled arm.

Just as he finished doing this, a glimmer of light flashed past his eyes. Looking

up he saw that Kai Yang had once again arrived at his side and that those fists of his were burning brighter.

How could Nu Lang dare to continue fighting? It was only now that Nu Lang realised, that even with his newly acquired cultivation at the qi transforming first stage he was actually unable to defeat Kai Yang who was at the initial element third stage.

Using all of his power, Nu Lang hurriedly retreated backwards and simultaneously whistled. Within that whistle, his fear and horror could be heard as his whistle echoed throughout the valley.

A brilliant glow appeared at Kai Yang's feet, propelling him at an even greater speed than even before, it was so quick that he shocked even himself. Catching up, he viciously punched towards Nu Lang's retreating back.

Peng, peng, peng.....

Taking the blows, there was no way Nu Lang could resist as his entire being was beaten until he was muddled-headed.

After fifty paces or so, Nu Lang realised that he couldn't shake off Kai Yang and in an instant his blood boiled. Stopping suddenly, his expression became fierce as he shouted out: "Kai Yang don't you dare go to bully others! Eagle Soars in the Sky! Kill for me!"

This was Nu Lang's most powerful class skill. As all of his World Qi condensed on his hands, his two hands criss-crossed in front of his body protecting his chest. Then as Kai Yang drew near, they simultaneously shot out, tearing out at

him from both sides.

All of his qi transforming first stage strength shot out, this was an attack that even Kai Yang did not dare to overlook. Kai Yang's face changed, as he could feel the great amount of killing power that lay in those hands.

If he was captured by those claws, Kai Yang was afraid this chest would be ripped to shreds.

In the midst of this Kai Yang instinctively leaned to the side and bravely lashed out with his flaming fists at Nu Lang's face.

Both people were putting their lives on the line, and it was certain that this would be their final exchange. On the battlefield there was only life or death, one would fight desperately to survive. It was either I die or I win!

(TLN: In reference to Sun Tzu's The Art of War. It's quite an interesting read. The theories and points are on point and very intellectual.)

Peng!

Kai Yang's fist collided with Nu Lang's face, and his five sense organs immediately distorted. Due to the sheer force of Kai Yang's fists, Nu Lang's entire being flew backwards, flipping in the air a few times before landing on the ground with a loud thud.

Shua! Nu Lang's claw attack had also landed on Kai Yang's body. But contrary to what he had expected, it merely left ten bloody bloody traces; five were shallow, while five were deep.

At the crucial moment, Kai Yang's decision to lean to the side had saved him. One of Nu Lang's hands had already been smashed and broken earlier, so his Eagle Soars in the Sky couldn't exhibit his true might and the power in both hands wasn't the same. With the differences in power, Kai Yang's lean caused both the claws to be unable to land at the same time; this was equivalent to breaking through Nu Lang's attack.

This type of battle choice was fully dependant on one's quick-wittedness and instinct. In the heat of battle, Kai Yang didn't think too much, needless to say, this type of skill breaking method really was flawless.

While the surroundings quickly settled down the outcome of this duel had finally become clear. Panting lightly, Kai Yang's body was still surrounded by that evil aura, meanwhile Nu Lang was like a dead dog, sprawled on the ground. Blood covered his face, and he directed a poisonous stare at Kai Yang who was advancing step by step towards him.

"Even if I become a ghost, I won't let you off!" Nu Lang said hatefully as he swallowed a mouthful of blood.

Looking down at him, Kai Yang lifted up a foot and suddenly stomped down.

"Ha ha.....the Blood Group's people will hear my call.....they will come to kill....." Before Nu Lang could complete his sentence, his neck was crushed by Kai Yang. His life snuffed out.

Storm House's five people, the result: total defeat!

Calmly standing still, Kai Yang sensed the state of his boiling blood and his battle urge. His face cold, as he pondered, thinking of a very insane plan.

Chapter 101-A Flagrant Provocation

A long and loud cry rang out from Kai Yang, matching his body's bloodthirsty beast-like appearance. Kai Yang's cry easily reached the clouds; echoing continuously throughout the mountain valley.

"Bastards of the Blood Group, come and fight with me." This was a call to battle, a flagrant provocation. "I am here and I am waiting for you."

He didn't care if those words would bring him trouble. After all, before Nu Lang died he had also given away his position with his dying howl. Although the mountain valley only covered an area of several dozen miles in radius, in this dead quiet night, you were easily able to hear the slightest of sounds. So those people were most likely already rushing towards them.

At this moment the safest choice would be to leave the area. After fighting three battles, one after another and killing five people, Kai Yang's World Qi was greatly depleted. Whilst his body had also received many wounds; both light and serious in nature. How could he confront people from the Blood Group in this state?

Leaving that place and recovering his strength, before finding an opportunity to get rid of them, was without a doubt the best option.

But Kai Yang couldn't leave, rather he would not leave. The reason being his strength had reached its peak, and if he left, his heart would become reluctant towards the idea of battling stronger opponents. He had decided he would live his life with an immovable will; if it weren't for his persistence, he would just be a simple person at the initial element boundary fourth level.

With the enemies moving towards Kai Yang at full speed they arrived at his location quickly, however upon doing so they were highly surprised.

All his efforts were for the simple goal of leaving Xia Ning Chang time to meditate and recover without any disturbances.

The strength of this group from the Blood Group was much higher than those who were from Storm House. Most of them were cultivators of the separation and reunion boundaries. Cultivators at this level could easily kill Kai Yang, it would be like killing an ant. But their strength was currently being sealed by the Nine Cloud Eight Locks seal, so their present strength couldn't be estimated.

Hearing Kai Yang's howl, Xia Ning Chang opened her eyes suddenly; her heart which was filled with regret was finally able to relax.

"He has not died! He has not died!"

Xia Ning Chang almost wanted to cry.

She had been worrying about Kai Yang's safety and feared that he would never return and that she would lose him forever. His strength was far too low and opposing party had a lot of people; how could he possibly be able to resist them all?

After Kai Yang departed, Xia Ning Chang had been constantly regretting letting him leave and scolding herself; lamenting over the fact that he was risking his life for her, yet she couldn't help him at all. But looking at her own condition, which had yet to even stabilize, it wasn't good. When Kai Yang walked out she wasn't

able to block him.

Since she was the one who had brought him to this place, involving him in such a life threatening situation, Xia Ning Chang felt extremely guilty. She was such a pure lady, thinking that all of this was her fault; she didn't even consider the possibility that the people from the Blood Group and Storm House were here to pursue Kai Yang.

In other words, the main cause of this entire debacle was Kai Yang.

However, at that moment Xia Ning Chang finally felt relieved, because Kai Yang was safe and his voice contained traces of his excitement along with a fearless will to engage in battle.

Although she didn't know what he was facing at present, Xia Ning Chang thought that she could only try to recover her strength as soon as possible and then go and help him.....save him.

On the other side of mountain valley, both Wen Fei Chen, who was hurrying to dissolve the Yin Qi from the Nine Cloud Eight Lock, and Long Hui heard Kai Yang's howl.

When he heard that sound, Wen Fei Chen's brows wrinkled, his concentration broke and he spat out a mouthful of blood.

"That animal!" Wen Fei Chen angrily cursed, because he had been at a crucial moment when he had become agitated by the howl; as a result he even received internal injury.

“Lord Wen, how was the process of undoing the sealing?” Long Hui asked, like he was concerned.

Wen Fei Chen shook his head slowly: “It doesn’t look too good. This seal has surpassed my expectations and experience. I don’t know whose disciple she is, or how was she able to arrange such a powerful seal.”

The three Yin Qi chains didn’t just lock his Qi flow in his meridians, but also locked his dantian. This caused his strength to only reach as high as the qi transformation stages third stage. And because of his consumption a few moments ago, it fell again by a few levels.

Wen Fei Chen was fuming and he wished he could kill Kai Yang and that female over and over again. A true element fifth boundary master had unexpectedly been tricked by those two juniors. When had he ever been subjected to such shame?

“Lord Wen you don’t need to worry. Just now he has dared to expose himself, so he will surely die.” Long Hui looked quite self assured; the corner of his mouth even carried a sneer.

Wen Fei Chen was silent, because he knew the meaning of Kai Yang’s howl. That howl was not the desperate howl of person meeting his end, rather it was a howl that contained an overwhelming urge to fight.

But he was a trivial initial element boundary fourth staged disciple, why would he behave so wildly?

Due to this, Wen Fei Chen thought something wasn’t quite right, but he didn’t

take the matter to heart, thinking that Kai Yang was in an animalistic state, so it didn't matter anyway; he was going to die either way.

(TL: Hasn't age and experience taught you anything? --TRUST YOUR GUT!)

In the mountain valley everyone had different thoughts regarding this situation, while outside the mountain valley there was an old man flying rapidly through the air.

The old man was breathing heavily and no World Qi fluctuations could be felt, making it impossible to sense his strength, but his speed was very fast.

Within the blink of an eye he was able to cover a distance of over a couple thousand feet.

The old man seemed very worried and anxious. Looking up at the sky, he felt extremely regretful.

"Went wrong, something has gone wrong. My child, you opened the seal ahead of time." The old man was muttering while dashing forwards.

This old man was the Contribution Hall's Treasurer, Meng Wu Ya.

While muttering this, Meng Wu Ya felt really ashamed. He had completely lost the face of his entire family. That night he was earnestly trying to convince his disciple not to come to this place where Nine Yin Dew Crystals gathered. The promotion to the true element boundary had nothing to do with gathering of the Nine Yin Dew Crystals. At the time Xia Ning Chang had also agreed like a clever and understanding child.

That had caused Meng Wu Ya to become elated; Xia Ning Chang had also prepared many dishes and also several pots of good wine at that moment. On one hand Meng Wu Ya was eating and drinking, while discrediting Kai Yang on the other hand. He was telling her to stay as far away as possible from him.

Meng Wu Ya had seen with his own eyes that his disciple cared deeply about Kai Yang. Although it wasn't to the degree of love between a man and a woman, it was a type of loving care. This wasn't a good sign and made Meng Wu Ya want to cut this love down at this budding stage.

For so many years his beloved disciple had always been intelligent and obedient. Meng Wu Ya felt she was like his treasure and didn't want anyone to come near her. He was always fearful for her because her thoughts were extremely pure and she didn't even understand that there were people that were evil.

Meng Wu Ya worried that if Kai Yang had evil intentions, what would he do if his beloved apprentice was enticed by him? Youth, it's then when love was always ignorant. Once his apprentice was enticed it would become a difficult matter to manage.

So Meng Wu Ya harbored evil intentions towards them, his skin was thick and he was always a shameless fellow. Although in his heart he was ashamed, but in his mouth, he always had bad words for Kai Yang; that he was lustful in nature, he was a heartless fellow, his head was always filled with immoral thoughts, he was a evil person, *etc.*

Meng Wu Ya had also spoken words of warning towards Xia Ning Chang, he seriously told her that: "This kind of person should not be respected and should

be kept as far away as possible.”

Chapter 102 - Meng Wu Ya's Miscalculation

Meng Wu Ya didn't realize that while he was speaking his eyes were starting to blur because of dishes in front of him. And when he woke up, time had passed, a long long long time had passed.

The dishes were full of a certain compounding drug made by Xia Ning Chang. Being plotted against by his own beloved disciple, Meng Wu Ya wanted to cry but didn't have any tears. Losing so shamelessly he realized that something was not right. Meng Wu Ya was so worried about his disciple that he didn't even think about washing his face. He directly rushed from Sky Tower pavilion to the valley at full speed.

He had felt extremely regretful this morning, knowing that the image of Kai Yang in front of his disciple was so good and he was inexpensively violating her image of Kai Yang, wasn't this asking for trouble?

Although his disciple had a lot of treasures on her and could easily avoid many dangers, here in Black Wind Mountain, there are a lot of formidable demonic beasts, if she wasn't careful wasn't there a chance of her being eaten?

If he would have been with her, there wouldn't be any need to worry about these things. Bad mouth, Bad mouth, Meng Wu Ya wished he could slap himself on face several times.

From a place ten miles away from where Nine Yin Dew Crystal gathered, Meng Wu Ya was able to feel the coldness transmitting from that side. He stopped in mid air and looked around anxiously.

He saw that in the mountain Valley Yin Qi was trapped by an invisible energy field and was unable to escape. After seeing this Meng Wu Ya's heart finally relaxed. The Nine Clouds Eight Lock seal has been activated, that means my disciple arrived here safely.

Loudly exhaling.....it doesn't look like there is any trouble. Meng Wu Ya gasped heavily, god only knows that for the past few days while hurrying along how anxious he felt, as if something had gone horribly wrong.

After a little while, Meng Wu Ya arrived outside the mountain valley, but he didn't go in. With rapt attention he was looking towards the mountain valley. But the density of Yin Qi inside was too high and he was unable to see or hear anything, even his divine senses were unable to search inside.

Since the Nine Cloud Eight Lock seal had been activated, this means that his disciple must have started the process, he should just calmly wait for the good news, for her success.

Because of the law's binding, people on the inside were unable to come out and people on the outside were unable to go inside. Although Meng Wu Ya was able to break this seal, but if he broke it all the efforts of his apprentice would be for nothing. Meng Wu Ya comforted himself while waiting on the outside.

He didn't know this time he was making a big mistake. The reason that Xia Ning Chang activated the seal ahead of time was not to cope with Nine Yin Dew crystals but rather to deal with people from the Blood Group who wanted to kill them. Meng Wu Ya had no idea that at present his beloved disciple was very weak and that Kai Yang was bathed in blood and fighting off a huge crisis.

If he knew this he would definitely not hesitate to break open this seal and

slaughter Wen Fei Chen a hundred times over. ***** Dares to harm this old man's disciple, F**k your eighteen generations of ancestors. Sometimes it looks like something is very close but it is actually very far, just like the horizon.

In mountain valley Kai Yang was standing still with a straight back just like a javelin calmly waiting for the enemies to come. Whiz whiz whiz.....suddenly the sound of clothes fluttering in the wind could be heard from all around.

“They finally came.” Kai Yang's face turned solemn. Turning his head to look in the direction of Xia Ning Chang's hiding place, he didn't know if after this battle he could still survive.

But....after making this decision, he had no regret.

Brush brush.....three figures almost simultaneously appeared around Kai Yang.

These three were the Blood Group's separation and reunion boundary masters. The last one to arrive was a Qi transformation stage ninth level practitioner. So compared with others his speed was slow.

After arriving these four people were quietly staring at Kai Yang with shocked expressions. Because they had seen Kai Yang just an hour ago and at that time he was at the initial element fourth level yet in such a short time he had reached the initial element stage peak.

What's going on?

Nu Lang's corpse was lying under his foot with a broken neck and his body in a

pitiful state. They hadn't thought that he would die in a place like this. They felt slightly sorry for him. On this cold night, the wind blowing in this mountain valley made people feel unnerved, it was creepy.

"Was this person killed by you?" A Blood Group separation and reunion boundary master asked.

"Where's your leader and Master Long?" Kai Yang asked without answering his question, turning his head and looking around but he didn't discover anyone else coming.

The Blood Group had seven people remaining when they arrived at the valley, including Wen Fei Chen and Long Hui. One was killed by Xia Ning Chang so the only remaining members were these four.

"Hmph, to cope with you why must Lord Wen and master Long personally take action?" The person who spoke, his age was not large, from his appearance he should be around 25-26 years old.

"Ohhhh...help me, the Blood Group are here, I am so scared." Kai Yang said in a sarcastic voice.

(TL: Man this MC is funny)

The youth's face became ruthless, "To cope with you I alone am enough."

Although most of his strength was sealed by the Yin Qi Chains, he still was a master of the separation and reunion boundary and if he fought he would be stronger than a Qi Transforming stage master, how would he be unable to cope

with Kai Yang.

“Lips are useless, why not use fist to find out the answer?” Kai Yang said looking at him scornfully.

Kai Yang also felt that the strength of these people had been reduced greatly. Their strength was nothing compared to before. Moreover the World Qi in their bodies was quite unstable, the strength of the first three was comparable to Nu Lang, even if they were strong before, at present they were not, and the person who came last was even weaker than Nu Lang had been.

In a one on one with them Kai Yang was confident he could win, even in this situation as long as he kills one first, then everything would be easy to manage.

“Boy, you are quite arrogant, let this grandfather give you a lesson!” The youth who had spoken before walked forward while saying this.

Seeing that his plan was a success, as long as this youth came within ten feet of Kai Yang, then even if Kai Yang was injured, he was confident in being able to kill him. But at this time, another separation and reunion boundary master said, “Long division younger brother, don’t get tricked by him.”

At this moment that youth suddenly stopped his steps and looked coldly at Kai Yang and said, “Yes Cai senior brother.”

“At this place he is standing alone, and we don’t know the location of that female’s hiding place. That female has got many tricks up her sleeves. Do not be too impulsive, moreover this boy has already shown he has enough strength to kill Nu Lang, it looks like he was playing the role of a pig to eat the tiger. Let’s

take him down fast and get the location of that female.” Senior Cai said looking vigilant and waving his hands he said, “Let’s get him!”

Four vs one, moreover his strength was at the initial element boundary, even if he had the strength to overturn the heavens ,if he was able to use his power, he could only be caught.

Four people almost simultaneously moved like shadows from the east, west, north and south surrounding Kai Yang and sending killing intent towards him.

Faced with this impending crisis, Kai Yang felt no fear, laughing he said, “Well looks like your Blood Group is only talk, and it looks like you are not too confident in your strength.”

Hearing this that youth’s complexion became red, releasing his killing intent he said, “Smelly brat, just wait and this grandfather will help you break your mouth.”

Chapter 103 - Twinkling battle

“You are not qualified.” Kai Yang roared, burning one drop of his Yang liquid he made his body turn into a fireball, radiating burning hot waves of Yang Qi.

While speaking Kai Yang moved towards Yuan Lang, sending out a fist attack. A dull thumping sound was heard before Kai Yang staggered due to backlash. But Yuan Lang on the other hand, with a startled cry, was sent flying.

Retreating three steps, Kai Yang fell into the attack range of the surrounding three people. These three attacked Kai Yang one after another, Kai Yang dodged the attack from a master of separation and reunion boundary while exposing his back to only the weakest disciple in the Blood Group.

Kai Yang’s double palm attack, which contained a huge strength, was directed towards the chest of the person who was the most vigilant, senior brother Cai.

He was also the person who reminded Yuan Lang a moment ago not to be rash and saved him from Kai Yang’s trap.

Of the four people who were led by him, his strength was naturally the highest. Even if his strength was sealed he was still at the Qi transforming boundary second level. Therefore Kai Yang decided to strike to kill him first. As long as he was killed, the other three weren’t that big of a threat to him.

In a single breath, Kai Yang was able to deal with four different people simultaneously.

Senior brother Cai saw that Kai Yang had abandoned all pretense of defense and was instead targeting him, this made his brows wrinkle. Although he didn't know what Kai Yang was thinking, in his heart he had a bad premonition.

In his palm attack, Kai Yang had surely hid some sort of profound technique.

Drawing back, he also made his decision quickly. Although he didn't believe that Kai Yang could injure him, it was always better to play it safe. While drawing back he simultaneously raised both of his hands in a defensive position in front of Kai Yang, wanting to probe his strength.

Their palms had not even come in contact with each other yet he discovered that the corner of Kai Yang's mouth was carrying a cold, ruthless and sinister smile.

It doesn't look good. I fell into a trap!

In the next instant, he saw Kai Yang's palms increasing in speed and moving forward while avoiding his own palms with a fearless determination, targeting his chest.

These two palms would without a doubt hit him, but at the same time his own attack would also hit Kai Yang in return. Is it that you want both of us to be injured simultaneously?

This thought had not even properly formed when Kai Yang's palms also changed, his hands suddenly began to burn and became blood red, looking like a palm covered in burning fluid with a very hot temperature.

He could not dodge. The eyes of senior Cai contained ruthlessness. This attack of Kai Yang's contained a drop of Yang liquid, after this attack either you die or I will.

Senior brother Cai was after all a master of the separation and reunion boundary, although his strength was sealed and his current strength gave Senior brother Cai a feeling like playing with bamboo fencing, but the quality of his world Qi is higher than Kai Yang's wasn't it?

Two bumping sound were transmitted simultaneously.

Senior brother Cai's palm hit Kai Yang at the same time that Kai Yang's double palm hit his own chest.

In a moment, World Qi was transmitted to Senior brother Cai's chest and it felt like his skin is melting.

This boy's World Qi is very pure. Senior brother Cai was shocked; if not for his cultivation being higher he could have died by the might of his palm alone.

Before this shock had even subsided, he once again felt Kai Yang's palms transmitting a boiling hot World Qi.

Along with this hot World Qi which was being transmitted into his chest, he felt a severe pain; there was a slight feeling of his body being penetrated. This World Qi was even causing his internal organs to be burnt.

"Get away from me." Senior Cai was enraged; Kai Yang was no longer able to keep his attack going and was thrown flying backwards like a rag bag upside

down.

Without enough time to react Kai Yang could only lower his body but was unable to dodge the attacks of other members of the Blood Group. A sword pierced his shoulder directly and his shoulder started to bleed, creating a hole that was visible on his shoulder.

This attack hadn't even ended, taking advantage of his injury another master of the separation and reunion boundary who was finally able to find an opportunity, kicked Kai Yang in his lower ribs ruthlessly.

Kai Yang had dodged his attack a moment ago which made him feel a little shame. So after finding such an opportunity he was obviously going to be ruthless.

At this moment a small bottle suddenly fell from Kai Yang's chest pocket to the ground.

In mid air Kai Yang spurted out a mouthful of blood and his legs staggered when he fell to the ground. His eyes contained some anxiety when looking towards the bottle that had fallen from his pocket. But he didn't dare to go forward and pick it up. Concentrating his energy on his feet, with lightning speed he submerged himself into the jungle for the first time.

Yuan Lang, seeing his expression hurried to pick up that small bottle.

Kai Yang's laughter was transmitted from a distance, "Ha, Blood Group separation and reunion boundary masters are just mediocre."

How would he run now? The Blood Group people looked at each other in blank dismay. They came to this place because of Kai Yang's howl. While he called them to come to find him, after that moment required to howl he could have simply run away, but he didn't and instead he waited for them to arrive, while speaking to them his tone had even been quite arrogant. At that moment they thought that Kai Yang had a ace hidden up his sleeve but at this moment he unexpectedly ran away.

Didn't this mean he is just a dog knew how to bark but can't bite? After hearing his talk they had thought he surely had an ace, but now looking at the direction he escaped to they can only snort contemptuously.

"Let's go after him, he was seriously injured just now and he wouldn't be able to run for long." Yuan Lang said while bitterly shaking his hands. He was only able to exchange one blow with him, he had not thought that Kai Yang's fist could contain such power. After recovering from his last attack when he returned to join the fight, unexpectedly the fight had ended.

After three breaths of time, they staggered forward with a dumb expression.

After saying this, Yuan Lang then immediately started pursuing Kai Yang, the others also hurried to follow.

Before they could even run a few steps, from behind them they heard the sound of something heavy falling to the ground. It surprised them, turning back when they looked down they were surprised to see that their Senior brother Cai was unexpectedly on the ground, his back facing upward, motionless.

"Senior Brother are you alright?" Yuan Lang asked alarmed, but he didn't get any response.

“What happened?” the lowest strength disciple asked uncertainly.

A moment ago senior brother Cai exchanged a blow with Kai Yang, getting wounded silently. It wasn't possible that he had been seriously injured in that exchange, right?

“Something is wrong.” The third person's brows wrinkled, he hurriedly moved forward towards the body of senior brother Cai and suddenly called out in alarm.

He suddenly gasped “ah” in astonishment.

“How is he?” Yuan Lang asked while also moving forward, looking at the body of their senior brother he became dumfounded.

Because looking at the body he noticed his senior brother's flesh at that moment was red, the blood under his skin was boiling, both his eyes had burst, he was dead in the same pathetic way Nu Lang had died.

At this moment senior brother Cai was not breathing, his chest contained finger sized holes, from which red blood was flowing out.

“It's so hot!” exclaimed the disciple who was holding the body of his senior brother as he hurried to put his corpse down.

When the body came into contact with ground, it burst open and hot blood burst out, scattering over the ground and forming a transparent blood fog.

The remaining three people were fully drenched in blood, that blood also contained a burning hot World Qi.

The three of them became horrified. They were unable to imagine how the strongest amongst them, their brother Cai, could die such a horrible death.

When did this happen? Did it happen when Kai Yang punched him?

The three people were standing in the same place looking dumb. They were looking at the ground where the body of their senior brother was lying with a horrified expression.

Four masters from the Blood Group were trying to cope with Kai Yang together, but unexpectedly instead of him it was one of them who was killed. But he was also injured by a sword and a foot kick and his arms were also severely injured, but even with all these injuries he was unexpectedly able to run away from them.

Chapter 104 - Yuan Lang's speculation

Within their three hearts, none of them wanted to accept that fact.

The person laying on the floor was actually a master of the separation and reunion boundary, that motherfucker was a master of the separation and reunion boundary! How could he be defeated by a practitioner at the initial element stage.

There was an entire two realms of difference between the two. This gap was as big as the gap between heaven and earth.

Even if more than half of that senior brother's strength had been sealed away, even if you included the fact that he needed to use World Qi to resist the Yin Qi in the valley, his power would still be equivalent to someone at the qi transforming stage. Wasn't it? How could he just be killed like that?

Their faces with either pale or flushed and filled with fear!

They were all thinking, what if the target that Kai Yang had aimed for hadn't been that senior brother, but them instead? What would the result have been then? Without a doubt, they would be dead.

Realising this point, Yuan Lang realised that senior brother Cai's vigilance and foresight had been well founded. If it wasn't for senior brother's reminders, he would have probably been the first one to die under Kai Yang's hand.

"How did senior brother actually die?" The weakest practitioner among them

finally spoke out, breaking the awkward and embarrassing silence.

As soon as this question was asked, they immediately looked at each other in dismay. After replaying the previous scene in their minds, they finally found traces of Kai Yang's move.

It was just that one exchange of injuries! It was the only attack that Kai Yang made during the entire battle!

"His strength is that high?" One of them asked in horror.

"This isn't his skill! He probably possesses an extremely powerful weapon-type artifact. Otherwise there would be no way he would be able to break through senior brother's defense and be able to kill him!" Yuan Lang looked towards him and analysed the situation as his mind gradually calmed down.

The other other person also agreed with his conjuncture.

If it weren't for the aid from that weapon-type artifact, how could Kai Yang possibly be able to achieve such results? For this type of thing, even if Kai Yang were to admit the truth himself, they wouldn't believe him.

"In order to activate this artifact he must require an immense amount of World Qi, so that's probably the reason why he can only use it once. After that shot, regardless of the result, he would flee!" Yuan Lang's expression was unreadable. The more he thought, the more his thoughts became clear and more shrewd, infused with a bit more intelligence. His analysis was very suitable for explaining Kai Yang's unusual actions afterwards.

In a confident tone, Yuan Lang said: “So, even if the current him possessed some remaining strength, he would be akin to an arrow at the end of its flight. As for the secret artifact, he definitely shouldn’t be able to reactivate it again, adding on the various wounds he received, he doesn’t pose much of a threat!”

The other two also felt that his conclusions were correct, placing the stone within their hearts down.

In the end he only relied on a secret artifact in order to do battle, that really scared them for a moment! If his strength was really that monstrous, to the point that he could easily kill senior brother Cai, then they might as well wash their necks clean and send them out. Why would they struggle on death’s door?

The lowest ranked Blood Group disciple said: “With senior brother dead, should we go back and report this matter?”

Yuan Lang swivelled his head to look at him, lightly reprimanding: “Why should we return?”

“If we don’t go back to report, I don’t think it would be the correct choice.” He hesitatingly replied.

That other person looked at the youth before suddenly laughing, saying to the weakest among them: “Junior brother Wu, you didn’t understand senior brother Yuan’s intention.”

Perplexed, that junior brother Wu turned back to Yuan Lang questioningly.

Yuan Lang chuckled: “It’s junior brother Xie who understands. I can’t hide

anything from you.”

Junior brother Xie also laughed lightly: “Great minds think alike.”

Junior brother Wu looked at the two of them in puzzlement. No matter how much he thought over it, he couldn’t grasp the crucial point and could only helplessly ask: “My fellow two senior brothers, could you please explain the situation in clearer terms?”

Glancing over at him, Yuan Lang finally explained: “Junior brother Wu, what grade do think Kai Yang’s secret artifact is?”

Thinking over the question for a while, junior brother Wu slowly answered: “Between the four of us, in order to directly kill senior brother Cai in one move, the grade of the artifact definitely wouldn’t be low. At the very least, it would be at the earth grade middle level! It could even possibly be at the earth grade upper level.”

They had all personally witnessed Xia Ning Chang use a heaven grade artifact, so even if an earth grade artifact appeared within Kai Yang’s hands, why would it surprise them? To say it was at the earth grade, was the lowest evaluation junior brother Wu could give, but also a fair evaluation.

Yuan Lang nodded his head slightly: “If we were to really go back and report this matter, what would you say the result would be?”

Junior brother Wu instinctively replied: “Kai Yang would die, and the secret artifact be taken, by Hallmaster Wen…….”

Stopping mid-sentence, that person person realised what was happening.

If they were to let Hallmaster Wen know that Kai Yang possessed an earth grade artifact, then would they receive anything? Long Hui already had his eyes set on that female's heaven grade artifact. If Hallmaster Wen couldn't eat the meat, then why couldn't he drink the soup? And among the disciples, they wouldn't be able to even lick the sugar bits.

At most, when they returned, Hallmaster Wen would bestow upon them a few gold and silver pieces. This time, experiencing the various dangers, with many of their fellow brothers dying, were they really only able to obtain these few rewards?

By putting their lives of the line, they should at least reap some harvest. Just a moment ago, they were on death's door, even now their hearts were still beating with loud 'pu tong, pu tong' sounds. How could a few gold and silver pieces be able to compensate them?

Furthermore, Hallmaster Wen was well-known for being stingy. So even if he did give them some money, it wouldn't be a lot.

"My two senior brother's meaning is....." Junior brother Wu asked out probingly.

Yuan Lang and that senior brother Xie looked at each other simultaneously, and senior brother Xie nodded his head: "Whatever senior brother says, we will execute it accordingly."

Yuan Lang smiled: "Good. Since my fellow two junior brothers have no

objections, then we shall not go back and report it!”

“Okay!” The two people nodded their heads.

“As for that secret artifact on Kai Yang……” Yuan Lang hid a smile and turned his head towards his two junior brothers, “The one who can kill him and get revenge for senior brother Cai’s death will be able to obtain ownership for that artifact. How about that?”

Junior brother Xie nodded his head: “Then we shall follow what you have said!”

“Shall we split up?” Between the three of them, junior brother Wu’s strength was the lowest. In the battle before watching senior brother Cai die right there in front of him had scared him. He was worried that if he met with Kai Yang alone he would be unable to defeat him.

That junior brother Xie replied: “What are you scared of? Kai Yang has activated that secret artifact once already, how much World Qi would he have remaining? Not to mention that he has fought hard against the people from Storm House, and received even more fatal wounds from fighting us. The current him, anyone could easily take his life.”

Junior brother Wu also thought the same thing. Before they had arrived, Kai Yang had battled viciously against Nu Lang and probably used up a large amount of energy. The wounds he had received were also seen by him, the environment was also very cruel, so he needed to exhaust World Qi and mental energy just to resist the cold and the Yin Qi. He most likely only had a sliver of power remaining, so if they really were to meet, he would easily be able to kill Kai Yang.

The current circumstances were perfect for killing Kai Yang and gaining revenge for senior brother Cai. So if they wanted to obtain the secret artifact within his grasp, it would be given to the one who found him first. How could they possibly work together?

With this thought, junior brother Wu, took a few deep breaths to calm his boiling blood.

Chapter 105 - The mystery hidden within the pill

Settling on their course of action, senior brother Xie suddenly turned towards Yuan Lang: “Senior brother Yuan, just as Kai Yang was leaving, he seemed to have taken out something. Do you know what that thing may be?”

Surprised, Yuan Lang smiled: “Junior brother Xie really observes things down to the smallest detail.”

As he said this, he also opened up his hand to reveal a small bottle within the palm of his hand. “It should have been a bottle of pills.”

“May I take a look?” Junior brother Xie asked, as he smiled slightly. Kai Yang and that female both possessed high levelled artifacts, so their statuses weren’t ordinary. When that bottle had accidentally fallen out, Kai Yang clearly showed his reluctance to part with it. Any reluctance on Kai Yang’s part hinted that these pills would be worth quite a decent amount.

Due to this, junior brother Xie didn’t want Yuan Lang to hog all the benefits. Since all of them had participated in the battle, naturally they should all receive their share.

“You can!” Yuan Lang knew what his junior brother Xie was thinking, so he wouldn’t try to monopolize this spoil of war. Replying, he opened the bottle up to look inside. Upon looking inside, he let out a cry of bewilderment.

“I think they are Yang attributed pills!” Traces of happiness could be seen on Yuan Lang’s face.

Junior brother Xie and junior brother Wu became excited: “Are you serious?”

“Once you see you’ll understand.” Saying this, he tipped out some of the pills and gave them to the other two disciples.

“They really are Yang attributed pills!” That junior brother Wu became really ecstatic. As he held the pill within his hand, he immediately felt the chilling cold disperse around him by a lot. It even reached the point that he no longer needed to waste World Qi to restrict the invasion of the Yin Qi into his body. This pill was the ultimate nemesis of the Yin Qi within the valley.

No wonder Kai Yang wasn’t willing to part with them. In this type of evil environment, the most important thing was Yang attributed pills. Once he lost this advantage of his, he would definitely regret it.

Shaking the bottle a bit, Yuan Lang announced: “Since we have shared the pills between us already, my junior brothers, there may even be some profound mysterious hidden within them. So you shouldn’t just eat them to defend against the cold. On that note, I shall take my leave.”

Afterall, this was something that Kai Yang had left behind. What if there was poison inside? Although they weren’t as calculating as their senior brother Cai, they still weren’t stupid enough to eat something their enemy left behind.

Finishing his warning, Yuan Lang flourished his arms and disappeared.

Shortly afterwards, both people stashed the pills within their bosoms and each went their respective ways to search for Kai Yang.

Kai Yang was licking his wounds, stealthily hiding in the dense foliage at the top of a tree. Suppressing his presence as much as he could, he surveyed the surrounding area.

His current situation wasn't very good. After the large battle with the five disciples from Storm House, his body had suffered some wounds. Coupled with the ferocious attack from the four Blood Group disciples, his injuries had become even more severe.

The most serious one was probably the sword cut on his shoulder; it should have reached his bones. This caused Kai Yang's left arm to feel weak and it numbed his sense of touch.

In order to avoid being followed by those remaining disciples from the Blood Group, Kai Yang had used his Yang Liquid to burn his injuries, cauterizing the wounds and preventing further bleeding.

Even though willpower and special methods allowed him to stay in peak condition, at the end of the day, he was still only an initial element fourth stage practitioner. Under the stress of numerous large battles, his stamina and mental energy had been greatly sapped. If it weren't for his immense willpower, he would have long since collapsed.

Recalling the savage battle that had occurred, Kai Yang couldn't help but let out a grim chuckle.

That senior brother Cai was worthy of being a powerhouse at the separation and reunion boundary. Even if more than half of his strength had been sealed away, Kai Yang still had to expend ten drops of Yang Liquid in order to break his defences and deliver a fatal blow.

But this was all worth it! Although using ten drops of Yang Liquid was challenging, it was still worth it! It had allowed him to take the life of a separation and reunion boundary master.

In this tense environment, Kai Yang's mind was as clear as ever. He knew that if he lost even one fight, not only would he lose his life, but Xia Ning Chang would also lose her life.

With such great stakes, how could Kai Yang dare to relax for even a moment?

In the Blood Group, apart from Long Hui and that extremely high levelled person, there were only three people left. But their cultivations weren't as high as senior Cai's had been. If it were one on one, Kai Yang had nothing to fear, but if they teamed up, then things would take a turn for the worse.

Know yourself, know thy enemy, only then will you emerge victorious in every battle! Kai Yang must know the three's plan of attack and their location. Only then would he have a chance of winning.

(TLN: This is one of the more famous [I guess] From Sun-Tzu's Art of War. If you like Xianxia and Wuxia, you should try reading it. "War is a grave affair of state.")

That's why before he left, he purposely left one of his pill bottles behind. You could say that one of the more important goals of that battle was to leave behind that pill bottle, the other being to kill the disciple called Cai. Both goals were completed without a single hitch.

The discarded bottle contained, Black Yang Blood Pills. Just a few days prior, he had found some Black Yang Blood flowers, they had then been refined by Xia Ning Chang.

At the time, his dantian still had plenty of Yang Liquid, and they were hurrying on their way to the valley so Kai Yang didn't take any. Unexpectedly, they had come in handy at such a time.

Sometimes, even if one didn't eat the pills, they would be unable to evade trouble. This time, Kai Yang was going to teach them that even if they had placed the pills within their clothes, trouble could still appear.

He believed that his plan would succeed. Afterall, this was the gathering place of the Nine Yin Dew Crystals, a place Yin Qi was naturally attracted to. So if Yang attributed pills were to suddenly appear, it wouldn't be hard to imagine what one would do with them.

So long as they kept the Black Yang Blood Pills on them, he could use the Origin of Yang to probe his surroundings and sense for their whereabouts. Because of this, all of their movements were within the palm of his hand.

After waiting for a while, the Origin of Yang within his chest area started to have a reaction. Kai Yang's expression became cold, he immediately took a few deep breaths and tried to calm his rising heart rate.

Before long, someone had appeared below a nearby tree. Looking down, Kai Yang's brow wrinkled.

How come there was only one person?

Waiting a bit longer, in a nearby place, someone else hurriedly rushed over.

Following that, a third person arrived at the place that Kai Yang was hiding. Looking down, Kai Yang found out that it was actually the Blood Group disciple with the lowest cultivation.

This person looked around in all directions before scurrying off again.

‘Strange, why did these three people separate?’ His brows wrinkling, Kai Yang couldn’t think of a reason for them doing so.

Unbeknownst to him, those three were treating him like an arrow at the end of its flight. Moreover, since they believed he possessed a high levelled weapon-type artifact, they wanted to test out their like luck and see who would obtain it.

It was no wonder those three would think like that. If it were any other initial element staged practitioner, the amount of World Qi within their bodies wouldn’t be a lot. So after that battle, with the exhaustion of large amounts of World Qi, one shouldn’t have much left. But Kai Yang wasn’t the same. The amount of World Qi he possessed was far more than ordinary practitioners.

Not to mention the amount of Yang Liquid he had stored within his dantian! Before he had left, he had stored a forty complete drops of Yang Liquid. So even if he used up the Qi within his meridians, it didn’t matter because one drop was enough to replenish all of his World Qi. Allowing him to once again become as ferocious as a tiger.

In other words, as long as he had Yang Liquid in reserve and his mental and

physical strength could keep up, Kai Yang would be an untiring battle robot.

If that senior brother Cai was still alive, given his cautious nature, he wouldn't allow his group to separate and give Kai Yang a chance to retaliate. But previously, with his serious wounds, Kai Yang had killed him, leaving Yuan Lang in command. Naturally Yuan Lang wouldn't think that deeply.

Although Kai Yang couldn't figure the reason why they had split up, the current situation was far better than the one he had imagined. So how would he grasp this opportunity?

Chapter 106 - Enough strikes to break it

After confirming that the other two people were no longer in the vicinity, Kai Yang proceeded to jump down from the tree and followed the weakest disciple.

Originally disciple Wu was at the qi transforming ninth stage, which wasn't too bad. But after his strength had been sealed, he could only exert power equivalent to the qi transforming fourth stage. Currently, he was tracking the blood vestiges Kai Yang had left behind throughout the forest as he fled. Unfortunately in the time it took for a cup of tea to cool, the trail ended.

This mountain valley was densely populated with trees, so finding someone would prove difficult.

Disciple Wu didn't leave any suspicious place unsearched, even lifting his head to check for someone hiding in the trees every once in awhile. But the light in this area was far too dim, increasing the difficulty of his search many fold.

'I mustn't allow those two senior brothers to be quick footed and instead I should climb up first! If Kai Yang was caught by them first, then that earth grade secret artifact would be theirs, and I wouldn't have any claim.'

Earth grade secret artifact! Just thinking about it made disciple Wu's blood boil. If he could obtain that artifact, then disciple Wu's power would rise significantly within the Blood Group. By relying on this artifact, he would even be able to defeat practitioners at the separation and reunion boundary.

As he was busy searching around, he heard a crashing and crackling sound

from behind him.

Startled, he quickly turned out and shouted: “Who!”

Following this, he looked around in all directions. Clutching his sword tightly, he remained on high alert, but didn’t see or find anything unusual. From time to time, he heard crashing sounds. Looking around, he noticed the wind was blowing around loudly, he was able to discern the reason for the various sounds.

He had treated every bush and tree as an enemy! Disciple Wu inwardly mocked himself. In this mountain valley, apart from his own people from the Blood Group, only Kai Yang Xia Ning Chang, these two people remained. Furthermore, they were focused on preserving their lives. So why would they readily walk down the road to death?

Chuckling lightly, disciple Wu turned around and prepared to continue his search.

Unbeknownst to him danger lurked above, just as he relaxed his heart, a searing hot feeling suddenly appeared above his head. Simultaneously, his skin tightened as the smell of death closed in.

Flabbergasted he lifted up his head. Both eyes popping out of their sockets, disciple Wu cried out in fright: “Kai Yang.....”

Just as those words escaped his mouth, Kai Yang arrived at his side. His movement like that of a swooping eagle, he flew towards disciple Wu. This move was accompanied by a blistering hot palm, as Kai Yang slapped towards disciple Wu’s head.

Because these events happened so fast, by the time disciple Wu could react and swing down with his sword, Kai Yang had already sent out his palm attack.

In the midst of the exchange, disciple Wu hurriedly moved his head to the side and dodged the lethal attack.

“Hong” it flew past his sword and landed on his shoulder. After it landed, a cracking sound immediately followed. Disciple Wu’s entire arm had been lowered by a level, the bones broken.

“Ah!” As the boiling hot Qi invaded his body, disciple Wu let out a blood curdling cry. With the sword shaking due to his trembling arm, he went for Kai Yang’s neck.

Kai Yang immediately jumped backwards through the air and landed on the sword, narrowly avoiding the strike. Dropping to the ground once more, like a pouncing snake, he used his feet to quickly push him into disciple Wu’s wake. His hands like the wings of a butterfly, he spread out and disturbed disciple Wu’s balance. Making full use of the opportunity, he threw him to the ground.

These movements were executed very quickly and smoothly. To anyone watching, it would have been a somewhat blurred sight, it was truly executed like the moving clouds and flowing water.

Crashing to the ground, disciple Wu spat out a mouthful of blood while Kai Yang pinned his knee on disciple Wu’s shoulder and exerted more force through his hands.

Ka-cha.....disciple Wu's right arm was now broken.

Letting out a miserable scream, he was turned around. With both his arms disabled, he was ruthlessly stepped on by Kai Yang.

Kai Yang only looked at him coldly without the slightest bit of emotion in his eyes. Lifting up the discarded sword, Kai Yang raised it up before lowering it straight down into disciple Wu's chest.

"You.....how can you actually....." With blood foaming at his mouth, he looked incredulously at Kai Yang.

'How can you actually have the strength to still battle? You are only at the initial element stage, and as such should be weary and exhausted!'

"Senior brother Yuan, I curse your mother! Your junior disciple's death could only be caused by you!" Thinking his final thought, disciple Wu's eyes started to dim.

After killing disciple Wu, Kai Yang's breathing was slightly ragged. The wounds on his body also showed indications of splitting opening again, with fresh blood starting to trickle out again.

Not daring to tarry, Kai Yang started to search disciple Wu's body. Not long after, he found his Yang pills on his dead body.

Not only this, disciple Wu also had some fairly precious things. There was about half a bottle of Returning Qi Pills and a few silver taels; all of which were taken by Kai Yang.

Carrying disciple Wu's corpse, he jumped into a nearby tree and proceeded to hide his body among the branches. After doing so, he jumped back down and began to search in another direction.

Time was pressing, there was only about four hours left until the sun rose again. Meanwhile he still needed to kill four more enemies, one of them was even a powerhouse at the true element boundary; a tough road was waiting for him.

With the promotion of his cultivation, the area of effect of his Origin of Yang also increased. A rough estimation of his range was about 2000 feet, Kai Yang was able to sense any Yang Qi presences within this range.

2000 feet, this was quite a large area. Ordinarily, only those at the separation and reunion boundary would be easily able to sense any movements within this distance. But now, Kai Yang was the true master of this 2000 foot area.

In less than the time it took a stick of incense to burn, Kai Yang suddenly stopped in his tracks because he sensed the presence of another person.

It was just that this person had been stationary in that position for a quite a while, so he didn't know what their intentions were. Even after waiting for a while, that person still didn't move.

Not to mention, Kai Yang felt that the place where that person was stationed at was quite strange. It was like the Yin Qi within the valley was converging in that position.

Creasing his brows, Kai Yang stealthily crept over.

Shortly, Kai Yang arrived about thirty feet away from the mysterious person. Hiding behind a large tree, he peered over.

Thirty feet away, a hazy figure could be seen. Not only that, a group of shimmering, snow white objects could be seen blossoming over there.

Those things were like small suns, lighting up everything in the area. They weren't big in size, about the size of a dove's egg, but from within they emanated a bone chilling coldness; cold enough to freeze one's soul.

Currently, those things were constantly revolving around and around. As it turned, an invisible force was pulling the Yin Qi in the valley towards them, hurrying over.

The Nine Yin Dew Crystals had appeared!

It was practically in an instant that Kai Yang realised what those things were.

Although he had never seen what they looked like, Kai Yang was still able to recognise them. The reason why Xia Ning Chang had brought him over to the convergence place of this object, was to allow her to refine it.

It turns out that the Nine Yin Dew Crystals looked like this! Originally, Kai Yang thought that it would have the appearance of a dew drop, but now that he saw them he could see that this object was full of spirit energy. It was truly absorbing the Yin Qi from the heavens and earth.

Just as Kai Yang was observing it, the person thirty feet away finally started to make their move.

This person was junior disciple Xie. As his chase of Kai Yang was fruitless, he had unexpectedly found the place where the Nine Yin Dew Crystals appeared. With his experience and knowledge, although he didn't know what this thing was, he still knew that it was something highly precious.

After secretly observing from the sidelines, he couldn't wait anymore and wanted to take action.

Chapter 107 - Sneak attack

At this moment, Kai Yang also started to make his move. Currently, all of disciple Xie's attention was occupied by the Nine Yin Dew Crystals, so it was the perfect opportunity for him to mount a sneak attack.

Even in his dreams, disciple Xie would never have thought that Kai Yang would be able to find his position and dare to mount a sneak attack on him.

On disciple Xie's face was an extremely greedy expression, his body was nimble and his movement silent like a cat. Slowly, he crept up closer to the Nine Yin Dew Crystals.

With the distance slowly becoming smaller and smaller, twenty feet, ten feet, nine feet.....

The Nine Yin Dew Crystals continued to stay in their position, continuously absorbing the Qi in the valley and raising gusts of strong wind.

When the distance between disciple Xie and the Nine Yin Dew Crystals was only five feet, his World Qi exploded and surrounded him. Then leaping out like a cheetah, with his eyes a blaze, he reached out to grab at the Nine Yin Dew Crystals.

At that time, Kai Yang also made his move. With his eyes fixed on disciple Xie, Kai Yang's feet carried him swiftly out like the wind. Clutching the newly acquired blade in his hand, he prepared to strike a killing blow when his opponent's defences were at their lowest.

Just when disciple Xie thought he had obtained it, the Nine Yin Dew Crystals suddenly stopped absorbing Qi. Then from within its core, it burst out waves of cold Yin energy that started to attack disciple Xie.

All of this happened far too quickly. So quickly that he couldn't even stop.

Great astonishment showed on disciple Xie's face! Previously, he could tell that this was a heavenly treasure, but he could never have predicted this thing had spirit awareness and could counterattack at the most critical of times.

Disciple Xie's mind was currently a mess. When facing this sudden cold attack, his mind and body were scared beyond belief as he spurred his World Qi to protect him from the incoming attack.

Just as he finished his preparations to take that strike, the Nine Yin Dew Crystals flashed and the attack vanished without a trace.

In the moment it flashed, the brightness in the surrounding area also vanished and dimmed.

With the sudden loss of light, disciple Xie's eyesight was greatly impacted and he was unable to see any changes in the surrounding area. And it was in that split moment that Kai Yang acted.

Even though Kai Yang's sight had also been affected, he could make could out the approximate position of his enemy. Even if that blade couldn't take a life, it was guaranteed to make his life uncomfortable.

All of disciple Xie's attention was focused on the cold, so how could he spare any attention on the incoming deathblade?

In the next instant, disciple Xie's entire body flashed. Attacked by the cold, his entire body was like an ice block as he furiously revolved his World Qi; he unconsciously shivered. Before he could even take a breath, he felt a piercing pain from his waist; it was like something had stabbed him.

Disciple Xie's battle experience was plentiful, after all he was a separation and reunion boundary cultivator. Although his view was partially blocked, he still instinctively kicked towards Kai Yang's location.

With a muffled grunt, Kai Yang was hit and flew backwards.

Both people started to pant really hard. Now, there was no longer a need for Kai Yang to hide anymore.

With his eyesight gradually returning, disciple Xie looked poisonously at Kai Yang, meanwhile his body shook unconsciously and his hand clasped the wound he had received.

The blade had penetrated quite deeply into his side. Just then, Kai Yang used all of his strength to make the stab. And because disciple Xie had to use a fair amount of World Qi to defend against the cold, how could he spare any defences to block that stab?

"It's you!" After confirming Kai Yang's identity, disciple Xie's face momentarily lit up. Just then, various possibilities had run through his mind. One possibility was that either Yuan Lang or junior brother Wu had mounted a sneak attack.

Eliminating him when they had the chance; fellow disciples killing each other was quite normal after all. Another possibility was that that female had attacked him with the intention to kill. Or another unlikely possibility was that within this mountain valley, there was another group of people.

But no matter what, he would have never thought that the attacker was actually someone they had determined to be a sheep on the cutting board; Kai Yang.

“He he!” Slowly rising, Kai Yang smiled maliciously and stretched arm which had taken the kick. After confirming that nothing big had happened, he began to walk fearlessly, step by step, over. The present disciple Xie was a crossbow at the ends of its rope.

“How could it be.....” Disciple Xie’s face quickly paled.

“Although I don’t know what you are flabbergasted about, I presume that this situation differs greatly from what you anticipated.” Kai Yang replied, laughing coldly.

“We.....” Lowering his head to look down, disciple Xie’s face revealed his surprise: “This is junior brother Wu’s sword.”

“That’s right. He is already dead. Now it’s your turn!”

“Turns out we had all been fooled by you!” With this realisation, an intense sense of humiliation and unwillingness burst out from disciple Xie’s heart.

When senior brother Cai had died under Kai Yang’s hands, they could still say it

was due to the secret artifact's might. But now, he himself would die under Kai Yang's hand.

Your father is a separation and reunion boundary practitioner! Now, he would actually be killed by a practitioner at the initial element stage. What logic is this? Stifling, this was extremely stifling.

Crying out 'Wa', an arrow of blood streamed out from disciple Xie's mouth, he was depressed to the limit. The wound on his body, the mental humiliation, combined they had made him haggard and he was left with no chance to redeem himself.

"I don't have any grudges or enmities with you, but since you came knocking, then don't blame me for being ruthless!" His face cold, Kai Yang walked up and struck out.

Disciple Xie was like the final radiance from a dying sun, his eyes glittering many times brighter. Forcibly extracting the blade from his side, he used it to slice towards Kai Yang.

Crouching down, Kai Yang sent out a hook punch to disciple Xie's chin, crushing it to pieces. Flying backwards from the momentum, he then proceeded to smash heavily into the earth.

Not allowing him any more chances to resist, Kai Yang followed up with two more punches containing his World Qi, leaving disciple Xie completely at his mercy.

Standing back, he sneered: "You want to play with crafty plots and

machinations, well I am your grandfather!”

His eyes clear, disciple Xie wanted to appear weak and helpless before dealing the killing blow to Kai Yang.

But Kai Yang had long been prepared for it. Even rabbits will lash out when cornered, let alone a martial practitioner. Before the enemy was completely dead, any mistakes and the lowering of one’s guard would result in death.

After killing him, Kai Yang searched around for anything useful. Unfortunately there wasn’t much, only two more bottles of pills and some money.

These people were still on an outing, so they wouldn’t bring too many things.

Those pills were useful for him and the money too. Without any shame or guilt, he shoved them into his pockets.

In the same manner as before, he hid the corpse in a large nearby tree before looking around. To his surprise the Nine Yin Dew Crystals had long since vanished without any trace.

Previously, when the Nine Yin Dew Crystals burst out in its brilliance, Kai Yang could feel the energy quite clearly; that energy was a very domineering energy. No wonder they needed him to come and help subdue it. That object’s spirit awareness was quite high, and when danger arose it would immediately flee. Apart from Yang attributed energy, there wouldn’t be anything else that would be useful in countering it.

There was still about two hours left until the sun rose! He must hasten his

speed, but before that, he must return and ask Xia Ning Chang on how to subdue the Nine Yin Dew Crystals.

Chapter 108 - Xia Ning Chang hindered

The Nine Yin Dew Crystals drifted from place to place, without any specific route. This mountain valley was also quite large, so if one's luck was good, then they would be able to meet up with it. So if they do, then they might as well obtain it and draw things to a close.

But no matter how much Kai Yang asked how to do so, whether it was Xia Ning Chang or old man Meng, both of them refused to answer. They both said that things will be revealed in due time; this had caused him to be quite suspicious.

It's about time everything was made clear.

The place in which Xia Ning Chang was hiding, Kai Yang still remembered quite clearly. While he was sprinting over, he paid close attention to all of his surroundings while focusing on his Origin of Yang to see if he could meet up with Yuan Lang.

But throughout the entire journey, the Origin of Yang had no reaction whatsoever; who knows where Yuan Lang had run off to. This left Kai Yang at a loss, but in the end, his area of search was only the area within two hundred feet of himself. If Yuan Lang was out of this range, then naturally he wouldn't be able to feel a thing.

When he smelled a sweet fragrance and was about to arrive at the area where Xia Ning Chang was hiding, the Origin of Yang started to react.

Kai Yang was both startled and happy.

Startled over the fact the Yuan Lang was very, very close to Xia Ning Chang's position and happy because he had finally found that final Blood Group disciple.

Could it be that he had already discovered Xia Ning Chang's location? Thinking of this, Kai Yang hastened his pace and sprinted with all his might over, while focusing his attention carefully looking for any movements in the area ahead.

The next instant, Kai Yang let out a breath of relief because the area was very quiet and lacked movement. Yuan Lang most definitely hadn't found Xia Ning Chang's hideout. Otherwise he would have long since started to commence his attacks.

He wasn't too concerned over Xia Ning Chang's safety, due to the fact that she could still activate that heaven grade defensive artifact of hers. But the position of the cave was too awkward. It only had one entrance and exit. So if Yuan Lang blocked that entryway and signalled for Long Hui and that master to come over, then things would get very bad indeed.

With this thought, Kai Yang became more alert and cautious.

Xia Ning Chang was currently very worried. Right after Kai Yang left, she started to recover her World Qi. After taking one of Wen Fei Chen's blows, then activating that heaven grade defensive artifact and then activating the Nine Cloud Eight Locks, the amount of World Qi she had exhausted was far greater than any other person there.

During the time she was recovering, she used up all the pills she had brought with her yet only recovered a small portion of her strength; about equal to the World Qi of someone at the initial element seventh-eighth stages.

Just then, she sensed movement outside of the cave, she was very startled; she didn't dare to move a single muscle as she hid in the cave. Squinting her big and bright pair of eyes, she peered outside to see who dared to come here.

She hoped that it was Kai Yang. But if it was Kai Yang, then he would have no reason not to come inside directly.

That person wandered outside for quite a while, clearly demonstrating that it was not the person she was hoping it to be.

It was an enemy! She just didn't know what cultivation level they had reached!

That person stayed outside and searched for about the time it took to burn a stick of incense. They searched each nook and cranny very seriously, but were without any result. Hearing their footsteps receding, Xia Ning Chang couldn't help but release a sigh of relief.

Unfortunately at that moment, at the front of the cave a slight shuffling of bushes could be heard. And Xia Ning Chang's heart which had just calmed down started to beat quickly again.

Then the next instant, a small black shadow ran out from the shrubs towards Xia Ning Chang.

She was so scared that she nearly screamed. Looking closely, she didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

That little creature was a squirrel that lived in the valley. It was probably frozen by the Yin Qi, so it had come to find a cave in which to hide from the cold.

Xia Ning Chang cautiously stretched out her hand towards the creature. But that squirrel was very alert and upon discovering that someone else had occupied the cave it immediately ran back out.

A large hand suddenly appeared in the air and caught the squirrel. Squeezing hard, it burst into blood and guts.

(TL: o.O What did the poor squirrel ever do to you?!?!?! YOU VILLAIN!)

“He he he he!” A series of laughs rang out in the silence as Yuan Lang’s silhouette blocked the only entrance of the cave. A look of delight could be seen on his face while he looked at the sitting Xia Ning Chang. He said: “So you were hiding here!”

Xia Ning Chang gave him a very frosty glare, her clear eyes displaying her fury. Women contained a natural love towards small animals, especially towards very cute looking animals. Although that squirrel had revealed her position, Yuan Lang’s method of killing it had truly enraged her.

“You really made me look hard for you!” Standing at the entrance, Yuan Lang sized up Xia Ning Chang, “To lose at the sunset, but gain at the sunrise. Even if I didn’t find Kai Yang, finding you is equally good!”

Hearing that, her heart let out a sigh of relief. It seemed that her junior brother was still safe and sound.

“If you dare come closer, I will make you die a miserable death!” Xia Ning Chang frostily threatened. But due to her pure and innocent character, that threat came out a bit weak. If it were any other person, that threat would contain at least a little bit of power. As for Yuan Lang, he could hear the lack of confidence in her words and mockingly smirked: “You still have energy to battle? Taking one of Wen Fei Chen’s hits and not fainting is considered quite good. I guess this could be considered your final struggle before death’s door.”

Although Yuan Lang’s true strength had been sealed away, Xia Ning Chang wasn’t in much better shape. Yuan Lang wasn’t the least bit scared of her, because they were both practitioners at the separation and reunion boundary. It was just one’s level was higher while the other one’s was lower.

Furthermore, the only entrance had been blocked by Yuan Lang. So his position was extremely advantageous; he held all the power.

“Be an obedient child and listen to what I say. If you do, I promise to not treat you badly, but if you don’t, then don’t blame me for being heartless.” Yuan Lang viciously threatened her.

Xia Ning Chang remained silent as she started to prepare her World Qi. Waiting for the chance when he started to come closer to give him a fierce strike. Of course, Yuan Lang could see what she wanted to do. So he just stood at the entrance, making her bitterly complain.

“I know that you possess a heaven grade defensive artifact, so I can not do anything to you. But what if I were to call the others over? Would you still have any hope of escaping?” Yuan Lang wasn’t impatient, fully in the mood for a bit of cat and mouse. Using his eloquent words to break Xia Ning Chang down.

“What do you want to do?” Xia Ning Chang asked coldly.

“What do I want to do? He he, I think I should be asking you this question. I just want you to obediently satisfy a few of my requests, if you don’t, then I’ll call the others over!” Aware that his chance had come, Yuan Lang revealed his fox tail.

“What requests?” Xia Ning Chang had also decided to play along with his game. The more time she bought, the more time she had to recover her World Qi.

“One, I want you to seal away your World Qi and obediently allow yourself to be captured. Two, hand over your defensive artifact! Three,” Yuan Lang let out an excessive smile, “I want you to take off your veil and show me your true features. Relax, if you are a true beauty, I won’t do anything to you. I will let you go and definitely not make things hard for you!”

Those words, even a little child wouldn’t believe them. If Xia Ning Chang really sealed away her cultivation, she wouldn’t be at the mercy of Yuan Lang. In the situation where there was only a unmarried young male and female, which man could resist the temptations of a beautiful woman?

Even if Xia Ning Chang was innocent, she wasn’t that easily tricked. Immediately she rebuked him: “In your dreams!”

Chapter 109 - You really are an idiot

“You are forcing my hand!” Yuan Lang’s expression turned frosty.

“It’s you who is bullying wantonly!” Xia Ning Chang didn’t back down in the slightest.

His expression frosty, Yuan Lang’s heart hissed but still he forced himself to endure and instead he said: “Then we must see if this young lady’s defensive artifact can endure my attacks!”

He really couldn’t bear having such a stubborn mouthed beauty slip through his fingers so easily. If he could use his own power to subdue Xia Ning Chang, then it would be equivalent to obtaining a heaven grade artifact! With that treasure, where underneath the sky would he dare not to go? No longer needing to stay in the Blood Group and put his life on the line right? Not to mention that this female’s background was unknown, so there shouldn’t be only just that one secret artifact in her possession.

That’s why he wanted to test his luck! If he really couldn’t break through her defense, then it wouldn’t be too late to send for backup. Since he was already here, she definitely wouldn’t be able to escape him.

The entire time he was thinking over this matter, he was grinning suspiciously while looking at Xia Ning Chang.

Xia Ning Chang secretly lamented in her heart. Although she had recovered more than twenty percent of her strength and had enough to activate that

defensive artifact, it still used up a great deal of World Qi. As soon as she did so, she would revert back to her powerless self. Not to mention that she had planned on using her recovered World Qi to search for Kai Yang. How could she afford to use it all in one go?

But if she did not do this, she didn't have any confidence in overpowering Yuan Lang. Furthermore, her position wasn't too good, so she wasn't able to exert much of her true power.

It seemed like her only option was to hinder him for a while and remain alert for any opportunity to finish him in one go.

Xia Ning Chang had no hesitation whatsoever. The opponent had already bullied her this far, so how could she let him go just like that?

As the distance between the two gradually shrunk, Xia Ning Chang slowly stood up. Revolving her World Qi, she stared attentively towards the approaching Yuan Lang.

It was truly the moment where bitter rivals faced each other! In the cave where there was only one entrance/exit, neither party could easily evade their opponent's attacks.

When the distance had shrunk to three feet, Yuan Lang's smile vanished and was replaced with a serious expression.

Xia Ning Chang's sudden strike was completely out of Yuan Lang's expectations. Her jade hands performing a seal, an arrow of cold wind flew towards Yuan Lang.

Yuan Lang frowned. He never thought that any strength would still reside in this female, let alone enough for her to put up any form of resistance. How much time had passed since she had received that injury? Even if she used Qi restoration pills, the speed of recovery wouldn't be that fast, right?

What he didn't know was that Xia Ning Chang possessed a special physique. Once she ate a pill, she would be able to absorb and refine the pill completely. If this wasn't the case, then with small amount of pills she had, how would she be able to recover twenty percent of her energy?

That blade of cold wind, penetrated deep into his body reaching his bones, it was shaped like a crystal blade. It was created from the Yin Qi within the mountain valley, coupled with her special physique, it's killing power was decent. Moreover, it didn't use a lot of World Qi to make and its speed was very fast.

A muffled whimper could be heard as Yuan Lang gathered his World Qi in his palm. Charging forward he shouted: "Flying Cloud Palm!"

The Flying Cloud Palm wasn't a palm skill, rather it was more of a sword skill. It was an earth grade lower level martial skill. Its power wasn't that strong, but due to the fact that Yuan Lang didn't have any swords on his body, he could only use it with his palm. Naturally this would result in a decrease in its power.

Nonetheless, Xia Ning Chang's strike had been cut off and rendered useless.

When he felt that the strike contained no killing power, Yuan Lang smirked. But unexpectedly, he heard some swishing sounds. Looking up, he saw Xia Ning Chang had sent out another.

This caused Yuan Lang to be angered. His hands moving in a flurry of movements, he shouted: “Azure Dragon’s Cry!”

Following that, a dragon’s roar could be heard, the might contained in this attack was far greater than his previous Flying Cloud Palm.

Without allowing him any time to breath, more swishing sounds could be heard as Xia Ning Chang sent out more streams of cold air over.

Yuan Lang didn’t stop his steps and used his strength to resist.

Thousand Zhu Steps, Flying Phoenix Death Strikes, Heavenly Life Lightning, Transforming Iron Palms, Beheading Steel Hands, Spirit Dragon Fists.....

He was worthy to be called an expert at the separation and reunion boundary; possessing a large variety of martial skills. With a hundred methods, he contended against Xia Ning Chang’s onslaught. Causing the cave to become a place of deep water and scorching fire.

While Xia Niang did not change her attacks whatsoever. ‘Who cares if you have a multitude of skills, I will only use these ice beams of mine.’ The two people were three feet apart and neck to neck, evenly matched.

Along the cave walls, seams had started to form due to the aftershocks of their clashes.

With the wind whistling, Yuan Lang finally realised something wasn’t right. His

own cultivation had been sealed away, so while he needed to expend World Qi to block in the invasion of the cold, he had also successively used so many Qi consuming skills. So right now, he was feeling quite tired, meanwhile the female opposite still looked the same as she did when she started to fight. She wasn't red-faced nor did it look like her heart was very heavy, like the skill she was using didn't require any money; like she hadn't used an ounce of World Qi.

Little did he know that the cold beams that Xia Ning Chang had been executing were formed with the cold Yin Qi within the valley. She only needed the smallest amount of World Qi to condense them and give them such killing power.

It was only at that moment, Yuan Lang realised that in his current sealed state, he was unable to eat Xia Ning Chang.

Flying into a rage of humiliation, he viciously said: "Stinking bitch, if you don't surrender now, I will call over young master Long. Once he comes, he will definitely ruthlessly violate you, making you wish you were dead but you won't be!"

"Despicable!" Xia Ning Chang responded.

"He he. Any female that falls into Long Hui's hands will not have a good future. You might as well be clever and follow me. I promise you that I will treat you well!"

""Shameless!" Xia Ning Chang rebuked, furious.

"I will count to three. If you don't surrender in that period, then don't blame me for not giving you a chance!" His expression sinister, Yuan Lang pulled out his

final bargaining chip, before slowly and deliberately calling out: “One.....”

Hacking and striking, as the two were exchanging their words, they continued to exchange strikes.

“Two.....” Yuan Lang very deliberately extended the time he took to say the word.

Xia Ning Chang’s eyes suddenly became crescent shaped. Although the duration of that movement wasn’t long, Yuan Lang was certain that she had smiled.

‘When she smiled, she was really pretty!’ All of a sudden, Yuan Lang didn’t want to call out three.

“Have you thought it over?” He thought she had changed her mind.

Xia Ning Chang eyes remained shaped like a crescent moon as she cutely said: “You thought you were the only one who was able to call for reinforcements?”

“What?” Yuan Lang didn’t comprehend what she meant.

“I also called for reinforcements.” Looking at the person behind Yuan Lang, Xia Ning Chang said in a sobbing tone while stamping her foot: “Junior brother, it’s about time you came!”

Yuan Lang couldn’t help but sneer as he said: “You want to use these type of lowly methods to trick me? Miss, you really think I am that type of idiot?”

(Tl: yeah.....-_-)

“You really are an idiot.” An extremely cold voice, devoid of emotion sounded from behind Yuan Lang. As Yuan Lang attempted to turn around hurriedly, Xia Ning Chang struck out causing him to become uncoordinated. This was also further influenced by the narrow passage and the fact that he could neither advance nor retreat, putting him a very awkward position indeed.

Pu chi.....he heard. Yuan Lang could only feel a dull pain and was vaguely aware that a sharp object had penetrated his body. Looking down, he saw that a sword was piercing his stomach.

Chapter 110 - A young girl's heart

The sword which had penetrated his chest caused a life threatening wound.

Yuan Lang could feel his heart constricting and the blood madly gushing out. Feeling his life draining away, he hurriedly turned his head around to look at Kai Yang behind him.

“Animal!” Yuan Lang shouted out, his expression highly grotesque, as he was so unwilling to meet his end here.

Kai Yang stayed silent and only moved to pull out the sword; bringing with it a warm stream of red blood, only to re-pierce his body.

After taking four direct blows, Yuan Lang couldn't endure any longer and directly fell onto the ground.

With his vision gradually fading away, Yuan Lang let out a bitter smile on death's door.

Fate is really is unfavourable and luck toys with you, ah! Originally he had thought that by standing at the entrance and blocking the female's path, he would be able to assert dominance over her. Contrary to that however, he was the one who was trapped in the end.

If it wasn't for the the location's special topography, how would he fall this easily?

Even if he couldn't beat them in a 1 vs. 2 fight, he would still be able to run right? But now, everything had been in vain.

Hunters, will eventually become the prey one day.....

"You're okay right?" Kai Yang looked at Xia Ning Chang.

In reality, before Yuan Lang had even discovered this little senior sister of his, Kai Yang had already been in the vicinity. He had just waited until Yuan Lang entered the cave to battle with Xia Ning Chang, thus exhausting himself, before mounting that ambush of his.

Although this method was somewhat despicable and Xia Ning Chang had been completely unaware of the situation. But in the end, it was the most energy efficient method.

"I'm fine, you....." Before Xia Ning Chang could finish her sentence, she saw the large gash on the side of his stomach and the bloody wound on his shoulder.

At this moment, the blood covered Kai Yang's expression was one of calmness and concern. He gave off a steady and reliable air that was exclusive to men. Completely different from his usual "too weak to even stand against the wind" look.

His ** body blocked the entrance of the cave, but his body was unwavering and appeared as sturdy as a mountain. Blocking all wind and tribulations, turning this isolated mountain cave into a peaceful, warm and safe harbor.

Walking a few steps forwards, her small hands shook as she reached out

towards the stomach wound, yet she didn't dare to touch it. Xia Ning Chang was afraid that the slighted touch would be painful, which lead to her eyes turning red.

In these short four hours, what type of harsh battles did he have to endure in order gain such horrendous wounds? How much did he have to bleed in order for this much blood to cover him?

In this isolated cave, after confronting the ten or so beast like people, Xia Ning Chang and Kai Yang felt that they were mutually dependant on each other for their survival. So when she saw his miserable condition, how could her heart not be in pain?

There was no female that didn't have the dream of the hero saving the damsel.

(TL: There you go boys. Another method to help you pick up girls Might not work though)

Although the person saving her wasn't some great hero, nor was it through some heroic deed. It was only an ordinary initial element stage junior brother. When compared to her own cultivation, their distance was tens of thousands of li apart. But regardless, the young lady's heart couldn't help but have a few ripples.

"Small injuries!" Kai Yang replied in an uncaring tone: "That's right, I discovered the Nine Yin Dew Crystals."

"Oh." Wiping her eyes, Xia Ning Chang didn't register the excitement within his voice.

“How do we actually capture those things? I think it’s about time you told me.” He asked, “Otherwise, when we find them again, I’m afraid we can only let them escape again.”

“We don’t need them anymore.” Pulling on Kai Yang’s hand gently, Xia Ning Chang motioned for Kai Yang to sit down.

“Why don’t you need them?” This caused Kai Yang to furrow his brow. Suffering all those hardships and trials, wasn’t it all for the Nine Yin Dew Crystals?

Ignoring his question, Xia Ning Chang began: “Sit down before we talk.”

Looking at her suspiciously, Kai Yang then began to slowly sit down.

Bowing down her head, half kneeling in front of Kai Yang, she bit her lip. Then reaching into her dress, she began to fiercely rip her clothing to shreds. After tearing a long strip of cloth, she took out a bottle of medicine and smeared some onto the cloth. Then tentatively, she started to bandage the wound on Kai Yang’s abdomen.

Kai Yang allowed her to fiddle with the bandage.

“We shall wait for sunrise here.” As she said this, she was also bandaging Kai Yang’s injury: “Once the sunrises, the Eight Locks Nine Clouds seal will come undone. When that time arrives, we shall leave this place!”

“But the reason why we came here.....”

“We don’t need it anymore!” Cutting off Kai Yang, Xia Ning Chang’s words held a resolute tone, “It’s not worth it for that!”

Looking at her in a pondering way, Kai Yang spoke up: “I know what you are thinking about. But I have already killed nine of them. There are only those two remaining.”

“What?” Raising her head, Xia Ning Chang’s pair of eyes contained her disbelief.

“They have two people, we also have two people. Are you afraid that they will do anything?” A flash of madness could be seen in Kai Yang’s eyes, “Since they won’t be merciful, then naturally we shall not be polite either! The Nine Yin Dew Crystals will not be spared either. We cannot do things halfway.”

“You’re joking right?” Xia Ning Chang delicately asked.

“Are you that easily tricked?” Kia Yang chuckled, but in doing so accidentally tore his wound open a bit and couldn’t help but let out a hiss of pain.

“They really only have two people remaining?”

“En. Only Long Hui and that person who injured you are left.” He said nodding his head in response.

Xia Ning Chang stared blankly ahead. Previously Xia Ning Chang thought that

when Kai Yang had left, he was chased madly by those wanting to kill them; thus receiving those wounds. She thought he was quite lucky to have escaped with his life. But in actuality, he had gone and killed nine people in four short hours!

There were quite a few at the separation and reunion boundary as well.

How did he achieve this?

“If they really only have two people remaining, then we really don’t need to fear them.” She said, knitting her eyebrows together: “My only worry is that true element boundary master. Once his true cultivation is restored and he is adamant about chasing us, then we will truly be unable to escape far.”

Raising his eyebrows Kai Yang asked: “Once the seal breaks, his cultivation can return?”

“Yes.”

“Then we have no choice!” Kai Yang’s expression gradually turned cold and decisive.

If they don’t kill that true element boundary master before the sun rises, then they would be the ones to be killed.

“But I have only recovered twenty percent of my strength. If we really encounter that powerhouse, then I’m afraid we would be in great danger.” Xia Ning Chang sighed out.

“I have salvaged quite a lot of medicinal pills. Go look around for any that you can use.” Taking out the pills he had looted from the corpses, he then went to search Yuan Lang’s body.

Immediately he found a few bottles of pills. From the looks of it, Yuan Lang was quite wealthy more than the other disciples at least; from the amount of bills and money alone, he had a few folds more.

“With these Qi returning pills, I should be able to recover forty percent of my power.” A small smile could be seen on Xia Ning Chang’s petite face.

“Go restore your World Qi then. I shall stand guard for you.” Kai Yang also needed a bit of time to recover. Although he hadn’t used up all of his World Qi, he still needed to restore his physical and mental energy.

Chapter 111 - Their respective battles

There was only two hours left until the sun rose.

Walking out of the hidden cave, Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang started to follow the flow of Yin Qi within the valley.

It was extremely easy to identify the direction the Yin Qi was flowing in. This was because the Nine Yin Dew Crystals were absorbing the Qi at a monstrous pace.

Basically speaking, as long as you were within the valley, you would be able to sense this change.

From Kai Yang's speculations, the two remaining people from the Blood Group would also go to investigate this movement of the Yin Qi. When that time came, they would naturally meetup.

Even after killing several qi transforming and separation and reunion boundary practitioners, Kai Yang's battle thirst had yet to subside. This was because there was still a master at the true element realm; as long as pressure existed the golden skeleton would automatically be active causing both his mind and body to be unable to relax.

The only unknown factor was how much power that true element practitioner had remaining after being sealed.

After the time it took burn a stick of incense, they gradually drew closer to the

location of the Nine Yin Dew Crystals. In that area, there was a bright light, the Nine Yin Dew Crystal floated at the center of this light. At that point, Yin Qi was gobbled up, disappearing at a rapid pace.

This truly was the Nine Yin Dew Crystals that Kai Yang had seen earlier.

But its current appearance, when compared to before, was vastly different.

The previous Nine Yin Dew Crystals were very plain, with no distinct shape. Presently it looked like a young flower bud that was beginning to bloom. The young and tender flower petals could all be distinctly distinguished.

Hiding themselves, their distance to the Nine Yin Dew Crystals was about fifty feet.

Xia Ning Chang softly whispered: "The Nine Yin Dew Crystals are situated within that flower bud. Once the bud fully blooms, they will reveal themselves. Only when that moment comes, would we be able to capture them. Originally, I had planned to use the sealing formation to obtain the Nine Yin Dew Crystals, but I was forced to activate it early to deal with those people. And only when all those people who have been sealed have died, will the Nine Yin Eight Cloud locks return. I can only count on junior brother's ability now; for it perfectly counters its Yin attribute. I'm afraid I have no skills that can assist you this time."

"Doesn't it know how to flee?" Kai Yang asked, wrinkling his brows.

"That's right, so.....there isn't much hope." Once again, Xia Ning Chang started to have thoughts of retreating.

“Say, if we were to kill the remaining people, then would you be able to use the sealing formation again?” Squinting his eyes, Kai Yang asked.

“Even if you speak like that, what if they don’t come here?”

“They have already arrived.” His gaze expressionless, Kai Yang suddenly pivoted his head, looking to the side.

Wen Fei Chen’s hearty laugh could be heard: “Hehe, you are quite sharp eyed boy!”

Xia Ning Chang’s beautiful face became icy as she swivelled her head towards the direction of his voice. Looking over, she saw Wen Fei Chen and Long Hui walking together, like a married couple; their gazes contained a fiery passion as they looked at the slightly poor conditioned Xia Ning Chang.

It was just one of them coveted the heaven grade defensive artifact on her, while the other coveted her body.

Kia Yang’s expression was calm, as he stood shoulder to shoulder with Xia Ning Chang; facing the approaching pair.

Calm and composed, Wen Fei Chen stopped twenty feet away from them. Keeping his smile he said: “You guys are surprisingly still alive. It seems like those trash really can’t become anything big.”

Without rest, Wen Fei Chen had been diligently attempting to unseal the Yin Qi seals within his body. But no matter what he did, he couldn’t make it happen, meanwhile none of those disciple had come back to report. This had caused him

and Long Hui to be very anxious. Afterwards, they both felt the change in the Yin Qi within the valley. Investigating the cause had led them to this location.

As soon as they arrived, they were greeted by Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang. Due to this, Wen Fei Chen and Long Hui had become overjoyed at this fortuitous encounter. No longer bothering to hide their presence, they grandly walked over.

Since things had escalated to this degree, Wen Fei Chen wouldn't be polite and talk things out. He then called out on the spot, wanting to recall the disciples.

After calling out, he realised that the youngster standing opposite him didn't have an ounce of fear; in fact, his gaze held ridicule.

This caused Wen Fei Chen to be puzzled, why was he so certain and confident.

Taking a step forward, Kai Yang sneered, calling out: "Even if your throat gets hurt from the shouting, no one will come to aid you!"

Wen Fei Chen's expression faltered: "What happened to them?"

"They have all, already died! Dead people have no method to return to help you!" Kai Yang chuckled as he replied.

Momentarily, Wen Fei Chen's expression became dark, looking at Xia Ning Chang in astonishment.

From his conjunctures, in order to kill all those separation and reunion

boundary disciples, only Xia Ning Chang would be able to do it. A measly practitioner at Kai Yang's level would not be able to complete this feat.

A miscalculation, a miscalculation. Never in his wildest dreams would he have predicted that, that this female would still have the energy to do something like that. A couple of hours earlier, when he had landed that blow on her body, he could feel that she didn't have much power remaining. How could she recover this fast?

"Even if all of them are dead, don't you guys even dream of escaping my hands!" Arrogantly humph-ing, it was clear that he didn't really care about those disciples' deaths.

Taking another step forward, Kai Yang activated his True Yang Tactics, with his blood boiling and his killing intent soaring. Just as he prepared to land a blow on Wen Fei Chen, a beautiful figure flew out from behind him towards Wen Fei Chen.

Xia Ning Chang had taken the initiative to attack first. Furthermore, it was a direct provocation to Wen Fei Chen and Long Hui.

She clearly wanted to lookout for the injured Kia Yang; initiating a 2 vs. 1 battle.

Her figure swaying, ten Yin Qi arrows attacked flew out; seven towards Wen Fei Chen, and three towards Long Hui. Their speed was as fast as lightning and their presence, domineering.

Wen Fei Chen laughed out coldly: "Little girl, your killing intent is quite strong.

This isn't very good!"

As he spoke, he used his two hands to easily dissolve the incoming attacks and said: "Young master Long, I shall leave that boy to you. I shall take of this girl!"

"Okay!" Nodding his head slightly, Long Hui didn't forget to casually add: "Just don't injure her face."

"This Wen will be careful!" Smiling knowingly, he immediately dashed towards Xia Ning Chang to begin their battle.

Even though Xia Ning Chang had recovered around forty percent of her strength, she still had injuries that needed to be considered. All in all, her current power was equivalent to a martial practitioner at the qi transforming sixth-seventh stage.

But Wen Fei Chen's situation was even more tragic, he could only use strength equal to that of a practitioner at around the qi transforming third stage.

But in actuality, their true cultivations were vastly different. Xia Ning Chang was at the peak of the separation and reunion boundary, her body containing World Qi. While Wen Fei Chen was at the true element boundary, his body containing True Qi!

True Qi versus World Qi, they were completely different in nature. The killing power that the former could emit was greater than the later by many folds.

Furthermore, Wen Fei Chen's battle experience far surpassed that of Xia Ning Chang. So when they exchanged blows, it was Xia Ning Chang who felt strained.

Although she wouldn't lose immediately, it was just with her strength alone, she would be unable to defeat him. At most, they would be able to fight to a draw.

Since both were experts, the battle was very intricate; their figures soaring through the air and landing hundreds of feet away.

Kai Yang didn't pay too much attention to Xia Ning Chang's battle, because he had his own opponent to worry about.

Glancing over at Long Hui who about ten feet away, Kai Yang suddenly grinned: "Young master Long right?"

Long Hui sneered: "Want to beg for forgiveness? It's too late!"

"I have a couple of questions I want to ask you."

Displaying an idiotic expression towards Kai Yang, he indifferently said: "If they are your final wishes before death, then I can actually fulfill them for you!"

Chapter 112 - Defeated everywhere

“Just treat it like so.” Smiling, without giving a definite answer, Kai Yang continued: “You really just came for Hu Mei Er, that’s why you came to kill me right?”

Long Hui’s expression faltered a bit, but he quickly recovered and disdainfully replied: “If not, why would this young master come so far and stir up a fuss with you? You think I’m full and have nothing to do?”

Wrinkling his brows Kai Yang stated: “But my relationship with Hu Mei Er isn’t even that close. At most, we have only met a few times.”

“Humph, perhaps you have nothing towards her. But, that cheap woman feels differently about you!” Anger started appear on Long Hui’s face, “For you, she even dared to disobey my grandfather! She has never done that type of action before! Nor has she ever dared to help another male to this extent! Who are you, to actually have ideas on my woman!”

“Your grandfather.....” A streak of maliciousness flashed through Kai Yang’s eyes; remembering Long Zai Tian’s capricious strike. That day, if it wasn’t for the Golden Skeleton’s ability, assisting him in breaking his limits, then he would have died.

“I still have another question!” Kai Yang sneered, “How is it that you knew I had left Sky Tower?”

Since they held the ability to track them all the way here, then they must have

started to follow shortly after his departure. If not, then they would have long since lost his trail. In other words, before he even left Sky Tower, he had already been targeted by someone with ill intent.

Laughing in a mocking manner Long Hui replied: “Naturally someone came to inform me.”

As expected!

“As for who came to inform me, this master isn’t willing to tell you. But I think you know clearly, who it was that you offended!” Long Hui looked at Kai Yang in contempt, still gazing at him like he was looking at a dead man. Due to this, there was no hint of him wanting to lie, so he explained everything clearly. “As for that Nu Lang, he was out of my expectations. I met him in a small village at the foot of the mountains.”

Kai Yang merely nodded his head, since Long Hui had no real reason to lie to him. And because of this, the information must be real and Nu Lan merely joined them midway. There was no need to think further, after all, he was dead.

“This young master has already satisfied your wishes, now die for me!” Laughing out, Long Hui’s figure flickered and he immediately closed the distance between them. Excitement could be seen in his eyes, while the World Qi from the qi transformation first stage revolved around his fists, striking out.

With every punch, a feathery shape of Qi burst out from his fist to attack.

Flying Exploding Feathers! Earth Grade Middle Level Martial Skill!

Since Long Hui was the grandson of Long Zai Tian, then the martial skills that he cultivated naturally wouldn't be ordinary goods. You could say that even though he was at the qi transforming first stage, his true power enabled him to battle opponents at a much higher cultivation stage than himself.

Long Hui wasn't just a white silk young master. To the current Kai Yang, he still posed a threat as an opponent.

With the feathers onslaught, Kai Yang hurriedly side stepped, causing Long Hui's skill to go to waste. This caused Long Hui to have a slight look of shock at the unexpectedness of his ability.

In his thoughts, he didn't think that the initial element fourth staged Kai Yang would be able to dodge his killing strike.

Swiftly after, strong and bloodthirsty World Qi fluctuations started to disperse from Kai Yang body. Feeling the density of the World Qi fluctuations, Long Hui's expression shifted greatly.

How is this the aura of the initial element fourth stage? It was clearly the aura at the peak of the initial element stage, even the purity and strength could match up to his.

This flabbergasting surprise lasted only a moment. Afterwards, Long Hui had already appeared next to Kai Yang with World Qi coating his fists. Mercilessly, he smashed downwards towards Kai Yang.

Kai Yang dodged to side once again, making the fist hit the ground. Upon contact, dust and rock bits flew into the air. When the dust cleared, a decent

sized hole had formed in the ground.

Before Long Hui could rise up, Kai Yang took the opportunity to rush forward. His knee raised high, he aimed a powerful blow at Long Hui's chin.

Long Hui's reaction wasn't slow. In one fluid movement, he raised his hand to block the chin strike, and pushed down.

With his knee locked in, both of their World Qi's burst out. While Kai Yang was left staggering, Long Hui flew backwards and then used his energy to disperse Kai Yang's attack.

After their exchange, both people rushed to stabilize themselves.

Looking up and down at Kai Yang, Long Hui narrowed his eyes: "It turns out that you have always hid your true cultivation! But no matter, even if this is your cultivation, it isn't sufficient to defeat me!"

As soon as those words were said, a golden brilliance erupted from Long Hui's feet. His body blurry, he arrived behind Kai Yang in an instant.

Golden Rainbow Steps! Another Earth Grade Middle Level martial skill.

Drawing support from this wonderful movement skill, Long Hui finally arrived at the hole in Kai Yang's defense. The World Qi gathered at his fingertips flew out towards the back of his neck. It was clear that he wanted to kill Kai Yang in one shot.

On the verge of death, Kai Yang felt a light breeze on the back of his neck. Reacting swiftly, he tilted his head to the side, just in time to feel a cold rush of World Qi draw a line of blood across his cheek.

Twisting his body around, the drop of Yang Liquid within Kai Yang's hands had already morphed into a cicada thin blood-red blade; aiming directly to the nearby Long Hui.

This is a powerful enemy! Kai Yang didn't dare to be clumsy. Any small mishap and he could easily lose his life!

As the blade cut towards Long Hui, Kai Yang could see it slicing him in half. But Kai Yang didn't allow himself to rejoice because he could feel that the blade did not truly cut through Long Hui. It was only an afterimage that he had attacked.

The opponent's footwork was extremely profound!

"Reaction's not bad!" Long Hui's voice echoed from about ten feet away. Calm and unruffled, he gazed at Kai Yang in amusement.

Shaking a bit, Kai Yang suddenly threw the thin blade out.

Long Hui didn't dare to stop moving, activating the Golden Rainbow Steps, he dodged once again. Like a cat chasing a mouse, he looked at Kai Yang with a look of contempt and disdain.

Keeping silent, but filled with undying and unwavering battle spirit, Kai Yang's steps were like the wind. In an instant he arrived at Long Hui's side punching at him.

Returning without any achievement! Long Hui's figure had already appeared in another location.

"Humph. Just with your snail pace, you actually want to prevail over me? You overestimate yourself!" Not sparing his mouth a break, Long Hui immediately started to mock him.

He felt that since he was using the Golden Rainbow Steps, his victory was assured. If the opponent couldn't hit him, then how could he win? With his fierce barrage of attacks, he was blatantly wasting his World Qi away. Waiting until Kai Yang used all of his World Qi, he shall then finish it in one strike.

With that thought in mind, he decided on his method to take down Kai Yang; he wanted to use the least amount of energy to do so.

"Slow, too slow....."

"If you can't kill me, then this young master shall go and take that female for himself."

"What does she really look like? I have quite great expectations, and what amazing sounds she will make when she is being ravaged!"

"Hehehe, this young master just loves to hear the unwilling cries of females being raped. Just thinking about that scene, you can't help but love it!"

Chapter 113 - Long Hui's death

One couldn't help but say, although Long Hui was a white silk young master, he still knew how to words his sentences so as to create a path to

Unable to dodge Kai Yang's strike, he spoke out prodigally.

If it were anybody else, then they would have already long since become thoroughly enraged.

Kai Yang seemed to show all the signs of being enraged; his eyes were red and his World Qi flared about rebelliously, clearly displaying his fury. But upon closer inspection, you could see the unwaveringness within his eyes and his heart's thoughts were just as stable as before.

After the time it took burn a stick of incense, Kai Yang had already struck out numerous times, yet none of these strikes could touch even a single thread of Long Hui's clothes.

Meanwhile Long Hui, who had become parched from all his remarks, was secretly shocked.

Reason dictated, after fighting for this long, this kid's World Qi reserves should have been long since exhausted. Yet why did none of his strikes weaken in the least? This brat's World Qi levels shouldn't be able to support this amount of activity, ah.

What Long Hui thought wasn't incorrect, ordinary initial element stage

practitioners would have long since become exhausted from the fighting. But Kai Yang wasn't a normal initial element practitioner, so after fighting an extended bout with him, Long Hui started to have second thoughts about his strategy.

While he was reflecting on it, Kai Yang struck again, every time Long Hui's image would immediately flicker and he would reappear somewhere else. But when he dodged, he immediately he felt a fiery hot energy fly at his waist.

Looking down, he saw that a hole had been burnt in his clothes. That strike just then had very nearly wounded him.

"What a pity!" Taking a deep breath, the look within Kai Yang's eyes became more excited, mixed with an opposing look of steadiness. This was an extremely contradictory look, yet they merged together perfectly.

"How could this be?" Long Hui's expression changed greatly.

That strike was clearly a strike that his opponent had carefully calculated and initiated before he landed. If it weren't for his good luck, then he would have already been injured.

But how did he predict where he was going to land? Could it be that, in the time it took to burn a stick of and incense, Kai Yang had already comprehended his Golden Divine Steps?

Impossible! He was only at the initial element, could his eyesight be that good?

"Next time, even if you don't die, you will suffer severe injuries!" Kai Yang coldly stated, looking at Long Hui, his tone conveying his confidence.

“Your mother’s fart!” Long Hui bellowed, “You want to scare this lord! You’re still too inexperienced!”

Not bothering to reply, Kai Yang continued his crazy attacks.

Long Hui was thoroughly enraged. This time he didn’t use the Gold Rainbow Steps, but instead directly went to greet Kai Yang’s strike head on.

“Peng” their collision sounded. Kai Yang was as steady as a rock, not moving an inch. Meanwhile Long Hui felt the invasion of World Qi into his body and stumbled back a few steps.

Crying out strangely, Long Hui didn’t dare to meet Kai Yang head on anymore. Revolving his World Qi, he activated his Golden Rainbow Steps and hastily tried to widen the distance between them.

“Sou” another sound rang out. A crimson red droplet shaped object flew out. When Long Hui had just regained his footing, it directly entered his body via the right side of his chest.

Screaming out miserably, Long Hui’s face paled, clutching his chest. Gasping for breath, bloody foam began to form at his mouth: “It can’t be, it can’t be. It is definitely impossible!”

His Golden Rainbow Steps had actually been seen through. With Kai Yang’s attack already shooting out towards his landing position, Long Hui had no method of avoiding it.

Not to mention that the attack was so domineering it caused one's heart to shiver. Not only had it penetrated his Ordinary Grade Lower level defensive artifact, it had also entered into his body. If it wasn't for his protective layer of World Qi, it would have penetrated through to his core.

"There is nothing impossible!" Kai Yang's expression remained cool as he strode forward with quick steps. How could Long Hui dare to stay and fight? Hastening his own steps, Long Hui started to escape towards Wen Fei Chen's position: "Hallmaster Wen, save me!"

The current Long Hui was like a frightened stray dog; how could his previous arrogance and steadiness remain?

Just as he stabilized his body again, a piercing pain spread out from his back. Long Hui directly fell face first onto the ground.

As he was struggling to get up, a large foot landed on the back of his neck; the foot was heavy, like a mountain. Long Hui floundered about on the ground, but not matter what, he could not turn over.

"I am the grandson of the Blood Group's Long Zai Tian. If you spare me, I will give you money, give you women, whatever you want I will give to you. If you kill me, not only will it bring you nothing, it will also cause my Long family come and kill you." Not stopping his struggles, Long Hui also repeatedly begged for mercy. Facing the incomparably steady Kai Yang, Long Hui's gaze was one of poisonous compliance.

"Young master Long!" Kai Yang began, "Your bloodcurdling screams aren't the least bit pleasant to hear!"

“Yes, yes, yes! Brother Kai speaks the truth. If you don’t like it, then I won’t shout!” When at the edge of the cliff, how could Long Hui dare to not bow his head.

“Then stay silent forever!” Upon finishing, Kai Yang stomped Long Hui’s entire face into the ground and used his fist to snap his neck.

“Ka cha”. Long Hui’s neck snapped, his eyes popping out with alarm and remorse.

Using one hand, Kai Yang lifted up Long Hui’s corpse and hurried to the location of the other battle.

A short while later, the figures of Wen Fei Chen and Xia Ning Chang entered the sights of Kai Yang.

Presently, both were evenly matched; neither was inferior to the other!

Of the two people, one had his cultivation sealed, while the other was injured and yet to fully recover her World Qi. So she didn’t have the ability to display her true power, as such her attacks also suffered a large decrease in power.

Even so, this high levelled battle between experts was far more intense than any other battle Kai Yang had experienced.

Figures flickering, they were basically appearing here and there with their World Qi bursting out. While the battle situation was extremely dire.

Kai Yang stood to the side watching for awhile. He knew that if it were one on one, then he would have absolutely no hope, but with Xia Ning Chang it was different. Two on one, this was much easier.

Looking around, Kai Yang heart knew what he needed to do. Closing in on Wen Fei Chen, he carried Long Hui's body while shouting out: "Hallmaster Wen, come look at who this is!"

Wen Fei Chen had long sensed Kai Yang's presence, but he didn't dare to probe around, naturally he wouldn't know the answer to that question. But upon hearing Kai Yang's question, he turned his head around to look and immediately cried out: "Young master Long!"

The current Long Hui had a large hole in his chest with blood flowing out. His neck was soft and flabby, the bones in his neck had been shattered while his head hung limply, without the slightest bit of life!

Long Hui had died! Wen Fei Chen didn't dare to believe his eyes. No matter what, this playful young master was still a qi transforming first stage practitioner right? He also cultivated many martial skills that made even Wen Fei Chen himself drool, so his battle power wasn't small.

It was only because Wen Fei Chen had trusted in his battle power, that he could calmly allow him to do battle with Kai Yang. But how is he now dead.

Shoot! Shoot! Wen Fei Chen whined within his heart. It was okay if the others from the Blood Group had died, but Long Hui could not die! If he died, didn't it mean that Long Zai Tian would become incredibly furious? If this immortal zone boundary expert blamed him, he wouldn't be able to bear the consequences.

(TLN: Ascension will become zone because it makes it feel as if the next stage is one where one will become an immortal, which is highly unlikely. Zone would be better, as it hints towards immortality yet shows they haven't reached it yet.)

Chapter 114 - Wen Fei Chen's defeat

In a battle between experts, victory is usually decided within an instant.

Long Hui's death clearly caused a ripple within Wen Fei Chen's heart, creating an opening for Xia Ning Chang.

How could Xia Ning Chang miss this opportunity? Her eyes glinting, hands flashing, her killing strike was launched.

Feeling a bad premonition, Wen Fei Chen hurriedly put up some defences. Unfortunately he didn't react in time, so he suffered some injuries to his chest.

Before Wen Fei Chen could even send out his own counter attack against Xia Ning Chang, Kai Yang had made his move. Carrying Long Hui's corpse in front of him, he executed a sneak attack from under Long Hui's armpit with a blazing fist.

In a timely manner, Xia Ning Chang further pressured Wen Fei Chen.

Stuck in a pincer formation, Wen Fei Chen's posture was very flustered and messy. He was in a very sticky situation.

With his current power, he had no way to deal with Xia Ning Chang, but dealing with Kai Yang was a different matter. Unfortunately, he had despicably used Long Hui's corpse as a shield. No matter how many hundreds of methods Wen Fei Chen possessed, he could not use a single one because of this.

In order to injure Kai Yang, he must first destroy Long Hui's corpse, which he

definitely wasn't willing to do!

"You shameless child!" Wen Fei Chen roared out in extreme rage. While deterring the two's attacks, he also continuously raged: "The dead should be respected! By treating young master Long's corpse this way, aren't you afraid you will suffer the wrath of the heavens?"

(TL: I think if martial artists don't want to cultivate anymore, they should become debators or salesmen. Great use of vocabulary right there.)

Kai Yang merely scoffed: "The one who should suffer Heaven's wrath should be you! If you guys didn't force it this far, would things have escalated to such a degree?"

His rebuttal left Wen Fei Chen speechless. What he said was right. The only reason why these people had come to this mountain valley was to search for some heavenly treasures, provoking no one. While his group had chased them from far away to kill them, a true act of the strong bullying the weak. What right did he have to criticize them?

In the midst of the confusion, Kai Yang took the opportunity to finally land a blow. While Wen Fei Chen busied himself defending against Xia Ning Chang, Kai Yang managed to land a hit on his waist.

The Yang Liquid activating, an entire ten drops were used at once, plunging straight out.

Wen Fei Chen let out a groan, hastily retreating. Great shock and alarm could be seen on his face, as he stared at Kai Yang.

He had discovered that this youngster's attacks were far more vicious than that female's, and by many folds too! Boiling hot Yang Qi immediately surged into his body, while a bloody hole had appeared on his body. Although the wound was not too serious, it still wasn't shallow.

Frowning, Kai Yang realised that he was still lacking when facing this expert at the true element boundary. Ten drops of Yang Liquid had been used, yet it still hadn't been sufficient to pierce through him!

The True Qi within the body of a true element boundary master, truly possessed better defensive capabilities than World Qi.

"Careful junior brother!" Xia Ning Chang suddenly cried out.

At the same instance, Kai Yang saw that a wild killing intent had appeared within Wen Fei Chen's eyes as he threw himself over.

Finally he had reached his limit, he was thoroughly enraged. Or did he actually enjoy being abused? Slowly, the corners of Kai Yang's mouth upturned in an extremely sinister smile.

He knew that once he used the Yang Liquid, Wen Fei Chen would then go all out to target him; even if his cultivation was below Xia Ning Chang's, the power he could use was many folds stronger than her.

If he was Wen Fei Chen, he would do the same thing.

Everything was within his calculations!

Facing Wen Fei Chen's attack, Kai Yang did not retreat. Instead, he quickly closed the distance.

"Don't!" Xia Ning Chang cried out. But both were advancing towards each other at high speeds, so it was completely out of her hands.

"Stinking brat!" Wen Fei Chen's tone was severe, not bothering to conceal his intentions. Raising his hand, he directly slapped towards Kai Yang.

Taking a deep breath, Kai Yang immediately tensed all of his muscles, revolving his World Qi to its limit. His bones creaked, a rapid rising in his energy levels turned his skin a crazy red colour.

"Hong!" Wen Fei Chen's palm had landed directly on the corpse of Long Hui.

Like a watermelon, it burst, turning Long Hui into mincemeat. This revealed Kai Yang who was previously hiding behind it.

Following straight after, another palm was sent out targeting the defenceless Kai Yang!

Currently displayed on the faces of both men were extremely profound smiles.

Under the horrified gaze of Xia Ning Chang, a simple strike landed on Kai Yang's chest.

It was quite obvious that Kai Yang's chest had caved in, evidenced by the sound of bones cracking. Kai Yang spurted out a mouthful of blood, which rapidly turned into a bloody mist that landed on the nearby Wen Fei Chen.

How could Wen Fei Chen tolerate a mouthful of blood on his face? His figure flickering, he immediately evaded.

But before he could retract his hand from Kai Yang's chest, he saw that despite the pain evident on Kai Yang's face he was giving him a sneering smile.

Pa.....it rang out. His hands clutching tightly onto Wen Fei Chen's wrist, he breathed in coarsely with his bloodshot eyes boring into him: "You're doomed!"

Wen Fei Chen's face changed greatly! He never would have guessed that this brat's vitality would be this strong. Or that his World Qi's defensive capabilities would be this high. Although his strike had caused Kai Yang to receive grave injuries, it hadn't been able to kill him.

But even so, if an average person was able to endure his strike, they wouldn't be able to rebel, so how was Kai Yang still able to use so much power? He actually grabbed onto him and didn't let go? How much strength did he need to have in order for this to happen?

"Release me!" Raising his hand, Wen Fei Chen prepared to hit Kai Yang.

How could Xia Ning Chang give him this opportunity? In her anger, her beautiful hair billowed around her as she gathered all the Yin Qi within a ten foot radius. Suddenly a glistening ice cone appeared in front of her before charging straight towards Wen Fei Chen.

Before Wen Fei Chen's hand could fall, it was run through by the ice cone, which made him howl out in pain as blood began flowing out.

“Roar!!!!” Suddenly Kai Yang let out an extremely loud and animalistic howl as a berserk-like World Qi energy erupted from his body, becoming more and more violent.

The always steady peak initial element stage Qi fluctuations, had suddenly, under the constant pressure and berserk energy, allowed him to breakthrough to the next stage.

Qi transforming stage!

This wasn't truly the qi transforming stage. It was only the Qi fluctuations of the qi transforming stage.

But the current Kai Yang, in terms of strength, wasn't comparable to others!

Sensing Kai Yang's change, Wen Fei Chen was like a block of ice. Exerting all of his strength, he attempted to retract his hand but was ultimately unable to do so. While his other arm had a fresh hole courtesy of Xia Ning Chang. With these factors and the pain, it caused him to feel more and more unstable.

“Ka cha”. It was precisely from this boost in power that Kai Yang managed to snap Wen Fei Chen's wrist.

Ten strands to the heart, how could one possibly stand that type of pain? In

any case, Wen Fei Chen could not bear the pain any longer and the sound of his screams echoed throughout the valley.

(TL: 十指连心 Wasn't too sure on how to translate this one.)

Another “ka cha” sounded out. Wen Fei Chen’s screams became even more tragic.

Kai Yang sadisticly smiled, as he broke five of his fingers before pulling him down to kneeling position to break his arm.

During this time, Xia Ning Chang didn’t waste any time. Deeply concerned about Kai Yang’s wounds, she mercilessly attacked Wen Fei Chen’s body.

Chapter 115 - Obtaining the Nine Yin Dew Crystals

The moment that Wen Fei Chen had landed his blow on Kai Yang, his defeat had already been decided.

Kai Yang distinctly understood that in order to kill this type of expert, he must first restrict their freedom. Otherwise, just by relying on Xia Ning Chang and his own strength, they would be unable to win.

Since Long Hui had such exquisite footwork, how could an expert at the true element boundary, Wen Fei Chen for instance, not have something similar? If they allowed him to realise that something was up, then as soon as the sun rose, Kai Yang and Xia Ning Chang would be in big trouble.

But in order to restrict an expert, how hard would that be? Even if more than half of his current cultivation had been sealed, he still wasn't someone they could easily go against.

That's why Kai Yang needed to put his own body in danger! By using his own body as bait, he allowed Wen Fei Chen to strike him, thus giving him the chance to grab onto his wrist; essentially binding him!

This was an incredibly bold move. But since Kai Yang had risked himself as part of the strategy, how could Wen Fei Chen not fall into the trap?

With both his hands destroyed, Wen Fei Chen was like a hedgehog that had lost its spikes, full of power but unable to use it.

Swiftly following his defeat was the rhythmic sound of bones breaking and bloodcurdling cries, under of Kai Yang's hands Wen Fei Chen suffered the cruelest torture.

In a ten short breaths time, Wen Fei Chen's cries had gradually stopped; even his breathing had become shallow. His entire body was like soft mud, lying limply on the ground.

Standing to the side, Xia Ning Chang's heart palpitated, like it was her first time truly seeing this junior brother of hers.

Even after observing him for more than two years, how could Xia Ning Chang have possibly seen this ruthless, cold and cruel side of him?

Suddenly, three smokey black Yin chains flew out from Wen Fei Chen's body. At the same time, five other smokey black chains appeared within the valley before disappearing into thin air.

"Junior brother, he is already dead!" Pulling on Kai Yang gently, Xia Ning Chang called out to him.

The appearance of the Yin chains signified the end of Wen Fei Chen!

"Is he dead?" Breathing rapidly, it was only then that Kai Yang slowly straightened up his waist.

"Junior brother, you are fine right?" Xia Ning Chang's tone was full of worry. Currently, she could sense an evil aura being emitted from all over her junior brother's body, like he was about to step into the demonic path.

Kai Yang knew what she was worrying over, grinning somewhat painfully he reassured her: “Don’t panic. This is one of my martial skills, it only looks a bit scary that’s all.”

Looking closely, Xia Ning Chang studied him through her red eyes, although his eyes looked wild, they still continued traces of a cool calmness, symbolising that he was still himself.

“Since all of them are dead, let’s go and find the Nine Yin Dew Crystals!” Kai Yang had yet to forget about that matter.

“Can you still go on? You suffered such heavy injuries though!”

“I’m still okay, but if we wait any longer, then I’m afraid that I won’t be able to go on.” Kai Yang said this as he tugged on Xia Ning Chang’s hand, dragging her to where the Yin Qi was gathering.

As time passed, the amount of Yin Qi within the valley was gradually becoming thinner and thinner. This indicated the location of the Nine Yin Dew Crystals.

Arriving at their destination, that treasure was still there. It had been scared away by the two battles occurring a couple of hundred feet away.

At that very moment, the flower bud was in its last stages, just about ready to bloom. Within the flower bud, were drops of translucent crystal like liquid drops, emitting a serene glow.

“How do we collect them?” Kai Yang asked.

Xia Ning Chang whispered softly: “Use your Yang attributed World Qi to subdue due it. Then.....contain them within your mouth. I will go do the rest. Remember, you can’t use any other part of your body to touch them.”

“Contain them with my mouth?” When Kai Yang heard this, he became bewildered. Just as he was about to inquire further, Xia Ning Chang’s expression became more serious: “They have appeared!”

(TL: Oooooohhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh OoO, [finally])

As those words left her mouth, the flower bud truly began to bloom. Originally it was the darkest hour of the night, but due to the blooming of the flower, the entire valley area lit up.

A single drop of liquid appeared, clear like the fresh morning dew. Floating up slowing from the flower, it was rapidly spinning in circles.

As for the flower it came from, it contained rich amounts of Yin Qi that all began to coalesce into the drop.

It was like a precious stone! Splendid and magnificent like a mansion! But it was still emitting an extremely cold aura of Yin Qi that could cause anyone’s heart to beat rapidly.

The Nine Yin Dew Crystal had appeared!

Her hands swiftly forming the appropriate seals, Xia Ning Chang began to unleash the Nine Yin Eight Cloud Locks once again. In the instant the Nine Yin Dew crystals revealed themselves, “ka-cha, ka-cha” sounds were heard in the air.

And then, a domineering Yin Qi energy began to form. Under the direction of Xia Ning Chang, it surged towards the Nine Yin Dew Crystal and tied it down from all directions. Locking that small area down, it had completely trapped that Nine Yin Dew Crystal.

Dashing to the left, dashing to the right, no matter where the Nine Yin Dew Crystal dashed, in a five feet radius, it could not escape.

“Junior brother, it’s your turn.” Xia Ning Chang said this, as she looked attentively at Kai Yang. Even though she didn’t care too much about this anymore, considering what they had gone through. But since the treasure was right in front of their eyes, if she could collect it, then she would collect it.

Kai Yang nodded his head as he walked over steadily.

Although the eight domineering Yin Qi locks had blocked off the area, they posed no difficulty for Kai Yang, because the True Yang World Qi within Kai Yang’s body had always been the nemesis of Yin Qi.

Walking into that little secluded place, the Nine Yin Dew Crystal seemed to have sensed Kai Yang’s intentions. Due to this, it stayed the furthest possible distance from him, floating in mid-air.

Observing it up close, Kai Yang discovered that it really resembled a precious gemstone. It was shaped like a teardrop and was about the same size as a

human thumbnail.

“Use True Yang World Qi to capture it! How do you do it?” Knitting his eyebrows together, Kai Yang thought for a while, before directly using a drop of Yang Liquid.

Using the Yang Liquid, with a simple thought he turned the drop into a blood-red blade. Casually swinging, he rushed towards the Nine Yin Dew Crystals.

The Nine Yin Dew Crystal still wanted to play around mischievously. Darting left and right, it dodged Kai Yang’s strike.

“How interesting!” Chuckling lightly, Kai Yang suddenly realised that the many treasures that geniuses possessed, all had their own spiritual awareness. But this was the first time he had met one.

Secret artifacts that possessed their own spiritual awareness, were all treasures without equal.

Not wanting to waste time, another drop of Yang Liquid had appeared within Kai Yang’s hands. Once it appeared, he flourished it in an exaggerated manner.

“Let’s see how you escape this time!” Attacking from both sides, would naturally show results. The red blades were like a fish net, entrapping the prey within.

With a flick of his finger, the second drop morphed into a large net. Shooting it out, it wrapped around the Nine Yin Dew Crystal, completely and wholly capturing it.

Kai Yang didn't dare to touch it with his hands, and directly brought the net and crystal both into his mouth.

Once it entered his mouth, the freezing cold air began to envelop his mouth. Even if Kai Yang cultivated the True Yang Tactics, he couldn't help but let out a shiver.

But in the next moment, another wave of energy that couldn't be seen, or felt started to immediately suppress the cold energy. This energy was even more effective than his True Yang World Qi.

At the same time, a mysterious attraction force started to come from within his bones, forcibly activating his True Yang Tactics. With the activation of the True Yang Tactics, he started to absorb the Nine Yin Dew Crystal's energy into his bones.

Sensing this, Kai Yang hurriedly went to stop his True Yang Tactics. But his reaction speed was still too slow, as he could feel that the Nine Yin Dew Crystal within his mouth had shrunk to about half of its previous size. While a unique chilly air could be felt from within his bones before disappearing without a trace.

Chapter 116 - That kiss

Author's note: This is the last chapter of this volume. (Yay! We've come so far. sniffs)

Kai Yang became extremely panicked.

This occurrence was completely out of his predictions. Even though he knew, from his various experimentations, that he was able to absorb other types of energy apart from Yang Qi and store it within his bones he hadn't thought it would occur without him actively trying to do so. But now, he had absorbed half of the Nine Yin Dew Crystal? Not to mention that the speed at which he had done so was quite fast.

This object was something that Xia Ning Chang needed, so what should he do?

Turning his head around, Kai Yang looked over awkwardly. Not knowing how to explain what had just happened, Xia Ning Chang had already arrived at his side, bringing with her, her natural fragrance.

Currently, the cheeks of his little senior sister were bright red, coupled with equally red earlobes. Breathing rapidly, bashful shyness could clearly be seen within those crystal clear eyes of hers.

"Junior brother.....please bear with it for a while." Speaking suddenly, Xia Ning Chang reached out with her hand and wrapped it around Kai Yang's head. Then she pulled his head down towards her.

Her hands were somewhat cool, but felt supple, as if there were no bones within them. They were like a fresh winter snowflake which had descended, giving Kai Yang a chill.

Standing on her tippy-toes, Xia Ning Chang closed her eyes while her long lashes fluttered. Lifting up her veil, her red precious gemstone lips sealed themselves over Kai Yang's mouth.

With two soft lips pressing onto his own a sweet and alluring scent wafted at the tip of Kai Yang's nose.

Kai Yang was stunned.

At that time, Kai Yang finally realised the reason why whenever he asked questions regarding the Nine Yin Dew Crystal, both Treasurer Meng and Xia Ning Chang dodged the questions and were so unwilling to respond.

Originally Kai Yang didn't know the root of this dilemma, but everything had suddenly become clear.

Between the heavens and the earth, there were thousands of methods to collect things. Each object with spiritual awareness had its own method. While the collection method of the Nine Yin Dew Crystal was actually this alluring, this sweet!

Two pairs of lips interlocked, causing Kai Yang's breathing to become more ragged. From his throat, a burning sensation started to arise; so hot it was, that even the Nine Yin Dew Crystal couldn't suppress it as his blood boiled.

Xia Ning Chang was in a far worse state. After kissing, she stood there like a buddha statue, not moving an inch, while her skin was blood-red. Not to mention the beating of her heart sounded like the drums of war, as she stood there completely at a loss on what to do.

Although Kai Yang did not know the theory and specifics on how to capture the Nine Yin Dew Crystal, at the very least, he knew that it wouldn't be achieved if their current actions continued as they were.

Not daring to tarry, Kai Yang wrapped his arm around Xia Ning Chang's slender waist and pulled her into his embrace. Securing her, he wrapped his tongue around the crystal before prying open her mouth, he then delivered it into her mouth.

Stimulated by the cold from the Nine Yin Dew Crystal, Xia Ning Chang managed to regain a bit of her senses back. Knowing what she needed to do, she accepted the crystal and directly swallowed it.

Tasting some sweetness at the tip of their tongues, their two bodies clung closely together. More so with Kai Yang's ** upper body, became more and more sensitive. Being the young hot blooded youngster he was, how could he possibly bear this type of stimulation?

Basically by instinct, one hand wrapped tightly around Xia Ning Chang, while his other had gone to her round buttocks, gently kneading it.

Feeling the two soft mounds on his chest, her warmth, Kai Yang's breathing couldn't help but quicken. Carefully and attentively, he maneuvered his hands to wantonly rub those two startling elastic jade mounds.

Sounds of **, full of pleasure came from Xia Ning Chang's mouth. Kai Yang could clearly see her closed eyes open slightly, as her eyelashes fluttered. When he realised he was staring at her, he hurriedly continued.

Coarse breathing, the bodily interaction, the touching of their tongues and the lack of mindfulness, caused the young male and female to forget their surroundings completely. Each closely hugged the other, wishing that they could merge with each other.

Suddenly, Kai Yang's tongue started to hurt, making him scream out in pain.

Taking the opportunity, Xia Ning Chang pushed on Kai Yang's chest. Nibbling lightly, she escaped from Kai Yang's embrace.

"Why did you bite me?" Kai Yang could feel that his tongue had been cut open by the bite, as a bit of blood pooled in his mouth.

Clasping her hands on together, Xia Ning Chang's chest heaved up and down. Breathing in deep breaths, she strived to calm her racing heartbeat, before responding after awhile: "I'm sorry. In order to refine the Nine Yin Dew Crystal, I need a bit of your pure inborn Yang attributed Qi and a bit of your tongue's blood!"

To subdue the Nine Yin Dew Crystal one actually need some pure Yang attributed Qi! The purer the better, and because Kai Yang cultivated the True Yang Tactics, he was the best candidate.

And in order to refine it, you needed natural inborn Yang attributed Qi and the tongue's blood.

Natural inborn Yang Qi was something that couldn't be cultivated. It was something that all males were born with. At birth, males are born with a mysterious energy, and until they had intimate relationships with a female it would remain. Even if it did disappear, it wouldn't have any influence on them.

But this energy was needed at certain times, an example was a situation like this.

The previous heat that Kai Yang had felt, the energy that had enveloped the Nine Yin Dew Crystal's cold, was precisely his natural inborn Yang Qi.

That was also the reason why Treasurer Meng was adamant in knowing whether or not Kai Yang was a virgin. It was only virgin boys that still possessed their natural inborn Yang Qi, and it was only the tongue blood of virgin boys that was usable in refining the Nine Yin Dew Crystals.

Hearing Xia Ning Chang say it, Kai Yang touched his mouth and seriously replied: "So it was like this. Is it enough? If it's not enough, I still have more."

Isn't it just a few drops of blood from the tongue?

Shy beyond belief, Xia Ning Chang couldn't help but want to hide in some hole. Nodding her head vigorously she said: "Enough! One drop is already enough!"

"Oh." Kai Yang couldn't help but reply with some disappointment. Recalling the touch of her tongue and feeling of her body, he couldn't help but sigh. It was the first time that he had such a close relationship with a female.

“Little senior sister.....” Kai Yang called out hesitantly, his eyes full of burning passion.

Xia Ning Chang immediately became frantic, how could she not be able to hear the underlying wish of Kai Yang’s?

Replying promptly: “You still have various wounds, so you should go and focus on healing. I also need to refine the Nine Yin Dew Crystal.”

“Oh!” Kai Yang remembered the words she had once said. Once they had obtained the Nine Yin Dew Crystal, if they didn’t refine it within two hours, it would disappear.

“That’s right, this thing.....” Just as Kai Yang was about to inform her that he had absorbed half of the energy, the world around him started to dim. Losing strength, Kai Yang collapsed onto the ground, his consciousness quickly faded.

“Junior brother!” Crying out loudly, Xia Ning Chang went to support him. Worrying, she checked his pulse, her expression quickly paled.

She had discovered that his pulse was extremely weak, his vitality was at an all time low. Not to mention that his World Qi was incredibly depleted. He was like an extremely dried up oil lamp.

This was no small matter, Xia Ning Chang’s small heart nearly shrivelled up.

How could it be like this? He was just fine a minute ago, and just then he was doing.....how could he faint without any sign?

But due to this check up, Xia Ning Chang was able to understand the full extent of the injuries Kai Yang had suffered.

The wounds on his stomach and shoulder didn't need to be mentioned, as they were already treated and wrapped earlier. But due to the battle, his wounds had opened once more, with blood flowing out profusely. The most serious was the one to his chest. Five of his ribs had been broken, while a portion of his chest had caved in, clearly it had injured his lung. That strike of Wen Fei Chen's, had contained his fury, so how could it be light?

Chapter 117 - Subduing and breaking through

This entire night, it was unknown how many cc's of blood Kai Yang had lost. It wasn't until this moment that Xia Ning Chang fully understood the monstrous amount of willpower her junior brother had relied on during the night.

With these types of wounds, if his position was switched with a normal person, who knew how many times that person would die. While he bit down and held out against the pain and accompanied her to kill that final enemy, and then assisted her to capture the Nine Yin Dew Crystal.

After completing all of that, once he relaxed his mind, it was of no surprise that he would faint.

Placating the anxiety within her heart, Xia Ning Chang went to take out the remaining pills from within Kai Yang's clothes. Then bracing herself, she forced herself to search Wen Fei Chen's body and found more pills which she then fed to Kai Yang.

But Kai Yang was currently in a coma, so how could he possibly swallow those pills?

Thinking for a while, Xia Ning Chang began to break the pills into pieces before feeding them to Kai Yang.

Just as she was busying herself with various things, the Nine Yin Eight Locks suddenly burst out and disappeared.

The sun was up! With the sun brimming with vitality, the Nine Yin Eight Locks sealing formation had dissolved.

Unbeknownst to Xia Ning Chang, she did not sense the passage of time within the mountain valley as she was preoccupied tending to Kai Yang.

A wave of tyrannical but soft energy passed over Xia Ning Chang's body. Shivering from the sensation, she suddenly looked up, as a figure appeared within her view.

"Master!" As soon as Xia Ning Chang saw him, it was like a crack had formed in a dam wall. With her master's appearance, her reliance on him appeared as tears flowed unceasingly down her beautiful face.

His face serious, Meng Wu Ya was about to reprimand Xia Ning Chang when he saw that something was not quite right. Looking around his face became concerned as he asked: "What happened?"

Old Man Meng had stood guard outside of the Nine Yin Eight Locks formations for a good portion of the night. He did not dare to enter, as he assumed that the capturing of the dew drop had gone successfully. After all, he had prepared these things for many years, and all they needed was the corporation of Kai Yang. After that, everything was easy.

It was just that his beloved and treasured disciple had to sacrifice herself a bit.

After staying outside all night, Meng Wu Ya was also feeling a bit stuffy himself. Which master would be drugged by his own disciple; under the heavens, he guessed only he would be. Though that wasn't the reason why Meng Wu Ya

was feeling this way. Being drugged was a small matter, but this time he had lost a lot of face. Not to mention that this trip had brought Xia Ning Chang deep into Black Wind Mountains, what if something bad had happened to her?

So that's why Meng Wu Ya was determined to go reprimand Xia Ning Chang for her actions; but of course he wouldn't be too harsh on her. After all, this disciple of Treasurer Meng's was treated like his most beloved treasure.

But what he was about to say had suddenly disappeared as he gazed down at the ground. On the ground, he saw her panicked and pale face, as she looked at Kai Yang lying unconscious in a terrible condition: "What happened here?"

"Master I asked you to save him!" Bawling anxiously, Xia Ning Chang miserably cried out.

Meng Wu Ya did not hesitate, he immediately descended and used two fingers to jab at Kai Yang's wrists. His divine sense sweeping across his body, Meng Wu Ya couldn't help but make a startled face: "Such serious wounds?"

In the eyes of Meng Wu Ya, Kai Yang's injuries were equivalent to having one foot in the grave. His internal chest and external injuries were all secondary. What was most worrying, was the extreme depletion of his World Qi, as well as the chaotic state of his meridians.

In regards to these types of conditions, he must take a special kind of spirit pill. Not only did he have to take a spirit pill, a doctor proficient in medicine was also needed.

Meng Wu Ya had neither of those.

“Master, will he die?” Xia Ning Chang mournfully asked, full of worry.

Once Meng Wu Ya saw the expression on his disciple’s face, he knew something bad had happened. Sighing internally he cried out “Fate! Dear fate! Even with my thousand blockades, I still wasn’t able to stop it.”

He couldn’t bear to have Xia Ning Chang saddened, so Meng Wu Ya consoled: “Don’t worry. With me here, he cannot die.” As he spoke, he reached into his clothes to take out a bottle. In a pouring motion, he took out a pill that was about the same size as a dragon’s eye*. It was entirely golden in colour and with one glance, one could tell that it wasn’t something of an ordinary grade.

(TLN: I say dragon’s eye, but that is just a direct translation. The word itself could also mean the fruit logan, which is called a dragon’s eye in Chinese. I wasn’t sure which one he was trying to reference too, but all in all, both objects are about the same size, since the fruit was named Dragon’s eye because that reason.)

When Meng Wu Ya took out that golden pill, Xia Ning Chang’s frantic feelings settled down a bit. It was because she knew the tremendous effects of that pill.

But Meng Wu Ya was extremely unwilling. After hesitating for sometime, he was somewhat forced by Xia Ning Chang. Pinching open Kai Yang’s mouth, he fed the pill to Kai Yang.

“Let me!” Swiping the pill from her master’s hand, Xia Ning Chang proceeded to put the pill in her mouth. Once in her mouth, she used her tongue to wrap around it before placing her lips over Kai Yang’s blood red ones.

Hey, hey, hey! This old man is still here! Meng Wu Ya shouted in his heart non-stop and immediately averted his gaze.

(TL: So innocent, lecherous Meng)

Seeing his disciple, without any hesitation or restraint, treating a male in this manner caused Meng Wu Ya to feel upset. It was like having a daughter whom you spent much effort raising, only to have her leave you.

Once Kai Yang took the pill, his colour became somewhat better, but the results were not like the expected results.

Taking the opportunity, Meng Wu Ya observed their surroundings. The original hazy gaze, suddenly became cold as he saw the corpses of Wen Fei Chen and Long Hui.

All of his suspicions disappeared!

The reason why Kai Yang had suffered such serious wounds, the reason why his beloved disciple cut such a sorry figure, just like they had engaged in a harsh battle; all had suddenly become clear.

A surge of fury burst out from Meng Wu Ya's chest, as a frosty expression began to form on old man Meng's face.

He didn't decide to ask now, for currently it wasn't the appropriate time. The coming days were long, and there would be plenty of time to investigate and

make things clear in the future.

Meng Wu Ya was extremely regretful. Regretful that when he had arrived last night, he didn't break into the sealing formation of the Nine Yin Eight Locks. Otherwise how could his disciple and Kai Yang fall into such dire straits?

Vexation and remorse filled his heart, before gradually turning into fury!

Inviting the wrath of the heavens!

Taking in deep breaths, Meng Wu Ya suppressed the fury within his heart and gently asked: "Disciple, did you get the Nine Yin Dew Crystal?"

"En." Xia Ning Chang continued to look stupidly at the unconscious Kai Yang, nodding her head.

"Then go refine it. You don't need to worry for Kai Yang, for this old man is here, so he can't die." Meng Wu Ya consoled.

Hesitating, Xia Ning Chang finally agreed, repeating: "Master, you must take care to not let anything happen to him. The reason why your disciple is still alive is because he put his life on the line to protect me. If it wasn't for him, then your disciple would have....." Mentioning the last part, Xia Ning Chang began to cry like a bird again.

"Relax!" Squeezing out a smile, Meng Wu Ya nodded his head lightly.

Only then did Xia Ning Chang gather herself again. Drying her tears, she sat

down and took out the bag she kept at her side. While she refined the Nine Yin Dew Crystal, she also kept an eye on Kai Yang's status.

In half an hour's time, the Nine Yin Dew Crystal had been fully refined. Though Xia Ning Chang did not absorb the pill yet, and rather kept it in her dantian. This was because it took a long time to absorb the pill. Once she completely absorbed it, she would be able to breakthrough into the true element stage; but this would take at least a few days.

Without Kai Yang awake, Xia Ning Chang was in no mood to do so.

"Let's go. Let's first leave this place. With Kai Yang in this condition, he needs serious medical attention." Bending down, Meng Wu Ya picked up Kai Yang and along with Xia Ning Chang, sprinted swiftly towards the edge of Black Wind Mountain.

The two people didn't rush straight towards Sky Tower, because the distance between the two places wasn't small. Rather, they had come to the small town that Kai Yang and Xia Ning had rested at previously.

Searching for a tavern in the town, the three people settled down temporarily. Sparing no effort, Xia Ning Chang labored at Kai Yang's side everyday with all her heart.

While Meng Wu Ya gave Kai Yang True Qi everyday, in hopes of improving Kai Yang's condition.

Falling unconscious, Kai Yang discovered that his consciousness had come to a world with nothing. Inside this world, there was nothing; only the golden

skeleton from the black book could be found.

The golden skeleton sat cross legged, it's golden brilliance shining brightly. Kai Yang also sat opposite it, cross legged, not moving an inch.

Without a sound, without light, Kai Yang sat there observing the golden skeleton. Although the golden skeleton had no eyes, Kai Yang felt that it was also observing him.

Time flowed on, without any indication, Kai Yang and the golden skeleton maintained this kind of silent situation.

Kai Yang was comprehending the mysteries of the golden skeleton. Last time he did so, Kai Yang felt that there were even deeper mysteries regarding it. But despite trying, he was far too powerless at the time.

But this time, after experiencing so many life and death battles, Kai Yang felt that the distance between him and golden skeleton had been shortened.

If one was to say there had previously been a barrier between Kai Yang and the golden skeleton, then currently, that barrier had been removed.

His unyielding willpower had conquered the golden skeleton's haughtiness, while the golden skeleton was excited that he had found a suitable master.

Suddenly, Kai Yang smiled!

The golden skeleton also transformed. Turning into golden streaks of light, he

entered Kai Yang; just like the first time they had met.

But Kai Yang knew, he knew that this time, he had fully gained the support of the arrogant golden skeleton. Previously when this had happened, he only gained a portion of its strength. All this time it had been observing, examining, until finally, Kai Yang had gained the it's approval. Allowing the golden skeleton to willingly integrate itself into Kai Yang's body.

The world of nothingness suddenly collapsed, causing Kai Yang's consciousness to return to his body.

In no rush to open his eyes, Kai Yang probed around to learn about his body's condition.

The injuries on his body were of no hinderance. It was only the area of his chest which had caved in that still hurt. Apart from that, the sword wounds on his abdomen and shoulder had healed up nicely.

Inside his dantian, of the original forty drops of Yang Liquid, only a few remained; there was only about seven or eight left. The cost of that night's battles was far too high.

Just the amount of Yang Liquid used on disciple Cai and Wen Fei Chen alone, numbered around twenty drops. Not to mention the drops used in resisting the cold and the various other battles.

But this cost wasn't without rewards. Through these battles, his original initial element fourth stage cultivation had shot up to the seventh stage!

To breakthrough three sub stages consecutively, Kai Yang couldn't help but be startled.

Thinking back, while he was battling Wen Fei Chen, he had felt that the energy he emitted was at the qi transforming stage. It should have been around that time, he had broken through.

To break through that time, caused Kai Yang to fail to notice. If it weren't for his inspection of his body, it would have stayed hidden.

Chapter 118 - Master, you are just a quack

This was not the only benefit.

He had also accidentally absorbed half of the Nine Yin Dew Crystal. At the time, Kai Yang did not why it had happened, but now all had become clear. That half of the Nine Yin Dew Crystal's energy had been stored away in the innermost location within the golden skeleton.

When the time came for him to step into the true element boundary, he could then use the Nine Yin Dew Crystal to help him refine True Qi. This would allow his True Qi to reach a higher quality.

This benefit couldn't be seen currently, but in the future, it would reveal its true value.

Additionally, any questions that he originally had in regards to the golden skeleton, had now been answered very clearly and thoroughly.

This golden skeleton of his, was able to absorb Yang attributed Qi and any attributed energy. This excess energy would then be stored within his body, which he was then able to access at a later date when he needed it.

The stronger his willpower the more energy he could absorb. Through this, the golden skeleton would be able to bring him even better benefits.

It was just that the energy that was given to him by the golden skeleton was of demonic Yin origin. In other words, as long as he used this energy, his eyes would turn blood-red and his body would give off an evil aura.

But, due to him cultivating the True Yang World Qi; the nemesis of this demonic Yin energy; he was able to suppress it, allowing him to retain his sense of self.

Thinking up to this point, Kai Yang understood the reason why the black book would give him the True Yang Tactics to cultivate. It was to help him defend against that powerful Yin force, preventing him from losing himself to the demonic path.

Everything was clear now! Opening his eyes, Kai Yang heard a series of soft

sighs.

Shortly after that, the dialogue between Xia Ning Chang and Meng Wu Ya reached his ears.

“My dear disciple.....your master has expended his utmost effort!” Meng Wu Ya’s tone was full of guilt and a bit of unwillingness and regret.

These past few days, Meng Wu Ya would use his True Qi to help Kai Yang heal his wounds. But unfortunately, this aid did little to help him in his recovery.

Not to mention the golden pill Kai Yang had taken. Meng Wu Ya surmised that even if it were not enough to heal his wounds, it should have been enough to allow him to wake up right?

But not only did Kai Yang not wake up, not even a bit of his conscious could be seen.

He didn’t know what peculiarities were hidden within Kai Yang’s body that the golden pill couldn’t reveal its raising the dead type abilities. It had only assisted in repairing some of his external injuries, before losing all effect.

Even the True Qi that he had injected into Kai Yang, showed little results. It was like a black hole existed within Kia Yang’s body; as soon as the True Qi entered, it was absorbed.

How could Meng Wu Ya know about the miraculous effects of the golden skeleton? Apart from Yang attributed energy, it could also absorb any other kind of energy. Both the golden pill and True Qi, it had absorbed around ninety-nine percent of their energy, so how could they display their effects?

“Master.....” These days, tears could constantly be seen on Xia Ning Chang’s face, her eyes were always red. Before she still held hope, but when she heard Meng Wu Ya speak like that, her face paled.

“You don’t have any other methods?” Full of hope, Xia Ning Chang looked at her master, after all, Meng Wu Ya’s background wasn’t ordinary. Those who possessed such strength, if they said there was no hope, then there really wouldn’t be any other method in this world.

“His soul, should have been broken and scattered.” His expression heavy,

Meng Wu Ya replied, "These days, there hasn't been a moment where I could sense his soul or consciousness."

Her expression blank, Xia Ning Chang's face became whiter and whiter.

"But don't you worry, he won't die." Hurriedly, Meng Wu Ya opened his mouth to add, "He will just remain in a state of suspended animation. It's just from this day forward, he can't speak, cannot hear, and his body cannot feel anything. If only....."

"If only what?"

"If only we could find some Spirit Restoration Liquid and recover his lost soul." Meng Wu Ya sighed out this last part. "But the Spirit Restoration Liquid.....this small place does not have it!"

"Where can you find it?" Xia Ning Chang's voice suddenly became tranquil, and within that tranquillity there was a note of resolute determination.

Seeing her eyes, Meng Wu Ya point his finger up and down her body.

Cleverly, she stayed silent, but her gaze remained firm. "No matter what, I must obtain the Spirit Restoration Liquid and help junior brother restore his dissipated soul.

"What are you guys talking about?" Just as the two's atmosphere was mournful, a hoarse and weak voice sounded out from behind them.

It was basically by instinct that Meng Wu Ya responded: "Talking about your injuries...."

Saying these words, old man Meng's expression changed greatly. Stiffly, like a machine, he turned his head around and his eyes shrunk back into their sockets as he saw Kai Yang, who was lying on the bed looking back at him with his eyes wide open.

"Junior brother!" Unable to contain her joy, Xia Ning Chang immediately rushed up. Her long lashes fluttering uncontrollably, an unmistakable sense of joy, and a look full of worry was directed at Kai Yang.

Seeing her red, beyond compare, eyes, Kai Yang couldn't help but feel touched. This made him understand that his days of unconsciousness weren't

short and that within those days, his situation had caused her a great deal of worry.

“I’m fine.” Kai Yang responded in an unconcerned manner, “I just feel a bit empty.”

“Hurry and come look Master.” As she wiped her eyes, she went to pull Meng Wu Ya over. It was practically, ‘I’ll drag you over even if you die’ type of manner, as she pulled her master to Kai Yang’s side.

Being pulled that hard, old man Meng only narrowly avoided tripping.

Full of a woman’s duty, a woman’s duty! “If it weren’t because this old man was tough and could take this tormenting, then I would have long since been pulled apart by you.”

But it was then that Meng Wu Ya finally regained his sense of self as he sat down on Kai Yang’s bed side. His face serious, he carefully checked his condition.

After a good period of time, Meng Wu Ya’s brows continued to be knitted together as he muttered to himself: “It’s impossible. There’s no reason. How could it be like this?”

With every sentence, Xia Ning Chang’s expression went through great turbulence, thinking that Kai Yang’s injuries had only worsened in some way.

“Master, junior brother he…….” Biting on her lip tightly, she quietly asked, her heart in her throat.

“Oh. Since he is already awake, then there is nothing big to worry about.” Left at a bit of a loss, Meng Wu Ya looked at Kai Yang full of puzzlement.

“Nothing big to worry about?” At this statement, Xia Ning Chang’s face couldn’t help but reveal a weird look. Recalling her master’s previous mannerisms, it seemed as if her junior brother’s injuries were very serious. So how could they suddenly become nothing big to worry about?

“But this really can’t be.” Meng Wu Ya couldn’t help but ask, “Kai Yang, is this the final radiance before a setting sun?”

(TLN: Final burst of energy before dying. What a potty mouth!)

Forcing out a bitter smile Kai Yang replied: “Treasurer Meng, are there people

who curse like you?”

A expression of slander: “But earlier, your soul had already dissipated. How could it return?”

Kai Yang’s heart shook, and he recalled his unconscious state. It was probably related to when his consciousness was residing within the golden skeleton.

“Master, you’re just a big, big quack!” Her voice full of annoyance, Xia Ning Chang angrily stomped her foot.

(TL: LOLOLOL, ROFL. This was just too funny! Quack! She her master a quack!)

Meng Wu Ya was embarrassed to death.

He had just said that Kai Yang was in a state of suspended animation, and needed some Spirit Restoration Liquid in order to recover his soul. But he never imagined that the very next moment, he would recover his consciousness. Isn’t this that case of slapping one’s own mouth? Losing face is a small matter. Losing his dignity in front of his disciple was a big matter.

Meng Wu Ya felt that he had lost every bit of his reputation already.

But not regarding anything else, Kai Yang waking up was a good thing. Although Meng Wu Ya was afraid of him seducing his disciple, no matter what, if it weren’t for him fighting with his life on the line, his disciple would not have survived. Nor would she have been able to obtain the Nine Yin Dew Crystal. No matter what, he must remember this act of kindness.

Sighing non stop, the ancient times really didn’t allow people to live long! Disasters last for millenniums! Kai Yang had just survived a disaster and now his beloved disciple. So how could he die this easily? While Meng Wu Ya had worried needlessly.

But, what should he do in these coming days? Weighed down with worry, Meng Wu Ya wanted to be decisive in this situation, but was afraid that his disciple would be angry at him, so he hesitated.

Kai Yang’s awakening allowed Xia Ning Chang’s tense heart to finally loosen and relax. These days, she hadn’t had much rest, as she worried that with this rest, he would never wake up. But now, seeing that he was fine, she no longer

held any worries.

For the next two days Kai Yang was busy healing his wounds, while Xia Ning Chang was waiting upon the ever sighing old man Meng.

On the third day, under the order of Meng Wu Ya, Xia Ning Chang finally began the absorption of the Nine Yin Dew Crystal; to change her World Qi to True Qi and assault the True Element Boundary. He said that even though it had been refined, it wasn't viable to continue to keep it within her dantian.

Xia Ning Chang didn't disagree. Obediently she refined it. Even after everything, she was still an obedient and clever female. The incident of drugging her master was only a small mishap.

Although the three people stayed within the tavern, Meng Wu Ya was a person of high cultivation. Because of this, he wasn't too worried about any suspicious people bothering Xia Ning Chang, so he allowed her to enter closed door cultivation.

On Kai Yang's side, there weren't any big obstructions left anymore. Of course his external injuries and his chest bones still needed a few more days to completely heal. Everyday he was meditating and cultivating, waiting for Xia Ning Chang's breakthrough before setting off to return to Sky Tower.

During this time as Kai Yang was cultivating, Meng Wu Ya came over carrying a bowl of steaming hot water.

Breathing through his nose, Kai Yang smelt an aroma and immediately opened his eyes.

Carrying the bowl over, Meng Wu Ya held it out to Kai Yang. A face full of pain, he said while biting his teeth: "Drink it."

Kai Yang also didn't hesitate. Taking the bowl from his hands, he immediately raised his head up and drank it. Smacking his lips, he hiccuped and asked excitedly: "What is this? Its medicinal effects are so great!"

He could feel, as the liquid went down his throat it began to heat up his body. Not to mention that it contained a great amount of energy. A portion went into his body and meridians, helping to heal his wounds, while another portion was being absorbed by the golden skeleton.

The corners of his mouth twitching, Meng Wu Ya replied mournfully: "This old man used the Thousand Year Blood Spirit as well as many other heavenly treasures. Would you say the effects are great? My lord! These were priceless and you drank it in one gulp. You really have good taste."

"The taste isn't bad!" Solemnly Kai Yang nodded his head.

Taking in a deep breath, Meng Wu Ya calmed the boiling blood within while he thought: "If it weren't for my beloved disciple instructing me to give it to you help your body, how would I bear to give you any? In a key moment, they could be used to save a life. In the entire Han Dynasty, there aren't many. A home wrecker, ah, home wrecker! Too big of a home wrecker. "

"Do you still have more?" Licking the corners of his mouth, Kai Yang wished for more.

Short of breath, Meng Wu Ya responded snappily: "None. Even if I had more, I wouldn't give it to you. Eat any more, and you might die from overeating."

"He he." Laughing, Kai Yang couldn't help but think: "With so many heavenly treasures, I couldn't really benefit from their energy. But with the golden skeleton, I really wouldn't die from overeating."

"Tell me about the events that happened that night." Asking this suddenly, a long suppressed flash of anger and killing intent flashed through Meng Wu Ya's eyes.

"Turning his head around, Kai Yang looked him in the eye: "Little senior sister didn't tell you?"

"Those days, she was only focused on your injuries, so I didn't ask." Meng Wu Ya monotonously replied, while his burning gaze was focused on Kai Yang: "Who were the people killed within the mountain valley? Who is it.....that attacked you guys?"

Chapter 119 - Returning to the Main Gate

“They were from the Blood Group and Storm House.” His expression serious, Kai Yang narrated that night’s events, more or less accurately. As for the information regarding his victory over the nine people, he would naturally avoid the important factors and dwell on the trivial aspects to gloss over what occurred. This feat was far too incredulous, and if he said it outloud, old man Meng might not even believe him; might was well not say it at all.

Listening to Kai Yang, Meng Wu Ya became furious.

It took a while for Kai Yang finish narrating the events that had occurred.

Nodding his head, Meng Wu Ya asked: “In other words, the main offender was you. But the schemer was that Long Hui fellow right?”

“En. It really was me who involved little senior sister.” Nodding his head, Kai Yang admitted.

“Although you were the main culprit, you are not at fault. Furthermore, Xia Ning Chang is unhurt, so you have need to feel guilty.” First consoling him before erupting in a burst of cold chuckles: “Blood Group, Long Zai Tian! This old man has remembered you!”

When he saw the dangerous glimmer within Meng Wu Ya’s eyes, Kai Yang knew that an extremely troublesome matter was waiting for Long Zai Tian.

As for matters pertaining to old man Meng’s background and cultivation, Kai Yang couldn’t see through him or understand them in the slightest. But, he knew that he was not of ordinary descent. Though, if he really went to stir trouble with Long Zai Tian, Kai Yang would be truly be delighted to see it, but not excessively so.

Kai Yang had always believed that one must personally obtain their revenge. If Long Zai Tian fell under Meng Wu Ya’s hand, then he would be unable to obtain his revenge.

But if that really happened, Kai Yang wouldn’t chase after it. He could feel that Meng Wu Ya had been thoroughly angered this time round. The fire within his heart, without fanning, it wouldn't burn.

Staying in the tavern for another two days, Xia Ning Chang eventually came out of closed door cultivation. As anticipated, her cultivation had already reached the True Element Boundary. Asking her in a roundabout manner, Kai Yang found out that you didn't need to fully refine the Nine Yin Dew Crystal in order for it to display the desired results.

In theory, one drop of the Nine Yin Dew Crystal was enough to assist three people to breakthrough. In all, it was only a catalyst to help with the transformation of World Qi into True Qi.

But there was a peculiar thing. After obtaining it, you must refine it within two hours, or it would disappear. So if anyone were to obtain it, it would usually be used by one person only.

Learning of this point, Kai Yang couldn't help but put down the the rock in his heart. Looks like the energy he had taken from the Nine Yin Dew Crystal wasn't going to hinder Xia Ning Chang's breakthrough.

Not to mention, that half portion of the Nine Yin Dew Crystal, hidden within his golden skeleton had yet to disappear like she had said it would.

With Kai Yang's wounds healed, Xia Ning Chang promoted in strength, the three people no longer needed to stay at the tavern. So they packed their belongings and quickly returned to Sky Tower.

Treasurer Meng carried Kai Yang, as they flew back. On the trip back, he experienced quite a lot of wind and became quite

Returning to Sky Tower, Kai Yang said his goodbyes to the master and disciple pair before returning to his own wooden hut.

Despite leaving for around twenty days or so, his wooden hut was still clean and tidy as always. It looked like Li Yun Tian and the others had continued to keep things tidy.

In the following few days, life for Kai Yang continued in its peaceful normality. Cultivating everyday, he focused on stabilizing his cultivation.

It was just from time to time, the adorable figure of that little senior sister could be seen, as she dashed past. After all, she was the first girl that Kai Yang had ever kissed. That sweet and soft feeling could still be clearly recalled.

But ever since they returned, Xia Ning Chang had yet to make an appearance.

It was like she had forgotten the things that had happened between the two of them.

That night in the mountain valley, before Kai Yang left her to recover, he had made her promise him that if he returned alive, she would grant one wish of his.

At the time, Kai Yang was only finding a source of motivation for himself, there wasn't anything deep about it.

Although he felt a bit disappointed, Kai Yang wasn't too hung up over the matter.

"I stealthily float by, waving my clothes doesn't mean a cloud passed by----a kiss strayed by." But because he subdued and caught the Nine Yin Dew Crystal, even if both of them were a bit excited at the time, one couldn't clearly say anything about the matter. Both of them were young people, their energy at its peaks, naturally it would be unavoidable.

Kai Yang wasn't the type of person to feel inferior due to the gap in their cultivation. Cultivation, cultivation was a thing that as long as you put in effort, you would naturally become strong. He believed that one day, one day he would surpass this little senior sister of his, surpass everyone of the same generation.

Because of the unyielding golden skeleton, his possibilities were limitless.

Feelings were something that Kai Yang didn't need to think about. What will be his, would naturally be his. What wouldn't be his, no matter how much he forced it, it wouldn't become his. Let things take their natural cause.

(TL: Some wise words buddy.)

If Xia Ning Chang had feelings towards him, even if his cultivation base was weak, what would it matter? If she really drifted away from him because his cultivation was low, Kai Yang would have nothing else to say. When someone wouldn't feel attracted him, he couldn't possibly blame them that their standards were too high could he?

But, with her lovably simple minded personality, she shouldn't be that snobbish.

Kai Yang was correct on this point. When Xia Ning Chang had returned to Sky Tower, she was too embarrassed to go and meet with Kai Yang. Whenever she recalled that night's passionate kiss, she couldn't help but become embarrassed and was unable to show her face. The veil was constantly worn, but no matter what, she couldn't summon the courage to appear in front of Kai Yang.

Furthermore, when they had returned, Meng Wu Ya had instructed her to go into closed door cultivation. This was to stabilize her new breakthrough and cultivation level. In actuality, he was afraid that Xia Ning Chang and Kai Yang were like parted lovers that still longed for each other.

Otherwise, with her personality, she would definitely have come over to ask how Kai Yang's health was faring.

After cultivating for two days, Kai Yang couldn't help but feel unsatisfied with his results.

Absorbing Yang Qi next to Coiling Dragon Stream, the formation speed of the Yang Liquid was far too slow. It really paled to when he directly absorbed spirits fruits and the Bright Yang Stones.

The Yang Drops within his dantian were extremely sparse, so he needed to quickly replenish his stocks. Otherwise, if he were to meet another great battle like that one that had occurred in the valley that night, then he would experience the same embarrassment as a clever wife that forgets the rice.

Thinking over it, Kai Yang decided to pay Black Wind Market another visit. The first reason was to buy some Yang attributed things to absorb. While the second reason was to buy some Three Leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and Dead Jedi Tree Grass; it had been some time since he last used the incense burner.

As for money, Kai Yang had quite a large amount. He was no longer the poor beggar he was before.

The money had all been collected from the bodies of the dead Blood Group disciples. At the time it was too dark, so Kai Yang didn't bother to count how much he had taken. When he had checked the amount after he returned, he had found out that, that bunch of people were truly rich.

He had only plundered a couple of people, but actually raked in around twenty

two thousand silvers.

With this much silver, he would be able to buy forty Bright Yang Stones. It was enough for him to make up for that night's losses, and also increase the amount of Yang Qi drops by several fold.

It the period when Kai Yang was setting out to Black Wind Trade Market, Meng Wu Ya appeared with a murderous look.

His target, the Blood Group!

Though the Blood Group was one the three big powers in the area, how could Meng Wu Ya be afraid of them? His own disciple had narrowly escaped becoming a dead person, narrowly avoided losing her purity. This tab had to be calculated.

Long Hui dead? It didn't matter! Didn't he still have a grandfather? If the upper beam is crooked, the lower beams would be too. If it were not for having a powerful backing, how could a small figure such as Long Hui possibly act that domineering and rampant?

So in Meng Wu Ya's eyes, Long Zai Tian was even more hateful! Even more deserving of death!

The distance between Sky Tower and the Blood Group wasn't that far. Furthermore, with Meng Wu Ya's speed, he had arrived in the time it takes to drink a cup tea.

At that very moment, the higher ups of the Blood Group were discussing some affairs.

This meeting was being held in the Grand Hall. The Group Head, Hu Man was currently sitting straight with his tough and stocky build. His face full of harsh features; with a single glance one could tell he wasn't some benevolent person.

The subordinates under Hu Man, the fellow Hallmasters of the Blood Group, were all sitting straight, respectfully. These people were currently reporting the small and big matters of the group that had occurred in the past month; the profits, the expenditures, *etc.*

Listening to this made Hu Man extremely impatient. Waving his arms he said:

“Don’t speak about these trivial matters. How are the result for breaking that mining area’s seals going?”

A young person of around twenty seven-eight years of age stood up at that moment. Respectfully he replied to Hu Man: “Reporting to the Group Head, grandfather already has some rough sketches. It’s just the number of experts within the group are far too little. Although the seals are old, they aren’t easily dispelled. The other day, grandfather had asked Long Jun to pass on the message that he is already making the utmost effort and will try to break the seals in the shortest possible time.”

The young person, was Long Zai Tian’s eldest grandchild, Long Hui’s elder brother Long Jun. He was already at the true element second boundary, although he couldn’t be compared to those geniuses beloved by the heavens, his aptitude wasn’t too bad.

Due to the fact that the Long Family’s position within the group wasn’t low, even though Long Jun was only at the true element second boundary, he was still given important tasks. And the position of Hallmaster.

Hu Man merely nodded his head: “En. This is good. Long Jun, if you have the time, please go to the mining site to bring your grandfather my thanks for his troubles!”

“Yes.”

“It’s unknown what profound mysteries are hidden within those seals, to be actually hidden tens of feet underground.” A random Hallmaster spoke out.

“But this is all thanks to our Lady Mei Er and her clear sight. If it wasn’t for her saying that something unusual was hidden beneath the mine, then we would have never known about the matter.”

“That’s right, that’s right. Even though Lady Mei Er’s age is young, her eyes truly are special. It is really unknown as to how she saw this.”

Hearing the people in the room praising Hu Mei Er, although their words contained traces of flattery, it still made Hu Man comfortable listening to it. But when he thought of Hu Mei Er’s female body, he would still have to marry her out. At this point, Hu Man couldn’t help but sigh.

“From your grandmother, I your father is wise and strong. Within the family are various concubines, working away every night diligently, yet how do I only have two daughters?” This was one of Hu Man’s sore points. As the family’s sole male, how would he continue the family ah.

That group of people were still praising Hu Mei Er’s peculiar eyes, and also roped in Hu Jiao Er to the skies.

Hu Man was only depressed.

When speaking of this point, it was quite odd. The mining site had already been discovered for quite a few years already, while the group had been mining the Bright Yang Stones and the Bright Yin Stones during these years; earning quite a large sum. In these years it had expanded quite rapidly, while a large portion came from that mining site.

Yet no one knew that a few tens of feet down, there was such a mysterious thing hidden.

Yet two months earlier, the Hu Man’s daughter had come one day to tell him this news. At the time he had only laughed at the news.

It was only under the constant nagging of Hu Mei Er that Hu Man had very begrudgingly sent people to investigate that area.

Hu Mei Er had clearly stated that this affair couldn’t be leaked to the Long Family. But Hu Man didn’t really care about the news, he felt that it was his daughter’s mischievousness to attract his care for her. Coupled with the fact that the mine site was under the management of Long Zai Tian, he naturally couldn’t hide it from him.

The evacuation site that Hu Mei Er said wasn’t that far from the mine. Ten or so Blood Group Disciples painstakingly spent several days before discovering that something was truly unordinary in the place they were digging.

Chapter 120 - Meng Wu Ya is angry

Translator - Erza

Editor - Ben

It was actually full of seals, so the disciples hurriedly ran to report this to the various elders.

After Hu Man received the news, he immediately went to personally investigate. Unfortunately due to those seals, he couldn't see or hear anything.

In the Blood Group, Long Zai Tian was the eldest, and the one with the most experience. Not to mention he already knew about the matter, so Hu Man put him in charge; to see what was actually hidden within those restrictions.

Hu Man had a feeling, that the thing hidden within was some type of unspeakable secret. If the Blood Group was able to obtain it, then their power would rise by another level. Not only would their power rise, they would also be able to surpass the Eight Great Families; at the very least, they would be able to stand on equal footing with them.

Hu Man was also a bit vexed. At the time Hu Mei Er had constantly reminded him to not let the Long family know of this news, but he hadn't taken her seriously. Now not only did they know, all the upper echelons of the group knew.

After returning from the mining area that day, Hu Man had hurried to Hu Mei Er to ask her how she knew there was something hidden below the ground.

What he didn't expect was that due to this affair, Hu Mei Er had a large argument with him. Through the bustle, Hu Man found out that Hu Mei Er found this through the guidance of an expert. It was this expert that discovered the secret in the mine.

Because of his mindlessness, he had failed the task the expert had entrusted his daughter. And that expert didn't want the Long Family to know of this news.

"My daughter, what is this expert like ah." Hu Man held a deep respect for those hidden experts. To be able to see the hidden secrets tens of feet below the ground symbolised that they possessed high cultivations.

In Hu Man's mind, that expert definitely possessed heaven and earth shocking power.

"What kind of expert?" At the time, the image of Kai Yang appeared within Hu Mei Er's mind, causing her face to turn red. Glancing at her father she replied: "Not telling you!"

Seeing her reaction, Hu Man became rooted to the spot. This made him wonder if his daughter held feelings for that expert?

After a series of roundabout inquiries, Hu Man became astonished.

This expert, was actually a young person. This type of person, how could their birth be ordinary?

"My daughter. Could it be you like the opposite party?" Full of spirit, Hu Man made his inquiries. In his eyes, his daughter would definitely be married, but the most important question was who she would be married to. If she could marry into one of the Eight Great Families, then it couldn't be any better. Then the Blood Group would be able to soar up like a phoenix.

But this keen eyed, superior young person wouldn't be so bad either.

"If I do like him, what can you do?" Hu Mei Er hiddenly sighed out.

"If you like them, then try to get closer to them. My daughter is this beautiful, could it be that he doesn't put you in his eyes?" Hu Man egged her on, "Wait, could it be that he already has a wife? What could this be counted as? A man having three, four wives is very ordinary."

Pivoting her body around, Hu Mei Er widened her eyes and retorted: "It's because of you, that I have failed the task he had given me. How could I have any more face to meet him again? Humph!"

Hearing those words, Hu Man could only laugh mockingly. How could he have known that the words his daughter said were actually true? If he knew the truth, he wouldn't have spread out news of this secret.

One couldn't help but point out that Hu Man completely misunderstood Kai Yang. If he knew the young expert in his heart was merely a trial disciple of Sky Tower, he wouldn't have enough time to keep Hu Mei Er away from him. How

would he have the time to let her get closer to him?

Gathering his thoughts, Hu Man let out another long sigh. The problems this affair caused really gripped the heart. His little daughter was constantly in closed door cultivation these past few days. It was the complete opposite of what she liked to do before; going out to play around. There was quite a significant increase in her cultivation, but given her refusal to go out and interact with that youngster, how would she have any chance to marry him?

While the various Hallmasters below were still boot-licking away. In Hu Man's ear it was nothing but empty words, without any substance.

Just as he was standing up to leave, Hu Man stopped in his tracks and lifted up his head. Looking outside, his face couldn't help but turn heavy looking.

In the next moment, all of the Hallmasters and Elders shut their mouths and turned their heads.

A formless aura, like the heavens were falling on their shoulders, pressed down on the shoulders of those present; shaking them to their very core.

An expert had graced the Blood Group! The discussing group within the hall could all feel his presence.

Following that, an aged voiced sounded next to everyone's ears: "Where is Long Zai Tian?"

This voice was very flat, you couldn't hear any emotion within it. But everyone on site couldn't help but tremble, and they could feel that the expert that had suddenly descended came with some ill intent.

Searching for the Vice Head of the group? Everyone looked at each other simultaneously and couldn't help but hold some doubt within their hearts.

"Follow me outside to look." Standing up, Hu Man walked in large strides outside, so the various Hallmasters and Elders had to follow.

Coming outside the room, people saw someone standing in mid air. That person was an old man who was standing strongly in the air. This person was all white from head to toe, he gave a sinking feeling to everyone. His sharp eyes had swept over everyone, just like a hawk viewing the earth from the sky, his eyes

viewed everything with disdain, arrogance and wildly abandon.

When the eyes swept over everyone, everyone couldn't help but have a tingling feeling.

"Peak of the divine movement boundary!" Hu Man shouted in a low voice, his rough facial skin twitched slightly.

"Peak of the immortal zone?" some people were also shocked, "Is he the leader of Sky Tower Pavilion?"

In this surrounding area for a great distance, there are many master's of the immortal zone boundary but speaking of those at the true peak boundary there is only the leader of Sky Tower Pavilion who is a mystery. It can be said that it is possible to see a divine dragon but it is impossible to see the leader of Sky Tower.

This old man comes from Sky Tower pavilion, and has a similar age to that of the leader. It is not a mistake that some people will mistakenly say that he is the leader.

"He is not the leader." Hu Man shook his head slowly. When he was young he had once seen one side of Sky tower Pavilion's leader and he naturally remembered that appearance. It was a completely different appearance to this old man.

Moreover..... Although this person is a immortal zone boundary peak powerhouse, the pressure that was felt by Hu Man was actually stronger than that of someone at the immortal zone boundary peak.

Hu Man himself was a immortal zone boundary seventh level powerhouse. So even if the leader of Sky Tower arrived the pressure will not give him too many restrictions.

But this old man was different. When Hu Man looks at him, he feels like he is staring at a mountain which he will never be able to surpass, a river that can't be crossed. Even if he consumed all of his life energy he will only be able to look up to him.

This is a very strange feeling, but Hu Man always believed in his own intuition.

This old Man is not an enemy, can't be an enemy!

Where did this powerhouse come from? Hu Man very seriously took one step forward, holding his fist in his other hand and bowing he asked, “May i know the honored seniors name?”

The person who was standing there was naturally Meng Wu Ya. Meng Wu Ya had suppressed his anger for a long time. As soon as he returned to Sky Tower Pavilion he came looking for Long Zai Tian. Fearing that his disciple will again look for Yang Kai therefore he has defended against this for two days, when he was finally convinced that she had closed up, then he leisurely came looking for trouble.

“Are you Long Zai Tian?” Meng Wu Ya asked while narrowing his eyes, his eyes were like those of a hawk which was looking at his prey.

Hu Man couldn't help but revolve his Yuan Qi. It looked like his life was on a thread in this critical moment but he was able to maintain his composure, after all he was a Master of a group, he had already mentally strengthened himself. If he was frightened by the opposite party's few words wouldn't it look highly improper?

“This one is Blood Group Hallmaster Hu Man. He does not know the senior.....”

Hu Man after a few words was interrupted by Meng Wu Ya, with an impatient expression he asked, “If you are not Long Zai Tian why are you opening your mouth then?”

Hu Man was startled by this but is wise enough to not get angry suddenly. When Hu Man was again about to open his mouth to explain something. Meng Wu Ya became crazy.

“Fuck You Long Zai Tian, you old dog roll out in front of this old Man!”

This roar was an indescribably real world tragedy, it rang out past the clouds, penetrated deep into the earth. Not only was heard by Blood Group but was also heard by people from the Storm House and Sky Tower Pavilion.

With this single roar, everyone became quiet.

A crowd of immortal zone boundary, true element boundary powerhouse were looking at Meng Wu Ya with silly expressions. They were staring at him with

wooden expressions with dumbfounded stares

They would have never thought that a powerhouse can curse a person with his full power, moreover his cursing was done in such an evil and vulgar way.

Your demeanor? Your Status? As long as he is an expert with a little strength and prestige, will he do such a thing in public?

If he is doing such a thing he should have a very big enmity with the other party. Letting his training and demeanor be thrown beyond the highest heavens? What did that Long Zai Tian do for calling this much anger towards himself.

But with the shout of Meng Wu Ya, various people from the Blood Group clearly felt that a grim future lay ahead of them.

Hu Man asked with a calm face, "Senior please.....if you have words to speak I will listen to them?"

Although the strength of this person was very high, Hu Man doesn't want him as an enemy. However Long Zai Tian is after all the vice hallmaster of the Blood Group. Meng Wu Ya's palm came halfway towards Hu Man.

"You stand still. Long Zai Tian roll out to me, if he doesn't come out and cut his own head off and marry it to a chamber pot, this old man will slaughter the whole of your Blood Group!" Meng Wu Ya stated threateningly. He was unable to see the culprit so he was very annoyed in his heart.

The Blood Group, it is nothing in his eyes.

The look on Hu Man's face was like that of a red chilli. Even the clay dolls have much less hot colour on their face, much less compared to the current hot tempered Hu Man. If not for the fact Meng Wu Ya's strength was so strong, why would he speak so politely with him?

But Meng Wu Ya is simply not giving him face. Hu Man loses his temper.

"Hey, is that Long Zai Tian a turtle, doesn't he dare to come out and meet the old man?" Meng Wu Ya said while sweeping his eyes towards the people standing under him.

This time, it is actually a youth who responded with a cold face, "This mister, watch what you are saying? My grandfather and you have what enmity, why are

you insulting him like that?”

The person who spoke is Long Jun.

Meng Wu Ya came and is scolding Long Zai Tian with such coarse and vulgar language. Long Jun is after all a descendant of Long Zai Tian, how much can he endure? Taking advantage of the fact that this place is Blood Group's headquarters, numerous masters are standing beside him, he took the opportunity to refute Meng Wu Ya immediately.

So what if he is a peak immortal zone boundary powerhouse? The Blood Group also has masters of the immortal zone boundary. If he dared to start a fight here, it will be decided that you will never return from here.

“Your Grandfather?” Meng Wu Ya narrowed both his eyes and stared at Long Jun.

“The person who this Mister is trying to find is my Grandfather!” Long Jun gave a sound reply.

“Its very good!” Meng Wu Ya smiled, “A dragon will live like a dragon, the phoenix will live like a phoenix, and at birth, the mouse will be digging holes. That Long Hui was not a good thing, so you as his elder brother, wouldn't be that high quality either.”

(E.TLN: Chinese like to people personality/level as commodities in a sense. High quality mean you are upstanding and good, low quality means you are scum/trash that type of thing.)

How did Long Hui come into this conversation? The surrounding people thought that this old man said something unconsciously. Such a random word what does he want to say?

Long Jun became angry, “Old man you are acting too wild. This is Blood Group so it's not a place where you can act wild!”

Chapter 121 - A fellow senior sister

Translator - Luffy

Editor - Ben

Sorry, finish assignment tonight, will edit tomorrow

“Is this old man acting wild?” Meng Wu Ya asked as if he had heard the worlds funniest joke, a grin appeared on his face from ear to ear, but suddenly his complexion turned cold, then he scoldingly said, “What can you do, even if this old man is acting wildly?”

While speaking, he just randomly threw out a slap.

“Shunt!” with this sound Hu Man’s face became pale, he was about to protect Long Jun, but Meng Wu Ya was lightning fast. Hu Man just saw him lifting one hand and in the next moment a resounding sound rang out from Long Jun’s face unexpectedly.

Two teeth flew out and Long Jun flew with them for a few meters, then with a dum sound he dropped to the ground.

The people from Blood Group became frightened instantaneously, Hu Man also felt an icy coldness from his body.

They were simply unable to believe how the old man did it. When he was standing at a distance of 50m from Long Jun. The palm strike which hit did not even give them enough time to even react.

Can this be achieved by a divine movement stage powerhouse? Even if the person is at the peak of the divine movement stage it would still be impossible for them to leave all the people at scene to be at a loss.

Hu Man thought that if the leader of Sky Tower Pavilion would have thrown this punch he was about 90% sure he would be able to keep it off Long Jun.

Is this divine movement stage peak, if it is why does it have such a big disparity?

Long Jun had also been dumbstruck by the flick of that palm, after falling to the ground, he staggered and crawled, after several moments when he was able

to find the correct direction, he again looked at Meng Wu Ya. Now he was dreading his previous action with whole face becoming panic stricken.

His right cheek swelled up greatly, although he does not have any internal injuries, that slap which was given to him by Meng Wu Ya, for a person who always covers up his shortcoming in presence of everyone being slapped caused him to feel humiliated, something which he hasn't felt up till now in the presence of bystanders.

“Old Man has acted wildly again, so now what are you going to do?” Meng Wu Ya asked, calmly standing at the same place boldly. He again waved the palm of his hand.

“Pa.....” Just like earlier, Long Jun took off again. Blood Groups many experts did not even have time to react.

“Fuck. This old man is acting wildly, but he does not know meaning of acting wildly.” Meng Wu Ya declared boldly with his foul mouth. He waved his hands hitting Long Jun till he was black and blue.

Finally Hu Man was unable to bear it any longer, he angrily said, “Senior, you are a person of high skill, why are you bullying a junior, senior doesn't fear becoming a joke in other people's eyes?”

“Ha! If I began, does he even have any life remaining? This was only a slight lesson.” Meng Wu Ya said sneering, then he lightly said, “Come here boy!”

One hand moved forward, then a huge suction was created towards Long Jun, who was on the ground and had not even started crawling yet. In mid air Long Jun tried to make threatening gestures, but his facial colour displayed his terror, then he shouted loudly, “Master save me!”

“Senior!” Hu Man moved forward a step forward and shouted fiercely.

Meng Wu Ya paid no attention to him and raising Long Jun by his neck. With a black look he replied to Hu Man, “This old man has a debt to settle due to injustice, this old man is only looking for Long Zai Tian today! Boy you are the grandson of Long Zai Tian, obediently tell me where is he?”

After Long Jun suffered the two attacks from Meng Wu Ya's hands he had become cleverer than a rabbit. There were no signs of haughtiness remaining.

Suffering from pain in his two cheeks, with a trembling voice he replied, "Grandfather is with the group at present."

"Where is he then?"

"In the mining area!"

"Show me the direction."

"That way!" under the threat of death. Did Long Jun dare to hesitate? Meng Wu Ya asks a question and he replies with an answer. Even if his cheeks were burning with pain, his words were coming out quite agilely.

Meng Wu Ya's appearance shook a little, then ropes made of twisted bamboo strips became visible which covered Long Jun directly then he soared in the direction of the Blood Group mining area.

"Group Master!" The group of people looked at Hu Man with urgencies in their gazes, awaiting his decision.

"Let's follow them." Ordered Hu Man who was furious. He really did not know how Long Zai Tian provoked this person of such high skill. The opposite party had still not clarified that point.

In Hu Man's heart firstly he is mad at Meng Wu Ya who has been acting persistently unreasonable and bullying them too much. Second he is mad at Long Zai Tian who has eyes but failed to see and offended such an expert, but this situation has also helped him in controlling a fire directly.

The Long family had for many years been acting petty and Hu Man had to bear it. Because the Long Family is the right hand of the Blood Group, even if Hu Man wanted to take action against this malignant tumor, he actually didn't dare to start this matter himself, once he started to take action against the Long Family perhaps at that time the Blood Group would immediately disintegrate and their overall strength would decrease even further.

If not for the fact Hu Man did not have a son, would the group have such a poor prospective future? As long as there is a son, Hu Man can vigorously train him, making him resist the Long family, would the long family have guts to become so noisy.

The Long family provoking such a master this time has provided Hu Man with a turning point. If he can borrow this master's shadow the Long family's power and influence can be disintegrated and shattered within the Blood Group, creating a good deed from this bad situation.

Therefore no matter what, Hu Man needs to see how things will turn out in the end.

Meanwhile in the Black Wind trade center it was still extremely busy.

Yang Kai had a total of 22,000 taels, while walking in the trade centre, he first spent 10,000 to buy Yang stones, he left some money in reserve, then he sought an open area, sat cross-legged at that spot, picked up the advertisement which had been dropped by someone on the ground, wiping off the things written on it, he conveniently wrote several characters.

“Purchasing the seeds of Yang attribute grass and spirit fruit!”

He placed the advertisement in front of himself. He then no longer paid attention to anything else and started revolving his true Yang tactics, secretly absorbing the energy from Yang stones near his chest.

Some time ago Li Yun Tian also tried to help Kai Yang to search for seeds, But they were unable to harvest anything, thus the scarcity of these seeds can be seen.

Here Yang Kai was also trying his luck, extracting the energy from Yang stones also required a lot of time. However here martial artists sell and purchase without disturbing others.

After half a day had past, finally the energy from the twenty Yang stones which he bought had been exhausted.

Each Yang stone could make two drops of Yang liquid, so the twenty stones were equal to forty drops of Yang liquid. His dantian was full once again, checking his dantian's situation slightly, Kai Yang as very satisfied.

If he was once again placed into a situation like that night, he could display his full potential again.

But after half a day of time still nobody was selling him seeds.

Standing up, Yang Kai looked towards the guard log cabin of Sky Tower Pavilion, Su Yan must be inside.

Kai Yang wanted to greet her, tell her that he had come back. Thinking again they were neither old friends nor had a deep friendship between them. Moreover, given her noble ice-cold temperament she was an unattainable goal. Kai Yang too didn't have a great urge to contact her .

Looking at her cold personality, if he contacted her there really will not be any meaning to it.

When he was about to go home, suddenly someone walked in front of him. Squatting down their body to read Kai Yang's advertisement, which had caught their eye, they asked, "Are you buying seeds?"

Lowering his head to look, he discovered that standing in front of him was a young female. She was about his age, seventeen-eighteen and was quite attractive. Her facial features were quite delicate, pupils like water, tender skin with a good figure, particularly that abundant chest which didn't have an equal, really can't imagine what she ate to grow them to that level. She has got quite the sum with her. In her squatting position, Kai Yang had a commanding position. Her chest (which was tender, snow white and slippery) was directly in his view. (〇 5)

"En." Kai Yang said putting that entrancing view aside and nodded his head.

The female straightened her body, then asked again, "I have some seeds with me. But I don't know if you can pay for them?"

"Really?" Kai Yang became interested immediately, "Lets see what kind of seeds you have with you?"

This female was wearing a Sky Tower Pavilion uniform. Thus she must be a Sky Tower Pavilion disciple. Given both of them were from the same side Kai Yang naturally had a kind feeling towards her.

"I will take them out for you to have a look." With both hands the female loosened the pouch from her waist and gave it to Kai Yang.

Kai Yang received it and opened her pouch, from inside of the purse, out came two seeds.

These two seeds truly contained the Yang attribute energy. Moreover these two seeds when compared to the previously bought Three Sun's fruit seeds, were of a higher quality.

Three Sun Fruit is a low earth grade quality, then these should be either middle or a upper quality seed.

"These two grains of seed i want to buy. How much will you sell them for?" Yang Kai is very satisfied with the seeds.

The girl gave a sweet smile, then said: "1200!"

Kai Yang's brows wrinkled. Although he couldn't say it out loud, her smile truly was very attractive. That smile increased her beauty, applying an extra layer of glow to her. But unfortunately, this price couldn't get Yang Kai's agreement.

If he wanted to, Kai Yang could buy those seeds for 1200 without haggling over the price. But since Kai Yang possessed the Yang Drops, which could reduce the amount of time needed for the plant to bear fruits, spending 1200 to buy these seeds would definitely result in a loss for him.

This female sure had an appetite as big as a lion. This made Kai Yang's fresh and warm feelings he had for her to disperse into thin air.

"Senior sister isn't your price a little too high?" Although Kai Yang had 12,000 taels to spare, he still wanted to use the money to purchase three leaved Chaos Spirit Flower and dead jedi tree grass as well. This being the case, he couldn't spend them freely.

"High?" female gave a slight smile, "It's not high at all. This is a seed of an earth grade middle-level spirit grass, a Pure Heart seed. After they mature, they will have many uses. In eyes of an expert they may cost even more than 1200."

Yang Kai forced smile: "You still need to wait for it to mature. How many years will it take?"

Female purses her lips: "Since you want to buy these seeds, then you must have the patience to wait for it to mature. Could it be that you want to plant this seed and reap the rewards immediately? In this world how can there be such good and easy deed. Furthermore, these seed are rarely seen, making its cost at 1200 to be reasonable. I also had to suffer many hardships to get these seeds."

Yang Kai was helpless. Pondering for a moment, he then carefully nodded his head saying: “Fine, then we’ll settle on this price.”

If he bought for it 1200, it was still profitable. Moreover listening to her explanation, she must have suffered a lot of hardships to get these two seeds, so she must get some benefit out of it.

Besides, she is a fellow disciple, so Kai Yang will definitely not bargain back and forth, also saving himself some trouble and breath. Letting her take some advantage will not affect him too much.

He gave 1200 taels for the purchase. On the girl’s face was a large grin. She held the money cautiously, then looked at Yang Kai: “Junior brother you are quite good, so I will give that pouch to you. That pouch was personally embroidered by me.”

Once over, she walked away in a joyful mood.

Yang Kai was stunned. Turns out this female senior sister also knew that he was from the same school. She had this big lion big while knowing this fact; if he was someone else this would definitely be a big loss.

Although he was butchered by her, Kai Yang was not angry. In any case, business is business. If there ever was a next time and he would just have to be on his guard while trading with her.

He stood waiting at the same spot for some time more, in hopes of finding anyone else who was selling seeds. Tiding up, Yang Kai prepared to go buy some three leaved chaos spirit flower and some dead jedi tree grass.

Before he even had the chance to walk a few steps, the ground suddenly began to quack fiercely. After shaking several times, the three schools’ disciple in Black Wind Trade fell into chaos.

Before anyone knew what was going on, the earth suddenly began to split. At that moment, everyone began to panic and run in all directions.

Chapter 122 The Intense fight with 10 cultivators

After that moment, it seemed that loud shouts could be heard from a distant place. Unfortunately, those voices were not clear.

Those enraged shouts naturally came from Long Zai Tian and his fellow clansmen. After hearing the enemy's intense rage, Yang Kai's face gleamed with joy.

When he heard the word "Kill," Yang Kai immediately knew that Meng Wuya was about to take his revenge.

The intense fight that was ongoing at the Bloody Battle Gang's mining area could be heard dozens of kilometers away! Even from such a distance, Yang Kai could feel the Yuan Qi fluctuations from those experts in battle!

So powerful!

Yang Kai could not help to stare at awe. His eye's glimmer as he anticipating the day he would be able to reach such an altitude in cultivation.

Suddenly, Yang Kai could hear several doors being opened from the Black Wind Trade City.

A few known figures came out. High Heaven Pavilion's Su Yan, Bloody Battle Gang's Hu Jiao'er, Storm House's Fang Ziji. All three of them held dignified auras as they looked towards the position of the battle grounds. All three simultaneously flew, changing into afterimages, together heading to the battle grounds.

Su Yan was the fastest, next was Hu Jiao'er and finally, Fang Ziji.

After those three flew off, a few people walked out of the door. Some were in fear while others were startled due to the chaos. However, one young boy was interested in the chaos and shouted out "Something is happening over there! I'm going to have a look!"

After that boy ran forward, followers began to emerge as they as well ran forward. Shops in the district closed as the people in Black Wind Trade City got over their fear, which turned into interest, and ran towards the battle ground to see what was happening.

“This must be an Immortal Ascension Boundary Expert level battle! It has to be! Quick! We must take a look! Who knows how many years it would take before we could see such a rare battle again?” A Storm House Disciple said to his fellow apprentice with an excited look.

“Wait! We should not go. If we were to be caught up in the cross fire, wouldn’t we die a miserable death?”

“Come on! We are only going to look from a distance! They are experts. Certainly, they have the ability to stop their attacks when it is going to accidentally hit an innocent bystander”

Without saying any further, the excited Storm House Disciple ran forward.

Yang Kai facial expression slowly changed. He realized that Old Man Meng had gone too far. This fight was so devastating that it was going to attract the attention of the three influences.

Yang Kai stood at the same spot for a while, considering his next plan, before dashing into the crowd carefully. Even he, was curious of the final outcome of this battle.

~ Back to the Mining Area

After Meng Wuya raised Long Jun and dashed here, he directly looked for Long Zai Tian. The latter, had not fully understood the entire matter at hand before a killing strike was directed towards him. Meng Wuya’s actions were unjustifiable. Long Zai Tian has never met this old man but was attacked. Even if he wished not to fight, as the vice-master of the Bloody Battle Gang, he had no choice but to uphold the clan’s reputation and fight. Only a coward would turn tail and flee.

However, it took less than 10 moves before Long Zai Tian knocked down from the air by Meng Wuya.

Unfortunately, Hu Man and his other clansmen could not allow their vice-master to die in the hands of Meng Wuya. They had no choice but to get involved in their fight.

Although Hu Man was glad to see Long Zai Tian suppressed, he could not simply allow the vice-master of the Blood Battle Gang to get one-sidedly beaten up and killed. That man holds the reputation of the Blood Battle Gang. If he were

to fall, he would drag down the clan with him.

Even if Hu Man does not act, his fellow clansmen will.

10 Immortal Ascension Boundary Experts charged at Meng Wuya. However, like an unbeatable god, he remained unscathed. He had shown that his arrogance was with his own strength to back him up.

However, the attacks he dealt were not only physical. It was also verbal. Like a viper, he managed to provoke and shame Long Zai Tian.

Long Zai Tian's face turned purple from shame as he spat out mouthful of blood. He cursed Meng Wuya. With only 12 moves, Meng Wuya had managed to completely suppress him. His dignity and pride as the vice master of Bloody Battle Gang was completely destroyed. How is he ever going to recover his reputation?

At this time, Meng Wuya retreated upwards. Meanwhile, the Bloody Battle Gang's experts were all standing on the ground. Both side halted, waiting for the next confrontation.

Long Zai Tian clenched his jaws, while his mouth was full of fresh blood. His body trembled as he endures the humiliation, not daring to be so dissolute in front of such power. "May I ask this excellency, where have I offended you such that you need to humiliate me to such a degree?"

Long Zai Tian was not willing to futher annoy Meng Wuya. The old man had sufficient strength to kill him. How would he possibly be foolish enough to enrage this man?

However, even if Meng Wuya was attacking him, Long Zai Tian needed to know; why was Meng Wuya attacking him? What injustice did he do to this old man? Even in death, he had to know the reason he died for.

Meng Wuya gave an arrogant snort and disdainly said. "You have neither wronged me nor annoy me!"

Hearing his nonsensical words made Long Zai Tian trembled with indignation. He lifted his trembling hand and pointed it to Meng Wuya, cursing "You...", Long Zai Tian's voice was hard to hear due to the blood clogged in his throat. Nonetheless, the rage in his voice and facial expression was obvious.

Long Zai Tian did not do any wrong to Meng Wuya. Why would the old man hit and scold him? This was completely unjust.

Meng Wuya sneers, “Are you feeling aggrieved now? No matter. If I wanted you to die, do you think you could resist?”

Long Zai Tian kept silent and breathed out slowly. He no longer dared to make any sudden movements in fear that Meng Wuya would be further provoked.

Meng Wuya yawned at Long Zai Tian’s cowardly response and angrily cursed, “I will destroy your 18 generation of heritage! Even if you feel aggrieved, you are incapable of revolting! However, I must let you and all else know. Your treatment today is for the bitter experience my precious disciple endured!”

Long Zai Tian’s eyes widened as he asked, “Your disciple?”

Murderous intent could be seen from Meng Wuya’s eyes as he voice sinks lower, “It’s all because of your descendants! They dare to make a move on my precious disciple! Fine! I will also make a move on your whole entire family!”

“Can your excellency be clearer?”, Long Zai Tian asked slowly. He had finally realized that this old man truly had a just grudge against him. How would he further dare to provoke Meng Wuya?

“Any Clearer? He He He!” Meng Wuya’s complexion turned cold and severe. Shouting loud and clearly “Why don’t you hear reason from your grandson in hell? Ask him what that little bastard did a few days ago!”

Long Zai Tian’s complexion turned for the worst as he asked “What happened to Long Hui?”

“Does it matter anymore?” Meng Wuya sneers.

Suddenly, Long Jun opened his mouth “Grandfather, I had not seen younger brother for nearly a month now. The last time I saw him, he brought Master Wen out to handle matters. Till this day, he had not returned.”

After hearing the depressing news, Long Zai Tian had the expression of a dead man. From Long Jun’s explanation, Long Zai Tian could deduce that Long Yuan must have been killed. Since it was his own grandson, Long Zai Tian had also guessed the cause of his grandson’s downfall. It must have been due to a

beautiful female apprentice.

(I don't know WTF kind of grandfather you are to be able to guess that...)

When Long Zai Tian connected all the pieces and understood the whole story, his heart ached with pain and anger. What pained him was his grandson's death and what angered him was the boy's inability to judge the background of others. Unexpectedly, the boy managed to provoke someone of such high martial ability.

"Good that you realize that this was all caused by that grandson you have raised!" Meng Wuya's anger peaked as he shouted "Today, I have come for only your head. To remind you that there are some people in this world that you cannot offend!"

Meng Wuya took a deep breath and slowly raised his hand. As his hand rose up, the entire world seemed to change colour.

The Bloody Battle Gang and various people had a panic stricken look and simultaneous flee to Long Zai Tian's side. Gazing at Meng Wuya's movements, preparing for his strike.

Once Meng Wuya shouted "Death!", his hand rapidly fell and pats maliciously towards Long Zai Tian's position. A giant palm suddenly appeared from the empty space. It was made up of the prestige of the world, with unstoppable force, capable of shaking the heaven and earth!

At that moment, The Bloody Battle Gang's experts also displayed all their most powerful killing strike, to counter Meng Wuya.

Yuan Qi from the two side collided, blowing away the sand and stones on the ground. However, even against 10 experts, Meng Wuya's giant palm does not slow down. At this moment, Meng Wuya seems to be much more reliable than his usual self.

"Bang!" echoed as the giant palm lands on top of all the Bloody Battle Gang's clansmen. In a flash, the 10 experts were forced to squat on the ground, their eyes almost bursting out of their sockets due to the force, as they circulated their Yuan Qi with all their might to resist the attack.

The ground cracked. One slit, followed by another.

Underneath them is the Bloody Battle Gang's mining area. Due to the many tunnels underneath them, the force from the collision caused the underground tunnels to collapse.

The crashing sound of the tunnel's collapse reverberated for kilometers. Those experts, resisting Meng Wuya's strike took the opportunity of the falling speed to escape from his strike.

The Giant palm finally landed on the ground, leaving a deep imprint on the earth.

Due to the protection of the 10 experts, Long Zai Tian had not died. Unfortunately, that does not mean that he escaped Meng Wuya's attack unscathed. Long Zai Tian continued to spit out mouth full of blood as his complexion continued to grow worse; becoming even paler. The other Bloody Battle Gang experts also had an ugly complexion. They had not anticipated that Meng Wuya's strength to be so profound. How was it possible that Meng Wuya was in an Immortal Ascension Boundary? How was possible for him to be this strong? Moreover, those martial skills that he had used were all extraordinary. They were definitely a rank above Martial Skills.

In spite of their impressed reaction, Meng Wuya's face remains indifferent as he snorted. Although he wanted to pursue them and continues to strike them down, there was a sudden burst of Yuan Qi from underground that made his own Yuan Qi fluctuate.

Meng Wuya's attention turned to the source of this disturbance and was shocked beyond words.

The next moment, a fiery ray of light burst out from the ground. This ray of light soon turned into a fire dragon. Following closely to the dragon was a blue light, which turned into a majestic ice phoenix, flapping her wings.

Chapter 123 The Heaven's Cave Inheritance

“A Beast Soul?”, Meng Wuya’s eyes stared fiercely at these two huge forms.

Extraordinarily strong Monster Beast, even if their mortal bodies had withered away, their souls could still exist in this world. Their souls could even wait till they have an opportunity at resurrection. Since The Dragon and the Phoenix are considered the king of Monster Beast, naturally, they both have the ability to maintain their soul.

Even with Meng Wuya’s experience, the first time he saw the Monster Beast, he had thought that these were their souls. However, upon closer inspections, he frowned. He could not feel any soul from these two forms. They were both soulless.

These two huge beings were unexpectedly, purely made from the world’s gathering of energy to form a Dragon and Phoenix shaped seal.

“This place...” The strange phenomena made Meng Wuya vigilant, as he scanned the area to find a cave within the ground, about 70 meters deep. He could feel remnant traces of a broken restriction.

The restriction (Something like a seal to the place) must have been broken by the battle earlier. This caused the Dragon and Phoenix energy to escape from the cave.

It was unbelievable that such a discovery was made by accident! Meng Wuya looked towards the Bloody Battle Gang’s clansmen, to discover that they were all rooted to the ground. They all stared at the dragon and phoenix, with a

confused expression on their faces.

Didn't they know about the existence of this place? Meng Wuya's brow wrinkled. Since there was a restriction here, he wanted to know if they had explored the cave before or not. Since none of them knew the existence cave, he could not demand an explanation.

As Meng Wuya further pondered, the two giant forms turned into one. The fiery red and the ice blue both blend mutually together, producing a beautiful sight. However, the form emitted out a kind of unapproachable burning hot and cold energy attack; so strong that no one feel confident enough to resist.

"Retreat!" Hu Man shouted angrily, forcing his clansmen to fall back.

Even with his profound strength, Meng Wuya also fall back. He too had felt that he was unable to resist the energy attacks.

Suddenly, the Dragon roared. The sound was so powerful that people could feel their ears spitting. Following the dragon, the Phoenix made a resounding cry.

As they both continued to fly circulate the sky, the people who were more superstitious considered this as a good omen.

After a long time, the Dragon and Phoenix both simultaneously flew back into the cave.

As the two forms reentered the cave, a bang sound could be heard. The earth started to tremble as a much larger burst of Yuan Qi fluctuation spread out from

the cave. The energy this time was much more powerful than the time the Dragon and Phoenix appeared. The whole mining area became bright, as though a ray of sun light continued to engulf this area.

After a while, the ray of light dissipated gradually as the Yuan Qi fluctuations also calmed down. It was slowly turning back to the tranquil environment as before.

Meng Wuya, who was floating in midair, looked down upon the cave quietly. His eyes and cheeks shivered as he muttered out “Heaven’s Cave Inheritance?”

His excitement took over him as he could not help but move forward to check his suspicions.

This must be a Heaven’s Cave Inheritance! There is no doubt!

Now, above the cave, there was a thin light barrier, about 33 meters from the surface, prevented anyone from looking inside of the cave. On this light barrier, there was a mysterious writing on top of it.

How can this be? This small place has a Heaven’s Cave Inheritance? Meng Wuya thought that one must be in a dream; after all, such matters were truly out of his expectations.

A Heaven’s Cave Inheritance is formed from a profound cultivator at the time of his death. The place holds the opportunity to grasp all the valuable secrets and knowledge that the cultivator had experienced in his lifetime. Such an opportunity to study the cultivator’s knowledge is indispensable. Moreover, the cave must have held some treasures that this cultivator had held onto at the time of his death. For example, Medicine Pills or Secret Treasures.

For someone to be able to form a Heaven's Cave Inheritance. How strong must the cultivator be? HE must have surpassed the existence of the Transcendent Stage, living as a god.

What was Immortal Ascension Boundary Martial Artist to this cultivator? They were an existence comparable to ants!

It can be said that the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, is simply buried treasure waiting to be taken. Whoever obtains the inheritance will one day have the opportunity to reach the same realm of cultivation as the cultivator who created this cave.

Moreover, there is a chance that there were multiple cultivators of the same level that died together with the one who made the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, meaning, there might be more than one inheritance!

Meng Wuya's excitement was simply unspeakable. However, the Blood Battle Gang clansmen were even more excited than him.

Buried underground was such unimaginable treasure. How could it not be good news for the Blood Battle Gang? Moreover, Hu Man and the others managed to identify this cave as the Heaven's Cave Inheritance in legend! Knowing very well, the treasure that could be found inside the cave.

However, at the same time, they were aware of the gravity of this issue. Due to the battle earlier on, the other two schools must have been alerted. They must also be aware of this cave. Thus, the Bloody Battle Gang would not be able to monopolize the cave.

If Bloody Battle Gang were to try to monopolize the cave, the two other schools, Storm House and High Heaven Pavilion would definitely join up to eradicate the Bloody Battle Gang and split the treasure amongst themselves.

Knowing this, Hu Man points the cave and shouted. “Go!” He feared that with the arrival of the two other schools, they might take away a lot of benefits from within the cave. Hence, he wanted to swiftly take as much as he could before they arrive. Allowing the other schools to only receive leftover treasures.

After he issued the order, Bloody Battle Gang’s 10 experts flushed forwards towards the cave, while vigilantly looking at Meng Wuya, in fear that he might stop to get rid of them.

Who would have thought that Meng Wuya would not do anything but sneer at them?

Hu Man and the others were naturally overjoyed.

The 10 experts arrived at the underground cave entrance and moved forward.

Meng Wuya, continued to sneer as his facial expression was that of taunting them to continue.

As the 10 experts attacked the light barrier, the barrier, like rubber, rebound their attacks and sent each one of them flying away. After recovering from the sudden force backwards, the experts all looked at each other with blank dismay.

“What’s the matter?” Hu Man muttered after seeing the strange sight. He went forward and personally tried to enter the cave but was thrown back much like his other clansmen.

When Hu Man realized that something was wrong, he turned vision to Meng Wuya. He noticed that this old man had known that something like this would happen, else, why would he sneer and taunt them? Hu Man cupped his hands and lowered his stance, “Senior, May I ask what is wrong with this Heaven’s Cave Inheritance?”

(Idiot, can’t you see there were some bloody words written on the light barrier?)

Meng Wuya snorted, showing not the least bit of care to Hu Man’s request. With the appearance of the Heaven’s Cave Inheritance, it made him no longer interesting in looking for Long Zai Tian. Either ways, that man had already receive a lot of damage. If he wanted to finish Long Zai Tian off, Meng Wuya was confident he could do it anytime.

Hu Man knitted his brows as he tried to think. Suddenly, he could hear multiple flap flap sounds of clothing from afar.

The Blood Battle Gang Experts complexion turned bitter and astringent and some muttered, “That was too fast...”

In a short while, 5 Great Elders from High Heaven Pailion appeared under the leadership of Wei Xitong above the mining area. After a while, Storm House Immortal Ascension Boundary Experts also arrived, under the leadership of House Master Xiao Ruohan

Both schools were shocked after noticing the Heaven’s Cave Inheritance. Their vision was now filled with greed and surprise.

Hu Man was fuming with rage, asking “This is Bloody Battle Gang’s mining area! How could you trespass here?”

However, Xiao Ruohan remained calm and gently replied with a smile “Hu Master, our schools have lived as neighbors for hundreds of years. We are all considered as old neighbors. Naturally, after hearing some matter that have occurred here, we were worried and must find out what had happened? If your school has anything that needs help from us, as neighbors, we must try our best not to decline. Won’t you say Elder Wei?”

Xiao Ruohan’s words were naturally mean to pressure the Blood Battle Gang, along with showing their temporary alliance with High Heaven Pavilion. At that moment, Hu Man’s complexion turned ugly as he coldly snorted.

Wei Xitong, nods in agreement. “Master Xiao, speaks with utmost reason. Hu Master, this place should be Heaven’s Cave Inheritance of legends. Although the buried treasures inside are innumerable, it holds many dangers as well. Your Bloody Battle Gang member alone may not be able to tackle such a place. Come; let’s discuss how we are able to help you explore this cave.”

Human gets angry and tries to rebuke “This is my Bloody Battle Gang’s mining area. The restrictions here are naturally ours. However we are unable to explain it and likewise, you think that you could? With your abilities, do you think that you have the qualifications to enter?”

Meng Wuya coldly snorted “I will explain the restriction!”

Hu Man awkwardly and bitterly looked towards Meng Wuya, not daring to refute this old man.

Xiao Ruohan smiled “Hu Master, you should calm down a little. This is a matter that we have to discuss!”

From a distance, crowds of experts were still gathering to see the ruckus. No matter how far away they were, be it in the Black Wind Trade city or in their schools, they were all able to see the Dragon and Phoenix blend together in the sky. Although many do not know the situation at the mines, if there were going to be more magnificent scenes, how could they now want to watch? Therefore, after the Dragon and Phoenix flew back down, the people heading there sped up.

Yang Kai, who was hidden in the stream of people heading to the cave, was also excited but was still vigilant.

The Dragon and Phoenix were well known as good omens. If those beings were an indication of treasure, he expected that there will be a large fight over it. With his current level of cultivation and skills, he would sadly not have any qualifications to participate in such a battle.

When he arrived, he could see the gathering of thousands of people. Everyone’s head was swaying and the noise was like a bustling market!

Chapter 124 The Three School's Decision

The crowd was moving forward noisily but was stopped by the experts of the three schools. They encircled the Bloody Battle Gang's mining area, 3 kilometer radius, preventing the crowd from going further.

When Yang Kai's looked to the middle of the encirclement, he could see the 5 Great Elders from High Heaven Pavilion. They were discussing intensely with one group of people, quarreling, with face flushed with anger.

A tall man could be seen with an excited look. Meanwhile, a student like man was trying to keep everything peaceful.

From the crowd, Yang Kai could here soft discussions. "That tall man is Hu Man from Bloody Battle Gang and the student like man is the Master of Storm House, Master Xiao Ruohan."

"What has happened here for so many experts to gather?"

"This morning, I heard that the experts have found Heaven's Cave Inheritance!"

"What's a Heaven's Cave Inheritance?" a curious voice rose.

Yang Kai, who did not know anything, kept his ears peels. However, he was not the only one. Many from the crowd were also listening attentively.

The one who knew about the place smiled. He excitedly told everything he

knew about the Heaven's Cave Inheritance and all of its advantages. When the groups of people heard the news, warm-blood rushed to their heads as they wished to run into the cave to get the inheritance.

So that's how it is! Yang Kai had recalled the moment two months ago. He felt that the place had buried some Yang attribute treasure, and gave this information to Hu Mei'er as a gesture of gratitude. However, he had not thought that this place hid a Heaven's Cave Inheritance!

At that time, the Yang Attribute that Yang Kai had felt must have been the restriction of the Heaven's Cave Inheritance.

This place's incidental exposure would benefit Yang Kai the most, seeing how it was connected to Yang Attribute, his cultivation technique.

The group of people continued to talk but at this point, Yang Kai was not listening. He was now focused on what the three schools would do after finding this cave. It was impossible for one school to monopolize the cave at this point. Although they would wish they could.

However, since this was the Bloody Battle Gang's mining area, they must be the ones to receive the benefits of the cave first.

As Yang Kai pondered, the three schools enlisted the most profound disciples to enter the cave and search for the situation of the cave first.

Three people, Su Yan from High Heaven Pavilion, Long Jun from Bloody Battle Gang and Fang Ziji from Storm House entered the cave simultaneously.

After a long wait,

Su Yan came back after half a day, followed by Long Jun and Fang Ziji. The three people reported back to their respective schools their findings and before dispersing in three different directions. Meanwhile, the experts of the schools continued their discussion.

It was not till a long time later, that the message was passed on to the lower disciples to inform them to gather. Yang Kai and one crowd of High Heaven Pavilion disciples walked towards the 5 Great Elders.

“Yang Fellow Apprentice!” As Yang Kai was waiting for Wei Xitong’s speech, Su Mu and Li Yuntian greeted him from the side.

Yang Kai smiled. “Oh. You came as well!”

Su Mu smiled back, “Such a huge matter. It is only natural that we come to watch the fun!”

Li Yuntian asked “Fellow Apprentice, you have been missing for 20 days now, where have you been?”

Yang Kai Explained “I had to exit the school to handle certain matters. But, I must thank you for helping clean up my log cabin while I was away.”

Li Yuntian and the others were stunned. “We did sweep the floor outside the log cabin for you but we never cleaned the inside of the log cabin!”

Su Mu let out a chuckle “These lazy groups of people don’t even fold their beds

once they get up. How is it possible for them to clean up you log cabin for you?”

“Really?” Yang Kai was stunned. F no one cleaned his log cabin, how was it possible for it to be so clean?

“Silence!” Wei Xitong declared with a serious face. With just one word, the 2000 High Heaven Pavilion Disciples immediately looked up at him with Their glimmering eyes.

Everyone knew that the news they were about to receive was about the Heaven’s Cave Inheritance.

Wei Xitong coughed lightly and continued “You all should already know what has happened and what opportunities you may receive inside the Heaven’s Cave Inheritance. Even after living for such a long time, this old man and many others have never seen a Heaven’s Cave Inheritance. Let alone the entire Great Han Dynasty has never seen this cave for a thousand years! We do not know for certain how high one’s cultivation level must be to create a Heaven’s Cave Inheritance but, we certainly do know there must be countless treasures inside. Spirit Pills, rare Cultivation Techniques, armor and weapons, and finally, the most important treasure of them all, the inheritance of the cultivator who died!”

The audience’s breath turned fiery as they listened to Wei Xitong’s words.

Wei Xitong continued, “With such treasure will come with danger! Do remember that inside, the slightest mistakes could get you killed!” With those words, those hot heads that were ready to rush in suddenly had their heads cooled down with a slap from reality as their spirits gradually grow more solemn.

Seeing some dispirited faced cause Wei Xitong to coldly snort. “These advantages are there and should be taken! If you don’t take it, another person will! If you were to risk your life to enter in search of an opportunity, would you still be willing to go in?”

(Damn... guy knows how to actually talk!)

Wei Xitong’s speech left the place with silence. His threatening vision swept across the disciples to fall on Yang Kai. Suddenly, his pupils cannot help but shrink as he quickly looked past the boy.

(Honestly, not sure what’s going on here. Did his daughter get screwed by Yang Kai before?)

After that moent, another voice sounds out. “Great Elder! This is a huge Chance! If I were to miss it, wouldn’t it be a pity? Even if there are risk involved, we must take it on for the opportunities inside!”

“Certainly. This is a once in a lifetime opportunity. How could one possibly choose to miss it?”

“We must go in!”

(Wow, I smell a heck lot of emotional manipulation here...)

High Heaven Pavilion disciples slowly got excited again. With so many people’s encouragement, and under the enticement of the inheritance, the dangers and risks were well worth it! Birds die for food, while humans die for wealth.

“Good!” Wei Xitong nods with a satisfied expression. “My High Heaven Pavilion disciples should be unafraid for danger. They should have the courage and uprightness! Your decision has made this old man gratified. All disciples listen to

my command! All those over 30, move to one corner!”

Immediately, troops of High Heaven disciples separated. The population of the those at the middle had just reduced to 40%.

Wei Xitong looked at the group of over 30s and pitifully said “You are unable to enter the cave. There is a limit for those of age 30 and above. Those that are in the realm of Immortal Ascension and above are also unable to enter.”

“How can this be!” The crowd of rejected disciples cried out.

“This is not a rule that we made. The senior who made the cave had set up a few restrictions, which we must abide to. Naturally, he must have his reasons for doing so.” The second elder, Su Suan Su shouted.

Wei Xitong shouts “those disciples under Initial Element Stage move to this side!”

Another group of people had also made another group.

“You are currently able to go in but we do not permit your entry!” Wei Xitong stared at them. “The dangers inside is too much for you. Your strength is currently too weak and going inside would be equal to signing a death sentence!”

This group of people was self-aware and dare not bring forward any complaints.

With those two conditions, the remaining participants was only 300-400!

Wei Xitong looked at the remaining crowd “If you do not wish to enter the cave, you can leave now. The school will not force you to enter. Also, those that enter cannot complain if they are reportedly dead!” However, even with the warning, the enticement of the Heaven’s Cave Inheritance was too much for anyone to choose to leave.

Wei Xitong waited for a long time before smiling. “Since you have chosen to enter, I will tell you, all I know about the place so that you all can be mentally prepared to enter.”

All he would know was from the report by Su Yan. Although what she understood was not much, it was better than nothing.

Yang Kai listened to find out that once they entered the cave, their starting points would be different. The Heaven’s Cave Inheritance also had an abundance of world energy, which makes it very suitable for cultivation. Moreover, the cave has special exits that must be used in order to return. Else, the disciples will be unable to exit.

Since all this information was from Su Yan, what Wei Xitong knew was not much.

After explaining, Wei Xitong said “Because this place was first discovered by Bloody Battle Gang, they will therefore be sending in 50 people first. After waiting for half a day (6 hours) My High Heaven Pavilion and Storm House disciples will go in. I must warn you, that you must not only be careful of the restriction traps inside. You must also be wary of the disciples from the other two schools. Do not allow yourself to be able to find a treasure but is unable to enjoy it!”

Hearing this, the disciple's heart turned cold as they imagined the scene where they are backstabbed due to one's treasure.

"Disciples of High Heaven Pavilion. If you bump to each other inside, you must help each other mutually and survive! Am I loud and clear?"

"Yes!" the disciples shouted.

"First, we will dismiss you. Find a place to rest and prepare. When the time comes for us to enter, we will inform you." Hence, the disciples dispersed and seek for an appropriate place to meditate.

Li Yuntian pulled a long face as he jealously looked at Su Mu and Yang Kai, "Young Su, Yang Fellow Apprentice, I am unable to go in..." Li Yuntian was currently at the Tempered Body's ninth boundary.

Su Mu smiled. "Who Asked you to be so lazy with cultivation? You get what one deserves! Look at Yang Fellow apprentice! He worked so hard and is now in the his in the Initial Elementary Stage. By the way, what level of cultivation are you?"

Yang Kai calmly responded "seven."

Su Mu stared dumbfounded with Li Yuntian. Their expression seemed to be staring at a monster! It took a long time before they were able to get over their shock.

"I must hurry and cultivate as well..." Su Mu said dejectedly. Meanwhile, Li Yuantian tactfully left. "Yang Fellow Apprentice, I should not disturb you any further. You need time to restore..."

Yang Kai nodded and found a peaceful place to meditate. He sat cross-legged and closed his eyes, waiting for the moment to arrive!

Chapter 125 Entry

Yang Kai was secretly rejoicing in his heart. Never had he expected that his purchase in Yang Stones to be so important. This is especially, when he needed to enter somewhere as dangerous as the Heaven's Cave Inheritance.

After Meditation, his Dantian has now stored about 50 Yang drops. This should be sufficient for any danger he would face in the Heaven's Cave Inheritance.

While sitting in meditation, Yang Kai felt the presence of someone's gaze. When he looked over, he found Su Yan. Immediately, when their gaze nearly connected, she withdrew away. Su Mu, who noticed this, bowed to Shi Yan with a dignified face and glimmering eyes. Yang Kai looked away, not caring.

Suddenly, a sound could be heard from Bloody Battle Gang. It was time for the 50 people from the Bloody Battle Gang to enter Heaven's Cave Mansion.

Naturally, these conditions were made while the three schools had their discussions. Bloody Battle Gang wished to monopolize the whole Heaven's Cave Inheritance. However, with the two schools present, that is impossible. Similarly, although High Heaven Pavilion and Storm House both desire the treasures inside the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, Hu Man and the experts from the Bloody Battle Gang could not simply allow these intruders to take advantage of them. As a result, the schools agreed to pay 1 million in cash and allow the Bloody Battle Gang to send 50 of their disciples to enter the Heaven's Cave Inheritance half a day earlier as compensation.

When Yang Kai looked through the 50 disciples from Bloody Battle Gang, he knew that these were elites of the schools. Likewise, allowing them leeway for half a day first would definitely result in them discovering and stashing most of the treasures.

Strangely, the Hu sisters (Hu Mei'er and Hu Jiao'er), were in the center of an encirclement formed by the 50 expert disciples.

Both sisters look exactly alike. Similar to twins. They were both gorgeous individuals, who would attract any kind of male. Their beauty certainly reached the level whereby males would gratefully throw their lives away in order to gain the sister's affection. Naturally, if one were to win either one of their hearts, the man would certainly die without regrets.

In a short span of time, the half of the 50 people entered the cave and disappeared without a trace. When the Bloody Battle Gang's disciples entered the cave, the disciples from High Heaven Pavilion felt low spirited.

Suddenly, a form appeared, flying at high speed towards the sky above cave.

Hu Man and many other experts instinctively shouted, "Who Dares!"

"Naturally, it's me!" Meng Wuya shouted in an angry tone as his raging pupils fiercely stared at the Bloody Battle Gang's experts. Meng Wuya waved his hand and gently shouted. "Come here!"

Hu Man and the other experts from Bloody Battle Gang stared at this approaching figure. As Hu Man had expected, she was a beautiful girl! Although her face was covered by a veil and most of her features were hidden, her limpid clear eyes and gracefully enchanting stature is not something as ordinary girl could possess. However, her beauty was not the only thing that shocked Hu Man. The girl's strength was astounding! Unexpectedly, she was at True Element Boundary Stage!

Hu Man looked towards Long Zai Tian with discontented eyes. The man curse, "What a great did your grandson has done!"

Long Zai Tian did not reply. Instead, he stared with gaze filled with hatred towards the pair of master and disciple. However, he was unable to unleash his rage. Meng Wuya's strength far exceeded his. If he were to enact his revenge for his grandson right now, he would certainly die without a corpse. It was hopeless!

Naturally, that girl was Xia Ning Chang. She had been closed up (Something akin to meditation training in a secluded place) in High Heaven Pavilion. After receiving Meng Wuya's instructions, she hurriedly flew to meet him. However, even the mighty True Elementary Boundary Stage practitioner hid behind her master's back after noticing the gaze of serval thousands of people, all focused on her.

"My precious disciple," Meng Wuya said with a gentle tone. He pointed towards the cave, "There are great opportunities there. So go!"

Xia Ning Chang nodded aggressively. She took a glance at the light barrier. Quickly, her gaze scanned around her surrounding as though she was looking for someone. Unfortunately, it was currently nightfall and she was unable to find the person she was looking for.

(Damn it! I ship them together so much and you have to cock block me here!)

Noticing her actions, Meng Wuya once again urged Xia Ning Chang to quickly enter the cave. Not daring to oppose her Master, Xia Ning Chang bit her lips with a painful expression and flew into the cave.

From the beginning to the end, none of the Bloody Battle Gang took action against those two. No body dared to oppose Meng Wuya.

Likewise, Wei Xitong and the other 4 Elders looked at this scene and was speechless! They had never knew that the man acting as the Contribution Hall's Store Keeper would be unexpectedly so aggressive! Even in the face of the entire Bloody Battle Gang, he had a calm composure. With just a few words, he had completely overridden the agreement between the three schools! Allowing his own disciple to enter the cave without any repercussions from Hu Man and the others!

Just what kind of situation was this?

Xiao Ruohan brow wrinkled as he was left without an answer for this situation. "Hu Master, What is this about? Isn't this against the agreement that we have agreed upon? Why can a High Heaven Pavilion's disciple be allowed to enter at this time?"

After hearing Xiao Ruohan's words, Hu Man wished he could take a sewing needle and permanently shut that mouth of his. Meng Wuya is such an arbitrary person. If he were to be provoked any further, Hu Man feared that his fate would be more unfortunate than fortunate. Therefore, he would rather Meng Wuya get away with this incident, just to hopefully clear their past enenimity.

However, who would have thought that Xiao Ruohan dare to stirrup trouble! Thankfully, Meng Wuya simply sneered and ignores them.

To appease both sides, Hu Man had no choice but to present a valid reason to Xiao Ruohan. "Actually, we were only able to manage to find this place due to this Senior's skills. Naturally, we can't complain if he were to send in his disciples.

After all, without him, we would not have this opportunity in the first place.”

Xiao Ruohan Sneered. “Then why didn’t Hu Master mention this matter earlier when we were discussing?”

Hu Man was at a loss of words. Although he had tried to explain the situation, he too truly had no good reason to present. Even he himself, was truly unable to resist the will of Meng Wuya.

Xiao Ruohan continued to press the matter. “Hu Master, isn’t this considered to be bullying my Storm House? For High Heaven Pavilion’s disciple to be allowed to enter, shouldn’t we be treated the same as well?”

“Nonsense!” Hu Man cursed angrily.

(It was actually something like ‘grass your grandmother’ but sounds so weird! Hu Man was pretty much cursing Xiao Ruohan’s grandmother, which is supposed to be an insult.)

He turned his head in all directions to see that the last Bloody Battle Gang’s Disciple was about to enter the cave and quickly shouted. “Whoever you are, you are not allowed in! You shall give your position to this Senior’s disciple!”

Who would have expected that this youth, that was denied entry, was Long Zai Tian’s older grandson, Long Jun!

Long Jun was extremely excited for this once in a lifetime opportunity to enter the Heaven’s Cave Inheritance. He had hoped to inherit the skills and knowledge left by the cultivator who made this cave. However, just when he was about to enter the cave and get a head start, Hu Man’s order resonated inside his ears. The boy quickly looked towards his grandfather with pleading eyes.

Unfortunately, Long Zai Tian took a deep breath, closed one's eyes, and spoke without any strength "As Hu Master had said, Long Jun, you shall wait for half a day."

Long Jun clenched his teeth and muttered "Yes!"

Hu Man, who was filled with rage, stared at Xiao Ruohan. "Xiao Master, certainly you can't have any complains now right? That Senior's disciple's slot had been accounted for by my own Bloody Battle Gang's quota!"

Xiao Ruohan's brow wrinkled as he snorted and waked away. He could no longer pester Hu Man for a leeway for his Storm House.

Wei Xitong looked at Hu Man with glimmering eyes. "It seems that Hu Man truly fears out Treasurer Meng."

Su Xuan Wu Chucked. "We have all underestimated our Storekeeper's abilities."

Hu Man looked up at Meng Wuya with a smile plastered on his face. "Senior, is this arrangement satisfactory?"

Meng Wuya responded with a strange smile. "Of course I'm satisfied. However, once my disciple returns and complains to me about anyone who offended her, I hope that you will not take my actions as hostility towards you."

Hu Man's complexion drastically changed. Although he had a smile plastered on his face, he was secretly hiding the hostility within his heart. He gave a hollowed laugh "Of course!"

Hu Man thought to himself. My god, now we have to tell everyone that no matter what, if they were to bump into that girl inside, we must treat her with the outmost respect. We definitely cannot allow her to encounter any form of danger!

Thus, without any further delay, Hu Man quickly spread this warning to the rest of the Bloody Battle Gang's disciples.

To see Meng Wuya as such a strong figure; made all High Heaven Pavilion disciples surprised. Who would have thought that the lewd Store keeper was so powerful and tyrannical? Even the Great Elder Wei Xitong does not have the ability to make Hu Man so obedient.

After a while, the place became tranquil again. All of them continued to focus on meditation, waiting for the time to arrive. They all wish to be in their best condition to get the greatest chance in receiving the inheritance.

Suddnely, Su Xuan Wu sighed. "We can't say for certain that the loss of our disciples will account for our gain in treasures."

On the other hand, Wei Xitong was more hopeful. "Inside, if one can obtain the inheritance, he would certainly become a person of tremendous potential and ability. Far surpassing us!"

"Let's just hope so..."

The dim light from the night sky and the rustling of the forest wind continued as the time slowly passe3d. Suddenly, experts from three of the schools shouted

out, alerting everyone that it was time. Simultaneously, all the disciples woke up.

The Bloody Battle Gang's elite disciples have already been inside for half a day. It was time for the whole group to enter the cave!

From High Heaven Pavilion, Su Yan and Xia Hong Chen took the lead. Behind them were two lines of disciples that formed in an orderly manner. They all took their turn to walk into the cave and vanish from sight.

Yang Kai and Su Mu were walking side by side. When Yang Kai looked over, he could see Su Mu anxiously rubbing his hands.

"If only we are able to arrive at the same location together..." Su Mu said in a low voice.

"We can hope, but that is not what the Great Elder said would happen once with enter. It would also be unlikely that we are going to land at the same spot."

"Yang Fellow Apprentice, do you know what inheritance this is?"

"How would I know?"

"Do you know of the dangers inside?"

"No..."

"Ah, I'm so anxious right now!"

Originally, Yang Kai was not anxious at all. However, while he was whispering to Su Mu, he could not help but feel his heart tightening.

When it was their turn to enter, Yang Kai's vision narrowed. He wanted to know what exactly happened to him after he passed through the light barrier. When he entered, he could see a flower underneath his feet. Inside a void; he was all alone. The flower rotated for a while and suddenly vanished. Yang Kai immediately fell.

The whole scenery quickly changed as he gently landed on a field. He looked up the sky to find it to still be blue but without any clouds, moon, sun or stars. On top of him was a black portal.

Chapter 126 The Beginning of the Adventure

When Yang Kai shifted his gaze from the sky to the environment around him, he saw that he was surrounded by numerous stone pillars of various height and dimensions. Some were 4 meters high while others could even be a simple sand pile.

When Yang Kai felt the environment around him, he could easily tell that the world energy here is much richer (dense) than the outside world. If he were to sit in mediation and cultivate, he could estimate that his efficiency would be 3-4 times that of when he cultivate outside. Sadly, he had no time to cultivate. He and his competitors were all here for the inheritance. Taking time to purely cultivate was akin to giving up the search for the inheritance.

When he looked around for people around him, he discovered that he was separated from Su Mu even though they both entered at the same time.

Suddenly, Yang Kai could see a shadow on the floor. The shadow grew bigger as a figure quickly dropped down from the portal. This person was surprisingly Lan Chudie!

The girl quickly got up and stood firm. She looked around her and quickly noticed Yang Kai.

To think of all the disciples he could gotten the chance to pair up with, it had to be her! Yang Kai quickly exclaimed "It's you!"

Lan Chudie seemed happy to meet the boy and walked towards him. "Well, aren't you skillful?!"

“Did you just reach here?” Lan Chudie asked.

“Yeah, that’s right.” Yang Kai nodded in response.

“There are many people that entered his cave together. Since we do not know where each person will be placed, should we wait for a moment, to see if anyone managed to also get placed here?” Lan Chudie proposed.

“Sure, why not.” Yang Kai did not have any objections. After all, this place was unpredictable and dangerous. It would be wise to move together in a group. In case they meet any difficulty, the group could work together to fight it off. Of course, that would mean the treasure would be split. However, considering the risk of losing one’s life, being in a group was a much safer method to get treasures. Naturally, once he got to know the place a little better, he could assess the situation and see if it was safe for him to leave the group to self-explore.

Thus, the pair stood there waiting.

After a while, 3 more people fell nearby.

Out of these three people, one was a High Heaven Pavilion Disciple, and the reminding two were from the Bloody Battle Gang and Storm House; respectively.

As the five people gathered, in this special place, they did not care much about their background. Surprisingly, they were all harmonious.

After waiting again, no one appeared. Thus, Lan Chudie spoke. “Since no one

else is appearing, shall we head off?”

With her beauty and self-confidence, her manner and speech, she immediately became the center of attention within the group.

Everyone nodded in agreement.

“Before we start, we should be familiar with each other first. It’s good to know each person’s cultivation level, so as to know who can deal with the more dangerous task. I shall start first. My name is Lau Chudie and I am from High Heaven Pavilion. Qi Transformation Stage, level 7. How about you?” the girl asked and looked to another High Heaven Pavilion disciple.

The disciple quickly flatters the girl. “Female Apprentice, I have heard of your famous name! To think I would be in such luck to meet someone as beautiful as you today.”

The disciple’s flattery was beyond obvious, causing Yang Kai and the other two to despise this boy.

Lau Chudie was an exceptionally attractive person. Her whole figure was not only enchanting; her pair of magnificent mountains was enough to make anyone’s eyes glued. If a man could have her, to only be able to hold those pair of magnificent mountains, he living in heaven!

(BTW, she is a grade below Su Yan in terms of beauty. People just don’t dare to approach that ice queen due to her cold personality. However, the disciples certainly admire Su Yan a lot more.)

Lau Chudie gave a smile, “and you are?” she asked, showing little care for the

boy's words.

The boy proudly puffed out his chest and received his abdomen, lowered his voice and said. "I am Fellow Apprentice Nie Yong. I am a Lower Base Disciple at Qi Transformation Stage Level 4!" The boy smiled mischievously, "Senior Sister, you can feel relieved. If there is any danger, I will be there to help you!"

Lan Chudie's eyes scanned the boy as she showed a faint and sweet smile. "Fellow Apprentice, I have kept your words in mind."

She then turned her vision to another person. This man was tall and bulky. He had a broad and sturdy build, taller than Yang Kai by an entire head. Although he looked rough, he also seemed to be simple and honorable. "I am called Zuo An. A Bloody Battle Gang Disciple at Qi Transformation Stage level 5." After he spoke, he stood there silent. It seems that this Disciple does not enjoy talking very much.

Afterwards, Lan Chudie bowed and her vision turned to another person. This time, the disciple was a female. Her stature was quite slender. She was not tall but looked delicate. Moreover, ever since she first arrived, she had a shivering smile on her face. It was obvious that this girl was extremely shy as she avoided eye contact.

"I'm called Du Yishuang. I am from Storm House. Please call me Little Sister Du. I am a Qi Transformation Stage level 6. Nice to meet you." Du Yishuang lowered her head respectfully.

Everyone's eyes were immediately glued to this girl. No one had ever imagined that this girl, who looked to be 14 to 15 years old, to be at Qi Transformation Stage level 6! This delicate girl was the second strongest person within the

group!

Lau Chudie smiled. “Well, this is certainly interesting.” She looked up the portal and asked. “Maybe the portal sorted us according to strength?”

The group of people looked at each other and seemed to agree with Lau Chudie’s inference. So far, all of them were in Qi Transformation Stage and were all in ascending order, from level 4 to 7.

“Oh that right! What are you? What Qi Transformation Stage level are you currently in?” Lau Chudie looked towards Yang Kai and asked.

Due to the pattern, Lau Chudie naturally thought of Yang Kai as a person in the Qi Transformation Stage. Although he was not in that stage, if he were to use his full strength, it would certainly be comparable to someone in those stages.

Yang Kai embarrassingly starched his cheek and said. “I’m only in the Initial Elementary Stage, level 7. I’m from the High Heaven Pavilion, called Yang Kai...”

Zuo An’s gaze immediately turned to that of despising as he mutter out “Unlucky!”

“You are the infamous Yang Kai?” Lau Chudie’s facial expression turned to that of surprise as she continued to inspect him. With Yang Kai’s reputation, Nie Yong was also doing the same and Lau Chudie.

“Em.” Yang Kai nodded. He knew that his name was infamous throughout the whole entire school. This reaction was almost bound to happen after people knew of his current cultivation level now.

Quickly, Yang Kai realized that Nie Yong's gaze turned hostile as Lan Chudie was one that was still full of interest.

It was not surprising that Nie Yong would be hostile to Yang Kai. After all, Nie Yong was a Lower Based Disciple and should be friends if not a click with Wei Zhuang and Xie Hongchen. The previous time, he had humiliated both Wai Zhuang and Xie Hongchen. It comes to no surprise that a grudge would be bore by Nie Yong as well.

However, since this was the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, Yang Kai knew that Nie Yong would not do anything rash. Thus, it was safe to assume that he would not dare attack Yang Kai.

Lau Chudie withdrew her gaze and looked towards all 4 people. "Alright. Since everyone knows each other, and none of us knows the location of any treasure, if we were to discover any, we will collect and respectively assign each one their piece fairly. If there are insufficient treasures collected to be equally distributed, we will settle this with money. How does that sound?"

Nie Yong hastily nodded. "Lan Female Apprentice is right. I hope that you will maintain fairness for all of us."

The rest did not object to Lau Chudie's proposal and just like that, Lau Chudie had already established her position as leader of this group.

When Yang Kai traded with her, he noticed that she was not a person that was willing to be taken advantage of. Likewise, Lau Chudie was certainly a person of ambition, and will never agree to be oppressed by another person.

“Since this matter has already been decided, let’s go. I will lead the way first. After 2 hours, the person leading the way will be changed.” Lau Chudie stopped talking and quickly walked. Those that were behind quickly caught up as they obediently followed her. Nie Yong, quickly ran to Lau Chudie’s side and walked shoulder to shoulder with her. The boy continued to flatter the beauty. However, none of his words were taken seriously by Lau Chudie.

Lau Chudie’s face would often appear to be smiling, as she continued to chat with the boy, further encouraging him to compliment her.

(Seriously... This boy...)

Zuo An, the robust man, who was directly behind the two was listening to their conversation and showed little care for what they said.

Yang Kai, who was behind them heard Little Sister Du quickly walk up to him. This shy girl quickly walked to his side and whispered to him in a soft voice. “Don’t worry. You can certainly reach Qi Transformation Stage in the future.”

Yang Kai turned to look at the girl and smile. “Don’t worry, I don’t really care all that much.”

“...” Du Yishuang’s whole face turned red after Yang Kai turned his head. She thought that the boy did not dare speak due to Zuo An’s remarks earlier and merely wanted to comfort him.

“Ha Ha” Watching her reaction was quite cute as Yang Kai chuckled. “Little Sister Du, you seem to be younger than me but how is it that your cultivation level is so high?”

Since this girl took the effort to comfort him, she had left Yang Kai with a good impression of her. The boy wished to further get to know this girl. After all, it was better to have friends than enemies.

“I am 19 years old. How am I younger than you?” Du Yishuang explained in a soft voice.

(Oh shiiiiiiiit!)

“Oh...” Yang Kai exclaimed in awkwardness.

As they walked, the two pair of people continued to talk. All except Zuo An, who was a loner.

Suddenly, after walking, Yang Kai could feel the Yang Origin Seal in his chest act up. It was pointing him in front.

Yang Kai could feel it. About 300 meters in front, there is definitely some kind of Yang Attribute material. As the five advanced, they finally saw the thing Yang Kai felt.

Lau Chudie suddenly shouted in surprise and Nie Yong hastily looked in front. “Yang Stones and Yin Stones?”

What they saw was a huge pile of crushed stones. Moreover, these stones were not ordinary Yin Stones and Yang Stones. These stones were the equivalent quality of those found in the Black Wind Trade City, sold by Bloody Battle Gang! At least medium or even high quality stones!

Each stone was worth \$520 and this pile here definitely contains more than 1000 stones. In other words, if they were to collect and sell all of the stones, it would be worth at least \$502,000!

(Of course, this does not bloody count the saturation of the market rate and blah blah blah.)

Since all five disciples were ordinary member within the school, they were not that wealthy. Never have they seen so much wealth before!

Chapter 127 Distress

At that very instant, everyone's breath was heavy. However, Lan Chudie still remained alert and quickly everyone. "Wait! Check if there are any dangers around first!" It was strange for such wealth to be here without a trap.

The five people quickly spread out and scouted the area. Fortunately, they did not discover any traps.

Even after scouting around, Lan Chudie did not feel relieved. She picked up a stone and inspected it. When there was absolutely no reaction that occurred, she took a breath of relief and nodded. "Alright it's safe."

The five members looked at each other first, before they all hastily collected the stones. The other member would quickly bag all the stone but Yang Kai was more selective. Since he only needed one type of stone, he only collected Yang Stones.

After picking for a while, Lan Chudie's smile suddenly stiffen up. She took another look at the stone in her hand and let out a sigh. Letting it drop to the ground.

Her actions immediately brought doubt to Nie Yong. "Lan Female Apprentice. What's wrong?"

"Stop collecting the stones." Lan Chudie said. "If we were to bring such a heavy bag of good with us as we explore, it would only consume our strength. Likewise, if we encounter any danger later it will only slow us down when we try to escape. If such a scenario occurred, we would probably lose it in the end."

After hearing listening to reason, everyone responded with disappointment. They had forgotten their safety due to their own greed.

Lan Chudie continued. "Furthermore, we have just entered this place. There are bound to be more treasures here. Think about it. There are no traps here. Certainly, if this was that valuable, there would be traps set up here right? So, it is only reasonable that to think that these stone are not worth much as compared to the other treasures this place has to offer. The real treasures are waiting for us to be found!"

Nie Yong nodded in approval. "Yes. It is as Lan Female apprentice said."

Zuo An also nodded in agreement.

Du Yishuang gave a reluctant look to the stones in her hands and tossed it back to the ground.

Only Yang Kai continued collecting nonchalantly. He continued as though Lan Chudie had not said anything. His actions made Lan Chudie's brow wrinkled.

Yang Kai explained while he was sorting the stones he collected. "If we truly encounter danger, it will not be too late to abandon the stones."

Lan Chudie did not further make any remarks. "Do as you please." She turned around and began to walk. "However, we will not wait for you to sort the stone. Just make sure you don't take too much."

Yang Kai nodded in agreement. “Sure, you guy should go on first.”

Thus, Lan Chudie no longer wasted a single second as carried on. Meanwhile, Zuo An looked at Yang Kai with a demeaning gaze. On the other hand, Nie Yong was more vocal of his opinion. “Apparently, you do not realize the dangers this world contains! You will lose these stones sooner or later. Why even bother collecting them!”

Du Yishuang, was unlike the others. She held a good opinion of Yang Kai and supported him. “It’s okay. I’ll stay here with you.”

Yang Kai quickly replied, “No. It’s alright. It’s best you join the group. Don’t worry I will catch up later,” as he continued to sort the stones nonchalantly.

Since Yang Kai had insisted, Du Yishuang no longer pursues the matter. She gave a nod of acceptance and ran to join the group.

After the four of them left, Yang Kai quickly started to cultivate True Yang Secret Arts. The Yang Stones that were close to him began to lose their color as the boy continued to absorb the Yang energy from the stones. Later, Yang Kai managed to absorb enough Yang Energy to form 20 drops of Yang Drops within his Dantian.

This is enough, Yang Kai decided. Although there were many Yang Stones here, Yang Kai is not able to absorb all of them in such a short period of time. It was as Lan Chudie had said, this pile of stones were probably one of the most useless treasures in the Heaven’s Cave Inheritance. Hence, Yang Kai decided not to waste too much time here, so as to have time to pursue the other treasures.

After 30 minutes, Yang Kai had managed to catch up with the group. The moment he joined, he could tell that the other 3 members, except for Du Yishuang, were looking at him with displeased eyes.

In terms of strength of cultivation, Yang Kai was the lowest in the group. He was an obvious burden and it was not surprising that the others would think of him as worthless. If they were not from the same school, it is estimated that Lan Chudie and Nie Yong would not allow Yang Kai to join them.

“This place is unexpectedly huge. It’s best to rest up before we proceed anymore.” Lan Chudie’s delicate eyebrows wrinkled. “Let’s look around for a place to rest first, before deciding anything else.”

Everyone in the group nodded.

After resting,

“It has already been 2 hours. Now, who should be chosen to lead the way?” Lan Chudie asked as her gaze swept the four members.

Since the dangers here is unknown, the person leading the way would definitely be the most likely person to stumble onto a trap. Therefore, it was best to alternate between members, so as to reduce her own chance of getting caught in a trap.

“Since the first one to lead is from High Heaven Pavilion, the next person should be from either Bloody Battle Gang or Storm House.” Nie Yong proposed, while looked as both Zuo An and Du Yishuang.

Zuo An's brow wrinkled but did not speak. Du Yishuang said in soft voice "Ok, I'll lead."

Yang Kai sighed in his heart. Within this group, although it was a small team of five, everyone had their own plans. This was except for Du Yishuang, who was kind at heart and did not scheme. In short, this group not united at all. If they were to encounter great danger, it could be expected that the group would disband to escape.

After for walking for an hour, the group found themselves in an open area, surrounded by numerous stone pillars. Finally, they were outside of the region they were in and were excited.

Under the leadership of Du Yishuang, the group managed to rapidly get deeper into the area.

After a while, the group entered another area. Instead of stone pillars, there were stone figures of life-like humans. There were more than a hundred different stone figures carved with different people with different height, wearing and weapons.

Seeing these conspicuous statues, the group became more cautious. Instead of simply exploring the area, Lan Chudie and Nie Yong probed the area first. When the two discovered that this area was safe, Du Yishuang then lead the group deeper in.

Although Yang Kai knew that it was safe, he had a bad feeling about this place. His heart palpitated even faster as the group went deeper into the area.

While walking, the group members would look around. Naturally, most of their gaze would land on the statues around them, not being able to help but to highly appraise these statues to be life-like.

As Yang Kai looked around, he noticed that one of the statues had a faint dark red colour on it. When he moved closer, he could smell a tinge of blood scent from the statue. Immediately, Yang Kai's instincts kicked in as he retreated hastily shouting. "Watch out!"

Suddenly, the surrounding statues all simultaneously moved!

Hastily, the four group members tried to retreat. Unfortunately, Du Yishuang, who was at the front, did not react with enough time as her window of opportunity to retreat closed.

The two statues beside Du Yishuang raised their fist and quickly pounded onto her. Their strength was enough to crumble rocks. With a fist size of a cooking pot, even with Du Yishuang's cultivation level, she would still be seriously injured.

When Du Yishuang realized the impending danger, she quickly released her Yuan Qi. Immediately, the peaceful and good natured girl had a change in aura.

Being able to release Yuan Qi was one of the symbols of being in the Qi Transforming Stage. In this boundary, the Yuan Qi in the body will be calm and steady. However, once a person releases their Yuan Qi, their whole body releases a powerful and oppressing aura. If one's control is not good, they might end up letting the power control them instead. Becoming like a wild beast that act based on instinct and emotions.

However, Du Yishuang showed amazing proficiency in controlling her strength as not once did her face showed fear, panic or anger. Instead, she remained calm and composed.

She turns around, placing her palm to redirect the attack of one of the stone figures. Meanwhile, she also moved her body backwards, to avoid the other stone figure's attack. However, she underestimated the speed of the second stone statue's attack as its palm was about to land on her slender shoulder.

Du Yishuang panicked. She quickly took some of the Yang Stones in her bag and threw it towards the fist. The Yang Stone flew like meteors as it collides with the statue's fist but under the fist's tremendous strength, hardly managed to slow it down. Fortunately, the small force managed to redirect the fist, such that it only managed to scratch Du Yishuang's clothing.

Suddenly, Du Yishuang heard a voice behind her. "Move!" her body became light as someone pulled on the collar of her clothing. In front of her, a palm stretched out and hit the first stone statue's fist.

Once the first stone statue's fist was going to land a clear distance away, Yang Kai quickly jumped as he pulled Du Yishuang back. Hastily, the two took the opportunity to retreat.

Bang, the sound of the first stone Statue's fist finally landed on the ground. The five retreating figures all had cold sweat run down their spine. Suddenly, they hear the sound of galloping as the earth slightly trembled. When they looked back, they found that the hundreds of stone statues were managing to chase up to them. No one would expect that these stone statues were capable of moving at such high speeds!

“Don’t look back, Run around the stone pillars to lose them!” Lan Chudie shouted.

(Lol, how can you assume that they could only chase you based on sight? What if they had heat sensors?)

Everyone’s thoughts seemed to alight as they started to shuttle between the stone pillars.

After a while, they managed to escape from the stone statues.

(Wow, it worked...)

It was only those two stone statues that attacked Du Yishuang, whom was close enough to constantly keep up with Yang Kai and Du Yishuang.

“Yang Kai you bitch! Don’t bring them to me!” Nie Yong runs away while he roared at Yang Kai.

(It was actually bastard but I think bitch sounds better. Leave comment on thoughts)

On the other hand, Yang Kai completely ignored Nie Yong as his complexion sank.

Lan Chudie, who was hiding behind a stone pillar, peeked out to look at Yang Kai and Du Yishuang. There was no stone statues chasing after her but, she hesitated to get involved with Yang Kai and Du Yishuang.

However, after a few seconds, she made the resolve and shouted. “Stop running! If it’s only against these two stone statues, we can win!”

Once they heard her, the group member's heart trembled.

“Earlier, Yang Kai and Du Yishuang managed to ward off their attack. This shows their low prowess in martial combat!” Land Chudie's expression becomes confident. “Zuo An, you divert the one of them while the four of us will attack the other stone statue.”

Zuo An's brow wrinkled but did not rebulked. He turned around and smashed his fist against the gigantic fist of the stone statue.

The stone statue, unexpectedly has its fist chipped from Zuo An's attack and staggered!

Chapter 128 What is inside the Stone Statues.

It's truly weak in martial arts. Zuo An's calms down as he realized that it was possible to defeat these stone statues.

Yang Kai and Du Yishuang both ran 300 meters away before turning around. They had to make sure that there was sufficient space between the two stone statues.

When, Du Yishuang attacked with her martial skill, her whole palm produced a golden light. When her palm crashed onto the stone statue, it immediately staggers as some crack linings could be seen at the place of impact.

Apparently, these stone statues do not experience pain. Even after it was hit, the stone statue continued to counter attack.

Du Yishuang quickly retreated from the counter attack as Lan Chudie and Nie Yong joined to encircle the stone statue. Nie Yong, as though holding a grudge, stared bitterly at Yang Kai, blaming him for the stone statue chasing him earlier.

It was only thanks to Lan Chudie's powerful observation skills that the group managed to uncover the stone statue's weakness. Else, Nie Yong could expect himself to be forced to run for a longer period of time.

Although these stone statue's attacks are powerful, it means nothing if the hit does not land. Likewise, the stone statue's response timing is slow. Thus, it is not a treat to anyone proficient in battle as they can easily avoid the stone statue's attack.

Overtime, the stone statue that is besieged by the four showed signs obvious signs of falling apart as the cracks on its body becomes more pronounce after each strike. With victory in sight, the four's attack becomes more ferocious.

In the end, the stone statue was completely turned to rubble. Although the four managed to beat the thing uninjured, they exhaust a lot of their Yuan Qi.

Lan Chudie went closer to the rubble. Her eyebrows wrinkled as she muttered, "strange..."

By logic, these stone statues should be moving based on a kind of power source. However, upon closer inspections, she did not manage to find anything of that sorts.

Without any more delay, Lan Chudie shouted. "Let's go and help Zuo An!" before walking off.

With much haste, the group once again circled the other stone statue. The group maintained silence as everyone all concentrated on dodging and attacking the stone statue. After 10 minutes, they managed to turn the second statue to rubble.

After the battle, all five were breathing heavily. Although this fight was not extremely dangerous, it consumes way too much Yuan Qi.

With time to breath, Nie Yong turned to Yan Kai and shouted. "Yang Kai you bastard! Do not think that I will not harm you because we are from the same school!"

Yang Kai rolled his eyes. "What?"

“Why did you lead those two stone statues to me earlier on!?”

“Did I?” Yang Kai’s eyes looked somewhere else while maintaining his calm composure. He only cared about running away just now. Why would he care about others?

Lan Chudie puffed out her gigantic chest and shouted “Stop quarreling!” as she searched the rubble.

Nie Yong coldly looked at Yang Kai and said, “If this happens again, do not blame me for being impolite!”

(LOL! Let’s see how your anus feels once he screws you up!)

“Oh?” Lan Chudie exclaimed after she found something from the rubble. There was a fist sized, small stone baby hidden within the rubble. Her surprise brought the attention of the other group members as they gathered to take a look at the small stone baby in her hands. The small stone baby seemed to be made out of jade while, cleanly curved out, translucent and glittering. Amazingly beautiful.

(It’s called a stone man but a stone baby sounds a lot cuter. Yeah... Imagine it getting crushed D:!)

Inside of the stone baby were red veins linings. If one were to count the veins, there would be 30 strands of veins.

“This is...?” Zuo An stared with a curious expression. Meanwhile, Du Yishuang and Yang Kai were walking to Lan Chudie to see what was going on.

“What is this stone baby made out of?” Nie Yong asked, as though there were mineral experts around him.

“I’m not sure...” Lan Chudie shook her head. She was unable to tell what this stone baby was made up of while not being able to feel any energies from the stone baby. However, those veins within the baby were extremely peculiar.

“What do you think?” Lan Chudie looked up as she asked the others.

“Is it possible that we are able to control those statues if we can control this baby?” Zuo An thought of the possibility.

Lan Chudie shook her head. “That’s very unlikely. Not every one of these stone statues contained this stone baby. Also how would we be able to control these stone babies?”

Yang Kai suddenly opened his mouth. “Do these red lining reminded you of anything?”

“Like what? Do not interrupt unnecessarily when you’re only a trivial Initial Element Stage!” Nie Yong refuted as he stared at Yang Kai with despicable eyes.

Yang Kai no longer spoke as the corners of his mouth turned into a sneer. Although he has a good temper, it is not a great idea to continuously provoke him.

Lan Chudie realized Yang Kai’s implied words and hastily asked. “We are both from the same school. Can we not quarrel? Yang Kai, what do you think this looks like?”

Yang Kai's eyes glimmered as he spoke. "Don't you think these red lines look a lot like the Meridians in our bodies?"

Nie Yong taunted, "Like we don't know that!"

Lan Chudie ignored Nie Yong and asked. "What do you mean?"

Yang Kai confidently replied. "These red linings should teach us some kind of Martial Skill Cultivation Technique!"

"What a joke!" Nie Yong snorted. Du Yishuang went beside the boy and screamed at him with a cold and gloomy voice. "Shut Up!"

Nie Yong immediately looked at Du Yushuang, startled as he no longer dared to speak. Although he did not fear Yang Kai, Du Yishuang was two small layers above him. If they were to fight, it would most likely end with his defeat.

Zuo An also looked at Nie Yong with a despising glare, "You're bothersome." This was his own opinion and not because he supported Yang Kai.

Nie Yong's complexion becomes red as he was unexpectedly humiliated by these two people. Due to his weak strength, he dares not rebuke. Instead, he sulkily stared at Yang Kai with even more hatred.

Lan Chudie seemed inspired as she spoke, "Let's test if Yang Kai's theory is true."

Immediately, the group member understood what she meant and nodded.

Lan Chudie smiled, “Then. Please, protect me while I test this out.” She closes her eyes and revolved the Yuan Qi within her body, such that it mimics the one in the stone baby.

A while later, Lan Chudie opened her eyes with a surprised look as it quickly turned to Yang Kai. “It is as you said. These stone babies are actually containers of a Martial Skill.”

The others immediately had a change in expression.

“Although I did not fully study its contents, I know that is it at least a Earth middle-grade Martial Skill! However, I don’t know what type of martial skill it is...”

Since the Stone baby had 30 lines veins, it means that the cultivator must make use of all 30 veins of Meridians within their bodies in order to activate it. It was as Lan Chudie had said, Earth middle-grade Martial Skills would need 30 or more veins of Meridians to activate.

Hearing her words, not only were the three people feeling breathless, Yang Kai also felt a sense of great excitement.

After that night at Nine Yin Mountain Valley, Yang Kai realized why he was unable to beat others easily. That was due to the fact that he lacked a Martial Skill to use. Without an Attack Martial Skill, Yang Kai was only able to fight with the Yang Drops. This made his battles inefficient. If he had a Martial Skill when he fought at the Nine Yin Mountains, it would not be so taxing on him.

(Nine Yin Mountains – the place he had his first kiss. Obviously, readers only

need that short description to know where that place is XD)

It was unfortunate that Martial Skills require a lot of Contribution Points, to receive from the school. (400-500 contribution points for a Earth low-grade Martial Skill.)

Unexpectedly, Yang Kai could receive a Martial Skill here! Moreover, there are more and a hundred stone statues! That means, he could at least receive one Martial Skill!

It was not only Yang Kai but the others as well. Everyone knew the great value of a Martial Skill!

Lan Chudie secretly rejoiced in her heart. If she had not decided to destroy both the stone statues, they would never have discovered this treasure trove!

“What do you think?” Lan Chudie looks at everyone while the corners of her mouth wipe into a radiant smile.

“Yeah...” Zuo An said in a hoarse voice.

“Since these stone babies contain Martial Skills, naturally, we can’t let this opportunity slide!” Nie Yong was dancing with joy within his heart. “This place is truly a treasure trove. Only after entering for such a short time, we already discovered such a treasure!”

Yang Kai and Du Yishuang nods.

“Good! Since everyone agrees, then we will be staying here for a while.” Lan Chudie smiled, “I’ll take this stone baby first. After we collected all the Martial Skills, we can redistribute later. Don’t worry, I won’t secretly pry for the Martial

Skill inside of it.”

(Sounds really convincing XD)

“Don’t worry Lan Female Apprentice, I believe you”. Nie Yong said, showing his loyalty to Lan Chudie. He turned his head to the others, “Lan Female Apprentice is very well known for her trustworthiness in High Heaven Pavilion. She will surely not betray you.”

(Wow, what a pussy worshipper... or maybe its boob worshipper?)

After Nie Yong spoke, Zuo An and Du Yishuang did not object. After all, they had no other methods of processing the Martial Skills.

After the discussion of treasure distribution was settled, they discussed on the methods to subdue and destroy those stone statues. Naturally, everyone knew that these stones statues were fast and strong. They would have to be in a team to strike one of them down. Thus, they decided to ran around the stone Pillars to draw one away from the crowd and gang up to destroy it.

Chapter 129 Spoils of the battle

When fighting a stone statue, one person would draw out the attack with the others would take that opportunity to attack. This was the quickest and more efficient way to destroy the stone statue.

However, there was an issue none of them brought up till the last minute. Who was the one that was going to be the bait to lure these things away from their group? This was by far the most dangerous role as that person would have more than a hundred stone statues chasing after him. If that person was not careful, he would easily lose his life.

Everyone knew that this was a risky job as they mutually looked at each other. Finally, Nie Yong looked at Yang Kai with despising eyes. “Since you are not strong when it comes to attacking, shouldn’t you be the one that lured these statues? If you select the route carefully, you wouldn’t be taking any real risk. Also, a moment ago, I saw that you were actually quite fast. So shouldn’t you be the one that lured that?”

Yang Kai grinned, “Ok!”

Filled with worry, Du Yishuang pulled Yang Kai’s cloth, closer to her. “Yang Kai!” She remembered moments ago, where she was in utter fear from the two stone statue’s pursuit. After surviving the ordeal, she did not wish for Yang Kai to experience the same thing again.

“It’s alright” Yang Kai smiled, trying to console her.

Lan Chudie looked at Yang Kai, surprised. “How can you be so confident? If we cannot determine how safe it will be, why don’t we take turns to draw them

out?”

“It’s fine. I have 80% assurance that I will survive. Yang Kai answered.

Although it looked to be risky, the speed Yang Kai had shown was not his full speed. That night at Nine Yin Mountain Valley, Yang Kai manage to find out that True Yang Yuan Qi, although is not a genuine Martial Skill, it is capable of promoting his speed.

Compared to fighting the stone statues, he rather acts as a lure for those Stone Statues. It was hard for Shi Yan do any real damage unless he used his Yang drops. However, such ability was best kept a secret as a trump card.

“Since you continue to insist, then we will try once. If something goes horribly wrong, we are going to switch around.” Lan Chudie said in a persistent tone.

The discussion continued as the group continued along the path, back to the area with all the stone statues.

Upon reaching close to the area, Lan Chudie scouted around for a spot that was best used for ambush.

“Yang Kai, Thank you!” Du Yishuang expressed her gratitude to Yang Kai for coming to her rescue earlier.

Yang Kai chuckled. “Don’t worry about it.”

Du Yishuang shook her head. “No, I have to thank you.”

The group slowly arrived at the same place they were earlier. As they walked, they noticed that the stone statues were all back at their original positions.

When Yang Kai looked around the same blood stained place he was at previously, he found two corpses lying on the ground. Although he did not know which school these disciples were from, it was a pity for them to die here.

“Are you prepared?” Lan Chudie asked anxiously.

Yang Kai nodded. “Em.”

“Once you are pursued by them, run over here. Nie Yong and I will lure two stone statues away from the group. Meanwhile, Little Sister Du and Zuo An will look for any opportunity to attack one of them and split the two up again. If one is defeated, go and help attack the other stone statue. Be aware that our utmost priority is safety. Yang Kai, do not go back to bait more here before we finish this one off. Only once we are ready to battle again, then you can go back to lure another one here. “

With Lan Chudie’s clear explanation, they all understood and nodded.

“Ok, Yang Kai you can go now. Do be careful.” Lan Chudie looked at Yang Kai, doing an encouraging pose.

Yang Kai placed his Yang Stone back on the floor and walked towards the crowd of stone statues.

The group gazed at him intensely, under the enticement of Martial Skills, even Nie Yong was worried that Yang Kai would fail and die; leading to him being the next bait for the team to use. After all, it was by his logic that Yang Kai was proposed to do this in the first place.

“Don’t be useless!” Nie Yong said in a soft voice.

(Seriously, he really said that. No bloody joke!)

Yang Kai walked closed to the stone statues but maintained a safe distance from them. He would avoid their attack range if possible, so as to make sure that he would not get hit by a surprise attack.

He proceeds cautiously towards the stone statue, placing his hand out, trying to trigger them. However, Yang Kai soon discovered that once he step foot in a close enough distance, these stone statues would began moving. The initial movements were slow but quickly accelerated.

Without wasting another second, Yang Kai turned around and ran back to the position that the group agreed upon.

Pursing behind Yang Kai was more than a hundred stone statues.

When the stone statues dashed close to the spot, the four people that lie in ambush quickly lured two stone statues out of the crowd. Lan Chudie and Nie Yong in one group, while Zuo An and Du Yishuang in another. They moved the two stone statues away from each other and began attacking.

So far so good. With two people in one group, they will be able to sooner or later defeat the stone statue.

Meanwhile, Yang Kai had the most relaxed role. He only needed to run and hide around the stone pillars and very easily make the stone statues lose sight of him. Although there were many stone statues initially, after a few times of repeating this strategy, the group chasing him got smaller and smaller.

After 15 minutes, there were only 3 stone statues chasing after him.

Yang Kai looked around and decided not to make them lose sight of him. Instead of following the plan and losing them entirely, he led the three back to the ambush spot. After all, after such a long time, the fight there should have ended and they should have gotten enough rest.

As Yang Kai expected, as he was running towards the ambush spot, he saw all four of them sitting in meditation, waiting for him to return.

While they were waiting, the earth suddenly tremored as the three statues ran towards them.

(BTW, they couldn't see the number of stone statues behind Yang Kai at this point)

The four people quickly opened their eyes and Nie Yong shouted in rage. "That useless waste! To think he would direct the stone statues here! Should we retreat first?"

To him, he thought that Yang Kai did not manage to shake off these stone statues. Thus, without any other option, he directed them back here.

Lan Chudie hesitated for a moment but shook her head. "Yang Kai should not

be such a person. What's more, if you listen carefully, you can tell that there are at most 2 or 3 stone statues chasing after him."

"There are three!" Zuo An explained. "My hearing is better than the average person!"

"He did this intentionally!" Lan Chudie smiled. "Everyone, prepare to attack!"

During their little chat, Yang Kai's figure could. From a distance, he made certain hand signs, directing towards them.

Finally the form of the three stone statues showed itself.

He directed them to follow the plan as before. However, this time, Yang Kai would divert one away while they focused on the other two. When the fight ends, Yang Kai would return with the remaining one for them to destroy.

"I see. That's a good plan..." Lan Chudie smiled to Yang Kai. In her plan, they were to be in groups of twos when confronting the stone statues. Since there were three, she had initially thought Yang Kai wanted them to fight all of the stone statues at the same time.

After the battle,

Yang Kai excitedly thought of how he would have a look at the spoils of the battle earlier. Unfortunately, the battle ended up with no treasures as the other four looked around but found nothing.

However, this time, they were lucky. Out of the three stone statues Yang Kai lured in, one of them contained a stone baby!

This stone baby had the same number of red veins inside as the previous one but they were all in different locations. This was a different type of Martial Skill.

Du Yishuang passed the stone baby to Lan Chudie.

Lan Chudie accepted it with a bow. “The first time, we got one out of two stone statues. Now, we got one out of 5 stone statues. It seems that it is entire up to luck that we will be able to receive this...”

Nie Yong grinned, “If there are about a hundred stone statues, if we managed to destroy all of them; that would mean that we can at least obtain 20 stone babies!”

If one were to split 20 stone babies in a group of 5; that would mean that each person would obtain 4 Martial Skill each!

The vision of everyone burnt with greed.

However, Lan Chudie controlled herself, as her composure still retained some semblance of elegance. “Let us restore first. When we are well rested, we can do this again!”

Everyone nodded as each member took out a Medicine Pill from their bags and sit in meditation. That is all except for Yang Kai, since he cannot afford a Medicine Pill. However, he does not need one since he had only been running around.

Nie Yong, wanted to flirt with Lan Chudie. When they were about to sit in meditation, he also wished to sit next to Lan Chudie. However, this time, Lan Chudie had a cold expression on her face as she casted the boy away.

Yang Kai sneered secretly. Lan Chudie was a female with ambition. For such a woman, who has self-confidence and a man like Nie Yong would never be able to tame her. At most, he would just serve as her pawn.

To obtain Lan Chudie's heart, one must surpass her in strength, confidence and influence. Only when she adores you, then you would be able to win her heart.

(Damn, boy knows women!! o.O gonna catch her?)

Although it is unpleasing to hear, Lan Chudie is a realist! Although she seems to be quite elegant and gentle, Yang Kai knows that that this is just a front. She is arrogant and narcissistic. Knowing her own beauty, she will only bring herself close to men who have potential or strength. In other words, Nie Yong is nothing to her.

(So sad but true. Guys, heed Yang Kai's words. You never know when this knowledge will help out!)

While the four were meditating, Yang Kai moved to the area, where he had discarded the Yang Stones. Due to the thing only adding to his weight, being a burden, he had no choice to place leave it on the ground. However, right now, since the group were all resting, Yang Kai could take this opportunity to absorb more Yang energy into his Dantian.

He carried the bag of Yang Stones to a secluded location and began absorbing. He needed to make sure that no one was aware of his abilities.

After half a day, everyone was fully rested and ready to go. Meanwhile, Yang Kai had managed to absorb half of the Yang Stones that he had carried with him. The boy walked back to the group prepared for their second assault!

Chapter 130 One's own plans

The four people was done resting for a while now. They were all waiting for Yang Kai to get back. Meanwhile, Nie Yong was whispering to himself, cursing Yang Kai.

After Yang Kai arrived, Lan Chudie took a deep breath. Her gigantic chest expanded, till the clothes around them stretched to its extreme limits. She looked at all the member and asked "Is everyone done?"

(My god! Those are some big and hard tits...)

"Yeah!" Nie Yong said excitedly.

"Then we will do it again." Lan Chudie turned her vision to Yang Kai. "Do you want to change roles?"

Yang Kai shook his head, "There's no need. After the first attempt, I have already experienced the dangers and I'm confident in surviving now."

He was not willing to battle with those stone statues. After all, hitting them with his fist would also injure him.

"Alright then. Looks like we will be depending on you again." Lan Chudie smiled while she schemes.

Whenever she smiled, Yang Kai had a vague feeling that it was a gift for someone venturing into danger.

(Wow... Her smile is a gift? WTF?)

If she was smiling to Nie Yong, it was for encouragement. However, this was not the case for Yang Kai.

Without delving too much into it, Yang Kai ran back to the area to lure the stone statues.

This time, although Yang Kai did his task perfectly, the group messed up. When it was time to lure two away, they were blocked by another stone statue. Dealing with three stone statues confused their positions and nearly cause some casualties.

After those three were dealt with, Yang Kai came back with two more and they were also quickly destroyed.

Even after the incident, the group's moral was high. They had managed to receive two stone babies!

Now, the group has managed to collect four stone babies. With just one more, the group can finally distribute amongst themselves.

Yang Kai was filled with excitement. After all, the thing he most lacks in combat was finally going to land in his hands. Naturally, he wished for them to be already able to divide the Martial Skill Technique.

Over the next few days, the group repeated the same process. They would lure, then battle, and then rest for half a day before starting again.

Unfortunately, after destroying their 30th stone statue, they were unable to receive any stone babies. Each time they looked forward to searching the rubble remains, they were all excited, to only end up with a disappointed expression.

What's worse, each time Yang Kai lured them, it became increasingly harder to isolate two from the group. Likewise, the stone statue's strength also strangely increased.

There was one time where Lan Chudie and the rest tried to isolate two of the stone statues, to only be chase by numerous stone statues. They ended up being only capable of fleeing before regrouping again.

As they continued their attempts, the situation gets harder. The whole thing quickly becomes increasingly dangerous. However, the fifth stone baby did not appear. Finally, the group had a discussion.

"If we continue on like this, we would definitely have some kind of incident." Nie Yong spoke with worry in his voice.

Zuo An spoke in a low voice. "Now, we only have four sets of Martial Skill but five people. If we don't continue, how do we divide?"

Everyone was silent. Nobody would be willing to let go of a Martial Skill. After all, they had worked so hard for these past few days just thinking about obtaining one Martial Skill themselves.

Nie Yong thought of an idea and smiled at Yang Kai lightly, " Lan Female Apprentice had said it before. We will allocate the treasures based on contributions. Since Yang fellow apprentice is the weakest out of us four, then,

shouldn't you resign your rights to the Martial Skill Techniques?"

Yang Kai sneers at Nie Yong.

Nie Yong continued, "Naturally, Yang Fellow apprentice also worked hard and we must compensate you with some money?"

Zuo An's brow wrinkled but did not speak. After all, he also supports this proposition.

Naturally, Du Yishuang supported Yang Kai, "How is that fair! Like any of us have enough money to compensate for a Martial Skill Technique!"

Yang Kai continued to sneer. Although he was looking at Nie Yong, at the corner of his eyes, he was secretly looking at Lan Chudie, waiting for her response.

Lan Chudie's decision will decide Yang Kai's following actions from this point on.

As expected, Lan Chudie kept silent, causing Yang Kai to sneer even more.

After a moment of silence, Lan Chudie said, "We will try one more time to see if we can obtain another one of those stone babies. It is not good that one of us is left with nothing. But, I will guarantee that if we cannot obtain another stone baby, I will go back to school and do everything in my might to compensate!"

Her words seemed to be addressing toward the group but Yang Kai knew that

it was meant for herself.

“This is our last chance. Yang Fellow Apprentice, note that our intentions are good.” Lan Chudie stood up as she looked towards Yang Kai. “Yang Fellow Apprentice, you must be exhausted.”

Yang Kai did not lookback at her and nodded, setting out to walk towards the stone statues.

Realizing his desolateness, Lan Chudie’s pupils flashes through a light apology but quickly vanishes.

After repeatedly doing the same thing, Yang Kai was already familiar with the task and could carry it out with ease. However, this time, he had other plans.

As usual, he lured all the hundreds of stone statues back to the ambush point. Lan Chudie and the others would then take the opportunity to lure two out of the group but this time, it was different.

Lan Chudie’s complexion changed “Nie Yong, lure two of them out!”

“Why me?” Nie Yong shouted, startled.

Du Yishuang coldly ridiculed. “Did you not say that baiting them was an easy task? Since Yang Kai could lure a hundred, what are two stone statues?”

“Who said that it was easy?” Nie Yong cursed. However, he did not have the means to oppose the will of these two females. Without a choice, he went out to

attack two stone statues and lured them out of the group. Once they were lured out, he ran back hastily.

Although they had planned on luring out only two, Nie Yong accidentally lured out three. This made matters difficult but after experiencing combat for a while, they would now be able to beat three stone statues.

While the four people were fighting, Yang Kai routed back, close to the combat zone. He climbed on top of a stone pillar to look behind him to find that there were still some stone statues chasing after him.

So far so good. Yang Kai exclaimed in his heart as half of his plan was already made successful.

Yang Kai had the idea of luring all the stone statues back to trap Lan Chudie and others while they were fighting. However, Yang Kai changed his plans as he did not wish to be too evil.

With three stone statues, it would take the group a longer time to defeat them. That was good enough already. All Yang Kai needed was to delay them. Else, the group may figure out his plans.

Either ways, Yang Kai would not do this if he could trust the others. Since Lan Chudie is too realistic and cares for herself, more than the group's well being, Yang Kai could not place faith in her to make matters fair for himself.

If they did not obtained a stone baby, Yang Kai would definitely not get anything in return. She would definitely lead the group out of this area and give the excuse; we tried.

Hence, he only had himself to depend on.

For the past few days, Yang Kai had been wondering, why are these stone statues chasing after them? Perhaps, deeper within the area, they were protecting something!

This thing should be more valuable than any kind of Martial Skill that the stone statues contain.

This may only be a guess but it is worth it to try.

Yang Kai directed the horde chasing after him, further from the center. After having a distance away from the area, he revolves his True Yang Yuan Qi within his body and produced flames at the bottom of his foot. Hastily, he ran back to the area where the stone statues rest.

This time, his speed was incomparable to his normal running speed. Unfortunately, these methods of usage of True Yang Yuan Qi cannot be considered to be a Martial Skill. They can only be considered as a skill.

However, there was a downside to using True Yang Yuan Qi. It was too consuming. In just a short 7 minutes, Yang Kai's meridians dried up.

Fortunately, using 1 Yang Drop manages to completely restore his meridians.

(Ok, hold on! Let's do some math. Currently he has 70 drops, which means he can run for 490mins = 8 hours and 10 minutes!)

After consuming four Yang drops, Yang Kai finally returned to the stone statue's area.

When he went deeper, the flat grassy floor turned into concrete. Without much time till the stone statues all return, Yang Kai did not take much time to check every area for safety.

Hastily, he ran deeper to check if his theory was right. Finally, he saw it. At the center of the area, there was a gigantic pit. Around this pit and inside were guarded by stone statues that seemed to be more aggressive than the ones he normally bait around.

That's it!

Yang Kai knew that this place was extremely dangerous and became more cautious. He quietly and slowly walked closer to the pit. In his experience, once he approaches too close to these stone statues, they would start moving. However, he could not fight them right now. The group of weaker looking stone statues could come back and surround him while he fought.

As Yang Kai slowly walked closer to one of the stone statues as he moved towards the pit. However, he was shocked to find that they were not moving.

??

Yang Kai continued to probe the stone statue, to make sure it was safe. However, no matter how close he got to it, the thing did not respond. Thus, Yang Kai grew more courageous and tried to weed out trouble. Without allowing these things to start moving, Yang Kai revolved his True Yang Yuan Qi and fiercely

pounds onto the stone carvings; Aiming to destroy it in the shortest span of time.

Chapter 131 The Golden Stone Baby

Yang Kai punched landed, causing some stone chip to fly from uber stone statue (called it this just for reference). However, there was no response from the uber stone statue.

Yang Kai tried again and noticed that his True Yang Yuan Qi that he used to punch the uber stone statue was absorbed!

After a few more punches, Yang Kai could see a hint of red light coming out from the uber stone statue, as some of his stolen Yang Yuan Qi fluctuates inside it. Suddenly, the uber stone statue's hand started to slowly move, causing Yang Kai to be startled.

It was absorbing his Yang Yuan Qi as a power source! Thankfully, it only had a little bit of Yuan Qi from Yang Kai, otherwise, Yang Kai expected it to be moving as quick or even quicker than the normal stone statues.

When Yang Kai finally uncovered this fact, instead of stopping his attacks, his attacks became more ferocious.

Let's see if I will destroy you before you get the chance to move! Yang Kai's eyes glimmered with stubbornness. Even with his fist covered with blood, Yang Kai was relentless.

As the Yuan Qi the uber stone statue absorbed becomes more and more, it's movements also became faster. It managed to lift it's hand up, stone eyes' locked onto Yang Kai, preparing to strike down.

However, the uber stone statue's chest was full of cracks; due to Yang Kai's

relentless attacks.

The uber stone statue's hand slammed down as quick as it could but Yang Kai managed to dodge the attack without a problem. Once the stone palm landed on the ground, a dust cloud formed as the strong wind currents produced by the collision made Yang Kai's hair and clothing rustle.

Rumble

Quickly, Yang Kai's two fist were coated in flames as the speed and power of his movements heightened.

Bang

Yang Kai's fist collided into the uber stone statue's chest, causing the deep cracks to finally break down into bits of rubble. The uber stone statue took a fatal strike as its body quickly developed cracks all over, turning rubble.

Inside the rubble, Yang Kai managed to find a stone baby.

He had wasted enough time here. Yang Kai could hear the stone statues that he lured away were about to come back.

Yang Kai complexion sank as he quickly placed the stone baby into his clothing, in the chest area, and ran away.

Yang Kai took a circled route to avoid all the stone statues and returned back to the group.

When he arrived, Du Yishuang was extremely happy to see Yang Kai. “Yang Kai! We manage to find one stone baby!”

“Hehe, it seems that my luck is quite good.” Yang Kai chuckled as he avoided looking at Lan Chudie. However, when the girl saw Yang Kai’s fist full of blood, she quickly grabbed his hands and asked with knitted brows. “How did you get this injury?”

Her appearance looked kind and gentle, as though she truly cared for the well being of her Fellow Apprentice.

Yang Kai quickly withdrew his hands. “There were several stone statues that managed to catch up to me. In the end, I had to fend them off to escape.”

Lan Chudie was stunned for a moment but her composure quickly changed as she smiled. “As long as you’re safe, it’s alright.”

“Let’s not waste any more time. Let’s first distribute the stone babies and strengthen ourselves before doing anything.” Zuo An proposed.

Lan Chudie nods, “Yeah,” as she took out all five stone statues and placed them in front of the group.

The numbers of red veins within these five stone babies were the same. Thus, all of them were of the same grade of Martial Skill. Without obtaining the Martial Skills themselves, all group members would not know that type of Martial Skill the stone baby contained. Thus, their decision was entirely based up to luck.

After these few days of hard work, everyone's eyes were glued onto the five stone babies. Their benefits in the end were based on luck. Nonetheless, even if they were to obtain something lesser than the others, they still obtained a Earth Grade Martial Skill!

"So, who should select first?" Nie Yong eagerly asked. Although he wants to be the first to choose, it was not good to self-proclaim it out loud.

"I think Yang Fellow Apprentice should get to choose first. After all, he was the one that took the most risk and also received some injuries. To be fair, he should be the first one to choose." Lan Chudie smiled towards Yang Kai.

(Bloody cunning bitch. You will find out why in the next paragraph.)

The priority to select was actually of unimportance. After all, the first one to select would not necessarily mean that the person would receive the best Martial Skill. This was the same for the last person to select. Hence, it did not matter who selected first. However, Lan Chudie proposed this just to seem as though she was fair and just. Planning for others to have a good impression of her.

(Although this isn't mentioned in the novel, Lan Chudie had this planned as her redemption act for Yang Kai. Since it actually serves no real benefits, Yang Kai naturally does not take it into consideration and would still remember her earlier actions.)

How would Yang Kai not know her own thoughts? The boy impolitely nodded and said, "Since Female apprentice had said so, then I still be the first to choose."

The boy conveniently took up one stone baby and retreated back.

Lan Chudie and the others also went up and chose based on their individual's strength.

"Since we have all chosen our Martial Skill, we will each find a place to cultivate the Martial Skill first. After one day's time, we will gather here again." Lan Chudie told everyone.

Everyone nods and was about to leave to their respective places.

Du Yishuang, who was a little worried for Yang Kai tapped on his shoulder and said "Yang Kai, let me help to wrap up those wounds."

Yang Kai did not decline, "Thank you".

Lan Chudie departs after hearing the two's conversation. Her delicate eyebrows slightly wrinkled as she walked off.

Since Du Yishuang needed to bandage up Yang Kai's wounds, there was only Du Yishuang and Yang Kai left at the meeting location. "I'll wait a while for you to check the stone baby for the Martial Skills. If you don't find it useful, I don't mind exchanging mine with yours. I don't really need an Earth Grade Martial Skill."

(Yang Kai (͡° ͜ʖ ͡°))

Yang Kai smiled, "there's no need. Since this is an Earth Grade Martial Skill, anything that came out will definitely be good."

"Well, aren't you aloof?" Du Yishuang no longer pressed the issue. Once she

bandaged up Yang Kai's hands, she stood up, "I will go and cultivate my Martial Skills then. We will meet again tomorrow!"

Looking at her back, Yang Kai spoke, "If there are any problems that occur in the future, you know that I will probably leave the group."

Du Yishuang did not reply but secretly in her heart, she said, I know...

This group was not united. The all members only participated in this group due to the unknown dangers inside a Heaven Cave Inheritance. What's more, Lan Chudie is not a great leader. She is able to maintain the group in face value but for someone who only considers success and failure, the welfare of the group would not really matter to her. Hence, more than a group, we are mere tools for her to use. Even if this group were to continue, once they were to face a great danger, Yang Kai expects Lan Chudie and most of the rest to abandon him.

After everyone left, Yang Kai moved to a secluded location and took out the two stone babies from his clothe.

Yang Kai looked at both stone babies in his hands and smiled. The stone baby he found was extremely different from the one he chose from the group. The veins in the special stone baby was not only a lot more than the one he received from the group, it was also golden in colour!

What Martial Skill rank is this? Yang Kai wondered.

According to Lan Chudie, 30 veins would mean that the Martial Skill was at least an Earth Middle-Grade Martial Skill. Thus, the Martial Skill within this special stone baby could be either an Earth High-Grade Martial Skill or a much

higher grade! A higher grade would mean a Heaven Grade Martial Skill!

When Yang Kai had thought of the possibility; his breathing became heavy and ragged. He was right to take that risk early on. The risk was truly worth its rewards!

However, which one to cultivate first? Yang Kai wondered.

The higher grade Martial Skill that he got with him will require more time than the other Martial Skill. That would also mean that it would take more time for Yang Kai to cultivate, learn and practice the higher grade Martial Skill. With the time limit of one day, he may not have enough time...

Yang Kai's vision turned to the lower grade Martial Skill. Currently, the most important thing is to increase one's strength in the shortest time possible to increase a person's survival chances while having more opportunities to find more treasures.

Yang Kai started to concentrate on the lower grade Martial Skill. He poured his Yuan Qi into the stone baby as he memorized the flow of the Yuan Qi of the Martial Skill. After 2 hours, Yang Kai completely memories the flow of Yuan Qi to activate the Martial Skill but when he opened his eyes, he saw that the stone baby had completely turned to dust.

Yand Kai was not too bothered about the destruction of the stone baby. He had already gotten what he wanted. However, now he knew that the stone babies will only allow one person to learn its Martial Skill before turning to dust.

Yang Kai stood up and revolved his Qi around his body; similar to what he

learnt from the stone baby. As expected, since this was only the first time practicing a Martial Skill, he was unable to utilize the Martial Skill that he had learnt. However, the boy was not discouraged as he immediately tried again after his first failed attempt.

After a few more tries, Yang Kai gradually got used to the flow of his Yuan Qi, within his 30 Meridians. He could feel his fist gradually becoming more powerful.

Finally, Yang Kai felt confident and focused all his might on an attack with this Martial Skill. He clenched his fist and it vibrated vigorously. Yang Kai continued to focus, trying to reach the most powerful state the fist can be. Suddenly, he slams his fist onto the ground!

Bang! a sound of a huge explosion occurred as the ground seemed the experience a miniature explosion. Yang Kai's vision shivers as he could not believe the power of this Martial Skill!

What kind of Martial Skill is this? Isn't this too powerful?

Chapter 132 The Bath

This was the first Martial Skill that Yang Kai had optioned. So far, throughout all his battles, he had relied on the Yang Drops within his Dantian. However, such a method of battle was inefficient as it quickly depletes his Yang Drop deposit. Likewise, this method was incomparable to the effectiveness in battle of a Martial Skill, which relied on Yuan Qi, instead of Yang Yuan Qi.

(Yang Yuan Qi – can only be absorbed from Yang objects or Yang World Energy filled places.)

Although the Martial Skill was shown to be extremely powerful already, Yang Kai knew that this Martial Skill could be much stronger and more practical in the future. Naturally, after he had more practice with it. The first major thing he needed to improve on was the speed of the attack. It was not practical for Yang Kai to stand there and condense his energy to his fist.

However, this all takes time and experience to improve. There was no use rushing.

Yang Kai took a deep breath as he thought about the scene earlier and was choked with emotions.

(Too happy.)

Yang Kai looked at the dust on the ground and sighed. The stone statue did not provide him a name for this amazing Martial Skill. Hence, Yang Kai knitted his brows to think of one. [Burning Sun's Blast] sounds nice...

When the 30 Meridians' Yuan Qi gather and release in an explosive fashion, anyone who was hit by this strike will definitely suffer some serious injuries. However, Yang Kai estimated that he could only perform this move 3 times

before his whole Yuan Qi is depleted.

(BTW, 1 Yang Yuan Qi sword uses up 1 Yang Drop and 1 Yang Drop = Full Yuan Qi restoration = 3 Burning Sun's Blast!)

Previously, Yang Kai would not dare show his skills to others when threatened. However, now, with so much spare Yang Drop within him, he was no longer worried. If he was against a group, he had enough Yuan Qi to deal with all of them.

With the use of Yang Drops, Yang Kai could use Burning Sun's Blast consecutively, without stop! Thus it was extremely beneficial for him to have this.

It was truly fortunate that Yang Kai had gotten Burning Sun's Blast. If he had gotten a Martial Skill Technique that was based on swords, it would be utterly useless to him! With all those effort wasted, it would be no surprised if he became depressed.

Yang Kai focused on continuing his training to quickly increase his mastery over Burning Sun's Blast. The boy spent the rest of the day arduously practicing to strengthen his battle capabilities.

After one day, Yang Kai managed to practice Burning Sun's Blast, till he reaches a small level of mastery. However, he needed to stop and gather back to the meeting spot.

When he went back, he could see the satisfactory look on everyone's faces; all except for Nie Yong.

It seems that nearly everyone's harvest this time is not small.

Only Nie Yong was cursing with discontent. According to him, the Martial Skill that he had obtained was a whip law Martial Skill. A Martial Skill that was utterly useless to him.

(It just shows that heavens want you to get ass whipped.)

Du Yishuang looked and smiled towards Yang Kai, "That evil boy has gotten retribution for all his evil doings. He only has himself to blame."

Yang Kai smiled and nodded.

With a few comforting words from Lan Chudie, Nie Yong's depression was greatly elevated.

(Wow, already getting whipped!)

The five members then started to walk again. However, while they were walking Lan Chudie noticed that Yang Kai no longer carried a big bag with him. "What happened to the Yang Stones that you've picked up?"

Yang Kai nonchalantly replied. "I've discarded them."

Nie Yong saw Yang Kai's aloof expression and felt sour. Nie Yong snorted. "It's too late to regret later."

Yang Kai did not bother responding to Nie Yong. After all, all the Yang stone's energy had already been absorbed by him.

(*What's the point of carrying around plain rock? Throw it at you?* Added this

part myself XD)

Since this place did not have a Sun nor Moon, Stars nor Clouds, Yang Kai was unable to tell how much time has passed. However, he could estimate that they had spent two days walking to exit the stone pillar area.

Along the way, the group had ran into the corpses of disciples from the three schools. Although the group did not know what these dead disciples encountered during their exploration here, these corpses became a strong reminder to stay alert and vigilant.

One the group entered a jungle area, they breathed out a sigh of relief. The number of corpses and possible hidden dangers of the previous area gave the group a sense of constant danger. Seeing this new location, and made them feel a short lived sense of safety. Furthermore, in a jungle, the existence of Spirit Herbs is definitely not going to be a few.

The team quickly regained their vigilance as they walked through the jungle.

After walking for a while, the path leader, Zuo An's brows wrinkled as he concentrated on the floor. There were numerous footsteps.

After a short moment, Zuo An exclaimed, " There were definitely a group of people that passed by recently. What's more, this group is big."

Nie Yong Happily sounded off. "Then there should be guys from our schools!"

Zuo An's brow wrinkled. "Let's not decide so haphazardly. We can't be sure that only disciples from the three schools are inside the Heaven's Cave

Inheritance.”

After hearing Zuo An’s words, the group became terrified. What kind of figure could possibly live here when the place has been sealed for more than a thousand years?

Zuo An quickly tried to calm everyone down, “I did not really think of what I just said. These foot prints should belong to people from our schools.”

“Oh, then let’s chase up to them! If we meet that Su Female Apprentice or Xie Fellow Apprentice, they can protect us.”

Lan Chudie’s brow wrinkled as she nods in agreement. In this group, everyone’s cultivation level is not exactly the highest out of all the disciples in their respective schools. Although she has to give up her leader role, it was much safer if she were to follow the stronger disciples from High Heaven Pavilion.

“Then let’s go.”

As the group followed the trail, they saw more and more footprint on the ground. After half a day, the group saw a small lake. Around the lake were numerous footprints that covered the place. Apparently, this had become a rest spot for many disciples. With so many disciples being willing to rest here and without corpses, this place must be a safe spot.

After a short discussion within the group, they decide to rest up first before proceeding with anything else.

All five dispersed around and sat in meditation to rest. After a while, Lan Chudie

stood up from her meditation and sat beside Du Yishuang. She whispered to the frail looking girl in a soft voice. Initially, Du Yishuang shook her head slowly but after contemplating for a while more she clenched her teeth and nodded while blushing.

Afterwards, Lan Chudie arrives in front of Yang Kai and pat on his shoulder.

“What’s the matter?” Yang Kai asked as he looks at Lan Chudie.

“Come with me”, Lan Chudie said while checking up on Nie Yong and Zuo An secretly.

Yang Kai’s brows wrinkled. Although he did not know what she was about to request, he followed her.

After walking for a while, Yang Kai saw Du Yishuang sitting down on a rock, waiting.

“What’s the matter?” Yang Kai was unaware of what they were planning and asked.

Lan Chudie blushes with a smile, “Little sister Du and I want to take a bath here...”

Yang Kai’s face immediately becomes strange and he sizes up both girls. Du Yishuang blushing became even heavier but Lan Chudie charmingly stomp her feet. “What are you thinking? We only want you to protect us and not let anyone close!”

Yang Kai cannot help but chuckle. “Lan Female Apprentice, why do you ask me of all people? For this matter, you should have asked Nie Yong. That boy will certainly agree to your request!”

Lan Chudie knew that Yang Kai was discontent with her due to the decisions she made over the past few days. However, she could not help but get angry, “Of course it’s because I trust you more than him.”

“Lan Female Apprentice, you trust me?” Yang Kai smiled. “If you shower, I will definitely peep”

Lan Chudie smiled back at Yang Kai. “If you did so, I don’t mind. However, what would Little Sister Du say?”

(Cunning girl. To be honest, Yang Kai could just choose to just protect Du Yishuang and refuse for both of them to shower at the same time.)

Yang Kai coughed, he was unable to decline her. Let alone, for Du Yishuang to bathe, he was indeed the best choice.

“Alright then. Just bath quickly.” Yang Kai nodded.

Seeing him comply, Lan Chudie smiled. “Thanks. Please stay here while we bathe.”

Du Yishuang pulled on Yang Kai’s arm and urged the boy. “You absolutely cannot peek!”

((͡° ͜ʖ ͡°))

“Yeah. Don’t worry.” Yang Kai answered while looking at the lake. There was a small water body nearby, which has a giant stone by the side that acts as a natural wall. So long as the two girls hid behind the stone, it would be hard for anyone to peek at them.

Splash those two girls entered the water body as Yang Kai went to the place that could see them. Naturally, as they entered, both girls secretly checked if Yang Kai turned his head around to peek. Of course, Yang Kai did not pay attention to them. He sat down and meditated. As long as someone wants to peek, he would need to pass Yang Kai’s position.

Although Yang Kai does not like Lan Chudie, they currently do not have any enmity. Moreover, they are currently in the same group and those choices that would lead to disadvantaging him did not end up doing so. Yang Kai also wants to quickly leave this group and join us with Su Mu. Thus, he does not want any further trouble with Lan Chudie.

While meditating, Yang Kai could hear a faint sound of footsteps coming closer. When Yang Kai opened his eyes and looked around, he saw Nie Yong creeping up softly. He was breathing heavily as he slowly slid his head to peek behind the huge rock.

Noticing Yang Kai’s gaze, Nie Yong turned his head and returned a despising smile, threatening him. “You have seen nothing. If you dare say anything, I will personally make sure that you will no longer be able to walk!”

Yang Kai rolled his eyes and scoffed. Nie Yong actually thought that he was afraid. Without wasting much time, Yang Kai quickly ran forward.

The laughter of the two girls and the splashing of the water acted like demons whispering to Nie Yong's ear. As he thought about Lan Chudie's smooth skin and plentiful breast, his heart boiled; making it impossible for him to resist the temptation.

The boy then quickly walked, following the sound to see this huge rock blocking his view of paradise.

Yang Kai sneers as he breathed in as much air as possible and shouted "Nie Fellow Apprentice. What are you doing over there?!!!"

Chapter 133, Gathering Together

Abruptly, the sound of water splashing and laughter from the two girls paused.

With their silence and the blaring sounds of moving water, anyone could tell that the two girls were scuttling to get their clothing.

Nie Yong quickly reacted. The boy got startled and jumped. He hastily ran off, only leaving Yang Kai with a gaze filled with hatred. Never would he have imagined that Yang Kai would dare to offend him.

(Pfft. Bitch, don't think Yang Kai is the same as you!)

Yang Kai smiled and shouted out, "Coward!"

Soon after, Lan Chudie and Du Yishuang appeared from behind the rock. They were drenched but clothed. Du Yishuang was blushing while her eyes avoided his. Meanwhile, Lan Chudie looked at Yang Kai indifferently and muttered, "Thank You."

"Don't worry about it." Yang Kai replied.

When the three were on their way to return back to the group, they could feel a large, sudden fluctuation of Yuan Qi.

They looked up, in the direction of the fluctuation and saw rays of light piercing through, above them. They could hear echoes of people shouting "kill!" alongside an enraged roar emerging from a powerful and furious beast.

The three's faces paled as they started to realise what the source of the roar was. There are Monster Beasts here!?

What's more, it sounded like there were hordes of people battling this one Monster Beast!

Nie Yong and Zuo An ran out from the bushes and joined the three. Their complexion was no better than Lan Chudie and Du Yishuang's.

Du Yishuang stared at Nie Yong with disgust. Meanwhile, Lan Chudie kept calm and asked Zuo An. "What can you recognise from the sounds?"

Zuo An's voice sank as he spoke. "There are more than a hundred people there. What's more, from the power of its roar, the Monster Beast they are fighting is horrifically in the Sixth Realm!"

Everyone froze as their skin turned a shade paler. A Sixth Realm Monster Beast was equivalent to a cultivator in the Immortal Ascension Boundary.

Those that entered the Heaven's Cave Inheritance were disciples that were at most in True Element Boundary. How could they possibly face this Monster Beast? Even with a hundred people, this battle is nothing more than suicide for all of them.

"This Monster's roar seems weaker than a usual Sixth Realm Monster Beast," Zuo An brows furrowed. "It is likely that it was sealed previously and had just regained consciousness."

The seal of the Heaven's Cave Inheritance broke a few days ago. Although they

do not know what the Monster Beast was doing here, it was definitely sealed for a very long time. Hence, it went into dormancy, waiting for a chance, for someone to break the seal. Being dormant for such a long time would certainly weaken it, rendering it unable to display its full strength.

Everyone felt a little bit relieved since the theory made sense. Otherwise, why would just over a hundred disciples be willing to battle this Monster Beast?

Suddenly, Zuo An's brows jumped. "The Monster Beast is hurt!"

An odd change in its grumbling bellows could be heard. The Monster Beast gave another angry and unwilling roar and the people became silent.

"What happened?" Lan Chudie asked anxiously.

"I don't know," Zuo An said while he shook his head. "Should we go and have a look?"

Lan Chudie's eyebrows wrinkled as she contemplated for a long time before looking back at all four members. "Let's go and have a look. There are bound to be disciples there who are in True Element Boundary, as well as Separation and Reunion Boundary. Since we are all from the same school, we are obliged to help. However, this is highly dangerous, so it is up to you to decide."

(Sounds good until you realize that she could stay back from the fight and retreat with the stronger cultivators when things go south. Likewise, there were many pawns that could be used as bait. Those in Qi elementary Stage that were bound to be slower than her will act as meat shields. XD)

"Naturally, we must go!" Nie Yong nodded. After the awkward moment, he

wanted to quickly leave the group and join up with his other Fellow Brothers.

“I will go as well.” Zuo An added.

Lan Chudie peered over at both Du Yishuang and Yang Kai as they both nodded.

“Then we go!”

The five quickly sped through the jungle as they headed for the battle zone.

After a long time, they came across a large group of disciples gathered together.

The large group was split into two as a line separated them. Each side had equal numbers, but Yang Kai and the group could not identify anyone in the darkness.

Then, a familiar voice vocalised, “Fang Ziji! Do you and your Storm House believe that we are so weak to be taken advantaged by you? Do you believe that you have the skills to force us to do as you please?”

“Xie Fellow Appentice!” Nie Yong called out in delight.

Lan Chudie smiled while Yang Kai’s complexion darkened.

To think that of all people, Yang Kai had to encounter Xie Hongchen!

Du Yishuang expressed a similar countenance like Yang Kai. The group of five quickly split up as rejoined their respective schools. Although Du Yishuang had spent but a few days with Yang Kai, they developed a close relationship. Unfortunately, if the schools were to clash she would have no choice but to side with her own school and reluctantly battle Yang Kai.

Facing Xia Hongchen's taunt, Fang Ziji scoffs, "Xie Hongchen, I do not wish to fight a fight that already has a clear winner. You were only just promoted to True Element Boundary and are not my match. Do not humiliate yourself."

"What did you say?" Xie Hongchen said coldly.

Meanwhile, many of the High Heaven Pavilion Disciples were clamouring and shouting, telling Xie Hongchen to teach Fang Ziji a lesson.

Fang Ziji snorted. "Only Su Yan from High Heaven Pavilion can be considered my match!" he chuckled.

"Then how about you try me out?"

"If you persist, I do not mind. However, I do not wish for someone like you to be humiliated in front of all your Fellow Apprentices."

Although Xie Hongchen knew that he was currently not a match to Fang Ziji, with the disciples watching him, he could not back down. Just when Xie Hongchen was about to attack, Nie Yong ran out from the jungle bushes and shouted. "Xie Fellow Apprentice!"

When Xie Hongchen heard his familiar voice, he immediately turned his head, frown transitioning into a smile. “Nie Fellow Apprentice! We finally meet again!”

Nie Yong quickly rushed to join the group of High Heaven Pavilion Disciples.

The other four took their time to follow. Since Du Yishuang and Zuo An were not High Heaven Pavilion disciples, it will be hard to join them. As for Yang Kai, he had some grudges with Xie Hongchen and could not easily join the High Heavens Pavilion group.

Knowing Yang Kai and Xie Hongchen’s relationship, Lan Chudie looked at Yang Kai with a weary smile and left the boy.

Du Yishuang whispered to Yang Kai. “I thank you for your kindness and support for these past few days. It’s regrettable that we must part...”

Yang Kai smiles and nods, “It’s alright. I understand. Go.”

Du Yishuang turned her head to Zuo An and asked. “So, Zuo An, do you want to join me or Sister Lan’s group?” Since Zuo An is from Bloody Battle Gang, he would be left alone. Hence, it was best for him to temporarily join one of the big groups here.

Zuo An quickly replied. “I believe it’s better to join you.”

Zuo An knows that Du Yishuang was a kind hearted and good natured girl. Although he does not know the characters of the other disciples within Storm House, Du Yishuang would protect him since she was the one to offer him to join. Compared to Lan Chudie, Zuo An trusts that Du Yishuang would take better

care of him. At the very least, Du Yishuang would not scheme against him.

Du Yishuang nodded and brought Zuo An to the Storm House group.

Lan Chudie opened her mouth and said. "Let's go."

Yang Kai took a little while, his eyes scanning to see if Su Mu, Su Yan or Xia Ning Chang were within the High Heaven Pavilion Disciples here. Seeing that none of them was present, Yang Kai knew that he was bound to be ridiculed and bullied in rejoining his group with Xie Hongchen leading. "You go."

Lan Chudie knew Yang Kai's worries and quickly told him, "Fellow Apprentice. It's best to just endure. It's better to be in a group in this unknown place filled with danger."

Yang Kai shook his head as he still stood resolutely.

When Nie Yong joined the group, he quickly conversed with many of the disciples there. They were all happily exchanging greetings and laughing. Obviously, most of these disciples were on friendly terms with Nie Yong. After greeting them, Nie Yong quickly went to Xie Hongchen's side and began a conversation in whispers. The boy turned his head as he stared at Yang Kai with hostility.

60 metres away, Xie Hongchen looked at Yang Kai with disdain and disgust.

Fang Ziji, unbeknownst of the situation, spoke out. "Xie Hongchen, since you no longer wish to fight, let us both collaborate and kill that Monster Beast! We can split the treasure it yields amongst ourselves."

Xie Hongchen turned his head, look at Fang Ziji and smiled. "This matter, we will discuss later. I have some other more important matters to deal with first."

Xie Hongchen smiled at Lan Chudie and greeted. "Sister Lan Apprentice, it must have been very difficult for you. You have found us, so do not worry anymore. You are safe with our numbers now."

Lan Chudie nodded gently and pulled at Yang Kai's clothes. However, Yang Kai refuses to move.

Xie Hongchen smiled brilliantly, "Yang Fellow Apprentice! Since everyone is from the same school, it is my duty to protect you. Come and join us!"

At that very instant, Nie Yong shouted angrily, "Xie Fellow Apprentice! Have you forgotten what he has done? He humiliated you! Why must we allow him to join us?"

Xie Hongchen's complexion turned cold. How could he possibly forget what had happened? While he was trying to enforce the rules within the school, Su Yan came to Yang Kai's rescue and held his hands! Thinking about it, Xie Hongchen's blood boils with rage.

(Wow, this boy got angry because Yang Kai held Su Yan's hands? Desperate much?)

Xie Hongchen took a deep breath and maintained his forced smile. "That time, Yang Fellow Apprentice was naïve and did not know any better. I believe he most certainly has changed. Right?"

When he spoke, Xie Hongchen's lips twitched while he stared at Yang Kai's cold face.

After hearing Xie Hongchen's words, the High Heaven Pavilion Disciples all felt moved. To think that Xie Hongchen forgave Yang Kai despite the injustice! Xie Hongchen is magnanimous!

Chapter 134, Pursuit

“Yang Kai! Quickly kowtow and apologise!” roared the disciples.

“Yang Kai! Xie Fellow Apprentice is kind enough to not pursue the matter any further. However, his forgiveness does not represent ours. If you don’t apologise, I will consider you an enemy!” one of the Fellow Apprentice screamed, with little concern for his own name.

“Yes! Yang Fellow Apprentice does not have any pride. He dares to woo Su Female Apprentice with one as weak as himself. He is simply a toad looking to eat goose meat! It’s best he looks into a mirror and gives up!” many Female Disciples clamoured together against Yang Kai. Similar to vixens, they nagged.

TLN: (LOL Vixen XD! This was really written by the author!)

Yang Kai’s facial expression shows no change. He remained aloof.

Lan Chudie pulled Yang Kai aside and whispered to him, “Fellow Apprentice, if you are a real man, you must adapt to the situation. Just throw down your pride for a moment. What’s the worst that could happen?”

Yang Kai rolled his eyes.

“What?” Lan Chudie questioned as a frown stretched across her cheeks.

“You don’t have to explain to me. You don’t know Xie Hongchen’s true intentions. You don’t know what he’s done and will do to me later on.” Yang Kai snorted as he looked at Lan Chudie with a hint of resentment.

Lan Chudie claimed frustratedly, “How would I know what he did to you?”

“We may be Fellow Apprentices and, for the past few days, have been helping each other survive, but we are in no way friends. You don’t have to think that you have abandoned me and feel guilty about it. My matters do not require your care.” Yang Kai said coldly.

TLN: (I’m surprised that she would even feel guilty o.0)

Lan Chudie clenched her teeth as her face turned slightly pale. “Why don’t you know what’s good for you?”

Lan Chudie stomped away. She no longer wanted to pay attention to him. Lan Chudie quickly paced to Xie Hongchen’s group and turned her head. “You are right. I don’t owe you anything. Seeing as how you are so carefree, I’ll let you deal with your own affairs.”

Xie Hongchen, within his group of High Heaven Pavilion Disciples was grinning slyly. He was enjoying the scene of Yang Kai suffering isolation and bullying from his very own supporters. As he smirked, he stood there pridefully and arrogantly, mocking Yang Kai.

Xie Hongchen thought to himself: To join my team to survive? Fine! You little boy first have to admit your mistakes and kowtow. If you are not willing, you can wander alone around this dangerous place. Let’s see if you can survive!

Xie Hongchen’s eyes glimmer as he awaits Yang Kai’s decision.

After a while, Yang Kai spoke. “This big group of disciples can only group up

and act mighty against me. Urging me to apologise just to gain favour from those that are stronger. Why would I join you?”

While cutting deeper into the sea of disciples, Lan Chudie heard what Yang Kai said. Noticing how his words were also a response to her, her chest wells up with humiliation and discomfort.

TLN: (LOL! I actually thought you were being truly considerate for once!)

However, Lan Chudie’s discomfort soon turned to self-convinced fury. If I do not earn the favour of the powerful, in this dangerous place, how am I going to survive? Naturally, I must earn the support of someone likes Xie Fellow Apprentice. How could I possibly choose to side with someone who is weaker than me? You still dare to complain about me after taking care of you for these past few days. If you were stronger, people, including me would naturally want to be your ally.

I have already urged you but you paid little to no heed to my words. This is the path you have chosen and yet you blame me? Thinking about this, Lan Chudie no longer felt remorse for leaving Yang Kai.

TLN: (My God!!! You admitted that you want to take advantage of him. However, when he said that he would end up in a disadvantageous position, you did not even take his words into account! Instead, you lied to yourself, thinking that your plan was the best! What a bloody cunt!)

After speaking, Yang Kai wasted not a second longer and strode back into the bushes and away from these two groups.

Seeing how Yang Kai was walking away safely, Nie Yong wanted to quickly stir up more trouble. “Yang Kai is simply too much. He dares to speak like that to our Fellow Apprentices and we’re letting him walk away?”

From the darkness, a ball of flame were quickly conjured and launched towards Yang Kai's direction.

Yang Kai remained solemn and calmly dodged the attack. The boy pays no heed to the direction it came from and proudly vocalised, "Xie Hongchen, what is the meaning of this? I will make sure Su Female Apprentice hears about this and see to it that you will receive retribution for all that you have done!"

Xie Hongchen's complexion sank. He knew that Yang Kai was referring to Long Hui's matter. He had thought that Long Hui would be able to kill Yang Kai with absolute certainty. Unexpectedly, Yang Kai managed to survive and learned of his implications in the matter.

A few days ago after Yang Kai's return to the High Heaven Pavilion, Xie Hongchen slept on pins and needles. His fear was not of Yang Kai, but of retribution from Meng Wuya after seeing them return to the school in each other's company.

However, since Meng Wuya did not act against Xie Hongchen, he thought that he was safe. That both Yang Kai and Meng Wuya had no knowledge his involvement in the matter. In hearing Yang Kai's words, he knew that the said matter would be exposed sooner or later. Rapidly, his murderous intentions transformed to reality as he signalled to Nie Yong hastily.

Nie Yong grinned with delight. Because of Yang Kai's exposure of his plans to peep at Lan Chudie and Yishuang earlier, he hated Yang Kai! To earn the consent of Xie Hongchen to go after Yang Kai was a delightful discovery.

Nie Yong shouted angrily. "Yang Kai! Your bold impudence against Xie Fellow

Apprentice requires more than punishment. I will teach you a lesson personally!” He raised his arm and started inciting. “Which Fellow Apprentice wants to join me in disciplining this arrogant boy?”

Immediately, a group of disciples rushed to Nie Yong’s side and started chasing after Yang Kai.

Lan Chudie half raised her hand, wanting to speak out. She could find not a single word leaving her throat as she helplessly observed the group pursue Yang Kai with the intention to draw blood.

Du Yishuang reacted without delay to try and aid Yang Kai, but was intercepted and impeded by Fang Ziji.

“Fang Fellow Apprentice, let me go! I need to help him, he saved my life not too long ago!” Du Yishuang urged.

“This is not a matter for you to interfere in!”

“But...”

Fang Ziji looked at Du Yishuang intensely and shifted his attention to two Female Apprentices and demanded, “Look after her and make sure she does not leave the group.”

“Yes,” the two Female Apprentices responded in compliance as they briskly secured Du Yishuang’s arms.

Fang Ziji looked at the vanishing figure of Yang Kai and leered happily. “To think that High Heaven Pavilion has such disgraceful internal problems. This is nothing short of laughable.”

Du Yishuang continued to struggle in vain. Meanwhile, Zuo An tried to console her, “You don’t have to be too worried. Although that boy is a mere Initial Elementary Stage 7, he had always made me feel threatened... It is entirely possible for him to come out of this unscathed.”

“Are you sure?” Du Yishuang stopped struggling and asked in a soft voice.

“My intuition implies as such.” Zuo An answered confidently. His intuition has also been the reason for his absence in provocations against Yang Kai.

Running deeper into the jungle, the numerous shadows trailing Yang Kai failed to disappear.

“Yang Kai, in these few days we’ve spent together, our friendship has deepened considerably. I’m willing to minimise your suffering, as long as you let me catch you!” Nie Yong gleefully taunted.

“Friendship?” Yang Kai sneered. “With someone like you? Don’t make me nauseous!”

“Good! Good! I love what you have said!” Nie Yong lividly howled in response, tilting his head back just a little. “Fellow Apprentice! This boy has received an Earth High Grade Martial Skill! If we can hold him down and get it out of him, all of us will be able to learn it!”

TLN: (IDK why it changed to a high grade to be honest... but let’s just go with

it.)

“An Earth High Grade Martial Skill?!” The group of pursuers called out in alarm. Quickly, their motivation turned into greed as they sped up. Being in such a large group over the course of the past few days made it necessary for them to split almost everything they had. In the end, the disciples did not obtain anything worthwhile. However, in light of hearing such a palatable opportunity, why would they ever give up?

“Yang Kai, why do you insist on resisting and being stubborn?” An apprentice swung his sword at Yang Kai.

TLN: (Wow, Fellow Apprentices swinging swords and torturing each other. Can't wait for their future!)

Yang Kai instinctively felt danger behind him and quickly sidestepped, avoiding the blow and losing no speed.

In the same position, Yang Kai felt another sword strike approach his front, forcing him to stop abruptly. The hunting group took the chance and surrounded him.

Yang Kai looked around and counted five. Every single one of them was in the Qi Transformation Stage and worse, their cultivation level was greater than Nie Yong's.

The five people who encircled Yang Kai scoff at him. “Yang Fellow Apprentice! You have done a crime and I am here to punish you in the name of justice,” jeers Nie Yong.

Yang Kai undauntedly snorted. “Is peeping on women bathe not counted as a crime?”

Nie Yong’s face flushed. The other four disciples looked at the embarrassed boy in confusion, which only made things worse.

A disciple from the left spoke out, “Yang Kai, if you consider yourself our Fellow Apprentice, we will not take your life. If you tell us the Earth High Grade Martial Skill Technique, not only will we leave you unharmed, we will also persuade Xie Fellow Apprentice to forgive you.”

“Fellow Apprentices, It’s not that I wish to decline, but I decline.” Feeling pressure, Yang Kai did not whimper. Instead, he held his head high and puffed out his chest. “If you would like to try and take it from me, then it will depend on your skills.”

A Disciple from the opposite side shouted angrily. “We proposed a toast and you did not eat. Instead, you choose to forfeit. Do not think that we are not wont to kill just because we are apprentices from the same sect? Since you have already offended Xie Fellow Apprentice, you can consider yourself dead. If we kill you here, no one would know and we will never be punished!”

Out of the five Disciples, Nie Yong was the one who hated Yang Kai the most. Unwilling to wait any further, he beckoned, “The time for idle chat is over! We just need to torture him for the Martial Skill Technique!”

When they were dividing the stone babies, Nie Yong was extremely envious of Yang Kai’s choice. Although he did not know what Yang Kai received, he was certain it must be useful from the boy’s smug face.

With a warcry, Nie Yong's fist rushed ahead and a familiar cool breeze followed. A dangerous aura threatens Yang Kai!

Nie Yong had decided to use his strongest Martial Skill to incapacitate Yang Kai.

Meanwhile, the other four disciples stood there and watched. After all, the difference in the cultivation level between the two left them with credence of an imminent victory.

One of the Disciples casually commented, "Nie Fellow Apprentice's cool breeze palm has reached such a high level of proficiency. He must have been training hard to perfect it."

All the three other disciples gave an approving nod. The cold breeze palm is one of High Heaven Pavilion's Earth Low Grade Martial Skill can only be obtained with 500 contribution points. It goes without question, that Nie Yong invested countless amount of hours and effort for it. Thus, it is also expected of him, and anyone else in that case, to train arduously with it. For the group, using such a Martial Skill with such a high levelled cultivator was enough to deal with Yang Kai. There was no suspense as the group simply waited for the inevitable.

Yang Kai, on the other hand, decided that he would welcome the palm attack with his very own!

Chapter 135, Escape

As the palm approaches Yang Kai, he could feel the Yun Qi within his Meridians in his left arm become weaker and colder.

Nie Yong grins. “Yang Kai, I will make sure you lose an arm today and carve it into your head as a lesson taught by me!”

Yang Kai’s face darkened as he forcibly stimulates the Yuan Qi within his body to counter Nie Yong. Nie Yong realised instantly that his Martial Skill was not working out as planned.

“You think you can oppose me?” Nie Yong clenched his teeth. He cannot humiliate himself now. “Your Yuan Qi may be fierce, but you are still too weak to resist me!”

The cool breeze palm was inching closer to Yang Kai by the second. With no choice, he stimulated his 30 Meridians and demonstrated his proficiency in Burning Sun’s Blast.

“I said that you are too weak!” Nie Yong sneered after feeling a weak Qi condense into Yang Kai’s fist. With such weak Qi, Yang Kai will lose his arm!

As their palms collided, the Qi within Yang Kai’s fist erupted with a thunderous bang as a red, vibrant fiery ray of light was produced. It was so strong it was like staring at the sun, temporarily blinding all that were nearby.

“What?!” Nie Yong cried out. He did not expect Yang Kai’s Martial Skill to hide such lethality under the guise of weakness. Unexpectedly, their powers were

evenly matched as the explosion pushed the two boys to retreat a few steps.

Nie Yong was forced back into a tree, as he vomited and spat fresh blood. He had retained severe injuries that he could not predict.

Likewise, Yang Kai did not feel any better than Nie Yong. With such a large difference in cultivation level, it was impossible to escape unharmed even with his higher level Martial Skill.

Using the blinding flash as cover, Yang Kai wasted no time in continuing his elude. He stimulated his Yang Yuan Qi and continued to run. Since the other four were of higher cultivation level than Nie Yong, Yang Kai stood no chance should he have stayed. The only option was to flee.

Meanwhile, the four were paralysed by shock. To think Nie Yong was unable to defeat Yang Kai! When they regained their composure, Yang Kai was long gone.

From far away, Yang Kai shouted, “Nie Yong, we shall say goodbye for now. The next time we meet, I will take your life.”

Yang Kai’s voice echoes, leaving the group in disarray.

“Nie Fellow Apprentice!” One of the Disciples rushed to Nie Yong’s aid. He had blood flowing from the corner of his mouth as his eyes were dull with unwillingness and dread. His entire complexion pale as a ghost after the costly exchange.

“Are you alright?”

“I’m alright!” Nie Yong supported his own body to stand. “Yang Kai has been injured as well. We must quickly pursue him! We can’t let him escape!”

“We are still to pursue?” Some members challenged as they looked at each other with hesitation. They did not have any enmity with Yang Kai. They only planned to cheer for Nie Yong and look good in front of Xie Hongchen. Now that Yang Kai has run off in an unknown direction, it would prove to be dangerous to resume the chase, with potential for traps and the Monster Beast.

Nie Yong understood their thoughts and hurriedly stressed. “Did you not see the power of his Martial Skill? He had only got the chance to practice it for a few days and its power is immense! Don’t you want such a Martial Skill for yourself?”

The other disciples nodded in unassertive agreement.

However, the group found the need to add, “Even if we are to pursue him, we are only here for his Martial Skill. If you want to deal with him, do not count on us. This is your own grudge and we will not involve ourselves in it. If you are to kill him, you must be the only one to suffer the consequences.”

“That is only natural!” Nie Yong fiercely scowled at them. “He dares to threaten me! What is he to have the gall to take my life? When I get my hands on him, we’ll see who will be the last one laughing!”

The four disciples thought Yang Kai worthy only of punishment, not death. However, now that he had completely enraged Nie Yong, they all knew that his capture would mean his death.

Meanwhile, over by the small lake where Lan Chudie and Du Yishuang bathed, Yang Kai expelled blood from his mouth. Now that he knows his current level of strength, he knew extending the fight would only result in him dying.

The highest in the group is probably a Qi Transformation Stage Level 7 or 8! If he was only able to barely manage to hold Nie Yong off, he would have no chance against the rest.

This fight cannot be compared to the one at Nine Yin Mountain Valley. After all, all the cultivators who were present there were of almost the same level as himself.

If not for Burning Sun's Blast, Yang Kai would most likely be dead.

The cold effects from Nie Yong's Cold Breeze Palm are now lingering and setting in within his body. Yang Kai had to remove the effects posthaste to prevent further and more severe injuries.

Sensing that someone was closing the distance between them, Yang Kai bent his waist and held his breath and dove into the pond to hide.

Yang Kai does not have the means to cope with any kind of dangers right now. Thus, he could only follow the safest and most familiar route to escape. To end up at the small lake; which provided a good hiding spot. If the group were to dive into the lake to check, Yang Kai could deliver a surprise attack to send the attackers into confusion once more. Were they willing to risk taking on such an attack after watching Nie Yong suffer his blow?

Yang Kai continued diving deeper into the shroud of darkness.

Though the lake was not that big, Yang Kai was surprised at its deepness. After diving for some time, he had not reached the lake bottom. What's more, the lake was so cold at the deeper levels it pierced his skin to the bone.

Yang Kai stopped and swum towards the surface instead. He listened to sounds around him, trying to locate the others.

As he had suspected, Nie Yong and the others caught up to him. Although he tried to hide his tracks, Nie Yong, who spent a few days following Yang Kai before, could get a vague sense as to where he would choose to go.

After hearing their faint voices, Yang Kai heard a large splash from above him. Panic started plaguing his mind as he thought he had completely underestimated Nie Yong's contempt. He had never thought that Nie Yong would track him down so vigorously, going so far as to search deep in the lake.

Without any other choice, Yang Kai could only choose to continue diving, in hopes of not getting caught.

Fortunately, Yang Kai thinks and cultivates True Yang Secret Art. With True Yang Yuan Qi circulating, the icy cold water would not be as much a hindrance to him. Thus, he could dive even deeper than Nie Yong and the others.

After a while, the person who jumped in arose and left the water.

Unable to find a lead on Yang Kai, the group did not tarry and walked to search in other places.

Being in the water for so long holding his breath, caused Yang kai to feel dizzy. Even if he had cultivated to Initial Element Stage 7 and was stronger than a mortal man, he still has limits.

Thankfully, Yang Kai was able to get a breather without the group of Disciples around. Suddenly, he heard a whistling sound as he continued to surface. He looked around and scanned his surroundings, but strangely he could not find the source of the sound.

As Yang Kai continued to search, the sound became louder. From a soft whistle, it turned to a breeze.

Is it coming from the bottom?

Since there was nowhere else the sound could come from, Yang Kai refocused his attention to the darkness below him. He swam down. As he carefully looked around the area, the sound grew even louder. When he focused harder, a faint glimmer could be seen. He drew closer to the source and found a shiny but black cave entrance.

Yang Kai's eyes glimmered with joy. To be able to produce such a sound meant that the cave would have to contain air. Seeing it as a chance to find a safe haven away from Nie Yong to recuperate, Yang Kai swam in.

Nie Yong would definitely still be searching for Yang Kai outside. Even if the group had gone somewhere else, resurfacing was still a risk.

The cave was considerably deep, probably more than a hundred meters. Initially, the cave tunnelled downwards, then horizontally and later, vertically.

When Yang Kai was nearly out of breath, he managed to arrive at a pocket of air.

Yang Kai used his hands to wipe droplets off his face. He looked around to find that the pocket of air was not just a pocket, but a large, empty space.

This should still be part of the cave, Yang Kai thought. The small lake was on top of a mountain peak, allowing it to have sufficient space for a connection. Since Yang Kai could hear a breeze from the cave entrance, he knew that there must have been a hollowed out area that contained air.

The cave was surprisingly dry. Yang Kai quickly got out of the water and inspected the dark area for signs of life. He realised that there was him and only him, and he sighed loudly with relief.

Sitting cross-legged, Yang Kai quickly revolved True Yang Secret Arts to dry his clothes and started to drive out the cold effect that was still in him.

Since Nie Yong was a few cultivation levels higher than himself, Yang Kai was not confident he could drive out the coldness completely within his body. Thankfully, Yang Kai noticed that his Yuan Qi was vigorous enough. If it was other Cultivators at his level, they could only helplessly wait for the coldness to spread and corrode their Meridians.

In such situations, a Cultivator's strength is essential, determining life and death!

A hefty amount of time passed and Yang Kai vomited a puddle of black blood, which indicated that he has successfully dispelled the coldness from his body.

Although his face was pale, he was smiling. He no longer had to worry about

his Meridians.

Cool Breeze Palm! Yang Kai noted. This Martial Skill's might is strong. Especially with the effects of the injecting coldness into the opponent's body, similarly to the Burning Sun's Blast, with the only difference being heat instead of cold. It was only fortunate that this Martial Skill was not as strong as Burning Sun's Blast.

Chapter 136, The Howling Darkness

Having meditated for half a day, Yang Kai set out to look around the cave.

Previously, he was in an emergency state and needed to remove the coldness that plagued his body. He could not fully explore the cave he resided in due to his injuries. Now that his movement is no longer impaired, he naturally decided to delve deeper into the abode that may have very well saved his life in the first place.

Yang Kai assumes that he was still in the middle of the cave tunnel. With only rumours and hearsay to guide him, Yang Kai reached out both his arms in opposite directions. His left palm just barely senses a draft coming from the direction it faced. As the rumours have it, the hand that feels the wind will lead to the exit.

Yang Kai thought for a moment and walked in the direction of the palm of his right hand. It was better to go deeper into the cave than outside, since the hunters may still be lurking around the pond above.

After a long and tiresome walk, Yang Kai detects the scent of a herb. In such a dimly lit environment, who would have thought that herbs would grow?

Yang Kai approached the herb but could not tell if this thing was uncommon or not, but since this cave has dense Yin Qi and this was within the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, he thought it must have some value to it!

However, Yang Kai held off of picking the herbs now. Since he does not have a suitable container for them, he decided that it would not be a problem for him to come back to them later.

Yang Kai continued exploring and discovered that there were actually countless herbs growing around the cave. This could only mean that this place has been out of contact with humans for a very long time. People would have picked this place clean in the blink of an eye.

After walking for two hours, Yang Kai could see a glimmer of light shining from deeper within. Suddenly, he could hear a faint sound calling out, as though to summon him towards the light.

Yang Kai turned vigilant and sauntered quietly towards it.

As he slowly but surely caught up to the little gleam which grew not brighter but bigger, Yang Kai found that the light was no exit nor sunbeam. Instead, the light was emitting softly from a circular bead the size of a fist like an oval lantern, and provided a reasonable amount of visibility.

When Yang Kai inspected the bead and its surroundings, he noticed an old, weathered skeleton. The skeleton sat cross-legged and wore an expensive and magnificent purple gown for males. His two empty eye sockets stared deeply at Yang Kai like a teacher dumbfounded by his student's stupidity, giving him the impression that this skeleton was more than it seemed.

Who knows how many years has passed since the owner of the skeleton died.

The Yin Qi was denser here and it could very well be because of the skeleton's presence. Yang Kai felt that it was once an evil person. The skeleton produced a sort of Evil Qi, striking fear in the arrogant boy.

Was he the one who made Heaven's Cave Inheritance? Yang Kai suddenly realised that a cultivator must have created this place.

If that was the case, wouldn't this cave hold the inheritance?

Suddenly, Yang Kai hears a resounding crash that snaps him out of deep thought.

Yang Kai's expression immediately changed as he turned around to discover a gargantuan boulder blocking the path from which he came. He looked back at the bead and noticed that it was flickering as the space around him now resonates with a wild howl and loud shriek.

A cold wind struck Yang Kai's body as the warmth he felt now chilled him down to his toes and fingers.

To counter this unwelcome change, Yang Kai quickly revolved his True Yang Yuan Qi once again. He paid full attention to his surroundings for dangers and enemies while he tried to evict the cold.

The shrieking and howling continued for a long time. Those sounds were meant to confuse and disturb the minds, but this trickery had little to no effect on the unyielding mind that Yang Kai's head housed.

As time passed, the shrieking and howling started to irritate Yang Kai. Although it was subtle, Yang Kai discerned that the sounds were now different.

Yang Kai kept himself calm as he continued to stay on high alert. He could not risk making a mistake. He knew he had to stay calm and in control of himself, so

he sat down cross-legged in a familiar meditation posture.

The sound and the bead's flickering continued, making the environment look and feel gloomy. However, Yang Kai was unaffected. His aura and facial expression persisted.

After a few hours, the shrieks and howls dissipated. The bead's flickering also reverted back to normal. Since he could no longer turn back, Yang Kai moved not one bit and yelled, "Why don't you show yourself?"

Yang Kai's lips confidently simpered as he yelled once more, "Whoever it is that dares to play these cheap tricks, show yourself!"

Yang Kai's shout echoed through the cave when suddenly a strange cackle could be heard. When Yang Kai first heard this laughter, the hairs on his body stood. It was so petrifying and coarse that even Yang Kai's five main internal organs shivered.

TLN: (Ok, so this author uses five main internal organs a lot. I'm not sure if I should change it to simple and plain organs. Leave a comment for this change. But, know that throughout this whole story, the other organs are not important, except for the five main ones! No idea why that is... to be honest, doesn't really make much of a difference if I just type it as organs.) – one week till I count the votes from release date.

It was not just his body that felt uncomfortable. Even the bead trembled from the laughter.

Immortal Soul Attack? Yang Kai's colour switched. He initially had thought that someone was trying to drive him away from this cave to monopolise the treasures here, but at this very instant he knew that that was not the case.

TLN: (LOL. When a random boulder lands behind you, I'm pretty sure that means shit is real right now.)

An Immortal Soul attack was something that only a cultivator at Immortal Ascension Stage could perform. No disciples that entered could have done this!

TLN: (This is why; I think Immortal Ascension is a good name here. Feel free to put your thoughts down in the comments.)

“Young boy, your willpower is impressive. Your courage also surprises me. To think that you would dare to speak in such a manner in front of this old man!” the same coarse voice trailed and moved about, disclosing no information for Yang Kai for where it may be coming from. It was almost as though the walls spoke.

“Who are you?” Yang Kai maintained his solemn look and asked.

“Who am I? I don't remember. I'm probably the master of this place,” the coarse voice chuckled almost comically.

TLN: (Seems legit.)

“You are the master of the Heaven's Cave Inheritance?” Yang Kai raised his voice to ask.

The three school's disciples totalling over a thousand people gathered together in search of this mystical inheritance. It was said that whoever could obtain it and survive would one day be able to reach the prestigious altitude of its very master.

Yang Kai never thought that he would manage to obtain the inheritance. He

only entered this place to explore and gather treasures and advantages. However, with the inheritance right up in his face, how could he not be interested?

Yang Kai felt excitement rush through his limbs, even though he wished to stay calm.

The coarse voice waited for the perfect opportunity to speak again. "That's right. I was the one who created this place! Boy, do you want to obtain my inheritance?"

Yang Kai did not respond. Instead, he took some time to consider the proposition.

"I have been watching you and noticed that you are injured. Do you seek revenge? Do you wish to make sure that the person who injured you will be afraid of you? To know that you are no common pushover?" The coarse voice speculated. It sounded like a demon's soothing melody playing in Yang Kai's ears. He furrowed his brows and interrupted, "Hold on for a moment, I'm thinking!"

"Your heart holds a deep hatred buried inside. A hatred others cannot see or imagine. You want to get stronger. You want to make sure that everyone who has ever looked down on you will regret their actions. Isn't it?"

Yang Kai was trying to keep calm, but anger soon replaced it, driven and encouraged only by excitement from the thought of the sheer power he could receive. His forehead wrinkled and he looked as though he was struggling. Though what the voice said was somewhat wrong in terms of morality, it spoke correctly. Yang Kai truly felt as such deep down inside.

Yang Kai spoke in a soft but strong quivering voice, "That's right..."

"If you wish so, just nod and this old man will give you my inheritance! Isn't this a great opportunity for you to get back at them?" The voice continued. "Are you willing to decline such an opportunity? Just a simple nod."

"If you let go of this chance, make sure that you will not regret it."

The voice messages Yang Kai in consecutive pulses, causing him to feel confused as he was slowly being misled.

You could see the confusion in his eyes; as his head swayed slightly. His lips were opening and closing as though he wishes to accept this opportunity. Then, Yang Kai's confusion turned to determination. His face now changed to that of a person who felt fear and on his forehead were droplets of cold sweat.

The opposing person with no knowledge of what Yang Kai has just done asked once again, "Well? What do you choose?"

Noticing that Yang Kai has no reaction now, the coarse voice sounded surprised, "To think you are willing to bite your own tongue to awaken yourself! What impressive willpower!"

"Who are you?! And what technique did you use to manipulate my mind just now?" Snorted Yang Kai.

"You are certainly an impressive young boy, to have been able to stay in reality. As for who I am? Who am I?"

“Even if you do not say, I know!” Yang Kai’s resolute gaze fell on the skeleton. “I have heard that cultivators of the Immortal Ascension Boundary and any above it, so long as they have developed their Divine Sense and keep it secure, they can stay alive even if their mortal bodies were to disintegrate and die. They can even seek another body to host them. You should be one of the many cultivators who died here years ago! And right now, you wish to take my body! Trying to mislead me into accepting you!” Yang Kai exclaimed with eyes full of dread.

After a moment of silence, the coarse voice laughed hysterically. “Fierce! To think some trivial young cultivator with only the strength of Initial Element Stage 7 is capable of figuring all this out! You truly are a talent worthy of praise. Even this old man admires you!”

TLN: (He is mainly referring to how young Yang Kai must be, and to have experienced enough to figure shit out.)

The voice descended into one with gloom, “Do you not fear me despite this realisation?”

Yang Kai gave a smile filled with ridicule. “Why should I fear you? If you had a method to control my mind with force, you would have no need for this conversation. You may have been a cultivator who exceeded my imaginations, but that was before you died. Right now, you are only capable of tricks!”

TLN: ((-■_■)) You have to admit, perfect moment to use this!

“So remind me, why should I fear you?” Yang Kai derided. “On the contrary, aren’t you afraid? If I find and destroy the object that houses your Immortal Soul right now, won’t you die?”

“Young boy, aren’t you unruly?” The voice replied. “You think that I was speaking to you just to mislead you? HA HA! This old man just needs three seconds to completely erase your mind and take over your body. You won’t have a single chance to retaliate!”

Chapter 137, What Advantage Will I Receive If I Keep You Alive?

Hearing the voice's words, Yang Kai darkened. Without any hesitation, Yang Kai raised his fist and accelerated it towards the skeleton and shrieked, "Wishful thinking!"

How many years have passed since this man had died? When the blow Yang Kai's fist impacted the skeleton, it effortlessly passed through its bones and shattered them into dust. Yang Kai did not waver from the seeming simplicity of the fight. Instead, he turned to be more vigilant.

"Enough. You may have been right, but you chose the wrong skeleton to attack!" The voice complacently giped as the bead suddenly dimmed and an illusionary face emerged from the bead, brimming with Black Qi. The face looked terrifying; as though it was an evil spirit with little to no concern for life, as though it killed anything it wanted without blinking an eye.

The Immortal Soul was not inside the skeleton. It was inside the bead that created light!

Yang Kai was about to strike the menacing bead, but the new face opened its mouth as a piercing howl deafened Yang Kai. It made his mind feel like it was pierced with a million needles!

Yang Kai knew then that the skeleton did not lie. The result of the attack by the skeleton is only one piece of evidence of possibly countless more that proves his ability to forcefully take his body from him.

While the Immortal Soul continued to seep into Yang Kai's body, he heard a

maniacal laughter from his own chest.

Yang Kai's body grew stiff and trembled with the struggle as he speedily lost control over it.

"Ha! Ignorant young boy, it was delusional to think that you can resist me. Watch as I wipe away your consciousness and occupy your body!" Chortled the invasive voice that now came from Yang Kai's guts.

Yang Kai was startled, but he had no intention of yielding.

"Yes... Your body is, unfortunately, quite weak. I will use it to seek a better and stronger body later. Do not worry, when I have taken it from you, any hatred you may feel towards others will be settled by me. Just be obedient and stop resisting. It will save you the pain and save me the time!"

"Dream on!" Yang Kai thought.

"Why do you still revolt? It is good fortune to be liked by this old man. Why are you not content?" The face heard Yang Kai's voice from within his heart and smiled. "Since you are not willing to concede, this old man has no choice but to erase your consciousness. You will realise how painful it is to have your consciousness wiped away. No average man can handle such pain and remain normal."

Yang Kai's head suddenly felt like it was hit by a sledgehammer. The pain was a million times as before. It was excruciating, so much that Yang Kai let out a shrill and ear-splitting screech! His clothes quickly turned damp from his sweat and his body convulsed like a seizure.

“Since you were who chose to suffer, you have no right to complain,” The old man snorted.

Yang Kai could feel his consciousness fade away like a waterfall flowing. His vision would flicker as he endured the pain. His eyes turned bloodshot as the boy held on, unwilling to give up.

“What?” The old man sounded off in surprise. “You are still able to resist me. How strange...”

While the old man spoke, Yang Kai could feel his own bones transmitting a warm sensation as his own Immortal Soul slowly stabilised. The pain was also greatly reduced.

Suddenly, a huge suction occurred in his mind.

“What is this?” The old man was struck by panic and squealed with confusion. “What is this?! This is not what I wanted! Nooo!”

The old man’s pitiful yell slowly fades as Yang Kai regained the senses in his mind. He could feel that something was imbued into his golden bones.

When the pain vanished and Yang Kai could feel his body again, he took a deep, long breath.

The Immortal Soul attack lasted only for ten seconds, but to Yang Kai it felt like a century. Putting up such resistance against the Immortal Soul attack only emboldened Yang Kai’s willpower.

A sad and miserable voice could be heard, and like a mouse meeting a cat, the shivering and frightened voice profusely begged for mercy.

When Yang Kai noticed the golden bones within his body, he found a face now within them, filled with nothing but fear.

“Young hero. Great young hero, this old man made a mistake. Please forgive me and let me leave and I will never do this again.” The old man sounded desperate as he pleaded. The old man did not know what happened to him, but could feel eyes filled with evil staring at him, waiting to devour him; just like how a ravenous neanderthal would stare at a delicious meal.

Yang Kai’s looked strange.

The last time he was in the Nine Yin Mountain, the golden bones absorbed half of the Nine Yin Congealing Yuan Nectar and stored it within himself, waiting to be used for when Yang Kai breaks through the True Element Boundary.

Today, the golden bones managed to absorb the old man!

Although Yang Kai knew that the golden bones were capable of absorbing energies besides Yang Attribute, he had not imagined that it was even remotely capable of absorbing others’ Immortal Soul!

The Immortal Souls of cultivators is also considered to be energy. In fact, they made almost entirely of energy. With regards to the golden bones, it should come as no surprise that such energy could be easily absorbed.

While the voice continued to beg and wail, Yang Kai revolves True Yang Secret Arts slowly. During the process, the old man began to feel his whole Immortal Soul burn with scorching, pure energy.

The old man pitifully exclaimed, “What are you doing? Stop. Please!”

Hearing a slight response from his voice, the old man knew then that Yang Kai was experimenting.

“Young Hero, please don’t do this. You will only be extinguishing my Immortal Soul...”

Yang Kai was dauntless. He continued to revolve True Yang Secret Art. As time passed, the pleading voice dwindled and became softer and weaker. The old man implored Yang Kai for the entirety of the revolving. He dared not stop, in hopes that Yang Kai would change his mind.

As he estimated, Yang Kai soon stopped revolving and returned his focus to the golden body.

“Many thanks, gracious Young Hero, for showing mercy!” The old man waited for some time to restore his Yuan Qi and shuddered with fear while expressing his gratitude.

It seems that he had become the opposite of what he was; from a robust, strong-willed man to a delicate flower; weak and fragile.

“What benefits would sparing you reap for me?” Yang Kai sniggered.

Since Yang Kai almost crossed the doorway to death, it was only fair that this Old Man experienced a taste of his own medicine.

Yang Kai did not wish to keep this old man with him. In the short amount of time they have met, Yang Kai could tell that he was as evil as the foulest demon. Yang Kai was fortunate that the old man's strength was low; otherwise, he would have likely been dead.

The thought of absorbing and essentially devouring such an abhorrent character disgusted Yang Kai to his very core.

"Benefits? There are of course benefits!" The old man rapidly replied, knowing that his explanation was crucial.

"Speak, then," Yang Kai calmly queried.

"I do not know what benefit this Young Hero wishes for. What do you want?" The old man poked.

"Em?" Yang Kai responded, having expected a better reply.

"Young Hero, do not misunderstand! I have been dead for numerous years. Sealed in this place to only be awakened for a few days. With my extensive experience, I can certainly deliver benefits. Please, just give me a moment to recollect," the old man corrected himself as he twitched with pangs of fear.

Yang Kai waited silently and patiently, knowing full that the old man spoke

truthfully.

Moments after, the old man cried out in pleasant surprise. “Young Hero, I just remembered that at your present strength, you will need some high-level defensive Martial Skills. Please wait a moment and I’ll deliver one to you.”

“Oh?” Yang Kai straightened his body and enthusiastically promised, “I will circle your life if you bring me a satisfying Martial Skill.”

Hearing his words, the old man relaxes and quickly follows, “I will certainly make you satisfied. All the Martial Skills I know are at least of Mystery Rank.”

Yang Kai’s breathing spurred. Martial Skills were divided into ranks. From the lowest grade to the best grade: Earth Grade, Heaven Grade, Mystery Grade, Spirit Grade and finally Saint Grade. Naturally, as the grade scales so does the rarity of the Martial Skill. Even in the Great Han Dynasty, there were only a handful of Mystery Ranked Martial Skills!

A few days ago, Yang Kai had risked his life with Lan Chudie, taking much time and effort to obtain an Earth Grade Martial Skill. To think they were all satisfied with the grade of their hard work. But how could an Earth Grade compare to a Mystery Grade Martial Skill?

The Old Man could see the hope and delight plastering Yang Kai’s face, and slackened. He knew that in order to live, he had to please the boy. As a few minutes passed, the Old Man spoke slowly, “The Martial Skill is called Devouring Hearts.”

Yang Kai’s raised a brow in interest.

“It is simple to cultivate this Martial Skill. Every day for a hundred days, you must eat the hearts of three children and build up the blood. You will then achieve the Small Accomplishment Stage of Devouring Hearts, but this stage is more than enough to kill enemies by bursting their blood vessels!” The old man confidently promoted.

To the old man’s dismay, however, Yang Kai’s face turned black and sour. “This skill is unacceptable!” Yang Kai cut rudely into the Old Man’s explanation, disallowing him to continue.

“Okay, there’s another Martial Skill called Fallen Red.”

Yang Kai nodded. The name of this Martial Skill was nice and poetic. It must certainly be something graceful and majestic.

The Old Man smiled. “It’s even easier to cultivate this Martial Skill. All you need to do is to mate with a virgin maiden and collect her first drop of virgin blood. As long as you can collect female blood, you can cultivate this Martial Skill in almost any setting. Furthermore, the higher the maiden’s cultivation level, the faster your cultivation. If you just accumulate the virgin blood of a hundred females, you will undoubtedly achieve the Big Accomplishment Stage! Young Hero, you are both formidable and majestic. Spending a night with 10 virgin maidens a day should be a simple task for you. In just a mere 10 days, you can reach the Big Accomplishment Stage!”

Yang Kai looked uncertain and questioned, “Isn’t this just simply gathering Yin energy to supplement the growth of Yang Energy?”

“Yes! Young Hero is clever and knowledgeable! This is gathering Yin to

supplement Yang.”

“Another one!”

The old man sank but continued at the thought of his life hanging in the balance. “The next Martial Skill is called Love Fist.”

“Another one!”

“No, another!!”

The Old Man’s was perplexed. If he had hands and skin, he would be nervously wiping sweat off his forehead right now. All these Martial Skills were, astonishingly, not to the tastes of Yang Kai.

To cultivate such evil was the same as waiting to be struck by lightning!

Chapter 138, Benefits of The Short-Term.

Yang Kai felt greedy at the thought of the power of these Martial Skills, but he refused to let it drive him.

After going through so many Martial Skills, the old man felt terrified that Yang Kai was not pleased.

“Young Hero, there is one Martial Skill that I cannot remember. I’m not lying!”

“If you are only able to give me such evil Martial Skill techniques, what’s the use of keeping you alive?” Yang Kai spoke in a foreboding voice. Whatever the old man has to offer would be evil since he himself is an evil cultivator.

“Young Hero, please repress your anger. I will try my best to remember! Having just woken up caused my memory to be chaotic. I need time to recall. Just give me a little bit of time. Just a little bit more and I will be able to remember something that is satisfactory.”

“I’ll only give you one more chance, so you best make good use of it!”

“Yes. I will certainly not disappoint.”

Yang Kai did not bother to respond to the old man again. The Martial Skills would require time to practice and he was in no rush to gain another. Likewise, the Old Man was too weak to escape Yang Kai now. Thus, the boy had no worries and could afford to wait.

Yang Kai took out the Golden Stone Baby from his bosom and revolved his Yuan Qi to feel the golden veins within; spying on its mysteries.

To know only the Burning Sun's Blast places Yang Kai at a disadvantage. He needed to learn more Martial Skills for a variety of attacks. While Yang Kai was recuperating, he planned on cultivating his Second Martial Skill.

He needs to strengthen himself to fend off the bullies once he leaves the cave.

Within this Golden Stone Baby were 70-80 golden veins. This is very likely to be a Heaven Grade Martial Skill, maybe even a Mystery Grade Martial Skill!

Yang Kai took the daylight to memorise all the revolutions within the Golden Stone Baby. Similar to the previous Stone Baby, the Golden Stone Baby soon turned to ash once yang Kai took back his Yuan Qi.

For the rest of the day, the Old Man racked his brain to remember. Although he had thought of some other advantages he could provide, the Old Man did not dare interrupt as Yang Kai was in deep concentration. The Old Man could only panic in silence and wait within the Golden Skeleton.

Yang Kai did not bother with the Old Man as he was too busy concentrating on the Martial Skill technique he had received from the Golden Stone Baby. He sat cross-legged and revolved his True Yang Yuan Qi within his body, in accordance with the routes laid out by the Golden Stone Baby. Yet, after one revolution around his Meridians, Yang Kai had discovered that he did not experience the same sensation of discovery, unlike when he had first tried out Burning Sun's Blast. Instead, the boy felt a faint backlash grazing the back of his hands, causing him to jerk in surprise.

Was the flow wrong? Yang Kai doubted.

That's impossible. I clearly followed everything laid out by the Golden Stone baby without the slightest deviation.

Yang Kai revolves again and felt the same backlash.

What's wrong? Isn't this a Martial Skill? Why am I not feeling the same sensation as I did when I learned Burning Sun's Blast?

Why does this Martial Skill seem so different from the rest?

Yang Kai thought as he inspected the mysteries surrounding this Martial Skill. He could not come up with an explanation, instead, only slowly practising and feeling.

Yang Kai relaxed and revolved his Yuan Qi again. With each revolution, he felt the same exact backlash over and over, as though someone was beating it. However, he knew that it was harmless.

As more time was burned, Yang Kai had revolved his Yuan Qi 1000 times. On the 800th, he could felt soreness take over, but he could no longer detect the backlash.

When Yang Kai opened his eyes to look at the back of his hands, there was, shockingly, a myriad of designs. They were strange, and Yang Kai could only describe it as a starry night sky. When Yang Kai revolved his Yuan Qi, the little stars gloriously sparkled.

TLN: (Think of it as constellations (Star Chart) on the back of his hands.)

What's more, Yang Kai could clearly feel an invisible space opening up below his hands.

With a Yuan Qi revolution, space opens up while the little stars on the back of his hands shine gloriously. It felt like the space was for storage.

After practising for a little while longer, Yang Kai could not imagine a useful function this Martial Skill would provide. He could not even use it to kill an ant, let alone another cultivator.

Yang Kai continued rotating his Yuan Qi. Unanticipatedly the Star Chart burst out from his hands, and his fingertips had a faint glowing light, though incomparable to the constellation on the back of his hand, which irradiated the entire cave as though it was bathing in sunlight. Yang Kai then submerged his hand into the ground, and poured his Yuan Qi into the space, causing a ferocious tremor.

Realising what he had done, Yang Kai brightened up.

Although this Martial Skill was exceptionally consuming, the eruption of power that this Martial Skill caused was definitely much more powerful than that of which is caused by an ordinary bomb explosion. It was at least twice the lethality!

Yang Kai estimated that if he did not invest as much Yuan Qi as he did, the explosion would have been much tinier.

This Martial Skill is too strange! Yang Kai's brows creased as he tried to determine the uses of this Martial Skill.

Suddenly, from inside his body, Yang Kai could hear a cautious and flattering voice call out. "Young Hero... Young Hero..."

Yang Kai's squinted further as he ignored the voice and focused on the Martial Skill.

"Young Hero, I think I know what that Martial Skill is capable of. Do you care to listen?"

Without an immediate response, the Old Man was forced to wait anxiously. He impatiently wished to show his value to Yang Kai to convince the boy not to eviscerate his existence.

The Old Man could tell that Yang Kai had a firm and resolute disposition that most cannot hope to compare with. Besides, Yang Kai has a tendency to hide his true intentions with a façade, which caused the Old Man to shiver in anxiousness.

Even more time passed, then Yang Kai opened his mouth, "What do you know? Speak."

The Old Man did not complain, as he had an opportunity presented to him. Instead, he sounded extremely grateful and promptly clarified, "I am not sure what this Martial Skill is called. However, I recall watching someone use it. When you activate it, it will open up space which you and you alone can access. I believe that the might of this Martial Skill highly depends on how much Yuan Qi

is deposited into this space.”

“Young Hero, you should be able to store Yuan Qi into this space over time and use it in an appropriate situation. This Martial Skill has powerful destructive capabilities but is difficult to utilise. If no Yuan Qi is stored within this space, it will be harmless. When the space is used, all Yuan Qi you have garnered in it will fuel a powerful explosion, then you will need time to refill the space to use it again.”

The old man pressed on as he noticed Yang Kai’s attentiveness. “Though this Martial Skill can, practically, be used only once every battle, it is unnecessary to continuously practice to bolster it. All you need to do is regularly store Yuan Qi and, maybe if you get caught in a desperate situation, use it. Its might and power will certainly aid you in those times.”

Once he finished, the Old Man went dead silent, so as to avoid annoying Yang Kai.

Yang Kai’s lips slowly curved into a wide smile. The old man’s explanation was similar to his own conclusion. However, it was more comprehensive and in-depth, allowing the boy to gain a deeper understanding of this Martial Skill.

Instead of the usual cultivation, this Martial Skill simply required him to store Yuan Qi and use it for an explosion!

How fortunate must he be to obtain such a Martial Skill perfect for one like himself!

Yang Kai could not help but chuckle in delight. Others would need to restore their Yuan Qi through normal means. Meanwhile, Yang Kai can do it through

Yang Stones and store them as Yang Liquids inside his Dantian.

“I need to investigate this Martial Skill further, so do not disturb me.” Yang Kai warned the Old Man.

“Yes... I understand...”

“What you said was not enough for me to let you live. So, continue to think of what you can offer me!”

The Old Man felt bitterness. The way Yang Kai conducts himself was no different from an old cunning fox.

How he regretted his decision for trying to steal Yang Kai. But right now, the Old Man could only sigh as Yang Kai continued to concentrate on pouring Yuan Qi into the special space.

The speed in which he poured was absurd and unscrupulous as he did not have to worry about running out of Yuan Qi.

The Old Man initially wanted to remind the boy not to consume his Yuan Qi too quickly, as it will burden his mortal body. However, after Yang Kai’s words rung in his head, the Old Man decided to not say anything.

Humph! It was you who ordered me not to disturb you. So, I will not bother to remind you!

TLN: (WTF, why do you sound like a sassy bitch all of a sudden?)

It's much better if your Yuan Qi depletes! Then, I will look for an opportunity to leave your damn body. Boy, you can only blame your own ignorance for what is going to happen.

If Yang Kai wishes to cultivate back every bit of Yuan Qi he spends here, it would take at least 35 days!

Right now, he has spent nearly all the Qi he had by storing it in the space.

The Old Man realised that Yang Kai was weakening and continued to wait excitedly for a golden opportunity to escape this body, but before he could even begin to plan, Yang Kai instantly recovered his Qi and vitality again!

Who would have thought Yang Kai would completely regain his Yuan Qi and vitality once it was depleted?

What happened? The Old Man nearly went insane from this strange situation. In all his years, he had never seen something like this. He felt his heart pulsate as he could not believe what he was witnessing. Was he being delusional? No, it couldn't be. Everything was too real to be an illusion. But he clearly felt the boy exhausting his Yuan Qi! How is it possible for him to restore it in a flash? He must have misread his amount of Qi. The Old Man consoled himself while he attentively observed Yang Kai with full attention.

As even more time elapsed, the Yuan Qi within Yang Kai's body was completely gone as the Start Chart at the back of his hand flickered.

The Old Man now pledged his own Immortal Soul that he had truly seen the boy completely deplete his own Yuan Qi. He waited for a few seconds to

continue observing Yang Kai and convinced himself that he in no way mistaken. Before he could think of his next move, however, the Old Man was struck like a wooden chicken and would only stare at the scene. Yang Kai's Yuan Qi must have been utterly exhausted, but it had restored itself again, and the old man thought he had an infinite supply of Yuan Qi!

The Old Man felt indescribable shock. He thought that he had seen everything. It was general knowledge that the Yuan Qi within a person, regardless of their cultivation level, would at least require time to fully restore!

If everyone could restore themselves as Yang Kai did, what would happen to the world?

Just what kind of Martial Technique did this boy cultivate to go against heaven's will?

The old man could only helplessly look at Yang Kai with dread and despair. With the ability to fully restore his Yang Qi whenever he likes, what kind of terrorist would this boy grow to be in the future? Coupled especially with the perfect Martial Skill, he could easily unleash explosion after explosion with no concern for his Yuan Qi! His battle efficiency would perhaps be greater than, if not equal to that of a hundred cultivators!

Chapter 139, Subduing The Evil Spirit

The Old Man could not help but look up to Yang Kai.

The truth is, Yang Kai seemed to have endless Yuan Qi only because he has the ability to accumulate them.

The True Yang Secret Arts that Yang Kai cultivates and the Martial Skill that Yang Kai had just received both share similar abilities. Both are able to store an accumulated amount of Yuan Qi. True Yang Secret Art allows Yang Kai to absorb Yang Yuan Qi and turn it into Yang Liquid, storing it in his Dantian. Meanwhile, this Martial Skill allows Yang Kai to inject his Yuan Qi into a pocket of space, which can be used in the form of an explosion.

However, there are some differences between the two. In his Dantian, Yang Kai is able to store limitless amounts of Yang Liquid. Meanwhile, the space from the Star Chart on his hand was different. It had a limit.

Yang Kai spent two days converting 10 drops of Yang Liquid into Yuan Qi and injected it into the space. He could feel the saturation in it.

Once Yang Kai felt that it was enough, he began to revolve True Yang Secret Arts to restore his Yuan Qi once again. Whenever he felt the Star Chart on the back of his hand crave for more Yuan Qi, he would inject more into the space and rinse and repeat the process. It was an easy Martial Skill that took little time to master. It was the perfect Martial Skill for Yang Kai.

Two more days passed, and Yang Kai opened his eyes to find that the Star Chart now looked more lifelike. The constellations seemed as though it was real, and grew on his hand. It was now comparable to the stars of the night sky!

By simply concentrating, Yang Kai managed to make the Star Chart invisible, as it hides under his skin.

Yang Kai took a deep breath and exhaled. The Star Chart was an outstanding attention magnet. It would no doubt raise suspicions, causing potential problems. Thankfully, it is easy to conceal..

Yang Kai recalled something and asked the old man, “You said that you have seen this Martial skill before. Do you know its name?”

“I apologise for my incompetence, Young Hero, but I cannot recall”. The old man’s voice sounded as horrific as before but had a tad bit more obedience in it after two days.

Yang Kai’s eyes sparkled. Although he does not know what caused it, he could tell that the Old Man has gained a newfound respect for the boy.

“Alright. I’ll give you an opportunity. Help me give it a name.” Yang Kai remembered himself previously taking a while to decide on a name for the Burning Sun’s Blast. With the old man’s presence, why not make use of him to choose a name that may strike fear in enemies’ hearts? What’s more, the old man is seasoned. Surely, a simple task as thinking of a name is easy for him.

“Yes!” The voice that had been silent for a long time changed its tone. “Since there is a Star Chart on the back of your hand, why don’t we call it the Star Mark?”

“Star Mark... The mark of stars...” Yang Kai muttered before nodding, “Yes.

Star Mark sounds good!”

The old man zealously congratulated Yang Kai. “Congratulations in mastering the Star Mark, Young Hero! With such unparalleled talents and matchless vigour, there will come a day when everyone will only look up to your figure in awe!”

Yang Kai coldly snorted, “Humph!”

The Old Man shut up after realising that his flattery produced an undesirable effect.

“Have you thought of a means to save your life?” Yang Kai provoked.

The old man remembered how fragile his life is and petitioned, “Young Hero! If you spare me, I will certainly deliver you a sacred treasure!”

Yang Kai looked around the cave and spoke, “If you actually had a sacred treasure on you, its home would be this cave. All I have to do is to look around, meaning I don’t need you. So remind me, what is the point of keeping you alive with this information in hand? If you ask me, you living is against my personal interest. I’d rather build you up and absorb your strength.”

The old man wasted no time in begging once again for mercy, “Young Hero. Please have mercy! I will recognise you as my sole master for life! As long as you keep my Immortal Soul Brandmark on you, you can decide my death in an instant! Please! I beg of you! Show mercy, Young Hero!”

“Oh? Yang Kai’s opinion seemed to sway as he opened his mouth to answer, “How do I know if what you are saying is true?”

The Old Man made a forced smile. "I am currently trapped within your body and I have no idea how to escape. You can kill me with a snap of your fingers. Young Hero, how would I possibly dare to deceive you?"

Yang Kai didn't say anything. Although the thought of keeping such evil around was revolting to him, he thought it'd be a waste to kill him, given his vast knowledge and extended experience.

Only because Yang Kai wished to obtain as much knowledge as he could this Old Man has, he hesitantly spared him.

Yang Kai's silence only worsened the old man's anxiety. He nervously spoke, "Young Hero. If you spare my life, I will show you how to use the Sacred Treasure I kept here. However, if you kill me, you will not be able to use this Sacred Treasure..."

"Why?" Yang Kai asked.

"Because my Sacred Treasure is an evil weapon! It pulls the Immortal Souls of victims when it makes contact! Young Hero, your Yuan Qi's attribute is Yang. It is impossible for you to use it without me."

Yang Kai took a deep breath as he responded naught once again, and a frown slowly formed over his cheeks.

The Old Man knew that the decision Yang Kai makes now would determine his life and death. Naturally, he dared not interrupt. His chances of dying were already fairly high, and he did not want to escalate it any further.

Only after a long time did Yang Kai speak again. “How do I get recognized as your master? What do I need to do?”

Instantly, the old man’s heart sank and he spoke like he was shivering in the cold, “Young Master, please relax. This old servant will enter your mind and pass to you my Immortal Soul Brandmark.”

The corner of Yang Kai’s lips curled.

The old man then elaborated, “Young Master, please understand. Even if you were in the Immortal Ascension Boundary, you do not have the means to use your own Divine Senses. I plead that Young Master believes in this Old Servant’s sincere intentions.”

“Then, hurry!” Yang Kai demanded and relaxes himself.

The Old Man stuttered in shock. As Yang Kai’s decision made him express more admiration towards the boy. If it was others, they would fear to take upon themselves such a risky endeavour. Yang Kai, however, was able to catch the bull by its horns and tame it like it was a timid little dog.

In actuality, Yang Kai did not need to feel worried at all. The last time the old man invaded his mind, he was able to prevent it by absorbing his Immortal Soul into his golden bones. If Yang Kai feels such an attack begin to occur again, he could quickly force the old man to stop by building up the Immortal Soul.

Sure enough, the old man had no evil intention in fear of Yang Kai. He submerges into the boy’s mind with a wisp of his Divine Sense, carefully and

neutrally passing the boy his Immortal Soul Brandmark.

The old man then finally spoke, “Young Master, it’s done. From now on, this old servant’s life and death is all in your hands.”

Yang Kai opened his eyes and could feel a strong bond between himself and the Old Man. However, it was not a mutual relationship. Yang Kai had complete dominance over the old man.

“Do you need time to restore your Immortal Soul’s Spirit Essence?” Yang Kai asked in a gentle tone.

The Old Man replied. “After passing you my Immortal Soul Brandmark, I think I really do need to rest and replenish myself, but Young Master, you don’t have to be too worried. I will not make you lose anything. So, can you please take away your intention...?”

Yang Kai confidently grunted and spread out his intention.

TLN: (by simply thinking, he can bring pain to the person... ouch...)

In the next moment, a pitiful yell emerged. It was almost as though someone was being cooked in boiling oil.

“Young Master please forgive this Old Servant for his impudence! What I said was true!”

The Old Man kept begging for solace before Yang Kai let him off, “If you dare have any disloyal thoughts, I will torture you until you wished for death!”

“Old servant does not dare!” He sounded like he was shaking with fear. With what has happened, he has discovered that Yang Kai was a ruthless person.

TLN: (Damn! Took you long enough to realize!)

After being able to completely subdue the Old Man, Yang Kai breathed a sigh of relief.

“What would I call you?” Yang Kai asked.

The Old Man hesitated, “... You can call this Old Servant anything you wish. However, I do vaguely remember others calling me the Old Demon! But, I cannot say for certain if that was my given name or not...”

Yang Kai’s forehead pressed against his brows, “Old Demon? You seriously are a devil incarnate!”

The Old Demon smiled awkwardly, “That is a thing of the past... a thing from a very long time ago. From this point onwards, this Old Servant will obey no one but your commands.”

“What about the Sacred Treasure that you’ve said?”

“Young Master, please redirect your attention to the Old Servant’s bleached bones...”

Following the Old Demon’s guidance, Yang Kai went back to the spot littered with the dust of his bones to find a piece that looked like a rib. However, this

bone was entirely different from the other bones that crumbled like a cookie. This bone was jet black in colour! When Yang Kai listened closely to that very bone, he was shocked to detect a faint sound of shrieks and howls emanating from it!

“What strong Evil Qi!” Yang Kai commented.

The Old Demon explained, “This thing is called the Soul Breaker Awl. It was built up and chiselled into the Old Servant’s own bone. It has taken many lives before... so the Evil Qi is slightly overwhelming.”

“When you refined this, did you built up many Immortal Souls?” Yang Kai inquired further.

The Old Demon gave a hallowed laugh, “Young Master is wise. But because of that reason, it is not suitable for you to wield. If you were to build it up and exude your control over it, I fear that the weapons will greatly diminish in power. However, with the Old Servant’s Immortal Soul to act as a bridge for you, you do not have to worry. Unfortunately, this thing consumes much Yuan Qi and with my current strength, I will not be able to display its full might.”

The news did not perturb Yang Kai. He could tell that one day, he will be able to fully utilise this weapon with all its potential. Currently, its power was equal to that of an Earth Low Grade Attack Treasure.

“How do I use it?”

The Old Demon taught Yang Kai the methods of control and within another0 few days’ time, Yang Kai managed to learn how to use the Awl. Black Qi spawned

out from Yang Kai's fingertips, linking to the Soul Breaker Awl, causing it to encircle him. Yang Kai could also feel that he had a light relationship with this weapon, with the Old Demon's Immortal Soul acting as a middleman between the both.

With a few experiments, Yang Kai felt satisfied. Although it consumed a lot of Yuan Qi due the need for it to pass through the Old Demon as a proxy, Yang Kai still managed to receive an Attack Sacred Treasure.

The Old Demon mentioned, "Young Master, if you wish to build it up thoroughly, it will require a lot more time."

While saying his piece, the Old Demon felt extremely uneasy. He still fears annoying Yang Kai.

"I do not intend to fully build it up. It will be controlled by you."

"Many thanks, Young Master!" The Old Demon gratefully replied.

Yang Kai did not wish to waste time to build up the Soul Breaker Awl. After all, he could already use the Old Demon to control it. Why would he need to waste any more time to build it up? The Old Demon's life is his, anyway.

Strings of black gas oozed from Yang Kai's fingertips and moved towards the Soul Breaker Awl. It was none other than the Old Demon, placing his Immortal Soul within the Soul Breaker Awl.

Yang Kai then took a look around the place again and expressed some disappointment, "You only have this one Sacred Treasure?"

The boy knew that the Old Demon was a high level cultivator in his life before death. For such cultivators, there was almost no chance for them to have only one Sacred Treasure.

The Old Demon forced a smile, “Young Master, you know that this place previously had a war that changed everything. When I was involved in the fight, all my other items were completely destroyed. The only thing that I could salvage was this Soul Breaker Awl...”

Chapter 140, The Yin Yang Monster Ginseng

“War?” Yang Kai’s heart skipped a beat. “Tell me more.”

“Yes!”

The Old Demon narrated as Yang Kai listened, working the cogs in his brain to link together different chunks of information and history like a crossword puzzle.

Although the Old Demon could not recount much as all his memories were still fragmented, the data he did contribute into the pool of remembrance was proof enough of his involvement in the war. What’s even more interesting was the fact that it was a war dictating an army against just two people, a man and a woman! Although the couple died in battle, they still decimated the majority of ranks of the opposing cultivators.

“...Old Servant flees with a fatal wound from the battle. Unfortunately, I was unable to recuperate and I died here...” The Old Demon’s voice seemed to be both hesitant and terrified.

“Do you remember anything else?”

“There was a dragon and a phoenix! When they both combine and complement each other, their might surpasses all imagination. It was because of their attack, that the Old Servant fell...”

Yang Kai’s eyes lit up. He recalled that a few days ago, above the entrance of the Heaven’s Cave Inheritance, there was a dragon and phoenix encircling the sky.

The Old Demon silenced himself and seemed frightened.

“So, according to you, this place wasn’t made to contain your inheritance.”
Yang Kai wanted to reaffirm.

“Young Master, please calm down. Earlier on, I was thoughtlessly speaking. However, I truly possess an Inheritance. If the Young Master wishes, I will be glad to pass it to you.”

Yang Kai shook his head, “I have no interest in it.”

The Old Demon was disconcerted with Yang Kai’s reply. Although his status in life was still a blur to himself, he knew that he was at least a ludicrously high levelled cultivator. It was, in fact, normal to him for cultivators to wish to be taken under his wing, but in the eyes of Yang Kai, he was nothing.

[Yeah... it’s true that once a phoenix loses its fire, it turns into a chicken...] The Old Demon sobbed.

TLN: (I wanted to add useless and pathetic... but you already get the point. Pity the rapist for a moment or did you guys forget about his Martial Skill?)

The bead that accompanied the Old Demon’s now crumbled skeleton had also turned useless. It would disintegrate easier than the bones did should anything even graze its surface.

Having looked around the cave again, Yang Kai did not discover anything else. With a sigh, the boy decided to leave the place.

Since this place had been his home for some time, he could not assess what was happening within the Heaven's Cave Inheritance. How much treasure was left for him would now depend on luck.

Before arriving at the sealed stone gate, the Old Man had taught Yang Kai the technique to unseal it. As the gate was removed, a sudden ray of light, alternating between red and white, launched at him.

Yang Kai's demeanour changes as his instinct makes him launch his fist against the bolt. [Who is attacking me?!]

Instead of blindly following its given path, the bolt seemed to have some form of awareness and dodged the boy's futile attack. It quickly flew around his arc of attack in an attempt to close distance.

Immediately, Yang Kai retreated. He anxiously readied his other hand to grasp the flare.

Yang Kai, readier than ever, then manages to grab the unknown matter, but his face showed not victory but confusion.

The thing that flew towards him was not an attack. At this point in time, it was struggling to escape his palm like a worm.

When the boy first felt the thing on his hand, he had doubts. Bashfully, he opened his palm slightly to get a closer look. This thing turned out, oddly enough, to be a ginseng that had the shape of a human! The ginseng was strange to look at, with red and white each occupying half of it, like it was celebrating a

wedding and mourning at a funeral at the same time. When Yang Kai inspected the energy within it, he could sense two different types of energy. The red energy was burning hot while the white was cold. Both energies are of two different worlds, but they seemed to perfectly coexist within the ginseng. It seemed nothing short of magical.

It continued to wiggle and strain to escape Yang Kai's hand, but to no avail.

"Yin Yang Monster Ginseng!" the Old Demon screamed in shock.

"You recognise this thing?" Yang Kai asked.

"It is a wonderful treasure! This is a Mystery High-Grade Sacred Treasure!" The Old Demon shouted in enthusiasm for the first time, startling Yang Kai.

Before Yang Kai could inquire further, he heard footsteps ahead of him.

"There are some people here!" Yang Kai looked intensely in the direction of the footsteps and tightened his grip on the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng.

When Yang Kai pocketed the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng, it stopped struggling and grew docile.

As Yang Kai prepared for the worst, he could hear a familiar voice, "Elder sister, did it really run into this cave?"

TLN: (つゝ) the "plot continues!")

A female voice replied, "Em, it definitely snuck inside. If it hadn't I wouldn't

have bothered entering this place.”

The two voices hardly sounded different but one was gentler and charming, giving a person a sense of comfort.

Yang Kai’s squinted his eyes. He did not anticipate meeting those two here.

“Wow! There are many different types of herbs here!”

“Yeah... but let’s not harvest them first. We should look if there’s any danger inside.”

The sisters moved closer and closer to Yang Kai. He did not avoid them, but instead started walking forward to greet them.

“Who’s there?”

Yang Kai coughed, “we meet again...”

After hearing Yang Kai, the gentler voiced person took a step back in surprise. “Yang Kai?!”

“Lady Mei’er!” Yang Kai gave a slight bow and turned his attention to the other girl, “Lady Jiao’er, long time no see.”

The two girls were none other than Blood Battle Gang’s top beauties, Hu Jiao Er and Hu Mei Er!

Hu Jiao Er frowned at meeting Yang Kai. “Brat! To think that I would meet you here!”

The previous time, Yang Kai had felt up both sisters’ buttocks to compare their sizes, to which Hu Jiao Er took to heart.

TLN: (Girl, please! You know you liked it! (๖ ̎ ๖))

Hu Mei Er was more surprised than anything jumping to question, “Why are you here?”

“I actually found this place accidentally.” Yang Kai did not wish to inform them of the events that transpired.

During the chat, the two sisters walked closer to the boy, as Hu Jiao Er stared at Yang Kai indifferently, throwing out her chest and raising her hind legs.

TLN: (The hell you doing? What you trying to prove?)

The Old Demon quickly spoke to Yang Kai, “To think that in this world, there would be two girls who look so similar but aren’t twins! Young Master, if you cultivate the Fallen Red with these two, it’d be half the work for twice the results!”

TLN: (Come on Yang Kai! Even he knows what we want (๖ ̎ ๖))

“You! Shut up!” Yang Kai shut out the thought.

TLN: (Can you not cockblock us? We are trying to seriously help! But alright... I’ll listen to you...)

The Old Demon was put in his place, daring to utter nothing but a quiet sigh.

“Did you anything enter just moments ago?” Hu Mei Er opened her mouth to ask.

Having eavesdropped on their conversation, Yang Kai knew Hu Mei Er was referring to the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng. The boy did not try to conceal the fact and nodded, “Yeah I’ve seen it.”

“Where is it?” Hu Jiao Er hastily asked.

Yang Kai points to his chest as the two sisters widened their eyes in surprise. “Did you actually manage to collect it?” Hu Jiao Er probed.

“Yeah, although I’m not sure why. Once it was placed on my chest, it became incredibly docile.”

Hu Jiao Er’s chest puffed and puffed as she took deep breaths trying to calm herself down.

The two sisters had actually been pursuing that thing for days, scaling several mountains braving the wilderness to finally end up in this cave, just to have Yang Kai receive it without putting in a lick of effort!

How unlucky it was for the sisters! Hu Jiao Er nipped on her lips. She considered taking the Ginseng by force, but decided otherwise due to her sister’s presence. For some reason, her sister felt guilt towards Yang Kai, so she would interject should she start a fight.

“Make sure you keep it safe.” Hu Mei Er felt like a heavy weight was lifted off her chest.

“What’s so good about this brat?” Hu Jiao Er sized up Yang Kai and suddenly asked with disbelief. “You are already in Initial Element Stage 7?”

Hu Jiao Er’s face was riddled with shock. The last time they met, Yang Kai was still in the Tempered Body Boundary. How is it possible to break through to Initial Element Stage 7 within such a short span of time? Even if he had some fortuitous encounter here, isn’t this too huge a jump of cultivation level?

Hu Mei Er is only in Initial Element Stage 2!

“Compared to Lady Jiao Er, what is a mere Initial Element Stage 7?” Yang Kai was amazed by the magnanimity of the two girls. It was strange that they did not ask for the Ginseng from him.

Hu Jiao Er snorted to show her displeasure towards Yang Kai.

“Since there are so many different types of herbs here, don’t hesitate to collect them.” Yang Kai did not wish to owe them any favours. The value of the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng was definitely much higher than any herb found within the cave. It was only fair for them that Yang Kai to let them have all the herbs they want, since he had accidentally taken the Ginseng from them.

“Like I need you to tell me that!” Hu Jiao Er stared knife and daggers towards Yang Kai.

“Elder Sister!” Hu Mei Er knew her elder sister’s irritation towards Yang Kai and

shook her arm.

“Fine... I understand...” Hu Jiao Er helplessly replied as she surveyed the area. She reached the dead end of the cave entered shortly and decided to mention, “For the past few days, both of us have climbed countless mountains in chase of that thing. Right now, we must rest and recuperate. So you, help guard the place.”

“I understand.” Yang Kai nodded his head.

The two sisters then walked hand in hand, towards the end of the cave. While they were walking, Hu Mei Er looked back with a smile, trying to apologise for her sister’s behaviour.

When they arrived saw the Old Demon’s bleached bones, their face was filled with surprise. Simultaneously, the two sisters looked towards their left. They looked at each other and winked.

Yang Kai noticed the wink and was puzzled as what they had discovered. He could not see what they saw.

“What are you two looking at?” Yang Kai could not help but ask. He wondered what had caught their attention.

The two girls did not respond as their minds were immersed in something.

Yang Kai’s felt frustrated by the lack of knowledge.

After half a day, the two sisters sat down cross-legged and began their meditation. They closed their eyes and began meditating.

When Yang Kai looked, he thought that he was starting to see things. He saw one person, then two people.

The boy shook his head in surprise, rubbing his eyes and clearing his vision. Meanwhile, the Old Demon gave his observation, "Perhaps, this is their opportunity..."

"Will they succeed?"

"It depends on them... I cannot tell..."

"That isn't the inheritance you left behind, is it?" Yang Kai held his breath.

"Of course not."

The whole situation was strange, but since they have discovered something, Yang Kai could not leave them alone while they meditated. Since they were somewhat considered friends of his, he could only stand by the entrance and calmly wait for them to finish.

Chapter 141, The Hu Sisters' Great Opportunity

After guarding the two sisters for three days, the cave end where they sat suddenly had an eruption of bright lights. Two golden lights on top of the sisters' heads vanished from sight. Meanwhile, the Yuan Qi from their body started to revolve in unison, causing the cave walls to hum.

Yang Kai looked at the two. Their Yuan Qi seemed as one. A line of light connected between Hu Jiao Er and Hu Mei Er. Gradually, their Yuan Qi balanced out.

Over time, the Yuan Qi subsided, returning the cave back to its tranquil state.

The two sisters simultaneously took deep breaths and opened their eyes at the same time. Their two pupils looked towards each other, unable to hide their surprise.

“Congratulations.” Yang Kai spoke out. He had defended the two girls for three days now and still could not figure out how they obtained the inheritance left here. The only thing he knew was that this inheritance did not belong to Old Demon.

According to the Old Demon, the war had caused countless high cultivation levelled experts to fall. Hence, the Heaven's Cave Inheritance should have more than one type of inheritance. It was The Hu sisters' luck that they were able to obtain one of them.

After hearing Yang Kai's voice, the two girls turned their heads at the same time to look at him and said with almost exactly the same voice, “Thanks!”

After both of them spoke, they each looked at each other and pursed their lips into a smile.

Yang Kai seemed confused as he looked at the two beauties before him. He couldn't tell which sister was which. It was as though the two turned into duplicates, without a single sliver of difference.

"Can you guess who I am?" the woman on the left spoke with a smile as her eyes twinkled with complacency and cunningness.

Yang Kai chuckled, "Lady Jiao Er."

The woman's playful smile fell apart almost instantly. "Did you blindly guess?"

"Lady Mei Er would never ask me this sort of question." Yang Kai replied.

Hu Jiao Er pouted, "It seems as though you understand my little sister very well."

On hearing what he said, Hu Mei Er's cheeks flushed with red as she avoided eye contact with Yang Kai.

Hu Jiao Er's smile reappeared and she resumed to speak, "I really have to thank you for allowing us this opportunity."

Yang Kai had defended the sisters for the entire time their minds were completely indisposed. If Yang Kai wished to do anything to them, he would have

been able to get away with it. Instead, Yang Kai had dutifully stood guard for three whole days, making sure not to disturb them. His actions only made Hu Jiao Er admire rather than spite him.

TLN: (greedy boy, aiming for two instead of one aren't you...)

Hu Jiao Er thought that maybe Yang Kai isn't as bad as she thought.

“Don't worry about it. We should leave.” Yang Kai had been wanting to exit since three days ago, but was delayed by the two sisters. Protecting them only made him more impatient to leave.

The two sisters simultaneously nodded and stood up.

As the three ambled slowly to the exit, the sisters would pick as many herbs as they could. Yang Kai kept to his word and did not take a single one. Having the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng was more than sufficient for him.

During the three days, Yang Kai had inquired about the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng. He found out that the Ginseng was extremely helpful for his cultivation. Due to its speciality in containing both Yin and Yang Qi, the Ginseng could actually be used for Alchemy. However, it was most efficient to use it to promote one's cultivation. Unfortunately, Yang Kai would need to find a female cultivator who cultivates Yin and marry her to share and fully utilise the Ginseng's drug efficacy.

TLN: (Oh, the future chapters looks bright! ☀️.☀️)

When Yang Kai is in love and cultivates with this female, the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng would separate its two energies and enter their bodies. As their hearts become one, they would both simultaneously rise in cultivation together.

The unfortunate part is having to search for such a girl to cultivate with.

TLN: (Bullshit!)

The only reason why the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng is labelled as a Mystery Rank is the difficulty in finding an opportunity to cultivate with another partner who fits the requirements. If the two cultivators manage to meet these conditions, the real value of this herb cannot even be calculated.

Since the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng contains Yin and Yang energy, it was naturally attracted to sources of said energy. As such, it was attracted to Yang Kai, who practices the True Yang Secret Art.

In those three days, Yang Kai had fed 1 drop of his Yang Liquid to the Ginseng. Tasting the Yang Drop gave the Ginseng a look of enjoyment. It was then attracted to him more than ever, like a magnet to steel.

TLN: (My god! This Ginseng is more lovable than my dog that ran away~ No, I did not abuse him. I gave him too much freedom!)

After picking the herbs, the Hu sisters discussed a little and presented half of their harvest to Yang Kai.

Yang Kai immediately rejected, "I took your stuff. It is only fair that you take all of this in reparation."

Hu Jiao Er smiled at him. "Silly boy. Knock it off. Who said it was yours?"

Yang Kai smiled back. "Can you two ladies tell me how it is like outside?"

Yang Kai had been stuck here for quite some time knew nothing of the situation outside. Out of curiosity and precaution, he had to ask.

“Do not call me lady. You sound so strange.” Hu Jiao Er knitted her brows, “We both have names. Call us Jiao Er and Mei Er. If you feel a little sorry for your actions, you can address me as sister Jiao Er.”

Yang Kai nods, “I think calling you by your name will be better.”

Hu Jiao Er puffed a little in fickle anger in her eyes and changed the topic, “Let’s start moving. We can chat while we walk.”

The three conversed while they strolled, giving Yang Kai an idea of the atmosphere outside.

Although all three disciples began in different positions, in the time that has passed, they have managed to travel to the centre.

TLN: (I can’t imagine what this place looks like on the map...)

Some people have obtained benefits, but many others have died.

The three school disciples all united their strengths under the top disciples to fight a few powerful Monster Beasts around. There were 9 Monster Beasts in total and each has achieved the cultivation level of 6th step/realm. It was fortunate that these Monster Beasts had only just awoken from their slumber and were weakened. Otherwise, the price to take them down would have been much higher, leading to more deaths.

The Yin Yang Monster Ginseng was actually one of the treasures that the Monster Beasts protected. It was capable of sensing trouble and escaped, only to be pursued by the Hu sisters and finally settling its home in Yang Kai.

TLN: (Seriously, ♥ this Ginseng)

“Before we left, we managed to kill 8 of the 9 Monster Beasts. The last one is the strongest. It is probably in 6th step/realm peak. Temporarily, nobody has dared to engage it.” Hu Jiao Er smiled. “Just for the treasures that were protected by these Monster Beast, many disciples have gone practically insane.”

Hu Mei Er fiercely nodded in agreement, “Yes. I never knew of such people, who were able to steal things so easily...”

The three continued to chat as they slowly paced out of the cave.

When they exited, a ferocious roar could be heard from far, causing a small, insignificant quake. The three were stolen from their conversation and seriousness overtook their faces.

“Which brave idiot provoked it?” Hu Jiao Er sighed.

According to her, this Monster Beast was in the 6th step/realm peak. That is equivalent to an Immortal Ascension Boundary Peak cultivator! Even if it had been sealed for thousands of years, it was a far cry from what the school disciples could handle.

When the three school disciples united to eliminate the other 8 Monster Beasts, it cost them heavy numbers. Now, provoking such a powerhouse was

going to be a much bigger massacre!

“I’m going to take a look!” Yang Kai’s vision quickly moves to the direction of the roar and ran with his quickest speed.

Hu Jiao Er and Hu Mei Er were a little slower to react but they launched forward right behind Yang Kai.

The two sisters were unable to keep up with Yang Kai!

When Yang Kai turned around to check on the two sisters, he was surprised. He discovered that both of them were breathing in at the same time. Moreover, Hu Mei Er had no problems keeping up with Hu Jiao Er, who had problems running though she had asthma.

Yang Kai questioned, [Just what kind of inheritance did they obtain to cause such an effect?]

Yang Kai stared at the woman on the left for a long amount of time, turning her red, “What are you staring at me for?”

“Are you Jiao Er or Mei Er?” Yang Kai asked as he could not distinguish between the two sisters at all.

TLN: (Seriously! Only Jiao Er would speak like that!)

The beauty chuckled, “I’m Mei Er.”

The other beauty quickly interrupted, “No, I am Mei Er. Elder sister, please do

not lie right now. We don't need anymore trouble."

"Who are you calling elder sister? You are the elder sister!" the woman on the left anxiously asked.

"Please elder sister, he cannot recognise us."

"I'm not the one misleading anyone, elder sister!"

TLN: (LOL, tell me if you guys can tell who is who)

Yang Kai felt dizzy from the confusion.

The two sisters look at Yang Kai and laughed together, which made him realise that he was being taken for a fool.

"We were just joking. You aren't angry right?" Yang Kai could not tell which sister was speaking.

Yang Kai shook his head, "I'm not."

"Then why the long face? Give us a smile."

TLN: (come on! This must so be Jiao Er! Only she would be such a troll!)

Yang Kai coughed and looked away, ignoring the two sisters.

After a few kilometres of running, the three had finally arrived close to the source of the roar. They looked at the Monster Beast and were dumbfounded,

freezing on the spot as if a blizzard swept through them.

At a viewable proximity, it was a Giant Tortoise Monster Beast, about a hundred meters in length. Its body was comparable to that of a hill. As it walked, each step was nothing less than a stomped and caused the ground to shiver. Its carapace had deep outlines, highlighting its thick, impenetrable figure. Its tail was long and widened towards the tip, looking like a gigantic hammer. Although it was not very fast, each step it took covered a lot of ground. With its sheer size and incomparable power, a swing of its tail was enough to produce a strong gale of wind.

Whoosh! The sound of movement was constant as more than a hundred disciples were in mid-air, attacking the Monster Beast, but even with the endless barrage, it remained indomitable. With its unrestrainable power, each attack and roar made the disciples terror-stricken.

Chapter 142, Su Yan's Wrath

When Yang Kai looked up into the sky, he recognised many of the disciples.

Su Yan, Xie Hongchen, Lan Chudie and many other familiar faces were all grouped together, flying up in the sky. These people were all High Heaven Pavilion disciples!

Meanwhile, Blood Battle Gang and Storm House disciples were all watching the battle unfold by the side, eyes filled with pleasure.

Although Su Yan was the strongest in High Heaven Pavilion, she was unable to afflict any damage on the Monster Beast. As each movement she made was followed by wind and snow, she could only slow down the Monster Beast with her Cold Yin Yuan Qi, so as to prevent more casualties in the High Heaven Pavilion.

Unfortunately, the defence of this Monster Beast was too strong. Covered by an almost impenetrable hard tortoise shell and thick, resistant skin, it was similar to a walking Defensive Sacred Treasure. Although it was sluggish, anyone under Immortal Ascension had no chance against it.

On the field, there were numerous corpses. It could easily be deduced that they were High Heaven Pavilion disciples.

“To think that the High Heaven Pavilion would actually dare to provoke it.” Hu Jiao Er’s brows wrinkled. “However, it can’t be Su Yan who did it. She is not that stupid.”

Meanwhile, a youth was running towards the two girls, his eyes filled with affection. However, his brows immediately wrinkled once he spotted Yang Kai mixed with them.

“Jiao Er?” the youth came to a halt as he looked for Jiao Er amongst the party of three.

“Long Jun. What happened here?” the real Jiao Er opened her mouth to ask.

Long Jun did not hide his glee in watching other’s misfortune. “That idiot actually dared to gather a group of people to steal the treasure that Monster Beast was guarding while it was still asleep. They did not seem to care or think that they would come back with many dead.”

Yang Kai immediately asked, “What did Xie Hong Chen obtain?”

If that Xie Hong Chen did not obtain anything, why would that Monster Beast bother chasing him down?

Long Jun looked towards Yang Kai and couldn’t bear but to speak to assert his authority, “And who are you?”

TLN: (My god. Why are all the villains such asshats? Seriously! Now I just can’t wait till his ‘Long’ gets burnt off...)

Hu Jiao Er immediately rolled her eyes. “Just answer him. I would like to know too.”

Long Jun restrained himself. “I am not exactly sure what he took. According to

the man himself, he does not have anything on him.”

TLN: (I swear. Another one of these guys who does not have a backbone of his own. Only looks forward to bullying the weak. Trash.)

Hu Jiao Er responded in disbelief, “It is impossible that he did not steal anything! It only looks to draw his blood, how is it possible that he does not possess anything the Monster Beast seeks?”

Long Jun bowed slightly. “I agree. However, since Xie Hong Chen refuses to hand it over, High Heaven Pavilion can only face the Monster Beast’s anger. It is only because Su Yan intervened and is slowing down the Monster Beast right now, otherwise I estimate that many of them would be dead by now.”

Mei Er snorted, showing her despise for Xie Hong Chen. “To think that he would be able to hide behind a woman and use her as a shelter. Despicable!”

“I concur wholeheartedly.” Long Jun nods continuously. “Storm House’s Fang Zi Ji and I actually wish to help High Heaven Pavilion, but we cannot support Xie Hong Chen knowing his deeds.”

TLN: (Bitch please! Who are the ones giggling away while they are fighting?)

In reality, the two sects do not wish to be involved in the fight. Even Su Yan could do nothing but slow the Monster Beast down. The others would contribute very little if they jumped in the fray.

Not to mention, why should they aid Xie Hong Cheng to protect what he had obtained? It was he who provoked the Monster Beast, so this is his responsibility.

They can surely help when all's said and done, but only on the condition that Xie Hong Chen delivers to them what he obtained!

Another reason as to why the two sects have not made any moves was to make sure that High Heaven Pavilion was in a direr situation. Once they are desperate, giving up what Xie Hong Chen is hoarding would be such a small price to pay to save what little they have left.

Yang Kai's gaze was fixed onto Su Yan. She was pale and looked exhausted as she had consumed a lot of her Yuan Qi, but with several High Heaven Pavilion disciples fighting alongside her, how could she possibly retreat and abandon them? It would only mean the doubtless deaths of dozens of High Heaven Pavilion disciples.

The only reason that some of them are still alive is because of her slow.

Ice seemed to conjure out of thin air as Su Yan danced around gracefully like a butterfly. In a flash, flowers made of ice shot towards the Monster Beast and grew on its flesh. Those attacks lowered the surrounding temperature, causing a layer of ice to form on the Monster Beast, further slowing it down.

Meanwhile, countless fireball attacks were pelting the giant tortoise's shell, but to no avail.

"Xie Hong Chen! I ask you one last time! What did you take?" Su Yan's beautiful eyes stared at the tortoise, unwilling to let her concentration wander.

Hearing her ice-cold words made Xie Hong Chen tremble in fright. He had enraged Su Yan.

TLN: (No way! I won't have believed it to be possible!)

Su Yan never loses her temper, but this time was vastly different. In front of her were numerous High Heaven Pavilion disciples, killed for absolutely nothing. As the most senior apprentice of the sect, how could she remain uncaring?

TLN: (Senior sister seemed wrong to fit here... she may actually not be the oldest....)

Xie Hong Chen hesitated. His face was filled with fear and panic. He quickly snapped out of it and said, "Su Yan. Why do you also suspect me? If I did take anything, how is it possible for me to keep it from you?"

Su Yan burned with hatred and loathing. With her sharp voice, she yelled, "High Heaven Pavilion Disciples fall back!"

There was no point sieging the tortoise. They could only escape. None of them could tell if the Monster Beast would pursue them, but their of surviving would drastically increase by retreating.

With Su Yan's command, many High Heaven Pavilion Disciples scattered for their lives, fleeing from the Monster Beast.

The bolts and attacks that shot around the sky started to fade along with the number of people. A few remained to hold the tortoise off.

Su Yan aggressively repeated herself, "Go! Now!"

As she yelled, the layer of ice that covered the Monster Beast exploded. With

the shackle now taken off, the Monster Beast restored its agility once more, regardless of how little it may be.

Its giant tail swept across the sky towards the High Heaven Pavilion Disciples who persisted in battle. A few were hit square in the body, resulting in bursts of viscera and red. The lucky ones the tail missed were swept with the wind current it caused, causing them to lose their balance and fall.

The Tortoise gave out a ferocious roar, as its eyes turned to Su Yan and charged forward.

Su Yan did not falter and kept slowing it down. Naturally, it would be irritated by her and prioritised killing her first.

Su Yan moved both of her hands and drew peculiar hand signs, chilling everything that surrounded her. It was as if the entire world entered an ice age. An icy blue hue replaced the heat as the ground was laminated with frost and snow started falling from the clouds.

Everyone was now watching Su Yan. At this moment, her pale cheek turned ruddy again, as she now looked like a floating fairy maiden. It was as though she was a being that descended from the heavens, untouchable and unattainable by the mortal world.

The Tortoise gave another loud, intimidating roar and dashed forward. The distance between the two rapidly closed up but Su Yan remained unfettered.

The coldness that spread the landscape was now gathering on Su Yan, as a huge pure form appeared behind her. The form was like a much bigger version of

Su Yan; in fact, several times larger than her.

This almost ethereal form wore white, which highlighted its exquisite and graceful body. It was womanly, seemingly capable of causing the downfalls of nations. Each of its features was enlarged by the same ratio, without the slightest defect. It was so beautiful that it could suck the souls out of people.

The huge frozen body shot its eyes open, encasing the area in frost once again. This time, it was much colder. Those who watched could feel their body freeze up as shivers took control of their senses.

With a wave of her hand, Su Yan made the menacing frozen form fly forward towards the Monster Beast. When the two beings collided, the frozen body entered the Monster Beast. Almost immediately, another layer of ice started to form on the Monster Beast's skin. This time, it was much thicker. Its limbs quickly froze as it slowly came to a stop.

Blood started to appear around Su Yan's lips. She had consumed a precariously excessive amount of Yuan Qi. Her slender body started to sway in midair as she tried to resist falling, but her efforts to stay were in vain.

Although the Monster Beast could no longer move, its inertia caused it to continue moving towards Su Yan. Its sheer size made it impossible to stop their collision.

Su Yan watched the helpless Monster Beast approach her. As she fell, her initial emotions faded. She could only feel a lingering regret.

Suddenly, people started to scream.

The cultivators who observed the magical altercation had only just reawoken from being stunned by awe in seeing a goddess, but Su Yan was now going to fall to her death and perish.

While the cultivators screamed, a small figure was darting towards to Su Yan. As the person ran, a small trail of fire emerged in his footsteps

The figure burst into a ball of flame as he turned into a red flash of light with his ever more increasing speed.

The youth ran directly under Su Yan, to where she would land. He jumped up, and with his two arms, caught the falling goddess. When the youth landed back on the ground, he bent his back and his knees to make it as soft a landing as possible. With haste he brought the goddess to safety, leaving the Monster Beast behind him.

Chapter 143 – Is it Certain Death?

In that moment, time didn't seem to move.

Several hundred people were still vacant and shocked. There were still screams echoing in the battle's wake.

For now, a shadowy figure engulfed in red can be seen dashing at high speed. The figure left a trail so obvious that his start point and path of travel could be deduced, from where he stood to where Su Yan was falling.

The huge Monster Beast was still sliding fast from inertia. A few feet from it, a man and a woman could be seen in each other's arms, as though they planned to stay together through life and death.

In that instant, Kai Yang and Su Yan's eyes met.

Su Yan looked with terror, but in eyes of Yang Kai there was sadness, as if he took pity on her.

That kind of look gave Su Yan an undescrivable, unfamiliar feeling. No one has ever looked at her like that. It was always an elder who looked with respect, her colleagues and friends with admiration, her juniors and disciple with respect and worship and perhaps, a few others who stared with envy.

But this pitying and sad look, it was actually the first ever for Su Yan.

She is so beautiful and talented that no one has ever found the need to look at her the way Yang Kai does right now.

Why is he taking pity on me? Why does he look so sad? Those eyes were like a needle, piercing Su Yan's heart and mind, still feeble from the aftermath of her move. She felt unbearable pain.

And yet, she could feel why he would look that way.

Her focused changed, and she noticed how warm and comfortable she felt. The body of the one who held her is very warm. It has been a very long time since she last felt like this. She cultivated Ice Heart Secret Art which froze her heart and mind to all emotions. In her world, everything is frozen. There was nothing else there but the cold for any of the damned who would find himself there.

Warmth and cold are opposite elements, they repel each other. She should loathe this feeling but why does she feel the most comfortable in a long time? She wanted to forget everything in the warmth. She laid in his arms and thought that even if seas were to dry and mountains were to crumble, or even if the sky fell, she would never want to leave the mysterious person's embrace.

Su Yan couldn't help but hug him tightly again.

As people came back to reality, time moved once again.

"Its Yang Kai!" Hu Jiao Er called out snappily. She didn't notice that it was Yang Kai who moved to catch Su Yan. She was too shocked by the method she used. When she came out of her trance, Yang Kai was no longer by her side.

Hu Mei Er covered her mouth in shock. With shivering eyes as she looked upon the turtle Monster Beast, she could not see straight from fright.

“He is seeking death!” Long Jun commented loudly.

Yang Kai’s back was hit by the frozen turtle Monster Beast. Yang Kai tried to dodge as he was far from being able to follow up with Su Yan and continue attacking the beast, but he could not evade it even if he wanted to. His strength was still not up to par.

When the turtle Monster Beast and Yang Kai were about to collide with each other, Yang Kai bent his back like a bow and took advantage of this opportunity to face forward to draw support to reduce as much damage as he could like a cushion.

Inevitably, Yang Kai and Su Yan crashed with the turtle’s chest and were sent flying dozens of feet. As they rolled from the impact of the landing, they still held each other tumbling and bumping until they came to a stop.

Yang Kai was in a bad position. His face was pale white, but Su Yan, who remained in his arms was unharmed. Only her clothes and hair were dishevelled.

Yang Kai lost all of his strength and spat blood onto Su Yan’s chest.

Su Yan’s eyes quivered. There were mighty waves filling her inner emotions and this movement was something she could not calm. She slowly and gently placed her left hand on Yang Kai’s forehead, to stroke and to comfort him as they both laid motionless.

Yang Kai protected her with his own body when they tumbled. Almost all of the impact was absorbed by him. She remained unscathed and untouched.

The frozen Monster Beast slid along the ground, making a screech like scratching glass with a sharp object, leaving a deep mark. It then gradually came to a stop, not too far from Yang Kai and Su Yan.

The world became deadly quiet. Everyone muttered nothing. They looked at where Yang Kai and Su Yan were, witnessing a tired and hurt couple embracing.

If it was somewhere else it would have caused public criticism and jealousy.

Who dares to be intimate with Su Yan? Every inch of her flesh is sacred and noble. A common person can only look but never touch.

But right now, not only is a man hugging her, he is also burying his head in her chest, smelling and touching her soft and fragrant body.

Even with all of that going on, nobody thought of it as improper. Could you be angry at a dead person?

Is there any use in being mad at the deceased? He sacrificed his life to protect Su Yan. He could have enjoyed paradise instead of dying.

Everyone had little doubt that Yang Kai had died under the direct impact of such force.

Only Xie Hongchen's eyes turned after seeing this.

The last time he saw Yang Kai holding hands with Su Yan he almost went mad

with jealousy. That is a scene that he cannot forget, like a nightmare. Remembering it is akin to a hot knife cutting through his skin. But now, this person has crossed the line in making a move on her in front of so many people. How could he be expected to endure this?

The sight of them made his emotional floodgate open and reveal all his resentfulness and anger as he huffed like an angry bull, losing all sense of reason. He glared lividly at Yang Kai, full of murderous intent from the bottom of his heart.

Su Yan who is lied under Yang Kai, both a thousand feet away from Xie Hongchen, lifts her eyes slowly and looks at him with an ice-cold look.

Xie Hongchen twitched at her stare and pulled himself together. He turned his gaze to the floor as he was filled with chagrin and remorse.

If he had been bold instead and rescued Su Yan, he would have been the one enjoying all of this, wouldn't he? He was much stronger than Yang Kai, meaning he would have likely avoided death should the turtle Monster Beast collide with him.

If all he had to do was to get severely injured to receive Su Yan's favour, he would have looked like a winner as Yang Kai does right now.

So, why? Why is it that at that moment he was unable to react? Why was he so immersed in Su Yan's illusionary shadow, neglecting her crises? Why was Yang Kai not immersed himself?

He missed such a great but unexpected opportunity... He missed it!

A strong wind blew and the world stayed silent.

Su Yan's beautiful hair swayed in the win. Yang Kai's clothes fluttered, too.

None dared to go forward. Everyone stood in their places like statues.

Su Yan looked up towards the chaotic sky. A gentle sound came from her mouth, a singing that could not be heard by anyone but Yang Kai.

The singing voice had a trace of longing for a person she yearned for. Her hands continued to pat Yang Kai's head like a loving mother, like she was fulfilling her duty to coax her child to sleep in peace.

Nearby, the giant turtle Monster Beast raised a forelimb, a ferocious expression frozen and framed in ice as if he was getting ready to turn Yang Kai and Su Yan into little more than a bloody pulp.

The song was like a picturesque story of a tragedy suffered by a beautiful but bleak woman.

As the song ended, Su Yan stopped and exhaled. The wind blows apart Yang Kai's fringe as Su Yan says in a soft voice, "Let's get up."

"What song is that?" Yang Kai asked in a soft and a weak voice still staying motionless in the same spot.

Su Yan remained silent for a long time, then slowly replied, "I don't know, it is a song from my memories."

"It's a good song." Yang Kai sat up slowly. The corner of his mouth was still

dripping with blood, face still pale and body still shivering as he supports himself with a little strength.

Su Yan looked at him lightly as a variety emotions which welled up in her settled down and vanished, leaving behind only coldness.

Yang Kai sighed. He knows that Elder Sister forcefully suppresses emotions in her heart, making her tranquil like a frozen lake.

He puts out a hand to ask for her support. Su Yan helps Yang Kai with her strength and both of them got on their feet.

Su Yan was covered in dust, her hair ruffled. But she still gave out a sacred aura and hasn't lost her imposing manner.

"How is this possible?" People called out in alarm. Everyone looked at the pale young boy with disbelief.

The person who they thought had just died, is now standing like it was nothing, though he was clearly injured. Though he seemed frail and miserable, his life was no longer in danger.

Is his body made of iron or something similar? He bore that enormous hit and still lived. How is that possible? On the side of the Bloody Battle Gang, Long Jun's jaw was wide open. The shock robbed his speech away from him.

Even Hu Jiao Er and Hu Mei Er could not calm down; they were taking deep heavy breaths. Hu Mei Er was hanging a wide, light smile like a heavy load was been lifted off her chest. The corner of her eyes glittered with her tears while she

muttered to herself quietly, "Good, good." In saying this, she covered her mouth and sobbed.

Hu Jiao Er who was also staring at the pair hurriedly lifted her hand to her own tears.

What is going on with her? Hu Jiao Er was startled. Yang Kai was no longer repugnant to him, but for a moment there was a sharp pain in her heart. But Hu Jiao Er also knows that no attention would be paid to her in the climax of such a moment.

It is possible for her to weep for a person who she doesn't even know well? Besides, though she no longer hated him, she still did not harbour positive feelings about him.

Looking at her own younger sister, the sisters felt relief in their mind after such great tension. This relief from anxiety and weight was filled with ecstasy, and it came from the bottom of Hu Jiao Er's heart.

Hu Jiao Er's eyes were traced with respite and confusion.

Storm House's Fang Ziji's eyes gleamed with comfort and said slowly, "Elder sister Du, he is alive!"

Du Yishuang felt a rush of excitement as her cheeks flushed beet red. Patting her chest, she says, "He frightened me a moment ago. It would have been a great pity should he have died. He is a good person."

On the High Heaven Pavilion side, Xie Hongchen looked defeated and lifeless.

If only he had seized that opportunity. Now that Yang Kai had basically become a loved one to Su Yan, he became green with envy to the point of dread. He had never suffered such a painful and costly defeat. He couldn't think properly.

Prestige of the Star Mark

Lan Chudie's eyes shone at Yang Kai's face as if she was lost in a dream.

When she fought with the Tortoise Monster Beast some time ago she received some wounds. Her clean clothes were stained with her own blood. She was breathing heavily and shortly, almost like she was hyperventilating. Looking at the man and woman standing under the foreboding shadow of the Tortoise Monster Beast, she felt a surge of emotion.

The man who rescued Su Yan did so in disregard of his starlight life, leaving a deep impression in the hearts of all women present. Lan Chudie was no exception.

If a man is willing to pay for a woman's life with his own, even if he's weaker than her, then why can't she be with him? Women's requests are sometimes tall, and sometimes small, and sometimes a few words or a little action can open up their heart and leave a beautiful image of him behind.

Now that the woman who is standing under that Monster Beast has found her ideal man, won't she be happy?

But on remembering that incident, Lan Chudie felt dejected. She forced herself to smile.

"Do you still have strength to fight?" Yang Kai asked Su Yan, pointing towards the Monster Beast.

"I do not have any strength left." Su Yan shook her head slowly. "We need to hurry; this monster is too strong. I can only freeze it for half a minute. If we don't leave now, we will never even dream of escaping alive."

"Even if we were to leave, where will we go?" Yang Kai chuckled. "It was pursuing Xie Hongchen, but now it will pursue you without a doubt. We can only escape if you alone leave.

"In that case, I will leave. I can't allow High Heaven Pavilion to suffer any more for me than it already has."

"What can you do?" Yang Kai said ominously. "Senior Sister, you think too

highly of yourself.”

Su Yan looked at Yang Kai with surprise.

[Is he reproving me? He actually dares to reprove me?] Even the elders in the sect have never done so, but Su Yan was not angry as she did not disagree with him.

“Take a look at the High Heaven Pavilion disciples.” Yang Kai said, directing at the disciples; some breathing heavily in the atmosphere, others sitting cross-legged on the ground, all seizing the valued time-out to recover and regenerate. “Even if you were to leave, can you guarantee that this Monster Beast will not kill them? Without you, they will only die a quick death!”

“Then what do you think we should do?” Su Yan questioned.

“It’s simple. We just need to kill it.” Yang Kai cracked into a smile as his forehead emitted droplets of cold sweat.

“Kill it?” Su Yan was startled by Yang Kai’s brazen and voracious appetite for feats that few others would try. To be able to flee with their lives from the face of this Monster Beast is a bargain few would contest, but to kill it?

As Yang Kai and Su Yan spoke, a flicking movement could realise from the Monster Beast from under the thick layer of ice. “How has it already passed?”

“Looks like we don’t have time for more discussion!” Yang Kai said to Su Yan while waving his hand. “You need to draw back now! We will try and kill it, but if we fail we will hopefully still have time to run.”

The sound of ice disintegrating and cracking grew louder and louder. the still frozen Tortoise Monster Beast slowly rotated his body and turned its scarlet eyes toward Su Yan and Yang Kai. To it, the two were as small and insignificant as ants.

“Retreat!” Yang Kai roared at Su Yan, who showed no signs of movement from her spot.

Su Yan’s body jerked and she quickly moved a distance away from the Monster Beast. The remaining injured disciples of High Heaven Pavilion did the same.

Yang Kai kept his foot stationary in front of the Tortoise Monster Beast. The

thin figure of Yang Kai standing in the shadow of the giant made it look nothing short of mighty.

Yang Kai stood looking like a confident wall blocking the Monster Beast. He was like a shield that could shelter the onlookers from wind and rain.

He started raising his hand up slowly. Those who watched did not see anything unusual, but they could feel the power of one thousand, ten thousand hands emerging and combining to contain the force of a five thousand kilogramme sledgehammer.

Crack. The sound of a bone dislocating could be heard.

Starlight began to sparkle and a frightening momentum erupted from Yang Kai. His clothes flapped and his hair danced as a strong wind began to orbit around him.

“Everyone!” Yang Kai screamed with his inexhaustible strength, detonating from his body.

Finally, his right hand came to a stop and with a roaring sound, he turned his palm into a fist.

Yang Kai’s place brightened up as if it has become a beautiful starry night sky. His right fist was also covered in the dazzling light. Slowly, his hand began to move inch by inch, back from its position and ballooned with strength with each passing moment.

“If you are willing...” Yang Kai muttered unhurriedly as his eyes became red. He controlled the energy contained in his fist with all his might.

“What kind of Martial Skill is this!?” Fang Ziji’s face changed greatly. Even though they were thousands of feet from Yang Kai, they could still easily feel its fearsome vigour, all concentrated in his one, solitary, minute fist.

What’s more, the fist was still poised in building strength. It did not show any signs of stopping. It was already scary, what would happen once it discharges?

What kind of terror would it cause?

“So beautiful...” Hu Mei Er and Hu Jiao Er uttered in unison. There were stars littered and twinkling everywhere like a night sky. The people watching the scene felt engrossed in its beauty, almost forgetting the imminent danger they may face.

The earth underneath Yang Kai’s foot began to quake, unable to withstand such colossal strength. Cracks in the dirt formed around him and slowly, his body began to sink in the ground and his legs started to bend.

As the Monster Beast continued to thaw rapidly from his icy prison, his scarlet eyes no longer saw resentment and hatred, but instead filled with panic and fear with an overwhelming urge to flee. It just wanted to run. It feared Yang Kai’s fist more than anything else. The tortoise was sealed for many years. It was weak. It was not easy for it to regain its consciousness, but it cannot even enjoy its short amount of time out from its slumber. It did not want to be hurt and fall into boundless, deep sleep again.

But the ice that bounded it hindered its movement.

“Then give me a hand...” Yang Kai opened his mouth a third time. He was only able to say a few words at a time and needed to concentrate on accumulating energy. Those few short sentences made people know of its meaning and the concentration required to control his accumulated power.

With those words, Yang Kai jumped into the air with an accelerated speed, bringing the starry sky with him.

The Starlight sparkled with boundless radiance and power to overcome everything.

Within a few seconds Yang Kai was a hundred feet high in the air and as he came to hover, he immediately moved towards the direction of the Monster Beast’s head.

Suddenly, the layer of ice cracked apart and a loud roar pierced the eardrums of everyone around. “Roooooaaaaarrrrr....” Although ear deafening, its roar did not contain the subjugating power it once had. It was now filled with dread; a roar of panic.

“Help me!” Yang Kai roared. Even with his voice was going against the roar of the Tortoise Monster Beast, it was no weaker. With utmost clarity, his voice managed to reach everyone’s ears.

His fist was quickly wrapped in a thick coat of star light. As the starlight gyrated around his hand, it was fluctuating in speed. For a second, it was fast and bright, in another, it was slow and dull. This was an erratic light show presented to everyone present.

Bang! Yang Kai’s fist made contact with the head of the Tortoise Monster Beast.

It blared out like a burst of loud thunder. Such a tiny fist going against something the size of the Tortoise Monster Beast seemed laughable. However, a single pound from his fist sent tremor in everyone’s heart, as if this fist disintegrated their mind and soul.

A halo erupted, engulfing the entire head of gigantic Tortoise Monster Beast. The force of the meteor like fist made the Monster Beast stagger back; wind and dust were brought forth from its wake. [A miracle!], the thought ran through the minds of spectators in awe.

The force was so strong that Yang Kai flew back, rotating in air, to only staggered and fall down. His right hand was soaked in blood, shivering uncontrollably. It took him some time to steady himself. With a look of disdain towards the Tortoise Monster Beast, a few meters away from him, his weak body emitted a bloodthirsty aura.

Meanwhile, the audience could not help but gasp in awe. Everyone’s eyes were shivering with disbelief. No one could have imagined such a sight; a Monster Beast that even Su Yan could only slow down had been forced back by a boy. Not to mention, the Martial Skill that made it possible. When they recalled their first impressions of this Martial Skill, no one would have thought that such a majestic starry sky would wield such terrifying power.

Looking his frail back facing against the Monster Beast, Su Yan’s heart cannot help but violently palpitate. She was well aware that this scene would be burnt into her mind, unforgettable. The back of a boy younger than her, that managed

to accomplish what she could not.

Hu Mei Er face turned flush red. she looked at Yang Kai of panic struck expression. Meanwhile, Hu Jiao Er's heart began to accelerate.

[What is this?] Hu Jiao Er became restless. The feelings she had right now were not her own. They were produced by her younger sister and transmitted to her. The thought of her own will being twisted like this made her heart drop in fear.

Lan Chudie's heart also palpitated in excitement but unlike the Hu sisters, she showed a despondent look. The instant she felt a burst of emotions, she recalled her own relations with Yang Kai to only end up in disappointment.

A back to rely on was something every woman seeks. Watching Yang Kai exhibit such traits made all the women's hearts set aflutter. It could even be said that such a reliable back melted into their hearts as a landmark.

"Amazing!" Fang Ziji spoke from his heart. However, many were not as optimistic as him. They realized their meager strength and muttered in a low-spirited voice, "To think that there is this kind of Martial Skill in this world and there is someone who can also display it..."

"Why, why, why?" Xie Hongchen muttered with a lifeless voice, "Why wasn't it me to obtained the Martial Skill? Why was it not me? If I had that Martial Skill, everyone's focus would be on me and I would be bathing in their admiration! Why does it have to be him? He is merely lucky."

"Why aren't you helping? If this thing doesn't die now, the only chance you have to survive is to run!" Yang Kai spoke in a loud voice, reverberating within the ears of everyone around. When they could finally digest his words, everyone realised the gravity of the situation they were in.

Su Yan immediately shouts, "Help us!!"

Chapter 145, The Joint Effort of the Three Sects

This made all High Heaven Pavilion disciples ready to fight.

“Elder sister!” Hu Mei Er turned her face eagerly towards Hu Jiao Er for her approval.

“Jiao Er, let’s not mix in this turbid water. Who knows if that monster beast still has the strength to counterattack. It will be better for us to watch the disciples of High Heaven Pavilion from the side,” Long Jun suggested.

“You shut up! Coward!” Hu Mei Er wickedly stared at Long Jun.

Long Jun became speechless.

Hu Jiao Er forced a smile on her face. Looking at her younger sister and then at Yang Kai, a tender feeling beat in her heart. She then shouted, “Disciples of Bloody Battle Gang, go forth and aid them!”

Then, she dashed forward to be first in line to assist.

On the other side at Storm House, Du Yishuang looked at Fang Ziji and said anxiously in a soft voice, “He rescued my life.”

Fang Ziji pinched her nose then said, “Then what will you do if I said we should sit at the foot of the mountain?”

“I will despise you and look down on you for the rest of my life!” Du Yishuang protested boldly to her elder fellow apprentice.

“Hey...” Fang Ziji uttered with helplessness. “Since you put it that way, what else can I do?”

He smiled widely. “Today I have experienced the boldness of a hero, so how

can I, Fang Ziji fall behind? Storm House men obey and follow order, so now come and kill along with me. Let's let everyone see how masculine Storm House males are!"

Rosy: (This guy is so full of BS)

"Yeah!" Storm House disciple roared.

"Senior brother, what about us, the female disciples? What are we supposed to do?" Du Yishuang asked without forgetting.

"Sit on the sideline, and obediently observe. So long as you females help your husbands bear strong children, you do not need to think of anything else." Then, he musters a group of disciples and herds it towards the Tortoise Monster Beast.

"Hmph!" Du Yishuang puffed. "I know that you think of men to be superior to women, but when it comes to strength I am not any less powerful than you." With saying this, she tagged along.

After these many past days, only seven hundred to eight hundred people were remaining from three sects. Some were killed by the turtle monster beast, but eighty percent of the ones remaining still had strength to fight.

As for the remaining 20%, some were either injured and would not be able to contribute anything or their strength was too low, so even if they came forward to help it wouldn't matter.

The enthusiasm was shocking. Three main disciples of three sects, three forces, three directions but the target was only one crawling on the ground: the Tortoise Monster Beast.

Yang Kai's Star Mark injured it acutely, which is significant enough to incapacitate it even if it did not lose its life.

The first to rush in were the High Heaven Pavilion disciples. They displayed their most powerful Martial Skills and attacked relentlessly. The scene looked like they were matches throwing fire at it.

The next to follow through was the Bloody Battle Gang and the last was Storm House.

Of all those people, only a few have achieved True Elementary Boundary. Su Yan did not have any strength to continue fighting, and Xie Hongchen hadn't gotten back his composure. So the only ones remaining were Fang Ziji, Long Jun and Hu Jiao Er.

However, they were in the first or second boundary of the True Element Boundary. It was very difficult to inflict any effective damage to the almost impregnable Tortoise Monster Beast.

Their attacks were small and trifling, causing an inconsequential effect.

This was such the for disciples still circling the Monster Beast. Though they saw that their attacks did not bear any results, the disciples of the three sects did not retreat in discouragement. They continued to release barrages of killing strikes that tickled the Tortoise. From its position, there were still sounds of dings and dongs from the inconsiderable impacts pelting its shell.

Yang Kai stood in the same spot grinning.

He thought that it was the perfect time to use Star Mark. Inspiring everyone to unite and resume their siege was more than worth it.

Su Yan looked upon the majestic scene as if it was a miracle.

All the disciples from the different sects always used to battle against each other, particularly and especially in the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, constantly struggling with each other. She was always unhappy with the internal conflicts, so she took to travelling alone, separate from the noisy fighting, but with her status and prestige she would only need to say a word and all disciples of the High Heaven Pavilion will gather to be by her side.

With the imminent slaughter of High Heaven Pavilion Disciples, Su Yan had no choice but to fight back. Even if it was Xie Hongchen who brought forth this catastrophe, she simply could not allow her sect's Disciples to be massacred. Never would she have expected such a turnabout, a reversal that was only possible due to the man in front of her.

No one could make the disciples of the three schools cooperate with each other to this degree. Everyone present didn't battle with each other, they didn't

mistrust each other, but they all are holding a single thought and that is to kill this Turtle Monster Beast.

This event in itself is a miracle!

Looking at his right arm dripping with blood, Su Yan's heart ached a little without even realising it.

She wanted to help him treat his injury, but she held herself back.

What this man represented at that moment was strength and determination. If she went forward to help, there would be emotions and feelings involved and he didn't need those feelings, not at this time.

But at this moment from the corner of her eye, Su Yan saw the girl Hu Mei Er from the Bloody Battle Gang approaching Yang Kai with an anxious expression and enquiring about his injuries, then taking out few bottles of medicine and applying it on his injuries. She then tore her sleeve and wrapped his arm with the cloth.

On seeing this, Su Yan's eyes dimmed a little and she turned her face in the other direction.

Perhaps because of the joint attack of three sects the Turtle Monster Beast showed signs of awakening. Slowly but surely, its eyes were beginning to refocus and its huge body began to move. This only instilled haste and a tinge of fear in the attackers, who then ramp up their attacks to try and quicken the process.

Suddenly a female voice sounded, "Hit its head, it has wounds there!" This was

the voice of Du Yishuang from Storm House.

Fang Ziji and Hu Jiao Er listened and hastily moved to above the head of the Turtle Monster Beast and sucked their tongues in.

They discovered that on its head, there were large cracks and fresh red blood can be seen flowing from it. Since his head was hidden in the shell, one would have to look carefully to discover the wounds.

“Damn it!” Fang Ziji could not bear it and cursed. He had been fighting for a long time but to no avail, and here is a ready-made foot long wound.

This was the effect of Yang Kai’s attack. How mighty was his fist to cause such a serious wound?

Although his mind was in shock he still cooperated with Hu Jiao Er and started redirecting their attacks against the wound. It made the Monster Beast violent with its movement.

“Women, get out of the way.” Fang Ziji shouts to Hu Jiao Er who was attacking with him.

“Only in eyes of idiot males is a girl is inferior to a boy, so I will not lower myself to your level.” Hu Jiao Er snapped coldly.

In all of the three sects’ disciples, Fang Ziji has a male superiority complex, thinking that only males can be decision makers when it comes to important matters, not caring to even consider women. In his eyes, only Su Yan is a female who he sometimes looks up to.

According to rumours, once when he was with his teacher, the sect Master of Storm House, Xiao Ruohan, he advised him to not recruit female disciples in the future, and naturally Xiao Ruohan ignored Fang Ziji, but the matter is that they discussed it together in Black Plum Village's Spring Breeze Drizzle Building and this talk became an extremely embarrassing thing for the pair when they finally got the news of it.

After that, Fang Ziji never mentioned this matter further, but his mentality has not changed.

It's not that he disliked females, but in his opinion men and women were two different species, where the former was nobler than the latter.

I am a man and I am proud of it, I am a man and I am proud! Those type of thoughts.

Those were his ideals. Fang Ziji thought that females should not do what they were not meant to do.

He was quite young and dashing, still. He was tyrannical and always serious about everything. Therefore, he never had a lack of female admirers.

Unfortunately, he was frequently contradictory.

Hu Jiao Er's reply made Fang Ziji furrow his eyebrows, then he sent a fierce attack towards the head of the Turtle Monster Beast while shooting back angrily, "Bitch, who are calling you an idiot?"

Hu Jiao Er follows with another killing strike against the same spot without

faltering and replied, “Stinking brat! If you so dislike females, why don’t you go to your fellow male apprentices to make happy love with them?”

Her remarks turned Fang Ziji pale and gave him a strong urge to vomit.

To do it with his Fellow Male Apprentice.....

Just imagining such a scene gave Fang Ziji a bout of dizziness.

Hu Jiao Er laughed lightly, as she took pleasure in his misfortune.

“A lady who is not concerned about her words and impressions on others.” Fang Ziji said with a unendurable feeling, “Anyone who marries you would have terrible luck.”

“Nobody needs your concession!” Hu Jiao Er blushed slightly and rolled her eyes.

“I don’t want to bicker with you. Let’s see who can strike this Monster Beast fatally.” Fang Ziji said.

“Hmph, you are not my match!” Hu Jiao Er sneered.

Without waiting for them, a pure white form suddenly appeared in front of the Monster Beast. The form was surrounded by an ice cold mist, and she pointed her jade finger towards the Monster Beast’s wound an ice cold white energy was presented.

The ice cold energy was absorbed by the gashing wound and suddenly, a bright

burst of scarlet red blood spouted out of it, looking beautiful.

The scarlet blood changed into shards of icicles and drilled into the skull of Monster Beast.

“Roar....” the Turtle Monster Beast suddenly got on his feet and facing upward, it gave a loud roar. Its huge body became unsteady and began to sway. Its red eyes began to weaken as its eyes were filled with unwillingness.

Fang Ziji and Hu Jiao Er turns their head to see a pale faced Su Yan, who had exhausted what little strength she had been able to accumulate to provide the killing blow.

After exhausting her last scrap of strength, Su Yan tried to turn her head but fell. She didn't have any more strength to fight again.

Fang Ziji and Hu Jiao Er felt the chilling aura that Su Yan was sending out, noticing its difference from her usual aura.

In the past, that coldness was pure through and through with no attribute attached to it.

But now, this chill seemed to be much different, making it hard to endure.

“Who annoyed her?” Fang Ziji asks doubtfully.

“How would I know?” Hu Jiao Er replied impatiently. She was from the Bloody Battle Gang and she thought that the disciples of other two schools were no good.

With Fang Ziji himself being a perfect specimen, she didn't need to look any further for reference.

Looking at the other side on High Heaven Pavilion's Su Yan was now emotionless like an ice baby. She always remained indifferent and unapproachable. She didn't even look at Xie Hongchen, a person who was willing to do anything for fame and power.

Her Bloody Battle Gang, though not the strongest were at the very least normal. Only when both sisters grew up could they then give a helping hand to their father in managing the Bloody Battle Gang.

"If nobody annoyed her, why would she attack with the just restored Yuan Qi?" Fang Ziji couldn't understand her motive, shaking his head looking at Hu Jiao Er, who was still attacking the Turtle Monster Beast while he was distracted. He shouts angrily, "You... you...woman, even if you won like this it wouldn't be counted as a victory!"

Chapter 146, The Sinister Soul Breaker Awl

Hu Jiao Er laughed slyly, “Since you said that you want to have a bet with me a victory is a victory no matter how I obtain it. Also, let me remind you that I am a female and since you believe men are above us, what is the point of competing with me in the first place?”

After hearing this Fang Ziji became speechless, and when he came to his senses he said, “No man can ever win against a woman in a debate.”

Of the fate of the Tortoise Monster Beast, half of it was decided when the three sects came together to defeat it, and the other half was decided when Su Yan used her remaining strength to destroy its crippled life. The Tortoise no longer had the strength to fight back, its death was only a matter of time.

All of this was made possible by the overpowering punch from Yang Kai. It motivated the disciples of the three sects, igniting their will to fight and giving them the courage to overcome this colossal difficulty.

However, the punch ruptured the blood vessels in his right hand. Hu Mei Er was helping him wrap it with a bandage.

Yang Kai never imagined that the Star Mark was this powerful. He was on the verge of losing control when using it, and the recoil of that punch left him paralysed, leaving him temporarily disabled.

If it was not so, why would he have remained unmovable like a pole at this time? The adrenaline that was running through his body settled down and only now was he was able to feel the pain from the damage his body had sustained.

Looking at the several hundred disciples that were attacking, Yang Kai did not see Xie Hongchen among them. Instead, he was somewhere else staring at the sky with a blank face. After Yang Kai attacked the Tortoise Monster Beast, Xie Hongchen was stupefied and he was only able to compose himself after a little while.

He knew that Yang Kai had obtained a top-grade inheritance, otherwise his strength would never let him wield such power.

That punch gave a Peak Sixth Realm Monster Beast such heavy injuries.

Yang Kai cannot be given the opportunity to grow further. If he does, not only will Xie Hongchen be unable to woo Su Yan, he himself would be in very big trouble.

So, as his crisis needed solving, a ruthless gleam flashed across Xie Hongchen's eyes. He looked at the person who was standing quite a distance from him.

That person was Nie Yong.

He was also injured in the fight alongside Lan Chudie, and right now he was rejuvenating not far from Yang Kai.

Nie Yong was in a confused state. He was unable to judge what his heart was going through at this moment. He and Yang Kai had clashed many times when they entered the cave. He had even caused many obstacles and made people chase him down.

But they were unable to locate his hiding place, so that matter came to an end at that time. However, the existence of Yang Kai was like a fish bone stuck in his throat, neither able to stomach it nor cough it out.

He still remembers the words that Yang Kai spoke when he escaped from him.

After such a short time, Yang Kai had already become strong and formidable. This almost made Nie Yong piss in his pants. If that punch were to land on him he would have certainly met a short and cruel death.

Now, what should I do? What the hell should I do? Everyone's attention was focused on that Monster Beast and nothing else, but when that Monster Beast dies how would I be able to bear his anger?

The nervous and anxious Nie Yong saw Xie Hongchen give him a signal with his eyes.

He clearly understood the meaning of the signal his brother was giving him, but he was startled by it.

On seeing this, he turned serious. He understood that if he wanted to live, the only way was to kill Yang Kai. Otherwise, he would surely exact his revenge. Moreover, his brother also wanted Yang Kai dead. Once he has killed him, with his brother shielding him everything would turn out just fine.

After seeing Yang Kai's punch, Nie Yong had lost his ability to assess the situation calmly and had pinned all his hopes on Xie Hongchen.

Standing up, Nie Yong slowly walked toward Yang Kai step by step.

Yang Kai acted as if he was unaware of the impending doom. He simply stood at the same spot without moving a finger.

Nie Yong was increasing his pace step by step. The only person near Yang Kai right now was Hu Mei Er of the Bloody Battle Gang. As long as he moved fast enough he can surely make a killing strike.

As for the matter of killing at a more suitable time, it was already out of consideration.

Everyone was focused on the Tortoise Monster Beast and no one had noted the movements of Nie Yong, except for one person.

That person was Lan Chudie.

Yang Kai crossing the sky to rescue Su Yan followed by his punch to severely injure the Monster Beast.. those scenes were replaying in her mind over and over, causing a feeling of loss in her heart.

She had not thought that the person who had followed her for days and did as he was told would show such fearsome strength. If she had known earlier... (Ed note: Well if you only saw him as a goffer what did you expect?)

This feeling was like discarding a hunk of jade because she thought it was a normal stone. This mistake made Lan Chudie extremely regretful.

Everyone was still watching the battle unfold, but she was looking at the back of Yang Kai, a dazzling back that was taken from her. Comparing Xie Hongchen's character and his was like comparing excrement to diamond.

This disaster was brought about by Xie Hongchen to be solved by this person standing in front of her, so such a standard was understandable.

The movement of Nie Yong quickly brought the attention of Lan Chudie. At first, she thought that Nie Yong had restored his injuries and was going to enter the battle but observing for a few more moments, that didn't seem to be the case. The target of Nie Yong was unexpectedly Yang Kai. Moreover, Nie Yong was also using his World Qi while walking, and she was able to feel its slight fluctuation.

Lan Chudie is an intelligent woman. She immediately understood what Nie Yong wanted to do. When she was about to shout to warn Yang Kai, she saw him turn his head to look at Nie Yong mockingly.

He smiled like a sly devil.

Nie Yong came to a halt. He fearfully looked at Yang Kai. He didn't know that Yang Kai realised his motive but, being his stare terrified him.

His look was like looking at a dead person.

"Brother Nie." Yang Kai turned around slowly and maintained his smile.

"Brother Yang." Nie Yong gulped, unable to move even though he clearly wanted to.

"Do you want to kill me?"

Those words made Nie Yong so frightened he took a few steps back and waving his hand over his face quickly, he said with a smile, "Brother Yang, why would I do such a thing? We are from the same sect and we are brothers, how can I commit such a deed?"

Nie Yong felt the skin on his face twitch because of the nonsense pouring out of his mouth, but he couldn't help it as he was panic-stricken.

That one fist can cause such heavy damage to a Peak Sixth Realm Monster Beast, how could he not panic? And to make things worse, they had such recent burning enmity.

While speaking, Nie Yong slowly moved back step by step while laughing awkwardly. Presenting himself as harmless as possible, he moved almost like a pendulum.

"Nie Yong!" Yang Kai screamed angrily, his face twisted with such anger he looked like a maddened evil spirit.

Nie Yong was afraid, so afraid he could not bring the guts to utter any sound. He turned around and ran for his life. He had not even taken ten steps before he heard howling and sobbing voices following him.

When he turned around to look, he felt his soul leave him. He noticed a dark shadow, coming from Yang Kai, flying towards him with eerie laughter.

This laughter was so strange and evil it reduced Nie Yong's courage to nothing.

Even after taking some distance from Yang Kai, Nie Yong refused to sit and

wait for his death. When he turned around to fight, Nie Yong discovered that it wasn't as bad and as terrifying as he had expected. With his current strength, although it was difficult to resist, it was insufficient to kill him.

Nie Yong felt relief as he knew that at present Yang Kai's situation was not as good as he was letting on. However, he would still need to expend some strength to escape.

With this surprising discovery, Nie Yong began to fight back while still retreating. He was somehow able to deflect the attacks but was still unable to escape from the evil awl that was chasing him. It made laughing sounds that no one would ever forget, especially him.

What is this ghost? Even if it is a secret treasure, it can follow a target? Yang Kai is standing motionless in the same place. Why won't he attack me?

He heard footsteps emerge from nowhere behind him and was once again shocked. Nie Yong turned to see Lan Chudie supporting her injured body, coming towards him with a calm expression.

Nie Yong suddenly became happy as he shouted, "Sister Lan, please save me!"

Lan Chudie looked at him lightly which gave Nie Yong a very bad premonition. Looking uncertain, he suddenly felt a palm hit him violently on his chest.

"Aaahhhh!" Nie Yong howled pitifully and suddenly came to a stop. Suddenly a wild laughter transmitted from the black fog. Was it an accident? Nie Yong was unable to understand what was going on.

“Why did sister Lan.....” Nie Yong’s body shivered fiercely and before completing his sentence, both his eyes slowly lost their light as his body fell over softly.

Lan Chudie took heavy breaths in big gulps. She stared at Nie Yong and discovered that his chest did not have the slightest signs of injury. I couldn’t even penetrate his flesh? That’s awful...

Seeing this, she became flustered.

Vaguely, Lan Chudie heard Nie Yong’s whining voice, making her go numb. Her face lost all colour.

She looked at Yang Kai on the side and saw him looking at her coldly.

As Lan Chudie’s heart suddenly became chaotic, she replied, whilst clenching her teeth, “He wanted to kill you.”

Yang Kai remained silent. He lifted his hand and the black awl that he released suddenly became a beam of light and entwined on his finger, then vanishing without a trace.

They looked at each other for a long time, then he slowly shifted his vision, not saying a word. Looking at this Lan Chudie smiled mockingly herself. She felt that she had become as fragile as a vase and if she fell she would break into pieces.

“Hahahahaha!” Within Yang Kai, the Old Demon laughed wildly like a madman while he chewed on something.

Yang Kai knew that what he was chewing was Nie Yong's immortal soul. But for Yang Kai, this was unexpected as he did not know that Soul Breaker Awl had such a strange function.

"I want to kill more. I want to kill!" The Old Demon was shouting while chewing on Nie Yong's immortal soul. "It has been a long time since I have heard such a sweet sound, since I have tasted such a freshness and softness. Little Master, if you want to kill some more you can send this old servant without any hesitation."

Yang Kai's thoughts moved and the laughter of Old Demon turned into shouts of misery and begged for mercy.

After some time when Old Demon recovered slightly but, was still out of breath as he asked cautiously, "Little Master, why did you punish me?"

"Why did you not tell me about the real function of the Soul Breaker Awl?"

"You never asked me about it, Young Master." Old Demon said accusingly, then flatly continued, "Moreover, this thing is too evil and I thought if Young Master knew, he would be discontent about it."

"I, at this moment, am very discontented." Yang Kai adds. "I am extremely unhappy about it."

After hearing this Old Demon started to shiver.

After waiting for a good long while, Yang Kai said, "This will be the first and last time. Remember, it's the last time. If you dare to conceal anything ever again,

you know the consequences.”

Official Chapter Title: The Death of Nie Yong

Chapter 147, The Place of True Inheritance

“This old servant would never dare to do so!” The Old Demon said submissively and promptly. “Young Master, that little girl who helped you a moment ago, has got quite a decisive personality, she gave a good blow.”

“What are you implying?”

“This old servant has taken a liking to her. If Young Master gives his permission, this old servant can train her for a few years and she will be a big boost to Young Master for sure!”

“I do not like her!” Yang Kai said coldly.

“Everything will be as Young Master decides.” Old Demon didn’t dare say anything else and just sighed, thinking how it was a pity.

The death of Nie Yong took Hu Mei Er by surprise, and the disciples of the High Heaven Pavilion recovering on the side were also surprised. They only heard the angry howl of Yang Kai and saw the desperate run of Nie Yong, who was being followed by a black fog, and while Nie Yong retaliated, Lan Chudie gave him a sneak attack which stopped Nie Yong from escaping.

It was almost as if everyone had a question mark hanging over their heads, unable to react to such a bizarre situation.

At this moment, the huge Turtle Monster Beast gave out its last cry of misery and dropped to the ground. All the disciples surrounding its lifeless body gave a loud cheer.

Hu Jiao Er chuckled with satisfaction, then said, “Fang Ziji, looks like the final strike was dealt by me.”

Fang Ziji replied in a depressed voice, “You were so shameless, so what was the point of that bet?”

Hu Jiao Er smirked and taunted, “Looks like someone can’t accept his loss.”

Fang Ziji flared up. “Who can’t accept a loss?! If you did not attack it when I was in shock, you wouldn’t have won this easily. You’re a woman, I will not lower myself to your level!”

“Well, it seems to me like you just don’t want to accept your loss.” Hu Jiao Er commented.

On hearing this, Fang Ziji’s face turned red from shame. He replied and changed the topic, “I don’t want to argue with you, the main priority is acquiring the Monster Core.”

While speaking, Fang Ziji inserted his hand into the forehead of the Monster Beast, searching for its core. In just a few moments, he fished out a brown coloured Monster Core dripping with blood.

Staring at the Monster Core in his hand, Fang Ziji felt thrilled and exclaimed, “The Core of a Peak Sixth Realm Monster Beast, how much would it sell for?”

Long Jun looked at him lightly then said in a soft voice, “Elder Brother Fang was

not thinking of having sole possession of it, was he?”

The Core was the most precious object in the body of a Monster Beast. For this one, its shell also had a very high value because it could be used as a refining material, but the shell was huge, so at present who would be capable of carrying it out of here?

At this moment everyone was focused on Fang Ziji. “I was just thinking of doing so.” Fang Ziji said lightly and calmly.

Long Jun took a fighting stance in response. On the contrary, Hu Jiao Er looked at him with a face full of smiles.

“But I do not dare to do so!” Fang Ziji said curling his lips, “If I took it all for myself would you let me leave?”

Hearing this Long Jun contemptuously smiled, “Elder Brother Fang is a sensible person after all.”

“Does anyone have any idea how we will split this Monster Core amongst ourselves?” Fang Ziji turned his head to look at everyone who helped fight this Turtle Monster Beast. All the other Monster Beasts were hunted separately by everyone, so it wasn’t a problem, but everyone had collaborated to kill this Monster Beast, so everyone having a share was natural.

Everyone became silent and started to ponder on how they would divide the Monster Core.

Perhaps the only way was to turn it into cash, then dividing it equally between all three Sects.

Long Jun thought about it and wanted to present his idea when Fang Ziji suggest, “This victory was all thanks to the help of junior brother Yang, how about we let him decide about it?”

Yang Kai was pleasantly surprised to hear that from Fang Ziji, so he himself, standing a few feet away, started to ponder it himself.

Long Jun said in dissatisfaction, “He may have been the one to damage the beast heavily, but in this fight the Bloody Battle Gang also helped, and a lot of disciples were injured by it, so it is only given that we will need some type of compensation, don’t we?”

Fang Ziji said pointing at the body of the Tortoise Monster Beast, “If you want, you can take the shell. My Storm House will not stop you.”

Hearing such words Long Jun became speechless and was exasperated. That tortoise shell was almost pristine despite all the attacks that pelted it, so it was no doubt that it would be an excellent raw material, but at present who would be able to cut it to carry it out away?

During the debate, Fang Ziji’s complexion changed suddenly and he threw the Monster Core. Instead of falling to the ground, the Core started spinning in mid-air.

With the spin, a strange suction was activated and it started attracting things from all directions. From Fang Ziji’s inner upper pockets, two more Cores flew out.

It was same for Hu Mei Er and Long Jun.

The Monster Core that was hidden in Xie Hongchen's chest pocket also flew out.

These Cores were collected when the three sects killed the other eight Monster Beasts. They had obtained them with great difficulty and with the help of many people. They were not even able to look at them properly since their efforts were now being taken away.

The eight Monster Cores formed a strange pattern and were all spinning around the newest one, which belonged to the Turtle Monster Beast. With its revolution, a dark strength was pulled from the entire Heaven's Cave Inheritance. This pull caused everything to shake violently. Within all the chaos, a giant dark vortex appeared in the sky. It's sudden arrival made everyone present tremble with fear.

Nobody knew what was happening, except for the Old Demon, who was exploding in excitement. His cheery voice was heard in Yang Kai's mind, "The Grave of Beast Souls!"

Yang Kai suddenly realised that the Old Demon knew about this place, so he hurriedly asked, "Tell me about it."

Old Demon said, "Young Master, I finally understand. Originally, this place was sealed with nine Monster Beasts. They were all only a test. If all of them were not killed, then this phenomenon would not be triggered. Now that all the Monster Beasts have died, the requirement has been met for the phenomenon to occur. This formation will absorb the cores of these nine Monster Beasts and will give you a reward.

“A reward?”

“It’s the thing that is hidden in the clouds above!” The Old Demon said slowly. “Yes, it looks like that, and according to this old servant’s estimate, that is the genuine inheritance hidden here!”

“The inheritance!” Yang Kai’s heart skipped a beat. He turned his head to see that the vortex that appeared in the sky was getting bigger and bigger. That place looked like it was in chaos, and whoever dared to enter it would be swallowed whole.

The disciples of the three sects ran away like mice, and none dared to stand underneath it.

“Yes, that should be the case.” The Old Demon continued, “After all, this place was the host of a humongous war, and many experts died here and left behind many inheritances. But it looks like there might have been a supreme expert, and he has probably hidden his inheritance in the sky.”

Yang Kai became enlivened.

“Young Master, you need to hurry away from this formation. It can affect you.” The Old Demon warned.

Yang Kai did not heed the Old Demon, but instead looked at Hu Mei Er who was still standing beside him and said, “Tell your elder sister to make everyone move as far as they can away from the vortex.”

Hu Mei Er nodded her head and dashed towards Hu Jiao Er.

Then Yang Kai shouted at the disciples of High Heaven Pavilion, “If you don’t want to die, then move at least five kilometres away from here!”

Many people ignored him despite his loud warning.

Yang Kai didn’t care about them. He had already warned them, it is now up to them to decide whether they want to listen or not. Without worrying any further, Yang Kai himself started to retreat quickly.

Su Yan glanced at him, then turned around to order without hesitation, “Disciples of High Heaven Pavilion, withdraw to a five-kilometre distance from here!” Her words had a heavier weight. Everyone hurried to retire in the same direction as Yang Kai.

At the other side, Hu Jiao Er had received her little sister’s message and also issued the order of retreat.

Fang Ziji looked at Yang Kai like he was measuring him, then said while laughing, “We will also move back!”

The disciples of the three sects ran with lightning speed and stopped at a distance of five kilometres.

They turned around to see that the nine Monster Beast cores were exuding a dazzling light. It looked like there was a mysterious relationship between all of them. With the continuous revolution of the Monster Cores, the vortex in the sky did not stop expanding.

A huge suction was still spreading from the vortex, such that the corpse of the Turtle Monster Beast had started floating in the air, the vortex rapidly pulling it. When the corpse flew into the vortex, it left behind no trace.

This caused everyone to be struck with fear.

If they had not withdrawn to the suggested distance, they would have suffered a similar fate to the Tortoise Monster Beast's corpse.

Rejoicing, many people turned to look at Yang Kai, their faces filled with admiration.

A strong wind blew, flapping everyone's clothing violently. Many people were still frightened. A lot of the group who had entered for the inheritance were from the younger generations and did not have much experience. There were many people who hadn't even left their sects for a long period of time, so how could they see such a scene without flinching?

"Do we need to draw back more?" Su Yan came beside Yang Kai and queried.

Yang Kai looked at her then shook his head. Su Yan sighed with relief on Yang Kai's confirmation.

"About Nie Yong, you don't need to worry. I will report it personally to the Elder Assembly."

"Thanks," Yang Kai nodded his head.

Yang Kai had only killed Nie Yong just a few moments ago. It happened very quickly, but how could Su Yan miss such a scene? There was nothing more on the matter to investigate.

“There’s something in the sky!” Suddenly, shocked voices were heard from everyone.

Yang Kai turned his gaze quickly to the sky alongside everyone else, only to find a golden light glittering from within the vortex. That golden light was dazzling, illuminating everything around it. It was like a hand that tore the sky open, showing the treasure hidden within.

Amongst the sea of people and widespread confusion, someone could be loudly heard yelling, “What is that?!”

Yang Kai narrowed his eyes and looked closer at the light in the sky.

At the top of where the light originated, he thought he saw the shadow of an angel standing at the corner of a house. From within, something was gradually descending.

A little more time passed, and Yang Kai discovered that it was not the corner of a house, but stairs; golden stairs that shimmered with the brightest hint of value.

These stairs were very long, with landings in between them. These stairs gradually came into everyone’s view.

The descent of the golden stairs was sluggish. Along with it, the vortex also began to fluctuate.

After waiting for a few minutes, more steps appeared in the vortex, but after some time they were unable to discern the difference between them.

“Old Demon, is this the inheritance which you mentioned?” Yang Kai asked in his mind.

“Young Master, I do not know what inheritance is hidden in there. It can only be obtained if you are able to pass its test. Looking at those steps, if it is what this old servant thinks it is, then they are at least ten thousand in number, which means that climbing them would be the final test. Since ten thousand is only this old servant’s estimate, it is possible that there would fewer or more than expected.”

Yang Kai started to mull over it. Although the inheritance had revealed itself, they would need to start climbing to know how long it will take to get to the top. He stopped thinking about it after a while as there was a more pressing matter.

Currently, Yang Kai’s strength would be in the lower range among these 700-800 disciples, so would he even have a chance at claiming the inheritance?

Chapter 148, A Man is All About Boldness

Almost as if he knew Yang Kai's doubts, the Old Demon said slowly, "Young Master does not need to be extremely worried about it. If you are destined to claim the inheritance, your strength will matter very little, but if the method to acquire it is otherworldly difficult, strength would contribute nothing. Young Master, did you forget the chance that the two little girls stumbled upon?"

A happy feeling emerged in Yang Kai's heart.

He saw with his own eyes the chance the Hu sisters received. He had discovered that cave first and had even been inside it for several days, but they were the ones that were able to obtain the inheritance because they were destined for it.

"Yes, that seems to be the case." Yang Kai let go of his worries. He glanced back at the sky another time, then turned around. Since he knew that it would take some time for the stairs to completely descend, he simply looked for a secluded corner, and then sat cross-legged in that spot.

Since he needed to snatch this inheritance, he decided that the first step was to restore his strength.

According to Yang Kai's estimate, the process of the stairs setting up would take at least two to three days, so he would have that much time to recuperate.

Su Yan looked at him in slight surprise, thought about it, then she also left the crowd and found herself a place to sit down not too far away from Yang Kai.

The younger generation looked at the calm disposition of Yang Kai and Su Yan helplessly. Since they were nowhere close to being experts, they were unable to

detach themselves from their worldly desires and display the kind of composure Yang Kai and Su Yan showed. Therefore, they looked quite immature compared to the two.

When someone coughed lightly, they began to gather their thoughts with a tinge of embarrassment, then scattered to find a place to meditate. Some ordinary disciples also formed a group, and started to talk and made noise. Amidst the noise, there was still a lingering overtone of shock and awe.

The two Hu sisters ran to and sat on either side of Yang Kai. No one knew what they were thinking.

Yang Kai opened his eyes slightly to peek at their faces. The sisters were both smiling at him sweetly, making him unable to distinguish who was who.

Yang Kai's eyes turned a little hesitant to open any further.

"What?" looking at Yang Kai's disposition, Hu Jiao Er asked immediately. "Us sitting beside you is your good luck. Why are you giving us such a dirty look?"

Yang Kai didn't know whether to laugh or to cry, so he smiled and commented, "It's an honour to have such beautiful flowers by my side. How could I give you two a dirty look?"

After all, they had cooperated several times and had come to know each other quite well. They were no longer strangers like before. With their bond, jokes accompanied their regular conversations.

Hearing Yang Kai's words, Hu Jiao Er replied with a sweet anger, "You have

quite a sweet mouth on you!”

Hu Mei Er also added, “I thought you were a simple person, I hadn’t thought that you could also say such cheesy lines.”

Yang Kai says with a serious face, “Those words came from my heart. It was not simple flattery.”

The two sisters smiled pleasantly. It was like the blooming of two very beautiful flowers bringing colour and joy to the world.

After thinking a little, Yang Kai pointed out, “It looks like the people on your side don’t like me very much.”

Both of the sisters looked at each other and then said in one voice, “Do you fear them?”

Yang Kai grinned and said, “I am actually quite fearful of them, but they don’t have the qualifications to become my enemy, so you don’t need to be bothered about it.”

Hu Jiao Er then replied, “You have already offended the male disciples of High Heaven Pavilion, so what can the disciples of my Bloody Battle Gang count for?”

She was talking about the incident where he saved Su Yan and was able to occupy some advantage.

Immediately, Yang Kai grimaced as if in great pain.

Hu Jiao Er laughed in a playful manner then gave him a coquettish look, “Do you want me to give you a kiss so that others can envy you?”

Yang Kai peeked at her again, leant then extended his face near her, “I wish for it with all my heart.”

Hu Jiao Er blushed immediately then exclaims angrily, “You want a beauty like me to kiss you?”

“Elder sister, you need to stop your teasing! Let him rest first. He has quite a few heavy wounds.” Hu Mei Er shook her elder sister’s arm. She was having a hard time enduring the flirting.

Hu Jiao Er then adjusted her position beside Yang Kai and closed her eyes obediently.

Yang Kai and Hu Mei Er looked at each other and smiled. Then they also adjusted their position and started meditating one after the other.

Along with the passage of time, the disciples of the three sects also lost their initial curiosity, and begin to restore their Yuan Qi, occasionally opening their eyes to check for changes in the sky above.

Two days of meditation, silence, the occasional noise and complaints passed.

Yang Kai felt someone stand in front of him. He opened his eyes, only to meet Storm House’s Du Yishuang and another handsome man.

This man was Fang Ziji who had proposed to give Yang Kai the Core of Tortoise Monster Beast.

“Yang Kai, how are your wounds?” Younger Sister Du asked with serious concern.

“Well, it doesn’t look that bad.” Yang Kai’s lips beamed, then he looked at Fang Ziji who cupped his fists and asked, “Who might this brother be?”

Yang Kai didn’t recognise Fang Ziji, but during the negotiations two days before he had shown goodwill toward Yang Kai, therefore, he didn’t have too large a sense of revulsion towards him.

“I am Fang Ziji.” He said returning the courtesy, then he gives a light laugh then continued, “Brother Yang’s punch from two days ago was forceful, and made me feel heartfelt admiration towards you. I’m also jealous of the public attention you’ve been getting.”

“Brother Fang is overpraising.” Yang Kai chuckled.

Fang Ziji continued, “Brother Yang has an indomitable spirit and I, Fang Ziji, have always admired that kind of people. If we weren’t from different sects, I would want to become actual brothers with you, sharing hardship as well as weal and woe together.”

Hu Jiao Er twisted her face and mumbled just loud enough for him to hear, “Disgusting.”

Fang Ziji looked at her in contempt.

Du Yishuang pulled the arm of Fang Ziji, then said with a forced smile, "Sister, you are not helping."

Then she looked at Yang Kai and said, "Please don't mind him, my fellow brother has issues."

"What... Sister, what did you just say?" Fang Ziji immediately turned to stare at Du Yishuang.

"Let it be, Brother Fang, you have a big heart, so why bother with such small matters?" Yang Kai's lips curled upwards. He did not imagine the the number one from Storm House to have such an interesting personality.

"Brother Yang, only you understand me." Fang Ziji said emotionally.

Hu Jiao Er interrupted with a casual sentence, "Yang Kai, you should be careful. This person doesn't like females and thinks of them as akin to mud, and they are never able to get his approval. If you become too friendly with him, perhaps he will develop a special fondness for you."

She covered her mouth and giggled wryly. Her words could very easily be misunderstood.

Yang Kai's complexion immediately turned blue and he tried to edge away.

Fang Ziji said in a panic, "Hey, don't slander me as you like. Brother Yang, don't listen to her nonsense. I am not that kind of person."

Yang Kai gave a slight cough and gave a complicated look.

Fang Ziji became anxious, then, with a spark of inspiration, he pulled the hand of Du Yishuang close to his chest, gave her a hug, and then kissed her on the lips.

Yang Kai looked thunderstruck.

Hu Jiao Er and Hu Mei Er looked at this scene with their mouths wide open.

Struggling, Du Yishuang gave a light moan; both sisters' faces became crimson.

After an awkward amount of time in silence, Fang Ziji let go of Du Yishuang, wiped the corner of his mouth and then grinned, "So, Brother Yang, you should believe me now."

Yang Kai looked at him full of surprise, then gave him a thumbs up saying, "Brother Fang showed the boldness of a real man. Really admirable."

Hearing this praise, Fang Ziji gave an exaggerated laugh. While he was laughing, junior sister Du was blushing, then she suddenly slapped Fang Ziji in the face.

"You bastard!" Du Yishuang stomped her feet, then covered her face with both hands and ran away.

"Run slowly or you might slip!" Fang Ziji shouted while rubbing his burning cheek.

“Brother Fang, will... will you not pursue her?” Yang Kai said while staring at Du Yishuang’s back.

“You don’t need to worry, she is just throwing a noisy tantrum. She will come back when she has settled down.” Fang Ziji said without care.

And accurately, after only a few moments, Du Yishuang walked back, her face still blushing. Her head was lowered and her hands kept twisting the hem of her clothes. She had a delicate, embarrassed look.

“Hey.” Fang Ziji gives Yang Kai a wink with a self-satisfied look.

“Fellow Brother...” Du Yishuang pulled Fang Ziji’s arm without shame.

“What are you doing?” Fang Ziji raised his eyebrows and gave a smug look, still looking satisfied.

Du Yishuang lifted her hand and with an incomparable speed, flung her palm against his other cheek, then clenched her teeth and lashed out, “You are a very big bastard.”

Firing her second palm, junior sister Du looked like she had removed a foul taste from her mouth. She then turned around and stomped away arrogantly.

Fang Ziji rubbed his cheeks and looked at her with eyes wide open.

giggles... Hu Jiao Er and Hu Mei Er giggled uncontrollably. They didn’t expect circumstance to develop in that direction. They were now filled with admiration

for Du Yishuang.

“Fellow sister, this... this...” Fang Ziji was stuttering. No one could tell how he felt, then he turned to look at Yang Kai and clumsily smiled and said, “When I meet her again I will straighten her out. She has acted against the heavens.”

Hu Jiao Er clapped her hands and said, “That was a really good play. Very comfortable to watch. Ohhhh Fang Ziji you, are now heaven..”

Fang Ziji twitched, then heaved a great sigh and recited, “A rose is not without its thorns.”

Yang Kai coughed lightly interrupting Hu Jiao Er’s retort, then asked Fang Ziji, “Brother Fang, did you come to me for something?”

Fang Ziji turned stern and turned to look at the spot ten li away from them, then asked earnestly, “I came here only to ask brother Yang if he knows something about what is happening.”

His question also piqued the interest of Hu Jiao Er and Hu Mei Er. The both of them looked at Yang Kai with full attention

Yang Kai’s vision glittered, he didn’t reply immediately. Fang Ziji then continued, “Brother Yang doesn’t need to hide, everyone can see you know something. But if Brother Yang is not comfortable with publicising his knowledge, I can understand.”

Yang Kai considered as he looked at him. He understood where this was coming from. Before when he had notified everyone about being ten li away from that place, he made everyone aware of the potential disaster. If he didn’t

know, how was he able to notify everyone?

However, it didn't matter if he told them what he knew. Either way, they would discover what it is when the cloud layers have finally descended. Someone would nose around it and eventually understand.

He looked at Hu Jiao Er and Hu Mei Er, who still looked at him attentively.

A few seconds passed and Yang Kai lets loose his thoughts, "I don't know too much about it. After the steps in the sky come down, I will inspect it."

Fang Ziji continued to ask, "Will it be dangerous?"

Yang Kai smiled yet again. "Brother Fang, even I am not too clear about it."

Fang Ziji nodded obediently, cupping his fists as he soberly replied, "Many thanks, brother Yang. If someday when you have the time, I invite you to visit Storm House as a guest. Us brothers will have a good chat over a cup of wine."

"Thank you!"

After Fang Ziji left, Yang Kai looked at the Hu sisters then said with a smile, "I know that you also want to know about it, otherwise you wouldn't be sitting beside me just to make the disciples of the Bloody Battle Gang jealous."

"Do you think we are here to gather information?" Hu Jiao Er disputed.

Hu Mei Er said hurriedly, “We are not here because of that! we were just...”

Chapter 149, The Trial

Hu Jiao Er abruptly interrupted without letting her finish her sentence, “Did you think we approached you to squeeze secrets out of you??”

She did not like how Yang Kai thought of them. [Does he actually think that we approached him with an ulterior motive? I thought he had a better impression of us.]

Realising he enraged her, he decided to keep silent.

Hu Jiao Er continues, “Since we will climb those steps together once they reach the ground, I will take it upon myself to be responsible for your protection should any problem occur. At the same time, you need to tell us everything you know. How does this deal sound?”

“Protection?” Yang Kai looked at the girl with one eyebrow raised.

“In your current condition, don’t you think you need protection?” Hu Jiao Er chuckled. “Well, I guess you could always find Su Yan to protect you. Although after you saved her, she seems to have been ignoring you these past few days”.

Yang Kai did not argue. He was well aware that when the time came, they would have to move together, which means they might as well help each other.

Hu Jiao Er snorted and pulled her own sister away from Yang Kai.

After waiting for a whole day, the thing hidden in the sky was finally exposed and showed a complete picture of what was behind it. All the people that were

waiting stood up and looked at the thing five kilometres away.

Cultivators who were standing below watched a huge palatial construction emerge from the sea of clouds down directly in front of everyone. In front of it was a huge number of steps, which were so numerous that everyone thought that they would not be able to climb them.

[Is the inheritance located there?] Yang Kai thought as his breathing became heavy.

All the disciples of the three sects became anxious and excited at the same time. Although they did not have as much information as Yang Kai, they could all easily tell that this colossus building must hold great treasures. Now, everyone was just waiting for the flight of stairs to reach the ground so they can start climbing.

Finally, under the attentive gaze of countless of people, the flight of stairs made contact with the ground. A loud pounding could be heard as the ground trembled. The clouds and objects in the sky then vanished into obscurity.

The pounding and trembling continued for quite some time before settling down. The flight of stairs also stably landed on the ground.

Suddenly, one scream after another sounded out and several hundred people rushed to the flight of stairs.

Yang Kai also started to walk to its side. He was not as anxious as the rest because he knew from the Old Demon that obtaining the inheritance was based on chance and not speed.

In front of him was a pure white figure. When he carefully looked at it, he noticed that it was Su Yan. The sleeves of her clothes were fluttering about as she moved. She was neither running like the rest nor taking a stroll like Yang Kai. Instead, she was travelling at a walking pace, emitting a noble aura.

When she turned her head back to look at Yang Kai realising that his vision was locked onto her, her long eyelashes slightly vibrated as she opened her mouth to speak. However, no words came out.

In the next moment, their vision was blocked out by the running crowd of disciples. Yang Kai's flirtatious smile turned to that of sadness.

TLN: (Awww! Don't worry man. We got your back!)

Meanwhile, the two beautiful Hu sisters came beside him once again with one on the left and the other on the right. They displayed winning, coy smiles that could even charm a ghost.

Hu Jiao Er then spoke out, "Since I said that I will protect you, I will keep my word. You don't have to worry. The both of us have already received an inheritance, so we will not compete with you on this one."

Yang Kai regained his composure when he could no longer see Su Yan.

"Hey, you brat! I'm talking to you!" Hu Jiao Er angrily scolded Yang Kai because he completely ignored her.

"Yes. I heard." Yang Kai responded.

Hu Jiao Er snorted and muttered to herself in a soft voice, “Like you actually paid any attention to what I said...”

After walking for 5 kilometres, the three arrived in front of a lavish, green and golden jade step.

In front of the gigantic flight of stairs was a dim screen of light. It faintly resembled multiple gates placed next to each other.

The disciples from the three sects tried to find a way through the screen of light. Over time, the number of people that were present was reduced. The disciples were either going in groups or one by one into the gate of light, reducing the population at the bottom of the steps.

The entire scene was extremely bizarre. Although there was a screen of light in front of them, they were able to see the flight of stairs behind it. How was it that when people managed to find a way past the screen of light, they were completely invisible? Did the screen of light consume them?

Watching this scene, the Hu sisters could not help but back off with trepidation.

“Yang Kai, where did they go?” Hu Jiao Er anxiously asked.

Yang Kai shook his head, “I do not know...”

Then Yang Kai arrived in front of the screen of light and placed his hand on it.

As his hand passed through, ripples on the screen could be seen, but his hand completely disappeared on the other side.

“Are we going in?” Hu Mei Er, who was less courageous than her sister voiced with fear.

Yang Kai looked up into the sea of clouds and entered without scruple.

Watching him enter, Hu Jiao Er ground her teeth. Holding her sister’s hand, she shouted, “Let’s go in as well!”

Once they stepped through, Yang Kai was surprised to find that the place looked exactly the same from the other side. Numerous flights of stairs led up towards the sky.

After looking around, he did not see anyone else’s trail. Yang Kai thought to himself and concluded, [each gate must have led to an independent space. It seems that the people who go through the same gate will stay together.]

When Yang Kai turned back, the ripples on the screen of light completely disappeared. When he blinked his eyes, the screen of light also vanished.

Without feeling too much concern about it, Yang Kai placed his foot on the first step of the flight of stairs and clenched. His brows wrinkled as he felt his body suddenly suppressed.

“What happened?” Hu Jiao Er asked after seeing Yang Kai’s expression.

“Come here and try for yourself.” Yang Kai spoke gently.

The two sisters did not hesitate and went forward. Both of them walked around to the sides, finally lifting their feet and placing them on the first step.

“How do you feel?” Yang Kai asked.

“There is energy invading my foot.” Hu Jiao Er replied.

“It is hot energy!” Hu Mei Er continued to elaborate.

“This is probably a test.” Yang Kai showed a faint smile which was completely different from the two Hu sisters’ expression. He had discovered that this energy was Yang attribute energy!

TLN: (Strike!)

By revolving True Yang Secret Art, Yang Kai could absorb the energy from the platform. Thus, instead of damaging him, the platform was actually fuelling him!

TLN:(Damn hacks man.)

This was entirely different for the two Hu sisters. For them, they would need to direct Qi to resist the Yang Energy from burning their feet.

“If this is a test, then it is too easy. This level of energy is too weak to do much.” Hu Mei Er could resist the energy penetrating her foot with ease.

“Don’t underestimate this test.” Hu Jiao Er looked at her sister. “The steps

here may not contain a lot of energy but could we say that for certain about the steps on top? It is likely that the higher we go, the more energy we will have to resist. This will probably last until we can resist no longer...”

“Let’s not be hasty and jump to conclusions. Let’s test it out.” Yang Kai took another step, and another step, till he reached the fourth step.

Meanwhile, the two sisters followed behind.

After walking without rest for more than a hundred steps, they had discovered that Hu Jiao Er’s prediction was right. The higher they went, the more Yang Energy drilled into their foot, and the more Yuan Qi they had to use to resist it.

After a whole day of endless climbing, the two sisters could not help but bottle up their complaints about the hardships they had to face.

On the other hand, Yang Kai was enjoying his time climbing the steps. By climbing his first hundred steps, he had managed to acquire one drop of Yang Liquid and stored it within his Dantian.

After their three-hundredth step, Yang Kai and the Hu sisters could tell that they were starting to slow down. Since they had to resist the Yang Energy, the Hu sisters felt their whole body slowly turn stiff. However, it was still not strong enough to stop them.

It was surprising that Hu Mei Er managed to pass through their three-hundredth step with relative ease. This was despite her cultivation level being only Initial Element Stage 2.

Once they passed the four hundredth step, the toll on the sisters was becoming obvious. The two of them would need to about three breaths to climb another step. Not to mention, they were already starting to perspire.

On the other hand, Yang Kai was still extremely relaxed. However, instead of chatting with the girls, he was more concerned about this test. It was unlikely that the test only consisted of climbing stairs. That would be way too easy. He suspected that unknown dangers lurked somewhere and was trying to remain alert.

At their four hundred and ninetieth step, the two sisters looked towards Yang Kai, who had a face full of satisfaction. They were convinced that the boy was simply putting on a strong front. How was it possible for him to pass through these steps and still be so joyful? These steps were extremely tiring to climb. To think that they even swore that they would protect him. The irony...

Yang Kai looked at them and proposed, "Let's take a break first."

"No!" Hu Jiao Er clenched her teeth and took a step in front of Yang Kai.

Once Hu Jiao Er climbed up ten more steps to the five hundredth step, she suddenly fell. Fortunately, Yang Kai was quick enough to pull her back to a lower step.

They looked at each other and Hu Jiao Er said in surprise, "It changed!"

Yang Kai's brows wrinkled but he did not bother to question her. He took a step up to the five hundredth step and could feel that the energy penetrating his foot was no longer that of Yang Energy, but ice cold.

The sudden change must have startled Hu Jiao Er, causing her to fall.

“Is this also part of the test?” Yang Kai had a weary smile. He had hoped that the steps were all going to deliver Yang Energy. In this case, being a Yang attribute cultivator makes it easy for him to arrive at the top of the stairs. However, now with the energy changing to that of cold. it was drastic enough to be an opposite of the Yang Energy.

When the cold energy drilled into Yang Kai’s body, the boy had two choices. He could either revolve True Yang Yuan Qi and resist the energy or he could revolve True Yang Secret Art to build up this cold energy into his bones. Regardless of the technique he chose, he would need to use up his Yuan Qi. However, the latter was definitely going to take a bigger toll on him.

If Yang Kai did not have so much Yang Liquid within his Dantian, he would have chosen the first option. With a reserve of more than 100 drops of Yang Liquid, he would be able to use True Yang Secret Art without much worry.

When the boy started revolving True Yang Secret Art, he allowed the cold energy to penetrate directly into his Golden Bones. With the circulation of his Yang Yuan Qi, he resisted the cold energy from spreading throughout his body.

“Let’s go.” Yang Kai turned around and smiled at the two sisters, showing the way forward.

Hu Jiao Er was irritated by Yang Kai and whispered to her sister, “Why is he being so smug?”

Hu Mei Er bitterly smiled back, “He isn’t...”

Chapter 150, Discipline

“He’s definitely being smug! He dares to show such attitude to me!” Hu Jiao Er clenched her jaw and revolved her cultivation technique alongside her sister to resist the cold energy slipping into their bodies. Step by step, they pursued Yang Kai.

After the first day, all three of them had finally reached the thousandth step. When they arrived, Yang Kai took another step upwards and was delighted and surprised. The energy that emitted from the steps had now completely changed to Yang Energy.

With the change of energy types every five hundred steps, more than 90% of disciples had given up by the time they reached the thousandth. The sudden changes of energy made it unbearable for those disciples, forcing them to stop.

Those that had surpassed the thousandth step were all the elites of their respective sects. They all managed to surpass the milestone only due to their cultivation levels.

In actuality, Hu Mei Er should not have been able to climb so high due to her limited cultivation level. However, she managed to do so without much hint of exhaustion. On the other hand, her sister Hu Jiao Er was pale with exhaustion.

The three rested for half a day before continuing.

At that point in time, past the three-thousandth step stood a figure clad in pure white. She was taking her time climbing each step. Even at that level, she continued to climb almost effortlessly. From the start, her demeanour remained calm as she scaled the stairs, similar to taking a leisurely stroll.

Even as the sleeves of her clothes fluttered about, she remained indifferent. Occasionally, she would use her hand to gracefully comb the hairs on her face back behind her ears.

The energy from the ground invaded the soles of her feet, but before it could even hurt her, the energies seemed to vanish.

Her entire face was flawless still, with skin as delicate as a baby's. Obviously, this was Su Yan.

Silavin: (No shit Sherlock!!)

Su Yan cultivated Ice Heart Secret Arts. Similar to Yang Kai, she had a superior advantage within this test. She could easily climb without much effort.

Of course, out of the three sects, Su Yan and Yang Kai were not the only ones that cultivated Yin and Yang based cultivation techniques. There were approximately 700-800 disciples who cultivated Yin and Yang, but even when they realised the advantages they had in this test, they simply could not hope to compare with Su Yan. The cultivation techniques that each person held had different ranks. Naturally, Su Yan no doubt had the highest ranks of cultivation techniques.

There were only a handful of people that made it above two thousand steps.

Silavin: (Dang it Yang Kai! Why you so slow D:)

Xie Hongchen was sitting cross-legged, gasping for breath with a sinister and vicious look on his face. He was trying to restore his Yuan Qi with Pills.

Silavin: (And the guy actually wondered why Su Yan dislikes him : /)

“With me here, the inheritance is mine! So long as I have obtained the inheritance, who cares about the disciples from the three sects? I will make High Heaven Pavilion strong enough to dominate the other two sects, and make them bow down to us! Those that question or defy me will die! And Yang Kai, you are going to be the first! This day will mark me, Xie Hongchen, as the overlord!”

Silavin: (My god, take a chill pill man. I apologise that there is no medicine for stupidity though... sorry?)

Skoll: (You’re talkative today. What high ambitions this fellow has for a side character though.)

Xie Hongchen seemed crazy. The Yuan Qi within his body was chaotic and not flowing normally. With such erratic fluctuations in his Yuan Qi, Xie Hongchen’s strength seemed to be comparable to those in the Qi Transforming Stage.

The incident pertaining to the fight against the Tortoise Monster Beast was still flashing through his mind constantly. What was circulating within his thoughts were not the scenes where the three sects colluded to bring down the beast, but instead were of the people’s spiteful gazes towards him. It was mainly due to him that the Monster Beast became enraged. However, it was not him who took it down. It was Yang Kai’s attack that gave the opportunity for the three sects to strike, finally killing the Monster Beast.

Although no one had spoken directly to him about this incident, Xie Hongchen could detect their spite and hatred from their gazes. Even his Junior Sisters looked at him with apprehension.

This made Xie Hongchen burn with rage.

Silavin: (O.O *jiiii*)

[No one is allowed to look at me like that! No one!] Xie Hongchen thought to himself.

Silavin: (Can't help it man, you look too ridiculous!)

In front of Xie Hongchen by several hundreds of steps was Fang Ziji. He was gasping for breath while each of his steps seemed to cause his body to shiver.

Silavin: (Several hundreds of steps in front, and that bitch behind still thinks he got this.)

Skoll: (Chill Sil, Imfao.)

“... It's time to rest.” Fang Ziji was patient. He knew that the inheritance depended on opportunity, and the flight of stairs was merely a front. Climbing up should not be the determining factor for the successor. Thus, even if he had a strong desire to obtain the Inheritance, he was not as crazed as Xie Hongchen.

“It seems that this test is specifically meant for cultivators that cultivate Yin and Yang.” Fang Ziji took out a Medicine Pill from beneath his clothes on his chest and ingested it. “What's the point of me actually continuing? Could this all be a simple waste of time? I might as well explore more of the Heaven's Cave Inheritance with a few Senior and Junior Sisters. There is a much greater chance of getting something.”

Silavin: (LOL! Damn, this guy is an A+ flirt. Although no one can beat Yang Kai (๖ ๖ ๖))

The more he thought about it, the more Fang Ziji felt what he was doing was pointless. Before long, he stood up, but only to descend.

Once he reached the ground level, he saw Du Yishuang low-spiritedly sitting crossed-legged as well.

“Junior Sister Du, why did you come out?” Fang Ziji accidentally asked.

Du Yishuang coldly moved her gaze away from him as she recalls his frivolous attitude. Her cheeks flushed a little as she turned her head and snorted.

“Junior Sister, I was just looking for a person to be with, only to find you here.” Fang Ziji walked up to Junior Sister Du and hugged her without a second thought.

“What are you doing!?” Du Yishuang struggled, but in vain because of Fang Ziji’s strength. With his burning hot, iron-like hands wrapped around her waist, Du Yishuang felt her heartbeat speed up.

Rosy: (This guy is obviously a rapist. Poor Yishuang, he just keeps picking on her)

“If you don’t release me, I will bite you!” Du Yishuang seemed like a small tigress and opened her mouth ready to bite.

“When a man is doing something, a woman just needs to shut up and wait!” Fang Ziji aggressively forced his actions on.

Du Yishuang felt even worse as she failed to break free of his invasive grasp.

Close to the two-thousandth step was Long Jun from the Bloody Battle Gang. He was also sitting cross-legged restoring his energy. Since the three sects’ strongest disciples did not differ too much in terms of strength, it was only normal that the height they were able to reach was about the same.

Unlike Xie Hongchen and Fang Ziji, Long Jun was extremely anxious. He was not confident in his ability to obtain the inheritance. Even when his strength was

considered to best out of all the three sect disciples, if one were to take into consideration his age, he would not seem to be as impressive as the others.

Besides the few disciples who've managed to climb close to the two-thousandth step, the remaining few elite disciples were mostly above and around the one-thousandth step.

At this point, many people were already struggling to progress any further. After the one-thousandth step, they needed to rest for a long period of time before being able to climb up again. Some people actually considered those as opportunities. With the difficulty of climbing, it would add another set of criteria that would allow them a chance at the Inheritance. As long as they persisted a little bit longer and further and were more determined than the rest, they would have a chance to reach the top and obtain the Inheritance.

Lan Chudie, on the other hand, was struggling to climb anymore after her first few hundred steps. Normally, she would stand tall and proud but all of her hair was covered in frost. Her whole body was shaking with her uncontrollably jittering teeth, but she still pushed on and refused to give up.

On occasion, she thought of Yang Kai's indifferent gaze towards her and could not help but feel upset.

With both her fists clenched, her breathing ragged, she took another step up.

She was an ambitious girl. She was willing to attach herself to any powerhouse, but was that a mistake? She was merely a girl without much talent. She has been laboriously cultivating the whole time in High Heaven Pavilion to only reach Qi Transforming Stage 7. Compared to the genuinely powerful cultivators, what significance could she possibly be in their eyes? Thus, she had to follow another

powerful cultivator, to be protected under their wing. That was her only choice for survival.

Silavin: (Girl I understand you, but even those powerhouses would like someone with more loyalty. From your own actions, why would I even bother placing you at my side?)

She was not Su Yan. She was not strong. The only thing she had were her wits. Maybe one could include her body which made men drool, but Lan Chudie never regarded that as a strength. If she would classify her beauty, it was more of a burden. Only capable of flaring up men's desires, while provoking the dangerous envy of women.

Several days before at Yang Kai's moment of crisis, she just stood there silent. She did not wish to get drawn into the conflict. Maybe if she had added a few words of assistance, he would not have held such a gaze of unfeeling towards her.

Lan Chudie thought to herself, [Why can't you forgive me? If anyone was in such a situation, would they have chosen to support you? If only you were stronger...]

After climbing up a few steps, her whole body seemed to change. When she turned her head to check herself, her pale cheeks suddenly had dimples on it.

While she was indulging in her own thoughts, she had suddenly broken through to the next stage. Qi Transforming Stage 8!

When she closed her eyes to feel her newfound power circulating through her body, her eyes glimmered in delight. She continued upwards, to discover that the path was now much easier to climb. Her mood had rapidly changed to that

of joy as she pressed on.

After half a day of rest, Yang Kai and the two Hu sisters finally continued their journey.

After the one-thousandth step, they could feel that the difference in energy produced by each step was increasing over the last. At first, the Hu sisters could climb without the need to rest, but the more they climbed, the more rest they required.

Yang Kai was also the same. Although he had an extremely strong cultivation technique, True Yang Secret Art, his cultivation level was still too low. It was impossible for him to climb the stairs with ease like Su Yan.

Therefore, the three had to take their time to move. Finally reaching the two-thousandth step with their vision blurred from exhaustion, they sat down to rest once more.

The climb that changed energies every five hundred steps forced the trial challengers to adapt. This not only made them have to consume more Yuan Qi, this was also a test of their mental endurance.

While the two Hu sisters huffed as their bosoms swayed up and down, Yang Kai was still relaxed. Although he had also used large amounts of Yuan Qi, the Yang Liquid in his Dantian made it much easier for him to cope.

“Aren’t you tired?” Hu Jiao Er could not bear but ask Yang Kai, whom after so long, did not seem to be the slightest bit tired. If Hu Mei Er did not obtain the inheritance with her, Hu Jiao Er highly doubted that her sister could continue

past the thousandth step. Right now, Yang Kai who was also in the Initial Element Stage was able to surpass the two thousand step mark. Furthermore, she had not seen him take any Medicine Pills along the way. How was it possible for him to have so much Yuan Qi?

“Fortunately...” Yang Kai sat on the steps and waited for the two Hu sisters.

“You monster!” Hu Jiao Er exclaimed while smiling bitterly.

Chapter 151, The Hu Sisters' Decision

Within half a day, the three started walking again. They didn't know how many more steps it would take to reach the top as they stared at the endless path.

Time slowly passed, and with three days of constant changes, the disciples of the three sects were no longer able to support themselves. They gave up one after the other.

Although most of them couldn't reach the peak, they weren't entirely upset. On the contrary, they were excited and joyful, because everyone more or less obtained some advantage in this test, many people even experienced a breakthrough.

This at least gave them something to celebrate about.

On the fourth day, the ones who stayed for the climb either felt heat which burned their hearts or chills which pierced the bones.

These people kept restoring their power, as they also wanted to break through the light barrier.

But this time, regardless of anything else, they solely wanted a martial technique.

The decision of the two beautiful sisters didn't have anything to do with the obstruction of the light barrier, as they kept climbing the endless steps.

At this point of time, the people started to realise that this was a huge opportunity. If they were to miss this once in a lifetime chance, they would regret it for the rest of their lives. Everyone who stuck around thought that if they can hold on and persist, perhaps they will gain a bigger advantage.

In life, there were much more things to achieved, but at that moment all their attention was on the seemingly infinite steps.

On the fifth day, a total of around half the disciples of the three sects had withdrawn from the test. People gathered by the light barrier, envying those who found the energy to push on while they clenched their fists in disappointment in themselves.

There were many conversations, most of which were discussions about who would be the first to reach the peak.

Without a doubt, Su Yan's name was heard the most often!

The disciples who gave up knew that the inside was filled with hot and cold turns and without a doubt, Su Yan's cultivation technique was a huge advantage. Moreover, out of all the young disciples of the three sects, Su Yan's strength was also the strongest. It wouldn't be strange if she completed the trial first.

This fact alone left many High Heaven Pavilion disciples proud as their faces glowed with pride. Su Yan was a figure many High Heaven Pavilion disciples looked up to; male or female.

The Hu sisters were of the same opinion.

The great strength and nobleness of Su Yan that surpassed them caused them to envy her from the bottom of their hearts as they looked up to and almost worshipped her.

Yang Kai and the Hu sisters were five thousand steps in now, but with progress also came immense difficulty. It was like climbing and crossing countless mountains and rivers. Yang Kai, however, showed no symptoms of struggle or pain, his face just as bright as when they first started climbing. This was not the case for the Hu sisters, who were both drenched in sweat.

As they got more exhausted, their appearances became arguably more attractive.

The more steps they took, the more heated they became, making their whole bodies fragrant, their complexions flushed, their coquettish looks turning limpid, just like two thoroughly ripe honey peaches. If one were to take a bite, the fragrance and juices would be an explosion of flavour.

“It’s quite warm!” Hu Jiao Er continued stepping up while raising her shirt collar with one hand and fanning the wind with the other. Her voluptuous and shapely chest could be partially seen by Yang Kai.

She had never been this sweaty before. Her clothes pasted directly against her damp skin, outlining her perfect, graceful curves.

This also applied to Hu Mei Er. Sweat was continuously flowing. Her typically ruby lips turned dry from exhaustion, which prompted her to lick them with her tongue, moistening them.

“We shall rest again.” Hu Jiao Er said bitterly as she walked in front of Yang Kai. He was unexpectedly tough, so tough that he hadn’t produced a single drop of sweat. She almost raged with envy and admiration for him.

Yang Kai walked to the front as he turned his head to look at her with one eye saying: “We will continue when the temperature drops.”

As he now stood on a higher step, he happened to see Hu Jiao Er’s chest. It was like two mountains with a straight, flawless valley with sweat in between, causing his blood to stir with excitement.

Yang Kai became somewhat out of sorts.

Hu Jiao Er realised her own misdemeanour and instantly hurried to pull up her collar. She covered her chest with her hand as anger welled up in her eyes and she exclaimed, “What are you looking at?!”

Yang Kai’s smile only stretched wider as he did not look away. Her realisation only made his gaze linger unscrupulously on the sisters’ graceful bodies for longer.

Getting stared at like that was intensely uncomfortable for the Hu sisters.

They were standing behind him because their entire bodies were soaking wet, with every enticing crevice exposed. How could they be comfortable walking side by side with him?

They didn’t expect him to be such a shamelessly bold person.

“Stop looking at us!!” Hu Jiao Er drew her younger sister behind her vigilantly, as she shielded her with her own body. Her cheeks and sweaty forehead flushed red as she stared at Yang Kai angrily.

“Ha ha!” Yang Kai was overjoyed. He turned his head facing forward as he said, “This walk has been quite boring. There was some scenery to break up the monotony. Not stopping to admire it would be a waste of criminal proportions!”

“I misread you.” Hu Jiao Er stated bitterly, “I thought that you were an honourable gentleman, I hadn’t thought that you were this dirty! I wish I could dig your eyes out!”

Yang Kai asserted lightly without turning, “A man looking at a woman is a natural thing, what does it have to do with gentlemanly nature? Besides, for you to dig my eyes out, I would have to be looking at you. Jiao Er, do you wish for me to turn around?”

Hu Jiao Er was infuriated, causing her milk-white bosom to shake uncontrollably. She ground her teeth and scolded, “You must want me to be hit before you shut up!”

“That doesn’t sound right, have you forgotten you were supposed to be protecting me?” Yang Kai suddenly turned his head, his eyebrows raised. He looked like he was ridiculing her.

This made Hu Jiao Er red, as her rage disappeared, coyly saying in an instant: “Don’t mention this matter, it’s embarrassing.”

After all, they did promise to protect him beforehand, but now it seems like the tables are turned. He's the one protecting them since he never needed protection himself. The sisters couldn't even keep up with him anyway.

Recalling this, Hu Jiao Er smiled awkwardly.

"We should keep the energy for climbing instead of arguing." Hu Mei Er mediated.

"Humph, don't even think about looking at us again!" Hu Jiao Er reprimanded Yang Kai.

Yang Kai faintly smiled and said nothing else.

Following behind him, Hu Jiao Er whispered to her younger sister, "I don't think he's an appropriate person. Be careful, and do not let him have his way."

"Elder sister." Hu Mei Er smiled charmingly.

After two full hours, Yang Kai came to a halt. He did nothing but calmly stood on the spot.

The two sisters followed him as they came to his position. They couldn't help but shiver a little in fright.

"It's too cold!" Hu Jiao Er rubbed her hands together, her skin pimpled with goosebumps. Their perspiration was now frost.

After five hundred steps, the atmosphere had abruptly turned from hot to

cold.

The Hu sisters quickly and silently huddled themselves closer into Yang Kai's arms. They shook uncontrollably as if they were in a snow storm.

Before the three thousandth step, the sisters were comfortable climbing behind Yang Kai. The Yang attributes from before allowed them to do just that. Now there was coldness almost unbearable, they could only walk arm in arm with Yang Kai for more warmth. Such behaviour only reflected on their shared feelings of camaraderie, akin to when people face hardships together.

As time passed, the three stopped to rest again. The Hu sisters looked at each other, nodding as if they had decided on something.

"Yang Kai!" Hu Jiao Er suddenly said.

"What's wrong?"

"We think it'll be better if we stop following you."

Yang Kai was shocked, but kept quiet, as he calmly listened.

Hu Jiao Er resumed, "Judging from your legs, you're faster than us. Think about it, we would only slow you down."

Hu Mei Er also nodded, as she picked up the conversation, "Elder sister wants to protect you, but this place seems to have no danger whatsoever. We would be contributing very little."

Yang Kai was still calmly silent.

Hu Jiao Er said with a smile, “Do you think that we are giving up? We will follow through, it’s just that you’re faster than us.”

“You’re certain?” Yang Kai asked.

“Yes.”

Standing up slowly, Yang Kai decided, “Since you have made your mind, I won’t try to change it.”

The two girls were filled with good intentions. If they were to stop him they wouldn’t be themselves.

Yang Kai peered at the peak and found the need to utter his gratitude, “Thank you. Your company was nothing short of pleasant.”

Hu Mei Er turned joyful. Her playful, cheery look was charming. The hostility and vigilance in Hu Jiao Er’s heart were torn to pieces by his words.

“I will reach the peak and look at what’s up there!” Yang Kai turned around as he proceeded onwards, this time much faster than before.

“Don’t forget to tell us all about it!” Hu Jiao Er shouted with a typical smile.

“Alright!”

Yang Kai turned into a black stream of light as he continued to run, the talented sisters now walking side by side to resist the frost as they kept moving.

Before they could take their second step, they were suddenly thrown airborne into a gentle breeze. They were startled by this unannounced gust of wind.

In a few moments, their bodies started to lightly float as they landed softly.

Before gathering their composure, their bodies fell beside the light barrier.

They looked around and shaken to discover that many people were the same as them. They were obviously just delivered, panic clearly wrote on all their faces. Furthermore, the batch that just landed was filled with only women. Men were non-existent in this place.

“Yang Kai?” Hu Mei Er looked around and Yang Kai was nowhere to be seen.

“He is still inside!” Hu Jiao Er said in a low voice. Despite the confusion, she believed that Yang Kai was still sprinting.

But why were there only females here?

The girls who were transported still had some of the great energy of Yin and Yang stuck on them, attracting the attention of the disciples of the three sects who were outside.

They didn’t hurry to encircle them. Instead, they slowly inquired about their

health then asked about the situation inside.

After talking to each other, they realised that everyone had gone through the same bitter experience of being swept by the gentle breeze to land outside the light barrier.

Chapter 152, Crest

Lan Chudie, who held unyielding will in her eyes, was amongst the crowd. The look in her eyes seemed to resemble Yang Kai's. Lan Chudie came to a realisation as her complexion turned purple, the frost which was stuck to her body started to fall off one bit at a time.

"It's over?" Lan Chudie felt bitter and astringent at heart, she as an 8th level Qi Transformation Stage was able to climb up to 3000 steps. This was a result far better than any other disciple at her stage.

This result came solely from the persistence she had in her heart, as she never gave up.

However, she was also taken out by the gentle breeze, so how could she tolerate this? [As long as I had enough time, I would have certainly reached the peak. Why did it deliver me here instead?] Lan Chudie thought as she clenched her fists so hard her nails bit into her palms.

All that was left for her was the pain in her heart.

As she was calming down, a soft female voice sounded.

"Are you alright, fellow female apprentice?" Hu Jiao Er discovered the unusualness in Lan Chudie as she inquired kindly.

Lan Chudie shook her lowly hung head as teardrops slowly rolled down her cheek.

Yan Kai kept going forward as he focused on getting to the peak. He hadn't noticed that the Hu sisters had silently disappeared.

Yang Kai didn't need to worry about them anymore as he kept rushing forward.

The atmosphere which was already filled with Yin Qi kept increasing step by step. Yang Kai was not worried as his True Yang Secret Art kept his body warm, and the rest of the Yin Qi was absorbed by the Unyielding Golden Body.

After another five hundred steps, the energy changed from Yin to Yang. Yang Kai climbed at an even greater speed.

There was still some Yin energy stuck to his body in the process of melting. However, the Yang energy that synchronised well with his Secret art was much easier to absorb.

Step by step, the distance between him and the peak got smaller and smaller.

As he progressed further, the pressure which was weighing on him started to get heavier.

If it wasn't for Yang Kai's True Yang Secret Art allowing him to stockpile Yang Liquid in his dantian, Yang Kai wouldn't be able to be as collected as he is.

As he got closer, Yang Kai faintly thought something was not right.

This Peak's test was indeed getting more and more difficult, but it was not

impossible for a human to pass it. If it was really a test of inheritance, it shouldn't be this simple.

Sensing Yang Kai's intention, Old Demon thought of saying something. However, as he thought back to when he presented an evil cultivation method which included the usage of both the Hu sisters' virgin bodies, he shut his old mouth so as to not anger Yang Kai and receive his merciless torture.

Yang Kai would be enraged if he were to say anything related to his evil arts, so he didn't dare to speak, even though he did not know why Yang Kai was so against them.

To avoid ruining Yang Kai's mood, he kept silent.

Even though Yang Kai had some concerns in his mind, he thought it would all be sorted out once he reached the peak. This thought was only a small comfort. Yang Kai loosened his heart a bit, as well as relaxing his body. It was as the test became simpler along with the transformation of his mood.

Day after day passed, and Yang Kai had rested three times in total. He was really close to the peak.

There was a majestic mist that covered the peak. Looking at it felt like looking at a fairyland. Yang Kai had slowly crept into the fog, as seen by some covering the way he came from. The scene felt like the sweetest dream.

Where he was, there were only ten steps remaining... the last ten to finally end his arduous climbing journey.

He slowly walked up the steps, one at a time.

Nine, eight, seven.

As he kept moving forward with determination, old memories rushed into his head one by one.

Six, five, four.

The memories proceeded to trace far back into the past to when Yang Kai obtained the blank Black Book, changing his entire life and destiny.

Three, two.

Memories about three years ago also reappeared, causing Yang Kai's steady disposition to have some mighty waves.

Yang Kai lifted his foot towards the last step and paused there without moving.

If he missed the last step, he could fall.

But there was no way Yang Kai would make such a mistake.

Although it was hard to tell, he projected that falling would likely only deal severe wounds to him. This was his intuition.

Deeply affected, he revolved the True Yang Secret Art silently. Yang Kai

remained motionless for a long time. Once he felt that his state of mind, which had been buffeted by mighty waves, slowly return to normal, the memories which seemed to paralyse him gradually faded.

After a long time, Yang Kai opened with eyes with pure determination. There was no hint of hesitation or fear.

His foot landed.

An otherworldly buzz-like cry rang out, and an invisible pressure suddenly descended on Yang Kai. It was a pressure that only an overlord could possess.

Yang Kai's body started to bend, including both his legs, which nearly made him kneel down. However, he stopped bending when he was half a foot from the step. He was not going to give up now.

At that moment, his body was dripping wet with sweat and his muscles were fiercely convulsing. His body shivered uncontrollably. This pressure unexpectedly wasn't a cultivation Tempered Body world pressure. It felt different.

If he were to compare this immense pressure with cultivation pressure, there would only be one that would fit; a pressure coming from a powerhouse. It was like a huge eye looking down at him.

His body slowly straightened up, blue veins becoming visible across his forehead. His complexion had gone completely red. With his resistance, the pressure seemed to be getting stronger. His breath came out in laboured puffs as he tasted a tang of fresh blood on his tongue. The overwhelming pressure was already crushing and injuring him.

“I can withstand the prestige of the world, let alone you! You are not the world!” Yang Kai clenched his teeth so hard a clanking sound was produced. He slowly lifted his other foot little by little as he moved towards the final step.

His movement that ended in a flash gave the sensation that it took a year to complete, upon which Yang Kai finally stood straight. He had overcome the hardships of the overwhelming pressure.

As if he broke an invisible barrier, his body turned featherweight as all the pressure vanished.

A huge wave of energy fiercely swept past him, stirring up the Yuan Qi in his body. After a moment, the corner of his mouth cracked into a smile.

Initial Element Stage eight!

He unexpectedly passed through these endless steps with his low cultivation. This could be considered a great harvest.

Getting his composure back, Yang Kai could see the Palace nearby.

Unfortunately, there was still a layer of stairs between them.

Compared to what he had just endured, these steps were not intimidating to him. He estimated that there were only a hundred steps left to go.

“A two-layer test?” Yang Kai muttered to himself.

Without further delay, he faced forward and took a step upwards.

When he placed his foot on the first step, a burning hot Yang Attribute energy emerged out of thin air towards Yang Kai. This energy looked like a red silk thread, intriguingly visible to the naked eye.

Yang Kai looked surprised and reached out to grasp it.

Revolving his True Yang Secret Art, he unexpectedly directly absorbed it.

“Strange!” Yang Kai couldn’t think clearly. If this was a two layered test, then shouldn’t it be harder for the people to move in the second layer?

A few days ago when he was still in the first layer, the energy attacked and only attacked his body, but it seems like the second layer only filled his surroundings. There was an immense difference between them.

Yang Kai did not rush up the steps, as he wanted to gather more information.

With every step, more Yang energy would fill his surroundings. He would absorb them and convert them with his cultivation technique before he advanced.

From the hundred steps, he was able to gather two drops of Yang Liquid.

Having advanced to the ninety-ninth step, Yang Kai felt that something was not right. In front of the one-hundredth step, a Yin Qi barrier was blocking his path.

He put out his hand to test the waters. The Yin Qi instantly permeated through his body, such that even his True Yang Secret Art wouldn't be able to melt this energy so easily.

What was stranger was that the Yang Qi that he had previously absorbed slowly started to well up from his Dantian and dissolved into thin air.

He moved back a few steps from the Yin Qi to retain his composure.

He frowned deeply. [This should be the last step to the peak,] he thought.

How can he break the Yin Qi barrier? Is this supposed to be the last trial?

If so, he must break through this barrier to get through.

He considered his Yang Qi, which was burning hot and was the complete opposite of the Yin Qi barrier.

After a little more thinking, Yang Kai proceeded to the 100th step once again.

Gathering his Yang Qi, he slowly mustered it in front of the Yin Qi barrier.

Yang Kai took a deep breath and grabbed hold of his fist while revolving his Yuan Qi as the Burning Sun's Blast was directly shot to the Yin Qi barrier.

Bang! The fierce Yuan Qi poured into the Yin Qi barrier. But just like a pebble

splashing into a sea, there was barely any reaction.

Yang Kai delivered the same attack over and over, but it seemed to just dissipate into nothing.

If the Burning Sun's Blast had no effect, perhaps even using Star Mark would be a waste of time and energy. What is the key to surpassing the barrier, then?

Yang Kai narrowed his eyes and thought for a moment. His heart seemed to understand something clearly.

Probing for the third time, Yang Kai went down the steps and stood at where the red silk thread was most visible. This time, instead of absorbing it, he garnered its length within his hands.

He didn't absorb it this time around, but after watching the red silk gather he couldn't help but grab at it.

The size of the red silk thread increased as he kept pulling in more. On top of that, the red silk thread also became more and more wild and powerful, such that even his hand started to burn a little.

If this energy was used to cultivate True Yang Secret Art, it would have inconceivable results, but in truth, this Yang Qi was so strange that if he did not absorb them, they would rebel restlessly. They might also frequently attack Yang Kai.

Yang Kai did not utter a word despite the pain increasing in his palms.

As time passed, the rebellious Yang Qi threads in his hand unexpectedly calmed down and stayed steady as if they had found their home. They no longer struggled or revolted, or even attacked him.

Yang Kai's mouth curls into a smile as he thought that he had found the right technique.

With the increase in the thickness of the red thread, the Yang Qi that Yang Kai gathered formed the shape of a fireball. Even with its size, Yang Kai remained unharmed.

Standing in front of the ninety-ninth step once again, Yang Kai gently pushed the fireball in his hands towards the Yin Qi barrier.

This time around, he was not disappointed.

After absorbing these Yang Qi threads, the Yin Qi barrier broke like a fragile mirror. With the sounds of crashing and banging, the Yin Qi barrier dispersed, revealing the magnificent Palace which presented itself right in front of Yang Kai.

He had completed the path!!

Chapter 153, The Successor to the Inheritance

When the Yin Qi barrier was shattered, Xie Hong Chen roared with anger. He had persisted with all his energy to climb to so high. He was only a few steps away from the peak, victory already in sight when he suddenly felt a gentle breeze swoop under his feet. This gentle breeze was much like what the Hu sisters had experienced; the same that had sent them down.

“No!” Xie Hong Chen shouted in refusal. He tried to extend his hand to grab onto the stairs but it proved to be just out of reach. Very quickly, the flight of stairs grew more distant as he flew away.

“No. No. No!” Xie Hong Chen looked at the flight of stairs, desperate to return to continue climbing but the flight of stairs quickly disappeared from his sight.

For so many days, he climbed relentlessly but only to fall short at the last moment. This was not his own mistake but was due to someone else clearing the trials first. With another person’s success, the other contestants behind would be delivered back by a gentle breeze.

(Silavin: Not exactly gentle with how boss it handed that bitch)

(ICE: Hong Chen does not deserve gentleness)

[Who was it!?] Xie Hong Chen questioned, his eyes red with rage only to finally think of Su Yan, who had the biggest chance of succeeding.

[Can it be her?] The thought was a small comfort to him, but he still palpitated with vexation.

Once he had recovered his composure, Xie Hong Chen discovered that he had

landed in a strange place. When he looked up at the sky, he deduced that he was still within the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, but weirdly enough, there was no one around.

Xie Hong Chen stood on the spot for a while, before his mouth rose into a sneer. "If Su Yan was the one that obtained the inheritance, I will certainly make you mine!"

Soon, more people started to appear out of thin air and landed around him. They were all male disciples from all three sects. Similar to the female disciples that were blown away by the breeze, these disciples had endured the trial only to end with much disappointment. At the same time, the males were dispersed throughout the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, unlike the females.

On landing, many male disciples started to explore the area in low spirits. They had failed to obtain the Inheritance, but there was still a possibility for treasure.

Above the clouds in front of a magnificent palace, Yang Kai stood there watching the gigantic doors open as if they expected his arrival. He did not immediately enter; instead, the boy closed his eyes and recounted the events of the trials.

The first part of the test questioned a person's will. The second verified a person's capabilities in controlling Yang Energy. Only with sufficient control and capability could one climb the 99 steps and destroy the Yin Qi barrier on the 100th step in one attack.

After a long time, Yang Kai smiled and stepped forward. As he moved, he could feel the True Yang Qi within his body change.

Once he passed through the door, he could feel the Origin of Yang suddenly react. So far, the Origin of Yang would only respond to nearby Yang Energy. Its response would vary depending on the strength of the energy. This time, it was extremely intense, so intense that Yang Kai could feel his chest boil. Nonetheless, the boy continued forth with a dignified look, following the Origin of Yang's direction.

Yang Kai walked for a while before he saw a huge ball of red and white energy circulate each other in mid-air several meters off the ground. He instantly recognised that this ball of energy was the source his Origin of Yang was reacting to.

Strangely enough, this ball of energy did not contain just Yang energy. It also contained a piercing cold energy. When the two energies came together, they did not oppose each other. Instead, they harmoniously coexisted alongside each other. When Yang Kai took a closer look, he could see the energy producing two different forms from time to time.

When the boy realised the forms were actually two creatures, he shivered a little. Those two creatures were none other than the dragon and phoenix that flew outside the Heaven's Cave Inheritance.

[Is this the inheritance?] Yang Kai's eyelids narrowed as he carefully analysed the sphere of energy.

In the next moment, his gaze caught sight of a human figure clad in white, startling him. His whole face seemed to change, averting his attention from the creatures.

"Su Yan?" Yang Kai called out. He had not expected someone else to be here

alongside him. What's more, the other person was Su Yan.

When he called out, the woman sitting crossed-legged under the ball of energy opened her eyes.

"It's you?" Su Yan's beautiful pupils shook in surprise as she relaxed.

Yang Kai smiled. He felt joy in finding his Senior Sister here. Moving closer to her, he stood tall and firm. He refocused on the ball of energy that now sat above both of them and asked, "How long have you been here?"

"This is probably the 45th day." Su Yan spoke with an ice cold voice, highlighting her aloof nature.

[45 days?!] Yang Kai was flabbergasted by that number. He never doubted that she was worthy of the title of the strongest female in High Heaven Pavilion. Exactly 45 days ago, he was separated from the Hu sisters so he could continue quickly on his own.

The rest of his journey from their departure lasted 45 days. To think that she would accomplish it in such a short span of time was simply shocking beyond words.

What Yang Kai was not aware of was that the gentle breeze that Su Yan had caused upon her success, which blew all other females away from the flight of stairs. Likewise, he was also unaware of the gentle breeze that he himself had caused upon his own completion. Thus, in this test, they were the only two remaining.

"Sit down and speak to me," Su Yan invited.

Yang Kai nodded and sat cross-legged facing her.

When Yang Kai chose to sit close, Su Yan's face changed slightly but quickly returned back to normal.

(Silavin: Cute!)

They looked at each other in silence. Suddenly, Yang Kai smiled and opened his mouth, "After over ten thousand steps, I also had to complete the final hundred. During my journey, every five hundred steps changed the energy emitting from the stairs. At the end of it, I had absorbed the Yang Qi from the final 99 right before the Yin Qi barrier. I used that energy to break it."

Su Yan smiled back, "Me too. I also suffered the same exact trials as you for the first ten thousand, but for the final hundred steps I had to absorb the Yin Qi to freeze the sea of fire that engulfed the hundredth."

When Su Yan smiled, it felt like a refreshing breeze had blown across a wasteland, like a snow white world had finally seen the sight of greenery as though spring had arrived. Such a beautiful woman would effortlessly cause the downfall of nations and capture the hearts of everyone. Even Yang Kai was no exception; he simply stared at the beautiful woman sitting in front of him. He was filled with an abundance of joy.

Su Yan noticed his gaze and quickly avoided looking at him.

"I don't know why, but I find your smile extremely enchanting." Yang Kai did not hide his thoughts.

“We are not that familiar with each other.” Su Yan cheeks turned a little red, but her expression did not change.

“In the future, we will grow more familiar with each other.” Even though he was in front of such a goddess worshipped by the disciples of the three sects, he still managed to find the humour and guts to tease her a little.

Su Yan did not wish for him to continue and quickly changed the subject, “I will tell you what I think about this place. If you find that my conclusion is inaccurate, do tell me.”

“Mm,” Yang Kai nods in agreement. Su Yan had been here for 45 days. Naturally, anything that she had to say should be taken into serious consideration.

Su Yan calmed herself down before opening her red lips, “I believe that we were all mistaken. This Inheritance was not meant for one, but for two people. The 10,000 steps of alternating cold and hot energies which seemed to come together in union is the best proof of this.”

Yang Kai nodded in agreement. The possibility had crossed his mind, but he could not confirm it.

“The test that both of us experienced is the same, except for the last part. It was a test to check our abilities in controlling one of the two energies. If one is unable to control the energy, they would not be able to reach here.” Su Yan lowered her head, displaying her slender neck and whispered in a softer voice. “Before you arrived, I wasn’t too sure of something, but your arrival only makes my thought true. Do you see the thing above us?”

Yang Kai nodded.

“During these 45 days, I have been trying to absorb its energy but have not made any progress. It seems to repel my will. If I’m not wrong, it requires the both of us to work together, to bring it down and obtain the Inheritance of this place!”

Su Yan spoke in a straight and direct tone.

“So, what do you intend to do?” Yang Kai asked.

Since the Inheritance required two people, neither of them had the final say. They would need to verify their actions with one another. No one knew what kind of relationship they would foster once they obtained the Inheritance, but if it requires them to share, there will definitely be some form of change between the both of them.

To Yang Kai, he was glad that his partner was Su Yan. Although she seemed nonchalant and cold on the outside, he knew that she was a gracious and kind person regardless. However, the same feeling could not be said for her. If Su Yan was not willing to participate in this with him, Yang Kai could only reluctantly give up.

Su Yan was obviously hesitating. She could not come to a conclusion on the type of relationship she would have with Yang Kai once they obtained the Inheritance. She recalled the day the boy saved her from death by risking his life to catch her. That moment wiped the hesitation off her face as her disposition towards the boy became warmer.

After a long time of silence, Su Yan closely stared at Yang Kai's face. She wanted to pick up any slight change in expression he might make. "If I were to decline due to the reason of not wanting some external force binding me to a person I was not familiar with, would you be disappointed?"

Yang Kai hesitated for a moment and then nodded, "I would."

Su Yan turned gloomy.

"Nevertheless, I will respect your choice. You have your personal freedom to choose and likewise for me. If you do not wish to do this, then we won't," Yang Kai seemed confident when he spoke and he turned around to walk. "If you don't wish to carry on, then let us go."

"Where are we headed?" Su Yan asked as she slightly tilted her head forward in curiosity.

"To leave, of course," Yang Kai chuckled. "Since we are no longer going to inherit this thing, what's the point of staying here?"

"Who said that I didn't want to inherit it? Since we have climbed all the way up here, how could we possibly return empty handed?" Su Yan gave a slight, cunning smile.

"Are you trying to trick me?" Yang Kai's complexion turned a tone darker, "To think that I would trust you so much to have you deceive me like this."

"I was only probing your thoughts. You don't have to get so angry. Don't men always brag about having a broad mind? Why can't you take a joke from a girl

like me?” Su Yan slightly pursed her lips and looked at Yang Kai.

Chapter 154, Evil Cultivation Technique?

Yang Kai only sighed. He sat down in front of Su Yan and sighed again, “Su Yan, you are not acting like a Senior Sister right now.”

“You are already addressing me directly by my name, what’s the point of behaving like a Senior Sister?”

Yang Kai was dumbfounded. Who would have thought that a woman who put up such a cold front would have the gift of the gab?

[Are all women like this?] Yang Kai wondered.

Such small talk gave the both of them an opportunity to connect with one another.

Yang Kai bitterly smiled and raised his hands as though he had surrendered and continued, “Alright, alright, consider me mistaken.”

When Su Yan noticed his glibness, she decided to be serious and changed topics and said, “Since we have both decided to do this, let’s start.”

Yang Kai noticed that she was more anxious than before, but he stayed silent.

“What am I supposed to do?” Yang Kai asked.

“Start revolving your Yang Cultivation Technique,” Su Yan instructed before she closed her eyes and began to revolve her Ice Heart Secret Art. Soon, a cold,

chilling air was emitting from her.

Watching Su Yan revolve her Cultivation Technique made Yang Kai follow suit quickly with his own. With the True Yang Secret Art revolving, Yang Kai could feel the burning hot Yang Yuan Qi flood through his Meridians.

When both of them started revolving their cultivation technique, the hall they sat in seemed to respond. A loud bang could then be heard, which lingered faintly while they continued. Noticing the response, Su Yan's face was replaced with delight. She had understood that her conclusion was right, that she needed Yang Kai to obtain this Inheritance.

Over time, the ball of energy that suspended over their heads started to descend as if a hand was lightly and slowly pressing down on it.

Both figures of the Dragon and Phoenix within the ball of energy started to transform non-stop. They would appear for a second before disappearing again. This whole process repeated itself blindingly and rapidly as it slowly made their forms clearer over time.

Within half an hour of their revolution, the ball of energy had fallen between both Yang Kai and Su Yan. As the Dragon and the Phoenix started to vibrate more, their forms also became more apparent. They were flashing more and more intensely as the red and white portions of the ball continued to interact with each other, producing a bright ray of light.

Suddenly, the Dragon roared and the Phoenix then cried, and the ball burst into two separate forms. They quickly turned into a Fire Dragon and an Ice Phoenix respectively, then crashed into Yang Kai and Su Yan's bodies. Both of them shuddered in pain as the figures entered.

When the Fire Dragon entered Yang Kai's body, he discovered that his Meridians were now filled with boundless Yang Energy. It also seemed like new information was delivered to his mind, too.

Afraid to neglect the energy in his body, Yang Kai forced his own True Yang Secret Art to revolve faster. He wanted to quickly turn the excess Yang energy into Yang Liquid but was surprised to find that he was unable to do so.

Soon, he could feel his five senses become sharper. Yang Kai could smell the obvious fragrance that surrounded Su Yan. It was like honey to a bee, causing Yang Kai to find Su Yan irresistible, his heartstrings pulled every time he took another breath of her smell. His heartbeat accelerated as he continued to sniff. Within a few seconds, his dragon welled up due to his primitive urges.

[What is this?] Yang Kai could not help but question. His whole mind seemed to be stuck in confusion after he examined the information he received from the Fire Dragon moments ago. With it, Yang Kai opened his eyes to look at Su Yan, baffled.

When he opened his eyes, he saw that the beautiful Su Yan was pale. Her gentle and graceful body seemed to be freezing as she shivered uncontrollably.

Although cultivating the Ice Heart Secret Art required a cold environment to cultivate, the chill she was experiencing right now far exceeded what she could handle. Yang Kai could also obviously feel the heat within his body quickly exceeding the limits that he could handle too.

Shortly after, Su Yan also opened her eyes. Her dazzling pupils seemed to radiate a certain charm to Yang Kai, as her pale cheeks blushed lightly. Her breathing had become somewhat ragged as her gaze seemed to turn into that of

a lover.

Right now, Yang Kai understood the feelings they had for each other. It was as though they eternally longed for the power within the other person.

Yang Kai wished to soothe the heat and dryness within himself with the coldness that Su Yan had. Similarly, Su Yan wished to soothe her ice cold body with the heat from Yang Kai. Their desires were not only from their own body but also from the Dragon and the Phoenix. However, it seemed that the desire allowed both of them to maintain their own consciousness, enabling them to resist their urges.

“This is the Inheritance that we wished for, Su Yan.” Yang Kai opened his mouth to speak and to lick his lips. His throat was dry as he looked at Su Yan with eyes red with desire. He wanted so very much to quench his thirst.

“I know...” Su Yan clenched her teeth as her face seemed unwilling to accept the fact of the Inheritance. She was still well aware that this Inheritance can be obtained only with two people. It would force the two of them to have some special connection with each other, but never would she have thought that the Inheritance would turn out to be something like this. Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art, it was a Cultivation Technique that entered their minds.

Although Su Yan could not verify the rank of this Cultivation Technique, she could tell that it was obviously greater than her Ice Heart Secret Art. The Ice Heart Secret Art was considered a Mystery Rank Cultivation Technique, but it could not handle the cold that the Ice Phoenix instilled in her body. However, the Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art could.

“Isn’t this a Dual Cultivation Technique?” Yang Kai could not help but ask as his

heart seemed to stop for a moment.

“Erm...” Su Yan replied but her answer felt dreamy. The noise that she made, down to the tone she produced all seemed to be perfect, which only made Yang Kai desire her even more.

“Isn’t this considered an Evil Cultivation Technique?” Yang Kai seemed depressed as he spoke. Although his desires to cultivate with Su Yan was not merely caused by the Yang energy, if this was an Evil Cultivation Technique, there might be some detrimental effects.

Su Yan could not help but smile in comfort when the boy looked depressed. Unconsciously, she swayed her body from side to side amorously, showing off her curves while trembling. “A Dual Cultivation Technique does not necessarily mean it is an Evil Cultivation Technique. Gathering Yin to supplement Yang and gathering Yang to supplement Yin is an Evil Cultivation Technique!”

Usually, Su Yan would be embarrassed to discuss this topic with a man. However, her abilities to judge right now was at best impaired, and she had no qualms with sharing her thoughts. Nonetheless, she was still embarrassed as her face still blushed past the paleness.

Currently, she was not the arrogant, strong and beautiful woman that the three sects worshipped as a goddess. She was now merely a woman who desired hot Yuan Qi to flow inside her body.

“Su Yan...” Yang Kai could not help but call out in desperation.

“...” Su Yan whole face seemed to be in pain as she silently shook her head.

Yang Kai could not help but sigh, “We can try to transfer some energy within our bodies to each other.”

When Su Yan heard his words, she bowed down in gratitude. If Yang Kai had wished to pursue the matter any further, she doubted that she would be able to resist the temptation. Even with his suffering, he was still patient and kind enough to respect her will. In return, Su Yan could only show her gratitude.

The two simultaneously closed their eyes and started to revolve their respective Cultivation Techniques again in an attempt to build up the cold and hot energy within their bodies.

Unfortunately, Yang Kai discovered that the more he tried to build up the hot energy within his body, the more dreadful and powerful it became. The emotions and desires within him were only getting harder to resist. The fragrance from Su Yan became so strong that thoughts of filth invaded his mind as he savoured them helplessly.

Soon, Yang Kai’s skin turned entirely red. It was as if his whole body was a heated piece of iron. His body was even producing steam as he squinted his eyes in pain. However, the youth had decided not to make any moves as long as Su Yan did not wish for it.

The Fire Dragon within his body seemed to be getting angry with Yang Kai’s adamant resistance. It gave out a roar, causing Yang Kai to almost lose consciousness as his eyes turned even redder and his heartbeat raced like he had just run a marathon. Each beat seemed like a powerful drum, strong and clear, sending out heat waves each time. He could feel the blood throbbing beneath his skin.

The only thing that was on his mind right now was being in Su Yan's embrace, cooling the heat within his body. Su Yan also felt the same. Although it was not her wish, she wanted to soothe the freezing coldness with the heat from Yang Kai. This was the strongest aphrodisiac that could possibly exist; torturing them and fabricating a strong desire to be together. No matter how strong and iron-willed they were, their adamance will lose to their desires.

When Yang Kai's consciousness vanished entirely, his desire quickly suppressed itself.

It was his Golden Skeleton. Yang Kai's own resolve and pride had activated it. Soon, a comfortable feeling flowed through his body and his own consciousness slowly restored, but as he awoke, he heard an amorous moan that caused his heart flutter.

When he snapped his eyes open, Yang Kai was greeted with the sight of Su Yan. Her complexion was ghost pale from the coldness but her face was still flushed with bright red. Her pearl white teeth were nipping on her salacious lips. Her long eyelashes quivered as her whole body shook involuntarily.

"Su Yan! Su Yan!" Yang Kai could not help but shout her name in anxiousness.

Even when her whole body was trembling, Su Yan clenched her teeth, "I can continue to resist. So, don't give up."

"Em!" Yang Kai nodded and continued to furiously build up the burning hot Yang Energy within his body.

It was only thanks to the Golden Skeleton that Yang Kai could manage to

maintain his sobriety. Else, he would have acted on instinct!

Chapter 155, Blasphemy

Even with help from the Golden Skeleton, Yang Kai's struggle did not wane. He could not tell how much longer he could withstand the pain. Even with the Golden Skeleton, the boiling hot Energy was still getting worse. If things were to carry on like this, his whole body was going to burn.

Yang Kai found the situation ironic. Who would think that a Yang Energy cultivator would die from Yang Energy? If one were to explain this situation to him, Yang Kai was sure they would find it hard to believe. Compared to Yang Kai, Su Yan was in a more exacerbating situation. If Yang Kai had not called out to her early on, she would have lost herself to the desires.

Even with utmost resistance, Su Yan's willpower was faltering.

Though no words were spoken, Su Yan had got on her knees and started crawling towards Yang Kai. Her chest heaved as she panted heavily. Her vision blurred as she lifted her left hand to caress Yang Kai's cheeks.

All her movements were not done consciously. She was still struggling to resist the temptations as the urge grew stronger. Even her ice cold fingers were covered with frost.

For short periods of time, Su Yan would let out groans of pain as she winced.

"Su Yan!" Yang Kai called out to her again. This time, his voice was much softer than before. He did not wish to seem perverted, afraid of being repulsed by Su Yan.

Yang Kai's words seemed to reverberate in her ears as Su Yan's eyes seemed to

restore lightly with consciousness. She noticed her own body posture and the tenderness in Yang Kai's eyes.

"I don't think I can resist it any further..." Su Yan finally conceded.

Yang Kai smiled and grabbed her hand. When their bodies made contact, the Dragon roared and the Phoenix cried again. They had also regained their control and consciousness.

This time, the two did not separate from one another. They knew that losing physical contact would only return them to the torturous pain. Their 5 interlocking fingers soon turned to 10 as they shuffled closer to each other. Their eyes were locked together as they felt their hearts palpitate in unison. Another strange sensation welled up, compelling them to advance past holding hands.

"You won't regret this?" Yang Kai chuckled as he caressed Su Yan's hands. They were icy cold but smooth and pleasant to the touch. Holding her hands sent a feeling of comfort throughout his body.

Su Yan face flushed as she hung her head down and said softly, "We've tried our best..."

Yang Kai used his strength to gently lift Su Yan up, sitting her on his lap while embracing her waist. Soon, the two energies with their bodies seem to come together. It was as though they were perfect for each other, giving both a delightful sensation. Even with their self-control fully restored, their bodies still sought for comfort in each other. They could no longer resist their impulses any longer.

“Su Yan,” Yang Kai once again called out in a soft, shivering voice. This was the first time he was doing something like this, and he did not know what to do.

Su Yan did not speak but only hid her face, placing her head on Yang Kai’s shoulders.

Yang Kai slowly stretched out his hand to caress her neck, pulling her away from his shoulder.

Su Yan’s eyelashes shivered as she kept her eyes tightly shut. She leant back, placing her hands on her stomach, tightly hugging herself to calm her anxiousness.

Yang Kai noticed and lightly teased, “There’s no need to be so anxious.” He had never thought that such a cold, beautiful Senior Sister would be more anxious than him.

He took a deep breath, trying to stabilise his intense and heavy breathing. He brought his lips forward and connected with Su Yan’s succulent lips.

At first, Su Yan’s whole body froze solid due to the sudden kiss. She slowly relaxed after Yang Kai stroked her arms. Once she was ready to accept him, Yang Kai moved in his tongue, splitting apart her cold lips and opening her pearl white teeth, provoking her.

As sounds of periodic sucking resounded throughout the main hall, both of Su Yan’s hands finally wrapped around Yang Kai’s neck, wishing for more. She had lost all resistance. The urge for the heat within Yang Kai had peaked; preventing her from maintaining her own disposition.

Soon, pieces of clothing start to loosen. One by one, they were conveniently removed by Yang Kai, tossed aside with haste. When he put aside her undergarments, that she started to blush even heavier. Out of pure embarrassment, she quickly moved her hands to cover her chest.

Yang Kai took the opportunity to look at the beauty in front of him. Her figure was perfect. Every inch of her skin was smooth, glimmering with health. Her breasts were perfect, not too big and not too small, the perfect size to fill his two eager hands. Her belly seemed to be made of the finest silk, smooth without excrescence and perfectly defined. Without a doubt, even the saints of the world would have their lust invoked in the presence of such a sight. Naturally, Yang Kai could no longer keep his dark desires sealed up.

Su Yan's body returned to her usual colour. Love surged out from the innermost sanctum of her heart.

Yang Kai stretched out his hands to pull Su Yan's arms away. At first, she resisted but she soon let go as well.

Yang Kai was secretly delighted that he was able to be together with Su Yan. Such an icy and noble beauty, it would be hard for anyone to approach her, let alone be intimate with her. It was only with the inheritance of the Dual Cultivation Technique, that he was able to claim her purity.

Such an honour only reinforced Yang Kai's lustful desires. No longer able to hold himself back, he gave out a low groan, clutching Su Yan's body like a beast with its prey. Even when the girl yipped in surprise, he did not stop. He lifted her up and spread her shimmering thighs apart.

"I've heard that it is a little painful at first, so you'll need to bear with it," Yang

Kai lustfully informed her.

Su Yan still had her eyes shut. As her whole body froze with nervousness, she could only give a slight nod.

Yang Kai slowly lowered her body. Inch by inch, Su Yan could feel a spear enter her. The piercing sensation numbed her whole body, from her abdomen to her head. She felt like her whole body was unresponsive. She had a great urge to squeal in pain, but she gritted her teeth and braved Yang Kai's entry. Her two arms quickly wrapped around Yang Kai's neck in hope of support as her body convulsed as droplets of tears emerged from the corners of her eyes. It was at this moment that she wished to beat Yang Kai into a pulp. She screamed in her head, [You call this a little pain? A little?!]

It was only after a good amount of time did the pain subside. In its place was a strange sensation, as though something in a void was being filled up. The unprecedented sensation gave Su Yan the embarrassing urge to sway her body from side to side, trying to feel Yang Kai even more.

"Start revolving the Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art!" Yang Kai sounded off in a low voice. Su Yan cracked open her eyes to see a beast-like man with red, lusty eyes. However, those eyes still emitted ripples of calmness and tender love towards the person within its gaze. Looking at them made Su Yan's heart skip a beat as she made a slight bow and quickly followed Yang Kai's lead; she began revolving Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art together with Yang Kai.

When the Cultivation Technique began its revolution, Yang Kai and Su Yan moaned together. The Ice Phoenix and Fire Dragon within their bodies both followed. Suddenly, the two mystical beasts calmed down as a gush of pleasant sensations flooded both their minds and bodies. Vigorous Yuan Qi shuttled between the two of them, passing through their conjoined sacred parts and

spreading throughout their bodies, merging and blending within.

Even in such an intimate position, the two of them were solemn and silent. They were too occupied with circulating their Yuan Qi into each other. Yang Kai could feel a great amount of power rushing into his body from Su Yan. The Yin Yuan Qi within her body was over a hundred times more potent than the Yang Yuan Qi he had in his Meridians. It was like comparing a toddler to an adult.

The difference in strength was so obvious that Su Yan slowed down her revolution of the Cultivation Technique. She had to do so. Yang Kai could no longer keep up.

Being connected and simultaneously revolving the Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art Cultivation Technique allowed them to have a unique connection with each other. They were both able to feel their bodies touching while their spirits mixed. All of a sudden, they felt as though they had known each other for years. In their life, no one could be more important than the person in front of them right now.

With each revolution, the Fire Dragon within Yang Kai and the Ice Phoenix within Su Yan seemed to gradually dissipate. They had completed their function; to force the two lovers to copulate and cultivate the Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art. Since their duty was completed, there was no longer any need to stay. The beasts did not enter their Meridians nor their Dantian. One would typically think that they had completely disappeared, although Yang Kai felt that they were still hiding somewhere within their bodies.

As the Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art continued to revolve, the energy in their meridians from the Ice Phoenix and the Fire Dragon were slowly substituted with their respective Yin and Yang Yuan Qi. Unfortunately, their difference in strength was too vast for Su Yan to feel much difference; to her, it felt like a pebble splashing into the ocean.

Discovering their difference in Yuan Qi vigour only left Yang Kai feeling awkward.

“There is no need to worry. Just take your time.” Su Yan gently comforted Yang Kai through her mind. She was well aware of Yang Kai’s current complex feelings and wished to console him. Yang Kai kept silent only to suddenly explode ten drops of Yang Liquid within his Dantian. In that instant, True Yang Yuan Qi flooded through Yang Kai’s veins and burst into Su Yan’s body.

Su Yan was taken by surprise. She had no idea how Yang Kai was able to suddenly produce so much Yuan Qi. An Initial Element 8 Stage cultivator would never be able to have so much Yuan Qi within their body. Her surprise was quickly suppressed as she felt the need to concentrate on revolving the Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art. With a flood of energy that was equal to hers, she needed to quickly build it up to continue the steady flow between the both of them.

Another eruption of Yang Liquid occurred. This time, it was 30 drops. With all of that, Yang Kai could feel his Meridians on the edge of rupturing. Without Su Yan as his partner for the Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art, Yang Kai knew that he would have died from blowing all 30 drops. A single drop was sufficient to flood his whole Meridians with True Yang Yuan Qi, and even three drops would likely end in the destruction of his Meridians. With Su Yan’s cultivation level, they were able to achieve something he would have never been able to alone.

Chapter 156, Qi Transformation Stage

When she opened her eyes, the first thing she saw was Yang Kai's pleased smile. Su Yan's eyes glimmered with mischief as she lowered her head to his shoulder and nipped it.

"Ouch..." Yang Kai shook his shoulder.

Su Yan released her lips and gracefully smiled back at Yang Kai, "I have learned that your body harbours some kind of secret!"

Yang Kai did not seem capable of replying properly as he was still completely infatuated with Su Yan, and instead proceeded to flirt, "Has anyone ever told you that your smile makes the world brighter?"

Su Yan's face turned completely red as her hand moved to her hair, twirling it around her fingers. She whispered, "Then... I won't smile at anyone except for you."

Yang Kai felt bliss and euphoria flood through his body. He quickly restrained his thoughts and with a hint of loneliness in his voice, he reminded, "Let's cultivate first."

Su Yan agreed with a slight nod.

Yang Kai used 30 drops of Yang Liquid, which was quickly devoured by Su Yan, and he received an equivalent amount of Yin Yuan Qi, all of which was absorbed by his Golden Skeleton. This discovery left Yang Kai thrilled. Although the Yang Liquid within him was important, the Golden Skeleton was more important. To be able to convert the Yin Yuan Qi into an energy that he can store within his Golden Skeleton was a celebratory discovery.

Currently, Yang Kai did not feel any discomfort. There was almost definitely supposed to be some form of backlash in expending 30 drops of Yang Liquid in one go, but his body was perfectly fine. Knitting his brows, Yang Kai wondered. He exploded 5 drops of Yang Liquid before feeling a familiar ache within his meridians. How was it possible for him to now explode 5 Yang Liquid drops and then feel the ache? Previously, he could have hardly have tolerated 2 explosions of Yang Liquid. He deduced that from the cultivation, his meridians expanded.

[Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art is simply too amazing!] Yang Kai thought to himself.

When all the Yang Yuan Qi energy from another 30 drops of Yang Liquid was devoured by Su Yan; and in return, the equivalent amount of Yin Yuan Qi from Su Yan was absorbed into Yang Kai's Golden Skeleton, Yang Kai's body ferociously trembled. The air around him formed a whirlwind as their scattered clothing was swept further away from the two nude lovers. An invisible field of air that seemed to surround Yang Kai finally erupted. A burst of energy spread out, gradually subsiding. He had suddenly broken through to Initial Element Stage 9!

When Su Yan realised what had just happened, she was also brimming with joy. Similar to Yang Kai, she rejoiced in his achievement, although Yang Kai was more calm than excited. He now had a faint sense of anticipation for the benefits of the Dual Cultivation Technique. Who would have thought that he would break through so quickly?

When Yang Kai analysed his state, he learned that after he had spent 65 drops of Yang Liquid to pierce a small boundary using the Dual Cultivation Technique with Su Yan, the Yang Liquid within his Dantian had become purer. Although the amount seemed to be insufficient for another breakthrough, his achievement in a purer Yang Liquid was much more valuable.

Clenching his teeth, Yang Kai once again exploded another 50 drops of Yang Liquid and started to revolve the Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art. His Yang Yuan Qi flooded into Su Yan's body, robbing the girl of speech. The first explosion had already taken her by surprise. The second flood only terrified her a little. With the third eruption of Yang Yuan Qi even greater than before, she could no longer contain herself.

[Just where is all his Yuan Qi coming from?] Su Yan wondered. She didn't say a word, being simply grateful of the situation.

Yang Kai was a man with whom she had become intimate. If he could survive such reckless cultivation and live without accidents, it was probable that she will spend her whole life together with him. Discovering that her lover was more formidable made her jubilant.

After three days, Yang Kai and Su Yan ended their first Dual Cultivation Session. They both decided that three days was long enough. Strangely, when their mind, body and spirit was connected and blended together, it felt like their experience had only lasted a short instant.

When they both woke up, Su Yan could also feel the Yin Yuan Qi within herself become purer as well. This made her lose any sense of regret in giving up her chastity.

When she looked towards Yang Kai's tender gaze and his smiling face, her heart raced. It did not feel abnormal when they were immersed in cultivation, but when she thought about how she behaved, she felt embarrassed. She was riding him, sitting on his lap; hands hugging his neck, lips continuously moist, connected as one. Within her abdomen was a burning hot rod that filled up her body and mind, transmitting Yang Kai's fierce heat pulse. Each pulse caused her whole body to turn soft, her mind muddled as she could not find the least bit of strength to extract herself from his pole. She would never have thought that she would maintain such a posture with a man, let alone intimacy. Cultivating the Ice Heart Secret Art froze not only her mind but her heart as well. How would it be

possible to even dream of a man stealing her heart?

Su Yan anticipated living a long, lonely life. The Inheritance of the Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art changed that. Now, she had an unbreakable bond with a man she hardly knew. She was not filled with repulse or regret, however, and instead was over the moon.

After a short amount of time, Su Yan found the courage to look at Yang Kai. Her gaze was extremely gentle and tender. Noticing her gaze, Yang Kai called out, “Su Yan...” He was still full of lust as his fiery gaze concentrated on Su Yan’s perfect face. Even after the disappearance of the Fire Dragon and Ice Phoenix, Yang Kai still had the desire to continue and extend beyond what they had already done. It seemed to have completely destroyed his consciousness as he felt the wetness.

Su Yan bit her own luscious red lips and used both her hands to caress Yang Kai’s cheeks, placing her forehead against his. She struggled for a moment but then spoke with a little reluctance, “Let’s not do it first. It’s more important for me to help you break through.” She found it hard to refuse her lover as her heart still desired for him. However, for his own benefit, she found the determination to refuse his request.

When Su Yan stopped talking, a burst of Yin Yuan Qi rushed into Yang Kai’s body, forcing him to quickly concentrate on revolving the Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art. He held his breath and stabilised his breathing as he slowly closed his fiery, crazed eyes while accepting all of Su Yan’s energy.

Yang Kai was well aware that Su Yan’s actions were detrimental to herself, but even at the cost of her diminishing strength, he could not refuse her selfless sacrifice. His Meridians were full of Yuan Qi from Su Yan’s flood of energy. They bulged thickly to the extent of almost bursting with pain, but he did not ask her to stop. When Su Yan noticed Yang Kai was reaching his limit, the Yuan Qi

fluctuation around them simmered down. She stopped in case of injuring Yang Kai.

“Continue!” Yang Kai spoke with his eyes closed and remained silent.

“But...”

“Just continue!”

Su Yan obeyed Yang Kai’s wish and resumed pouring her Yuan Qi into him.

When the two were cultivating the Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art, the Yuan Qi within their bodies did not drain. In fact, the total amount remained constant as it travelled between the two lovers’ bodies. This advantage is something that other Cultivation Techniques could never hope to compare to.

After a long time, the Yuan Qi flooding within Yang Kai became more unbearable. The excruciation within his Meridians made his body quiver as beads of cold sweat rolled off his forehead, but he did not complain or cry out as he kept silent.

“Don’t stop!” Yang Kai gave a pained roar.

Su Yan’s beautiful eyes shook as she hesitated. She did not dare to invest more of her Yuan Qi into his body out of fear of injuring him, but she could feel Yang Kai’s unyielding will. It was a will to get stronger. It was a will to be strong enough to protect his own woman.

Yang Kai would not be in such a rush if he had never gotten together with her. However, their relationship has blossomed after experiencing such connection. With their strength disparity right now, Yang Kai could not remain as calm as he used to be. He needed to be able to protect her as her man; he wished to be able to protect her because he loved her. It goes without saying that that means he would have to be stronger.

Su Yan understood what was in Yang Kai's mind; it was a touching sentiment. After hesitating for a long time, she continued to pour Yuan Qi into Yang Kai.

The Yuan Qi gradually got fiercer. It was like a wild animal trapped in a cage, ramming against the door hoping to escape. When Su Yan noticed what was happening to Yang Kai, she paused the transferral yet again. She knew that Yang Kai was about to break through. When the Yuan Qi within a Cultivator acts like this, it indicates that the Cultivator was about to progress to the Qi Transformation Stage. At that moment, Yang Kai no longer had a pained expression. The pain had vanished. The Yuan Qi swishing within his body did not cause any damage to his Meridians. Instead, his Meridians were now more tenacious, improving his ability to bear all the Yuan Qi.

One layer of invisible shackles seemed to attach to Yang Kai, preventing him from breaking through. This was the same feeling he had when he broke through the Initial Element Stage. Breaking these invisible shackles was his key to advancing to the Qi Transformation Stage.

When Yang Kai noticed this resistance, he immersed himself into his own body and noticed that the Yuan Qi inside was getting more aggressive by the minute.

The bones within his body began to seep out energy. This caused Yang Kai's body to be wrapped in an evil aura, startling Su Yan, but she refused to disturb Yang Kai at such a critical juncture. After a moment, the evil aura vanished

leaving behind no trace; the Yuan Qi fluctuations within Yang Kai's body became acutely wild. He slowly opened his eyes, smiling. He had reached the Qi Transformation Stage! Thanks to Su Yan's help, he had achieved this breakthrough smoothly.

Bang Bang.. Sounds similar to thunderclaps resonated throughout the entire Heaven's Cave Inheritance, swaying the place slightly. Meanwhile, the energy that filled the space within the main hall of the palace turned to whirlwinds, rushing into Yang Kai. This was an entirely natural phenomenon after a Big Boundary breakthrough. The World's Prestige would enter the body, tampering with the body's blood and physique, strengthening the Cultivator in question. When Yang Kai broke through the Initial Element Stage, he had also experienced the World's Prestige, but it was nothing compared to the size he is absorbing now.

Opening his eyes, he saw Su Yan's worried face. Yang Kai gave a smile, "I'll give you something."

While he spoke, he fished into his Golden Skeleton and sent half of the Nine Yin Dew Crystal to Su Yan.

Feeling something icy cold enter her, Su Yan seemed happy and asked, "What is this?"

"It's called the Nine Yin Dew Crystal. It's said that this is extremely useful for Cultivators in the True Element Stage." Yang Kai spoke while he stroked Su Yan's clean, lustrous back intentionally, "Build it up while I temper my body."

"Good!" Su Yan docilely nodded.

Even if Su Yan built up the Nine Yin Dew Crystal, the effects would be inferior

to that displayed by Xia Ning Cheng by 10 percent. However, only 20 percent of its effects would be sufficient in making up for Su Yan’s cost in aiding Yang Kai. Nonetheless, the effects of the Nine Yin Dew Crystal would improve Su Yan’s strength.

Chapter 157, I Will Listen To You When The Matter is Trivial, but for Important Matters, You'll Listen to Me.

In two days, Yang Kai was done tempering his body. With the assistance of the World's Prestige, his flesh, blood and physique had been forged to become more formidable. Meanwhile, half of the Yuan Qi that remained from the breakthrough had been absorbed by the Golden Skeleton, similar to the time when he broke through the Initial Element Boundary. However, to avoid disturbing Su Yan while she was still building up the Nine Yin Dew Crystals, Yang Kai dared not move after he was done. He could only remain motionless and suppress his desires.

After a day, Su Yan's eyelids fluttered and she slowly opened them up. Her eyes glimmered with joy and excitement. When Yang Kai first saw her gaze, his spirit shook and his breathing became heavier. He had suppressed himself for a long time, waiting for her to awaken.

Staring at each other, Su Yan spoke, "Thank you!"

When Su Yan opened her eyes, she could feel that her body had changed tremendously. Building up the Nine Yin Dew Crystals did not only make up for her loss of Yuan Qi when she aided Yang Kai's breakthrough; her True Yuan Qi had become much purer than before. Cultivating with Yang Kai and building up the Nine Yin Dew Crystal had made her at least 30% stronger. True Yuan Qi revolved within her body around her limbs and bones, restlessly distributing to every living cell in her a Life Force. She was understandably joyous at this discovery, as it made her seem like an immortal that descended from the heavens.

After cultivating the Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art and building up the Nine Yin Dew Crystals, it was as though her skin had returned to what it was in the past. Every inch of it had returned to that of a newborn; snow white, clear and incomparably beautiful.

“As long as it’s between us, why is it necessary to thank me?” Yang Kai replied somewhat absent-mindedly. In the past, Su Yan gave him an ice-cold, noble feeling of desolateness. Even now with their intimacy, he could not help but feel inferior when compared to her.

Su Yan gave a warm and comforting, tender smile. She could understand Yang Kai clearly, even if he did not speak. “That’s right! You’ve just broken through to the Qi Transformation Stage! Such a boundary is very special!” Su Yan added joyfully.

Yang Kai quickly interrupted her, “Does it not seem wrong to be talking about the Qi Transformation Stage in our current position?”

Su Yan stared at Yang Kai as she immediately turned red. Yang Kai displayed a faint but coy smile. His waist had been feeling quite stiff. Instinct told him to move, but out of consideration for Su Yan, he refused to. This resistance left his mind to groan in despair constantly.

At this moment, Su Yan felt as though she was thrown up into the clouds, only to fall down into an abyss. The up and down movement gave her so much pleasure and joy that she lost all control. As a young man and woman, their bodies were much more sensitive; causing each gentle movement to be highly stimulating and pleasurable.

As Su Yan moaned in pleasure, Yang Kai became more unrestrained. He shuffled his hands around the pair of breasts in front of him, fondling, rubbing and pinching every inch of them, burying his head in between, enjoying every moment of the sensation. He would kiss them with loud, heavy and uncontrollable breathing.

Su Yan's luscious hair moved in waves as she wrapped her hands around Yang Kai's head, wishing to bury it further into her chest. Her slender and beautiful legs could not help but coil around Yang Kai's waist. While her body was moving up and down, she swayed her body from side to side and moaned with lustful happiness.

Suddenly while in the midst of everything, Su Yan tugged Yang Kai's hair and asked, "Wait!"

"What?" Yang Kai looked at her with confusion as their movements gradually come to a stop.

Su Yan was like a mute as she gasped for breath. It took some time for her breathing to calm. While her skin was still red and her eyes filled with surging love, she lightly bit her lips and asked, "Did you call for me a moment ago?"

"No..." Yang Kai sternly shook his head.

"Really?" Yang Kai's confirmation only made her more anxious. She became confused as she thought she had clearly heard someone call out to her.

"I did not say your name!" Yang Kai spoke as he looked in her eyes.

"You're lying!" Su Yan cried out but she saw Yang Kai's truthful gaze and knew that she was wrong. Without wasting another second, Yang Kai began to move on Su Yan again as they continued to indulge in pleasure.

Yang Kai used both his hands to grapple onto Su Yan and turned her body around. With her back facing him, Yang Kai took in the sight and felt his body stir

in ardour as his eyes only went madder with love.

In the past, Yang Kai caught an unclear glimpse of this very sight at night in a small garret, though she was still wearing her underwear and the darkness made it hard for him to capture her magnificent figure wholly. This time, she was unable to escape. Every inch of her was out in the open and laid down for Yang Kai to appreciate. Her soft graceful curves, slender shoulder, thin, smooth waist and plentifully filled peach-colored buttocks were all features capable of igniting any man's libido. Yang Kai could only thank the heavens for this great opportunity.

All of a sudden, a life-like Ice Phoenix moved about on Su Yan's clean, white and smooth back. From time to time, it would perch on Su Yan's shoulder and at other times, fall to her buttocks. Its movements were unpredictable as it slid throughout Su Yan's body.

[So this is where the Ice Phoenix went!] Yang Kai thought to himself as he could feel something hot moving on his back. [They are still inside our bodies! It's just that they have turned into tattoos!]

Yang Kai began moving again in their new position.

The whole place turned into the two lovers' utopia as they continued to embrace each other. The moist atmosphere filled the entire hall as intermittent sounds of heavy breathing and moaning reflected off the walls. They were like fishes in a pond, perfect for each other as they continued to give and take, presenting everything to one another and displaying their love.

Within the main hall, the chaotic aura still lingered, although Yang Kai and Su Yan were already neatly dressed. Su Yan sat in front of an ice mirror that she had made out of her True Yuan Qi. Although she could see her ruddy cheeks in the

reflection, she still remained calm. Meanwhile, Yang Kai stood behind her, reorganising her beautiful but disorderly hair for her. A warm aura of quietness shrouded the two as they continued.

Being re-transformed into a woman, Su Yan seemed even more beautiful than before. Her gaze was still cold, maybe colder than before, but the sight of Yang Kai turns it tender and gentle. She watched him arrange and fix her hair and passed an ornamental hairpin to him and the boy inserted it into her hair. The hairstyle Su Yan usually kept had changed, now it revealed her bright, clean and well-proportioned neck. Yang Kai commented, "Gorgeous."

"Do you like it?"

"Mhm," Yang Kai nodded and brought his two hands to Su Yan's shoulders. Although they had just done the deed, the tension did not die off. In such a short amount of time, these tensions would not be resolved.

Even when their skin connected and Yang Kai slowly slid his hand down, Su Yan did not move. She only smiled softly, showing disapproval. When Yang Kai's hands arrived at her chest, she grabbed them.

"Su Yan," Yang Kai bends down as he moved his lips towards Su Yan's earlobes. While they were exploring each other earlier on, Yang Kai had found out that Su Yan was extremely sensitive in areas that she did not wish for Yang Kai to touch. The back of her earlobes was one of those.

"Stop!" Su Yan shouted out as she knew that once Yang Kai kisses that spot, she would be incapable of resisting his desires. "We need to discuss some important matters clearly first," she quickly changed the subject.

“What important matters?” Yang Kai restrained himself and moved to her front and sat down.

Su Yan stroke his face. With blurry eyes, she stared at Yang Kai for a short while before asking, “Just how old are you?”

Yang Kai took a light sniff and confidently answered, “20!” Yang Kai’s facial features looked a little unnatural as his gaze drifted from place to place. “I’m not lying!”

Su Yan gave him a light smirk and did not respond.

Yang Kai felt like he was sitting on pins and needles. Discomfort and uncertainty filled his mind as he reluctantly whispered, “I’m 15, but I’m going to reach 16 soon!”

“I’m 20 right now. I’m older than you, so you have to listen to me from now on.”

Yang Kai grinned, “I will listen to you when the matter is trivial, but for important matters, you’ll listen to me.”

Su Yan sighed but her gaze still remained filled with love and gentleness. With her delicate hand still resting on Yang Kai’s face, she spoke, “You are still young. Indulging in such lustful matters isn’t good for you.”

“Age isn’t an issue,” Yang Kai looked at Su Yan. As they looked at each other, Yang Kai’s brows slightly knitted together as he looked at her with profound meaning, “Besides, you’re doing the same thing.”

Su Yan’s face flushed again as she stared at him and quickly rebuked, “You’re

not allowed to tease me!”

“I’m not... I’m telling the truth...”

“From now on, you are not permitted to think of such things!” Su Yan demanded.

Yang Kai felt like his soul left his body. His change in expression only made Su Yan’s ice cold heart turn softer and she quickly tried to comfort him. “If you promise to concentrate on cultivating and not this, I will look for you in a month’s time.”

(Silavin: Oh no! once a month?)

Yang Kai was quick to jump to bargain, “How about five times a month?”

Su Yan intentionally remained cold and silent.

“Four times? How about three? Isn’t two times too little?”

“Fine... once a month...” Yang Kai finally complied, but he knew that as long as he kisses the back of Su Yan’s earlobes, she would become a helpless lamb, free for him to devour.

“It’s not my wish to limit you. I know that Dual Cultivation is very beneficial for us, but your body is too weak. When you grow more in a few more years, I will certainly increase the frequency.” Su Yan spoke with an extremely soft, coercing voice, “So, please endure and get stronger for the next few years.”

Her earnest words struck a chord within Yang Kai as he nodded.

“So, you’ve just broken through to the Qi Transformation Stage...”

“Yeah, I know...” Yang Kai thought aloud.

Su Yan gave a nod and removed a jade-like necklace from her neck and moved on to explain, “You should know by now that this boundary is special for every cultivator. So, you must be careful and take care of yourself.” She wrapped the necklace around Yang Kai’s neck.

Chapter 158, Return

Yang Kai looked down, only to discover a square jade pendant hanging on his neck, calming his agitated nerves.

“This is the Ice Jade Marrow. I have worn it since I was a child. Since it has always been on my body it also absorbed a lot of my True Yuan. You must always wear it on your body; at a critical moment, it can help you calm your nerves.

“Is this a gift to your lover or something like that?” Yang Kai looked at Su Yan with a smile.

Su Yan was embarrassed, but she nodded gently.

Yang Kai patted down his own body to look for something to give her in return, but he had nothing appropriate for her.

The most precious things on his body were the Soul Breaking Awl and the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng.

There was no chance for him to give The Soul Breaking Awl to her since it's an immensely evil item and the Old Demon's immortal soul was in it as well. It would only harm Su Yan. The Yin Yang Monster Ginseng could be given, but it was only a Heavenly Spiritual Herb and did not have the same value as a token.

Scratching his nose awkwardly, he decided to promise, “I will give you a token in the near future.”

“You have already given me a lot of Nine Yin Dew Crystals,” Su Yan said with a smile.

“You really are a good person,” Yang Kai said from the bottom of his heart.

“Don’t praise me, it’s making my heart race,” Su Yan panted for breath and covering her chest with her hand. After cultivating Yin-Yang Joyous Unification Art, her original Ice Heart Secret Art was basically useless facing Yang Kai. He became the most difficult adversary for her as his every word, every deed, every action and every movement pulled her mind towards him.

“Hehehe!” Yang Kai gave an incomparable happy smile and giggled like a baby. In the whole world, who could make such a proud women melt? Only he could do it.

Generally, if a husband could make his wife feel this way, what more could he want from life?

It could be said that if not for this good fortune in the Heaven’s Cave Inheritance, Yang Kai knew that he and Su Yan would never be together. There is no one who could be appropriate for her in this entire world. Even Yang Kai thought that he wasn’t suited to be joined to her. He wasn’t belittling himself, but Su Yan had such a noble aura it was hard to imagine tainting her.

“After returning, what do you plan to do?” Su Yan asked.

“What will I do?”

”

“I meant to say what path will you choose to tread on?” Su Yan looked like a guardian fulfilling her duty and considered for Yang Kai’s future. “There is also our relationship to think about.”

“I don’t know,” Yang Kai said knitting his brows, “Explain clearly.”

Su Yan gave a faint sweet smile, “Well at present I have I think you have two paths before you that you can take.”

“The first choice is to publicise our relationship. By my current status in the school, as long as our relationship is public, you will be vigorously trained. You won’t need to worry about contribution points ever again, in the future martial skills, medicinal pills, secret treasures will be available for you anytime.”

“Are you testing me?” Yang Kai asked Su Yan with a smile.

She shook her head and replied seriously, “No I am asking you earnestly.”

Yang Kai turned his head. He could clearly imagine what turbulence his relationship with Su Yan, if publicised, would bring.

He and Su Yan were like the earth and sky, impossible to be conjoined. At present, in the common people’s eyes, Yang Kai would be envied and it would also affect Su Yan’s image heavily. Without even considering all the Elders, his apprentice brothers would nose around Su Yan to choose them as they are many times better than him.

Yang Kai did not think that Su Yan could face the rumours and slandering of common people with such confidence.

“You do not need to bear such a psychological burden. I am a man who can look after himself.”

Then Yang Kai said with a serious look, “This proposition is very tempting, but it is not meant for me.”

Su Yan, as if she expected that answer, didn't feel any surprise. She only smiled.

Yang Kai clenched his fists, looked down and said, "For my cultivation, I will depend on myself. I don't want to depend on you."

Su Yan said replied, "Although I am a little sad hearing you say this, I am also really happy. In that case, we can only take the second road."

Yang Kai says with a smile, "Yes, I will mature as soon as possible."

The second road was for Yang Kai to only depend on himself for cultivation.

"I will wait for you to become strong enough to protect me," Su Yan said in a soft voice.

"It won't take long," Yang Kai took Su Yan's hand, raised it to his lips to kiss, then suddenly remembering the incident, he said, "Su Yan, when we leave, you might experience some trouble."

"Hmm?" Su Yan looked at him full of doubts.

Yang Kai reorganised his thoughts then said seriously, "Disciples of our three sects came for the inheritance of this place. We struck and killed the nine monster beasts and activated the formation, making the place of inheritance show itself. The disciples who had climbed the endless steps numbered around 700-800, and they all experienced the alternate cold and hot steps. Your strength in the three schools is the strongest and you also cultivate a cold attribute cultivation technique. Now can you understand what everyone is

thinking?”

Su Yan gawked, she was only considering Yang Kai and had not thought about herself. But now, listening to Yang Kai, she was suddenly enlightened, “They will think that inheritance of this place was obtained by me.”

“Absolutely, I think many people are thinking the same thing now.” Yang Kai gave his analysis.

Su Yan gave a confident smile, “I will just say that I had not obtained the inheritance; even if have obtained it I wouldn’t need to give them any explanation.”

“It would be better if you don’t acknowledge it! Do not acknowledge it to anyone. I have a feeling that the appearance of this Heaven’s Cave Inheritance will not only involve our three schools.”

Hearing his words, Su Yan concurred. She didn’t care about the experts of the three schools but she couldn’t disregard the experts from the others. Once she confirmed that she acquired the inheritance, she would be in for a lot of unnecessary attention, potentially trouble.

Su Yan nodded her head again and again and said, “I know.”

She was also gratified at heart. Making the three sects’ disciples focus on her would leave a clear road for Yang Kai. Everyone would think that the inheritance could only be obtained by one person and no one would know that it had to be shared between two people.

She looked at Yang Kai and complimented, “You can think really far ahead.”

Yang Kai smiled bitterly and stated, “The big powers cannot let go of a rare item. They have the belief that every rare thing can only belong to them, and they would do everything to get it.”

Su Yan stared at him. She felt that his words held a lot of truth and was said from experience. She thought that her junior apprentice brother had a lot of secrets.

“I will tell you everything when the time comes.” Yang Kai said while patting her hand.

“Alright. Even if you do not, it’ll be ok,” Su Yan said with a nod.

“We should leave, there is nothing left for us here, Yang Kai stood up. The main hall was very spacious and aside from the huge energy ball that still hovered, there wasn’t anything else.

After they obtained the inheritance, a light barrier appeared; it was probably a portal.

Holding Su Yan’s hand, Yang Kai walked into the light barrier.

Their forms disappeared from the main hall simultaneously. Right then, a loud sound similar to glass breaking echoed around the entire Heaven’s Cave Inheritance.

Then, at the same time, cracks spread across the Inheritance site. The disciples

who were still present felt their immortal souls experience some stimulation and were unable to identify the cause of it.

An unknown energy wrapped around them and took them slowly up towards the sky. They were helpless.

At the mining area of the Bloody Battle Gang, after the opening of Heaven's Cave Inheritance, the powerhouses of three sects guarded that place, waiting for their disciples to come out.

It had already been a month since it opened. During that period, many disciples had already left the Heaven's Cave Inheritance. They were people who were either injured or were unable to persevere any further.

From them, the experts of three sects also roughly guessed the situation inside.

The experts of the three sects were irritated because they found that the inheritance had finally appeared, but didn't know in whose hand it fell.

Each sect had a lot of expectations for their promising youths.

High Heaven Pavilion's Su Yan and Xie Hongchen, Bloody Battle Gang's Hu Jiao Er and Long Jun, Storm House's Fang Ziji, they were the youths with a lot of potential in the younger generation.

That insane old man's female apprentice, High Heaven Pavilion's Xia Ning Chang might have obtained the inheritance.

But that old man was very relaxed as he sat at the site when the Inheritance opened, then noticing that his apprentice had not appeared. Soon after, he departed alone and hadn't come back since.

[What an irresponsible master!] The experts of three sects saw him as such and threw distasteful criticisms at Meng Wu Ya.

The existence of the inheritance made the three sects hostile towards each other, and an intensely competitive atmosphere spread among them, particularly among Bloody Battle Gang troops.

They viewed the acts of High Heaven Pavilion and Storm House as nothing less than robbery while they cursed at Meng Wu Ya with no sign of stopping. If not for him fighting with the expert of Bloody Battle Gang at the mining site, it would be impossible to expose the existence of the Heaven's Cave Inheritance to others.

This was the wealth of the Bloody Battle Gang that was now being snatched by the other two schools. Although they were compensated for it, nothing could be compared to such a glorious inheritance

“*****!” Hu Man cursed his subordinates for several days, but he didn't dare to scold Meng Wu Ya. He was angry at Long Zai Tian and Long Hui.

That ***** little animal provoked Meng Wu Ya and made such a mess. If he hadn't done that, things would not have turned out the way they did. It's good that he died. Even if you hadn't ***** died earlier, I, your Father would have torn you to shreds by now. Long Family.... The Long Family wouldn't be able to save you.

It wasn't only Hu Man who disliked the Long Family now. There was a great dissatisfaction among other experts of the Bloody Battle Gang. Long Zai Tian knew that he had done wrong this time, and he was beaten badly by Meng Wu Ya one month ago. It made him scared to appear in the area. Right now, he focused only on recuperating at the Bloody Battle Gang headquarters.

But considering the news of the death of his grandson, could this hatred be so easily absolved?

[Sooner or later, I will make you pay in blood,] Long Zai Tian swore secretly within his heart.

While the experts of three sects waited anxiously, a light barrier suddenly appeared on the site. It was akin to ripples appearing on the surface when a pebble drops into a tranquil lake.

In the next instance, the light barrier suddenly collapsed, leaving behind a big hole in the mineral lode.

"Is someone there?" Hu Man asked nervously. The Heaven's Cave Inheritance vanished but the disciples of the three sects hadn't appeared. Both his daughters were inside. What happened to them?

Hu Man was not alone in being worried; other experts felt the same. Elite Disciples of their sects entered the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, and they still have not shown up.

As they watched the scene unfold, they heard someone call miserably not from

far away.

A Storm House's elder's complexion changed, and he hurried to move forward.

Chapter 159, Returning to the Sect

When the Elder returned from the site, he was followed by the wounded disciples of Storm House. Under the inquiry of the Storm House experts, the disciples narrated the occurrences in the Heaven's Cave Inheritance.

After a few moments, the Bloody Battle Gang and High Heaven Pavilion experts also found their respective disciples in the surroundings. The experts breathed a sigh of relief.

They discovered that the disciples that came out were dispersed to each corner of Black Wind Forest.

Although the experts were puzzled by this strange scene, they knew it must have been done to protect the inheritor of the cave master's inheritance.

The experts of the three sects were bustling about in the Black Wind Forest, searching for their respective disciples. They were extremely cautious towards them. They were more sincere and cautious when compared to their past behaviour because they didn't know who could grow to what height in the future.

Their attitudes changed because they didn't know which person among these disciples now possessed a limitless future, and therefore could grow to stand high and look down on the masses.

Even the irascible leader of the Bloody Battle Gang, Hu Man, was welcoming the disciples with a respectful and conciliatory attitude, which bewildered many of them. They were, in essence, building bridges for the future.

The attitude of the leader of the Bloody Battle Gang made many disciples very emotional. They were so moved, they tearfully pledged their loyalty as well as their willingness to fight the death for the Sect Master.

Hu Man gave a frank smile.

For him, those disciples should have obtained great fortune in the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, even if they didn't obtain the ultimate inheritance. They were worth grooming with all of the Sect's efforts.

The Storm House and High Heaven Pavilion experts were also clear on this point. They secretly despised Hu Man who got a leg up on them, so they also enquired about their disciples' experiences and well-being.

It took about half a day's time to gather everyone. After that, many of them returned to their sects and had reported to their founders or Elders. This also made Yang Kai and Su Yan's situation more optimistic.

Su Yan was bound to be suspected and no one could change that.

At this moment, Yang Kai and Su Yan were standing on Black Wind Mountain. After they stepped into the light gate, they were transferred there. Su Yan was not quite familiar with the place, but Yang Kai had run around the Black Wind Mountain many times, so he knew a lot about the place.

After a long time, they were finally able to find the correct path.

“About 25 km in that direction, we will find Black Plum Village,” Yang Kai informed Su Yan whilst he stood upon a hilltop pointing in a particular direction.

“We can’t go back together, or there will be suspicions,” Su Yan said hesitantly. Since she was bound to be suspected, she couldn’t expose Yang Kai by returning with him.

“Mhm,” Yang Kai nodded, “You need to go first since many people would be looking for you. If you delay any further, it will only raise unnecessary suspicion. Remember, no matter who asks you, you cannot acknowledge that you obtained the inheritance.”

“I know. You will also need to be careful, and come back as soon as possible,” Su Yan urged as she turned to leave but was pulled back by Yang Kai.

“What’s wrong?” Su Yan asked, but she was interrupted by a burning hot aura closely hugging her, locking onto her mouth.

Su Yan softly moaned.

Eventually, Yang Kai released her with a smile.

“Remember your promise. Once a month.” Yang Kai reminded gently.

Su Yan gave a gentle nod.

They reluctantly said goodbye, though they knew that they would still meet in the sect.

They stared at each other for a long time, but Su Yan strengthened her resolve and said, "I am going."

She walked rapidly, leaving behind a pure white shadow.

Yang Kai looked at her back until she was out of sight, then shook his head with a smile and started to walk in the direction of High Heaven Pavilion.

Heaven's Cave Inheritance..... Yang Kai thought that his biggest gain was not the inheritance, but Su Yan.

After several hours of a leisurely walk, Yang Kai returned to High Heaven Pavilion. All the disciples and experts had already arrived, but there were still some scattered around more remote locations and were only returning now. Thus, Yang Kai's return did not attract any undue attention.

As Yang Kai walked, he noticed something strange. He was receiving greetings and politeness he had never received before from his fellow apprentices. Many may not have approached him, but they were smiling and greeting by gesturing with cupped fists anyway.

Even the High Heaven Pavilion's Deacon greeted him.

Yang Kai felt relieved. He was able to leave alive from the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, so perhaps in the future, he may have boundless prospects. Naturally, nobody was going to disregard him like before. They were greeting him now, and maybe later they would become friends, at least, that's their train of thoughts.

Yang Kai arrived at his small log cabin. Without the chance to even reorganise his shack, he heard the sound of footsteps approaching his door.

He wondered who would be visiting at this time. He opened the door to be greeted by an eager Su Mu.

Seeing Yang Kai, Su Mu put down the worry in his heart and said warmly, "Brother Yang, I'm glad you also returned safely."

Yang Kai was happy to see him, and directly invited him in, "Brother Su, come in and have a seat!"

"You don't need to be polite, I just came to check if you are alright!" Su Mu said while revealing a smug smile, "I need to go back and cultivate."

After giving a long smile, Su Mu vanished from his doorstep.

Yang Kai was shocked for a moment remembering that he has not seen Su Mu on the endless steps. Where was he at the time? The Beast Soul made such a huge ruckus it was impossible for him to miss that.

The only reason could be that he had more important things to do at that time.

Seeing Su Mu care for him made Yang Kai smile as well.

There was only a single inheritance in the cave, so there was no chance that Su Mu would have obtained it. It looked like his fate was pretty good.

Su Mu just departed, and Yang Kai wasn't even able to sit back down when he suddenly heard the sound of more footsteps, though this time they were much lighter like a female's footsteps.

Yang Kai's heart jumped. A green shadow hesitantly entered his shack.

"Little senior sister?" On seeing the appearance clearly, Yang Kai maintained his smile.

Today, his small cabin is quite lively. Su Mu visit, Xia Ning Cheng as well and what's more, he had not seen her in the Inheritance Cave.

Since returning from the Nine Yin Mountain Valley, they had not seen each other.

"Brother!" Xia Ning Cheng was relieved on seeing Yang Kai, just like Su Mu. She walked inside and asked, "Did you just return?"

"Mhm, I just got back," Yang Kai nodded and replied.

"I heard that you also entered the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, but I was not able to find you inside," Yang Kai continued. Xia Ning Cheng was as charming as always; those two sentences made her ears go bright red.

"I noticed on that day you had not come, but Treasurer Meng is really powerful," Yang Kai recalled as he remembered Meng Wu Ya's actions from back then, domineering and rampant, but the feeling it gave was somewhat strange.

Xia Ning Cheng answered, "Yes, the master did make me ago. Oh right, I also found some Yang Flame Stone inside, and made some Medicine Pills for you," Then Xia Ning Cheng reached out with a bottle in her hand, "You need this for your cultivation, don't you?"

Yang Kai took it from her hand with a smile and said, "Thanks!"

Xia Ning Cheng shook her head lightly and said, "You don't need to be so polite!"

"Don't you want to sit and chat with me?"

"No, I just wanted to check on you," Xia Ning Cheng hurriedly waved. She was quite a shy girl and didn't dare to stay at his cabin alone, "I am going, you should have a good rest."

"Alright," Yang Kai did not detain her, "You too. I am quite tired at the moment."

Xia Ning Cheng smiled. She was satisfied with his response.

After arriving at the door, she turned around as if she wanted to ask something, but after hesitating, she couldn't summon the courage and finally left.

Then, she suddenly remembered the matter of Nine Yin Mountain Valley.

The sentiments they shared had reached quite a deep level. Xia Ning Cheng frequently dreamt about the confused kiss they shared in the dead of night. That scene would make her heart jump with joy. She would feel restless for a long time, tossing and turning on her bed, and it would be hard for her to settle down afterwards.

The kiss they shared had left a mark in her heart, and the form of Yang Kai bathed in blood made an irreplaceable picture. Her heart was flooded with an indescribable soft feeling, making it even harder for her face Yang Kai, but she couldn't share her feelings.

When Xia Ning Chen disappeared, his gaze moved to the bottle in his hand. He felt gratitude for the concern his friends showed.

A night passed silently afterwards. He didn't do anything else but sleep quietly and calmly.

The next day, he travelled to the Black Wind Trade City to purchase some Three Leaves Chaos Spirit Flowers and Dead Jedi Tree Grass. The last time he came, he wanted to buy them but the appearance of Heaven's Cave Inheritance disrupted his plans.

In the wake of the incident with Heaven's Cave Inheritance, the Black Wind Trade City became quite lively. The various disciples of the three sects were discussing their fortuitous encounters in the cave, the nine formidable Monster Beasts and of course, the endless steps.

The people who were unable to enter the cave listened with great interest.

Su Yan was not guarding the Black Wind Trade City. At present, it was not safe for her to leave the High Heaven Pavilion. Everyone from the three sects was staring at her. They wanted to know if she had obtained the genuine inheritance.

Yang Kai purchased the herbs and tools he needed and left the Black Wind Trade City.

Returning to High Heaven Pavilion, Yang Kai arrived by the Coiling Dragon Stream.

On his ordinary days, he used to meditate in that place. His three Sun Fruit trees were still fluttering in the breeze. Perhaps after a few years, they would bear flowers again, but it was too far away to consider.

Yang Kai rubbed his hands together. He wanted to attempt something before, but he was too weak then. Now that he is at the Qi Transformation Stage he can finally do it.

He found a small boulder and tied a rope around it, then with the help of the rope, Yang Kai moved down the cliff face above the Coiling Dragon Stream.

He didn't know what rare treasure was hidden inside it causing an abundance of Yang Qi near the cliff, giving Yang Kai the chance to practice his cultivation. Regardless of where the treasure was located, there would undoubtedly be more Yang Qi inside.

Yang Kai's appetite was not big. He didn't want to penetrate the Coiling Dragon Stream to find the treasure. After all, the eleventh elder had urged him many times that he should not rashly destroy the stream because it also hid

quite a big danger within.

The mystical Eleventh Elder was at least an Immortal Ascension Boundary Expert. If he can feel that it's dangerous, then it would be beyond dangerous for Yang Kai. It would simply be suicide.

Chapter 160, Creating the Cave Mansion

As Yang Kai moved down the stream, the density of Yang Qi continued to increase and he was able to absorb a large amount of it.

The wind howled and showed no sign of stopping. This howling made it hard for cultivators to practice because cultivation required peace. Any disturbance would interrupt the cultivators.

[If I could open a hole on the leeward side, I should be able to avoid the noise from the wind. I would also be protected from too much sunlight.]

He pieced together the cords he had brought with him to make one long rope and with its support, he was able to rappel down a thousand feet towards the stream.

When he used up all of the rope's length, Yang Kai looked down and realised the Coiling Dragon Stream was too deep. He was unable to see the bottom. There was no way for him to judge its depth.

He felt fear strikes his heart at the thought of the potential consequences should the rope's integrity fail at this point.

However, the Yang Qi of the atmosphere was truly denser than above.

At this moment, Yang Kai was very satisfied with his decision. He carefully looked around the area and settled on a good position for his cave.

There were numerous ancient pine trees living on the slope of the cliff. They were grouped together and formed what was basically a giant umbrella. If he opened a space under the giant pines, the trees could form a natural barrier, helping him keep out wind and rain. It would become his shelter.

After choosing a spot, Yang Kai condensed a drop of Yang liquid from his dantian onto his fingertip, then used it to cut into the slope.

It sliced easily into the rock. The sharpness of the Yang liquid was not affected. Yang Kai then directly cut into the next rock.

When Yang Kai was in the Initial Element Stage third layer, his Yang liquid could easily ruin an ordinary mid-grade defensive treasure. Now that his strength has increased, cutting a rock was as easy as eating pie.

The Yang liquid in his dantian was limited. The majority of it which he obtained in the Heaven's Cave Inheritance was already used during the double cultivation with Su Yan. Now he had less than four or five drops present in his dantian.

After consuming three drops of Yang liquid, Yang Kai was able to cut open an entrance in the cliff face in which he could fit. Yang Kai continued to enlarge the cave, and the rocks were discarded into the jaws of the Coiling Dragon Stream.

Yang Kai sat and waited. After some time, the sound of the impact of the rock on the bottom of the stream reached his ears. By calculating the time it took for the rock to reach the bottom, he was able to gather a rough estimate of the actual deepness of the Coiling Dragon Stream.

The result was flabbergasting. His initial calculations told him that the depth of

the stream was more than ten thousand feet.

Half a day passes and the cave has significantly expanded, but he had consumed all Yang liquid.

With nothing else but his physical strength, Yang Kai couldn't excavate the cave any further.

He whipped out the bottle Xia Ning Cheng gifted him yesterday. He remembered the incident he had with his senior sister and felt guilt pricking him.

Fortunately, they did not go far past that, otherwise he could never face her again.

After ingesting several medicine pills and condensing some Yang liquid, he continued his little excavation

Yang Kai was very excited about his cave. It couldn't exhaust him, and looking at the steady expansion of the cave, Yang Kai felt like a powerhouse who was building his secret mansion.

Yang Kai struggled for several days. For condensing Yang Liquid, he had the medicine pills provided by Xia Ning Cheng. For thirst, he had dew accumulated on the pine tree leaves in the morning. He barely felt hungry. Hunger rarely affects anyone in the Qi transformation stage detrimentally and strongly. Eventually, though, in a month's time, they would need to supplement their strength with some form of nutrition.

Seven days later, the cave was, for the most part, completed.

Yang Kai stood at the entrance and admired his masterpiece. A feeling of satisfaction took over him as he giggled foolishly.

The cave was twice as big as Yang Kai's log cabin. One would prove to be hard to spot if they sat at the entrance. The noise was also filtered out, although a soft whistling sound would resume nonetheless. His new humble abode was comparable to any good place of cultivation. The environment here was much better than many places.

On the left side of the cave entrance, there was a small stone chamber in which Yang Kai stored and preserved his dried food. He placed his Three Leaves Chaos Spirit Flower and Dead Jedi Tree Grass in that room.

On the right was a slightly bigger room. This was his break room. In there, Yang Kai had a stone bed cut carefully and intricately, its surface smooth and even. Yang Kai also took the time to polish it carefully and spent a lot of time doing so. One wouldn't feel the slightest bit of discomfort resting on it, aside from maybe its toughness.

It was unknown what was going through Yang Kai's mind when making this bed, but it was huge and could easily accommodate two to three people.

[Hehehe.... Nicely done!] Yang Kai thought in his mind.

The middle of the stone chamber had a large open space. It was unclear why it was open.

This was Yang Kai's personal Cave Mansion. Although it was carved roughly, it was quite warm and cosy. It was much better than that small log cabin.

Common people generally don't steer near the Coiling Dragon Stream. If in the future he is able to obtain something he cannot carry around normally, he could easily keep it here without worrying about its discovery or theft.

As Yang Kai's train of thoughts continued, he climbed upwards with the help of the rope. He cut out some footholds in the rock wall so that he wouldn't need the aid of a rope to descend next time, lessening the chance of its exposure.

Finally untying the rope tied to the big rock, Yang Kai returned to his Cave Mansion.

After so many days of hard work, he finally had a proper place for his own peaceful, quiet cultivation. Perhaps this cultivation environment is better than the areas the rest of the disciples in the High Heaven Pavillion use.

Yang Kai didn't start cultivating immediately, but sat cross-legged near the entrance of his hideout and enjoyed the warmth of this place.

He suddenly remembered something and put his hand on his chest and took it out.

It was the Ying Yang Monster Ginseng. It was a Heavenly Spiritual Herb, a sentient artefact. After being captured by Yang Kai, it was placed on his chest, where it didn't try to escape or struggle.

The Herb seemed to smile at Yang Kai.

The Old Demon said that this type of thing will only grow in places where both Yin and Yang energy coexist. Yang Kai didn't know why there was a Yin Yang Monster Ginseng in the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, but on obtaining the inheritance he understood the mystery.

That was the inheritance of the Yin Yang Joyous Unification Art so it was normal that it could give birth to the Heavenly Spiritual Herb.

He forced out a drop of Yang liquid to feed the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng and unexpectedly, it absorbed the Yang liquid in a flash and put on an even more joyful expression, much like a living child.

Afterwards, an aura encircled the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng and it hopped out of his hand. It pranced all around the cave curiously and after a little while, it found an appropriate place to root and so it did on the spot it stood, still seemingly smiling.

As the aura of light that surrounded the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng became denser, Yang Kai could clearly feel the Yang Qi being absorbed by it. The density of the Yang Qi increased in the cave.

Yang Kai was speechless at such a useful function; something he would have never foreseen.

He became curious, untied the restriction on the Soul Breaking Awl and the Old Demon's respectful voice transmitted from it immediately, "Old Servant sees the young master."

"Have a look at this Yin Yang Monster Ginseng, and tell me what's going on

with it,” Yang Kai requested.

The Old Demon eagerly replied, “This thing can absorb both Yin and Yang Qi to live, and in this place there is an abundance of Yang Qi which suits it for growth. However....”

“Do not swallow words you planned to spit in an effort to mystify matters unnecessarily,” Yang Kai warned coldly.

The Old Demon had forgotten how intimidating Yang Kai could be. This was their first time talking in quite some time and he is already shivering from fear. His Immortal Soul was imprisoned in the Soul Breaker Awl, and from his punishments, he was very clear about Yang Kai’s decisiveness and ruthlessness, so he then continued hastily, “It must absorb both Yin and Yang Qi for it to grow steadily. This place has an abundance of Yang Qi, so for a short while it won’t be a problem, but in the long run, it will not only stop growing, but there also is a possibility of it withering. It will be like a flower without petals, or like a lone cloud drifting endlessly in the atmosphere. After all, it needs both Yin and Yang Qi as it is a Yin Yang Monster Ginseng.”

“So it lacks Yin Qi, right?” Yang Kai probed.

“Indeed, it’s as the young master says.”

[Well, that should be easy to solve, someday when Su Yan visits she can give some of her Yin Qi to it.]

Hesitating for a moment, Yang Kai asked awkwardly, “You have said before, if a man and a woman have mutual affinity, and when they like each other, it will change into two independent energies and will integrate within their bodies, right?”

“Yes!” Old Demon said with an amazed expression, “Em? Young master, did you...?”

Well, it was not prohibited, Yang Kai, after all, is a young boy. Since the last time they spoke, the Old Demon discovered that Yang Kai has lost his innate Pure Yang Qi. This was the result of Yang Kai having had intimate contact with a female.

“Who are you to ask such a question?” Yang Kai snapped.

“Young master, forgive me, this old servant was just curious. I will refrain from asking in the future.”

“There had better be no next time!” Yang Kai sternly scoffed.

Wrinkling his brows, Yang Kai thought.

Although the Old Demon’s origin was a mystery, his experience is very profound and he knew a lot about the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng, so he should be speaking the truth.

When they were in the main hall, where he and Su Yan were exchanging sentiments, it was right beside them.

But it did not change into energy and integrate with him and Su Yan. It didn’t become a part of them. So, the only explanation is that his and Su Yan’s sentiments were not to the degree of having mutual affinity with each other.

Although they may become husband and wife, it would be under the influence of the inheritance and was not originally their wish. If there was no Yin Yang Joyous Unification Art, he could only feel that Su Yan would bear a grudge against him for seizing her virginity. Even if she didn't bear a grudge, she wouldn't have a favourable impression of him, so how could there be mutual affinity between them?

Su Yan had not opened her heart, and the same went for Yang Kai.

Even if they felt attraction towards each other and would go through thick and thin to remain in their position even in life and death, this all was the effect of the Yin Yang Joyous Unification Art.

Love was not something that could be achieved in one day and night, and it couldn't be forcefully developed with the aid of a cultivation technique.

Only when they reach the stage where they regard each other as the most important person in their lives without the influence of anything, then can they claim that their sentiments are truly mutual.

The Old Demon decided to console Yang Kai, "Young master doesn't need to feel discouraged. This old servant knows women well. You have already captured her body, sooner or later, you will also capture her heart. This claim, the old servant can guarantee on his life."

"But aren't you already dead?" Yang Kai chuckled.

Old Demon cautiously watched for anger but could detect none. He then continued with a smile, "That is true, young master, but this old servant can guarantee with his Immortal Soul that women forever hold special sentiments to their first man. Young master, you just need to put in a little bit of effort, then

she will be dead set on you. Right now, mutual affinity is just around the corner for you, and when that day comes, this Yin Yang Monster Ginseng will display its effect proudly and brightly.”

Chapter 161: Speciality of the Qi Transformation Stage

After speaking, the Old Demon hesitated for a moment and resumed, “Young master, the thing is, the Yin Yang Monster Ginseng is only useful for a single pair, and there are two female babes young master is in contact with, so when the time comes it might be a little difficult, having to make a choice between them.”

“Two?” Yang Kai asked out of confusion. He thought that the Old Demon had slipped up, but he thought about it and understood.

Perhaps the Old Demon was thinking about the Hu sisters. After all, they were chatting quite a lot on the endless steps.

After prohibiting the Old Demon’s freedom, he could no longer observe Yang Kai’s surroundings. Naturally, this meant that he was unaware of the incident in the main hall at the top of the steps.

Yang Kai didn’t want to explain too much, so he just ordered, “In the future when I am alone with any female, you are not to use your divine sense.”

He feared the awkwardness that would emerge if the Old Demon witnesses him and Su Yan being together.

The Old Demon felt like Yang Kai was being unjust. He decided to protest, “The young master can rest easy. Though this old servant is evil, I would never do the likes of peeping on someone.”

“Regardless, it will be good if you do well to remember it.”

“This old servant will bear it in mind.”

After a short moment of silence, the Old Demon suggested, “Young master, if you don’t mind, this old servant wants to go inside this deep ravine to explore.”

“Is there something that interests you hiding below?” Yang Kai asked with curiosity. After all, the mystery that hid in the Coiling Dragon Stream made him burn with the desire to know, but once again, his strength was too low so he didn’t have any viable means to explore it.

“The old servant is not clear on what is hiding below, but I can feel a type of positive Qi. This type of Qi is a difficult adversary for this old servant’s Immortal Soul. In addition, there is also a very dense Demon Qi. These two Qis generally oppose each other, so I am a little confused as to why they would seem to coexist here. To be honest, young master, I want to strengthen my Immortal Soul by taking advantage of the Demon Qi below. It can also increase the possibility of giving the young master a helping hand in the future.”

Yang Kai was lost in thought.

Yang Kai verified the Old Demon’s claim in the dense Demon Qi. In the history of the Stream, it is said that an immensely evil devil was killed in the depths below. This made the area a natural spawn for Demon Qi.

The Old Demon wanted to restore his Immortal Soul with the aid of that Qi. Yang Kai was hesitant. After all, he was not sure if he would lose control of the Old Demon should he restore his strength. He might shoot himself in the foot.

As he pondered further, he decided that there was little need for him to be so

worried. The Old Demon's divine sense had already fused with his, so deciding his life and death was nothing but an immediate consequential action he could take should the Old Demon betray him.

The Old Demon waited anxiously, watching Yang Kai. Yang Kai then gave a nod and approved, "Alright, you can go."

He poured some of his Yuan Qi into the Soul Breaker Awl, as this secret treasure acted as a storage for Yuan Qi. Yang Kai then passed it to Old Demon.

"Many thanks, young master!" The Old Demon said gratefully. Binding the Soul Breaking Awl, he transformed into a black fog and flew deep into the Coiling Dragon Stream.

After the Old Demon left, Yang Kai took out a small purse from his chest pocket.

This purse was given to him by Lan Chudie, which contained two seeds of Pure Heart Fruit.

Yang Kai thought about the conversation at that time.

If this senior sister wasn't so good at deceiving others, she would surely be more likable.

The first time he met her in the Black Wind Trade City, he got hold of these seeds but was deceived about the cost though it didn't matter at the time. When he met her again in the Heaven's Cave Inheritance, it could have been fate.

They explored together, fought together. They were not only on the same side, but they also braved hardships together. It was hard to forget about her.

If not for her disappointing chain of choices, Yang Kai would never have disliked her the way he does. Though she sneaked up on Nie Yong at the end to show goodwill, she also showed that she can be ruthless.

She always sided with those she could profit from. When Nie Yong was looking for trouble with Yang Kai, she never stopped him because Nie Yong had more use than Yang Kai.

If Lan Chudie had reproved Nie Yong severely in the status of a senior sister, he would never have dared to be so dissolute. But she did not, and only Du Yishuang had stood with Yang Kai; an ally that was useless against Nie Yong. Being abandoned like a worn out slipper, and even being attacked from the shadows would never leave a good feeling.

Yang Kai would never accuse her of anything. Everyone had the right to make their own decisions for their own lives, and others had no right to interfere. Perhaps, in reality, she was indifferent to people she thought were poor and weak, and had a liking for the rich and powerful. If she liked playing up for the powerful, then that'd be entirely her choice.

Yang Kai thought it was best if he didn't become too close with her, otherwise he might pay for it sooner or later.

He took out the seeds and tossed the purse into Coiling Dragon Stream.

[Where should I plant these two seeds?] Yang Kai carefully looked around his

rocky abode. He couldn't plant the seeds in here, there was no suitable soil.

Then, Yang Kai suddenly had an idea.

On the side of his cave, there was a large number of Ancient Pine trees, which means there must be soft soil at their roots. If a pine tree could take root here, the Pure Heart seed should as well. Since it is a spirit grass, it had a much stronger vitality.

Moreover, what Spirit Grasses absorbed was World Qi for growth, so they wouldn't need to contest with the Ancient Pine trees for nutrition.

Yang Kai dropped one drop of Yang liquid on the Pure Heart seeds, but to his surprise, there was no reaction. Only after the second drop did the seed reach its absorption limit.

This was definitely the seed of an Earth Grade high grade spirit grass. He wondered where Lan Chudie obtained these seeds from. Seems like buying it at the price of 1200 silver coins was not a waste after all.

After planting both seeds, Yang Kai sat cross-legged at the entrance of his Cave once again. He closed both eyes and started to revolve the True Yang Secret Art. He cultivated slowly for the first time ever since entering the Qi Transformation Stage.

Without any indication, Yang Kai's Yuan Qi suddenly began to rebel. Due to the sudden increase in the pressure, his clothes and hair started to dance. He turned pale as a ghost.

With the rebellion of Yuan Qi, Yang Kai's heart was also filled with rebellious energy. This is a type of energy which he wanted to expend crazily, he wanted to fight someone until he bleeds or draws blood.

In the past, he felt like this only when the indomitable will appeared during fights, but this time, it appeared while practising his True Yang Secret Art.

This is not because of Yang Kai, or because of the True Yang Secret Art.

It was because of his position in the Qi Transformation Stage!

Just like when Su Yan had mentioned to Yang Kai that the Qi Transformation Stage is a very special boundary for any martial artist.

Martial artists start from Tempered Body, and when they are able to use Yuan Qi, they enter the Initial Element Stage. Next, when they break through the Initial Element Stage, they enter the Qi Transformation Stage. By this time, the Yuan Qi accumulated inside the martial artist's body should already be significantly vast to a degree that many martial artists cannot control completely.

Since they are unable to control it, they are typically met with Yuan Qi rebellion. Usually, martial artists wouldn't be affected when they are in an ideal condition, or when they aren't using a large amount of Yuan Qi. However, revolving their respective cultivation techniques would cause the Yuan Qi to behave similarly to what Yang Kai is experiencing now.

It is actually a normal and expected phenomenon.

Because of this phenomenon, the Qi Transformation Stage martial artists tend

to have two goals.

First was to continue to accumulate their Yuan Qi, promoting their boundaries and strength; this goal never changed from the norm.

The second goal required the martial artists to control the strength obtained from their promotion, while still accumulating Yuan Qi.

Generally, a martial artist who has just entered the Qi Transformation Stage is unable to control his Yuan Qi completely. When he reaches level seven or eight in the Qi Transformation Stage, he will then be able to exert more control. It was same for Lan Chudie; when she revolved her Yuan Qi, no rebellion in the Qi was produced.

Du Yishuang and Nie Yong were unable to control their Yuan Qi. Although Du Yishuang was level six in the Qi Transformation Stage, her Qi would rebel during battles and produce an unquenchable thirst for blood.

Martial artists in the Qi Transformation Stage are usually hot-tempered and touchy, meaning a higher chance of conflicts arising with others. If two of them are in the Qi Transformation Stage, both of them would likely fight until one or the other is incapacitated or dead.

This boundary had the highest mortality rate.

In this situation, most of the martial artists of the Qi Transformation Stage would try to calm and steady their dispositions as much as possible. They may also take medicinal pills, or even wear secret treasures to calm their nerves and suppress their impulsiveness.

In this stage, the martial artists who cultivate ice type techniques or martial skills generally have superiority over the others. This type of cultivation technique requires the martial artist to have a calm and steady, sometimes even cold personality at its very base, therefore making it easier for them to overcome this hurdle.

Yang Kai figured that when Su Yan was at this stage, she wasn't as bothered with such issues.

Her heart and mind were already frozen, so how could her Yuan Qi go wild?

The martial artists who are in Qi Transformation Stage promote their Yuan Qi through battle. When they succeed, they are able to control their strength. This stage can affect the natural disposition of a person. Should the said person wins in battle, he will feel satisfaction and a commensurate rise in strength. The loser will likely be doomed to feel depressed and adopt a negative mentality.

The majority of martial artists lose their path in this stage. They become lost in power and enjoy battle and murder, straying from their preset paths.

After the Qi Transformation Stage, martial artists become calm once again. The next stage is called the Separation and Reunion Boundary.

That boundary is quite far for Yang Kai at the moment.

At this moment, after revolving his True Yang Secret Art, Yang Kai felt the strength he obtained in the Qi Transforming Stage, but the Yuan Qi rebellion seemed to not affect him at all.

An ice-cold sensation transmitted from his chest. This effect was due to the pendant gifted to him by Su Yan. This pendant contained Ice Jade Marrow, but he was largely unaffected not because of the Marrow, but because of the golden skeleton inside of him and the Indomitable Will martial arts he had practised.

After taking his time to become accustomed to this new boundary, he was able to smoothly control his Yuan Qi without any discomfort or difficulty.

The thing that happened in Qi Transformation Stage had exactly the same effects as his martial skill, Indomitable Will, but the feeling was different.

Most people have a difficult time overcoming the hurdle of controlling their Yuan Qi and the new strength they had obtained, but Yang Kai was different; his Yuan Qi settled very quickly after the initial signs of rebellion, and was already under control.

Yang Kai thought about it and concluded that it was the Golden Skeleton pulling strings from inside his body. When he uses the Indomitable Will, he may look bloodthirsty but his inner emotions are mostly calm. He never lost his reasoning and was always perfectly aware of what was happening.

This was a major bonus. Of the two things that Qi Transformation Stage martial artists needed time to experience, experiment and control, Yang Kai had already conquered the most important one. The other only required him to accumulate strength over time.

